

AMERICAN ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS OF ZEPHI BROCKETT METCALF:  
THE 350 YEARS 1637-1987

by  
Artie L. Metcalf

Published by the Author  
El Paso, Texas  
1991

Copyright © 1991 by Artie L. Metcalf

(Copyright does not apply to materials  
copied from published or archival sources)

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 91-60188

# CONTENTS

PREFACE	i
CHAPTER 1 INTRODUCTION	1
CHAPTER 2 MICHAEL METCALF - DEDHAM	5
CHAPTER 3 TOWNS OF MEDFIELD, MEDWAY, RUTLAND, AND BARRE	30
CHAPTER 4 TOWN OF CHESTERFIELD	54
CHAPTER 5 TOWN OF SALISBURY	63
CHAPTER 6 TOWN OF RUSHFORD	89
CHAPTER 7 RELATIVES OF HARRIET GOULD METCALF	130
CHAPTER 8 ZEPHI AND HARRIET MOVE WEST	144
CHAPTER 9 DE ALGEROY ADELBERT METCALF	156
CHAPTER 10 HARTLEY ANDREW METCALF	174
CHAPTER 11 ACCOUNTS OF THE FAMILIES OF BENNETT AUSTIN AND MONETT METCALF (BY FAMILY MEMBERS)	192
CHAPTER 12 AMINZO DEMETRIUS METCALF	211
CHAPTER 13 IDA ELLEN METCALF HUDSON	242
CHAPTER 14 DORA ROXANA METCALF PARSONS THOMSON	251
CHAPTER 15 WILLIAM WALLACE METCALF	268
CHAPTER 16 MAURICE CRUMP "DOC" METCALF	306
CHAPTER 17 PATTERNS?	315
ANCESTORS OF ZEPHI BROCKETT METCALF IN AMERICA	319
DESCENDANTS OF ELIJAH AND HANNAH BLAKESLEE METCALF	324
LITERATURE CITED	352
TABLE OF CONTENTS OF APPENDIX, FOLLOWED BY APPENDIX	362
INDEX OF PERSONS WITH THE METCALF FAMILY NAME	494
INDEX OF FAMILY NAMES OTHER THAN METCALF	502
GEOGRAPHIC INDEX	530

# LIST OF FIGURES

FIG. APPEARS  
AFTER PAGE:

1. General migratory route in northeastern United States of ancestors of Zephi B. Metcalf.	4
2. Children of Michael (1) and Sarah Ellwyn Metcalf.	10
3. Map showing property of Michael Metcalf (and environs) in village of Dedham, MA.	13
4. Maps of features related to the family of John-1 Metcalf and descendants in Towns of Medfield and Medway, MA.	31
5. Children of John-1 and Mary Chickering Metcalf.	36
6. Routes of migration of descendants of John-1 Metcalf in Massachusetts and New Hampshire in the 1600's and early 1700's.	37
7. Children of Michael-3b and Elizabeth Bowers Metcalf.	38
8. Children of Michael-4b and Lydia White Metcalf.	41
9. Map showing property of sons of Michael-4b Metcalf in Town of Barre, MA.	45
10. Children of Joseph and Deborah Adams Metcalf.	48
11. Children of Nathan and Mary Metcalf.	65
12. Map showing Metcalf properties in southern part of Town of Salisbury, NY, and map of nearby Brocketts Bridge in Town of Manheim.	72
13. Children of Elijah and Hannah Blakeslee Metcalf.	90
14. Maps showing various Metcalf properties (and environs) in Town of Rushford, NY.	91

## LIST OF FIGURES, CONTINUED

FIG. APPEARS  
AFTER PAGE:

- 
- |     |  |     |
|-----|--|-----|
| 15. | Sketch-map showing early history of real estate transactions of Metcalf properties northwest of village of Rushford, New York.                                       | 92  |
| 16. | General map of parts of Towns of Centerville and Rushford, NY, and map of property of Michael Gould in Centerville.  | 110 |
| 17. | Map of a part of the Town of Lyndon, NY, showing location of property of Lyman B. and Zephi B. Metcalf there.  | 111 |
| 18. | Children of Zephi B. and Harriet Gould Metcalf.  | 144 |
| 19. | Map showing properties of Zephi B. and Algeroy Metcalf in Walnut Grove Township, northeast of Erie, Neosho County, Kansas.   | 147 |
| 20. | Maps showing properties of Zephi B. and Aminzo Metcalf, southeast of Dexter, Cowley County, Kansas, and associated features.   | 149 |
| 21. | Map showing properties of Algeroy and Carrie Metcalf and of some of their descendants in the area of Arcola, Missouri.   | 161 |
| 22. | Map showing properties of Hartley and Ella Metcalf and of Minnie and Oscar Hurt in Prowers County, Colorado, south of Lamar  | 180 |
| 23. | Map showing properties of Simon and Caroline Sinclair and of the Wallace and Artie C. Metcalf families, south-southeast of Dexter, Cowley Co., Kansas.               | 271 |
| 24. | Map showing neighborhood around the Wallace Metcalf farm between Hooser and the "Irish Flats," Cowley County, Kansas, in the period approximately from 1915 to 1920. | 274 |

## INSERTS AND ADDENDA

Inserts and addenda include a variety of materials most of which were discovered or elaborated on after the text was initially written. They are added in the hope that they will help clarify or amplify textual materials. The inserts and addenda are not indexed and have no page numbers of their own. They occur at various places in the text, and their location is indicated, below, only by number of the preceding page.

INSERTS AND ADDENDA	AFTER PAGE:
Genealogy (from Tilden) of Family of John Metcalf (2 p.)	30
Page from Records of Vine Lake Cemetery, Medfield, MA	34
Rev. Elijah Metcalf's Ministerial Itinerary in 1811	78
Descendants of Simeon Metcalf	82
"The Metcalfs" from <u>The Spirit of Rushford</u> , 1958 (2 p.)	91
Petroleum Springs on or near Metcalf Properties, Rushford	102
Signatures of Early "Rushford Metcalfs"	111
50th Wedding Anniversary of Elmer and Luella Metcalf	125
Descendants of Jesse Slocum by Charles E. Slocum (2 p.)	139
Some Census Records of Zephi Metcalf Family	152
Reminiscences Concerning Harriet Gould Metcalf	154
Family Bible Record of Births: Algeroy Metcalf Family	156
Signatures of Algeroy and Carrie Cross Metcalf	159
Will of Carrie Cross Metcalf	164
Agnes Metcalf Sartin	166
Grandsons of Algeroy Metcalf in the Clergy	171
Letter from Hartley A. Metcalf to Augusta Metcalf (2 p.)	187
Cartoons by Zenus Hurt	189
Some census Records of Aminzo Metcalf Family	211
Rector Relatives of Sarah Ann (Sadie) Rector Metcalf	212
Note by Aminzo D. Metcalf	216
Careers of some Female Descendants of Dolie Metcalf (3 p.)	222
Song written by Grace Metcalf Fernandez	229
Reunion of Guy Metcalf and Grace Metcalf Fernandez (2 p.)	230
Items Concerning Death of Dewey Metcalf	238

INSERTS AND ADDENDA (CONTINUED):

Clarence H. McGuire	248
El Paso Newspaper Items Concerning Thomson Family	257
Family Record from Bible of Myrtle Parsons Gorton	258
Letter by Orville Mountain	263
Notes from Children of Cyril Thomson (3 p.)	264
More Stories about Wallace Metcalf	273
Art and Cecil Metcalf and Farm Animals	279
Stories about Neighbors of the Wallace Metcalf Family	288
Gossip about Neighbors of the Wallace Metcalf Family	289
Announcement of Auction of Wallace Metcalf Farm	295
Newspaper Article concerning Artie C. and Lucile Metcalf	300

Dedicated to the memory of Artie Clifford Metcalf,  
father, farmer, woodcarver, fisherman. . .

When in the prairie summer's waning  
the first cool northern breezes  
curl down the grassy ridges,  
caress the early evening,  
and still the soil resists the plowing,  
he steals away, then, to the ponds  
between the hills, below the hedges,  
and casts a silver spinner  
across the perch-green water.

(1969)

## PREFACE

This family history is written in the first person and addressed to descendants of Zephi Brockett Metcalf. This form is just the way that my version of the family tree decided to grow, rather on its own, like the unruly Osage Orange trees in the southern Kansas pasturelands where I grew up. With such a personal approach there is bound to be much personal bias, also, and more emphasis placed on branches of the tree that are best known to me. So be it.

Emphasis is on family history rather than on genealogy, although an abbreviated genealogical listing is included. I earlier compiled a more extended listing of Zephi Metcalf's descendants, up to the year 1987, but decided against including it here because of its length and of possible sensitivities of living family members that were included. An appendix, beginning on page 362, includes copies of a number of articles, documents, letters, etc. from various sources. Some of these would be basic resource materials for anyone looking into the history of the family, and I hope that it may be useful to have them here under one cover

## Acknowledgments

Several persons whose assistance was especially valuable are listed at the beginning of Chapter 8, as they figured prominently in that and in following chapters: Artie Clifford Metcalf, Cecil Sylvester Metcalf, Edna Lucile Dungan Metcalf, Elizabeth Hawkins Metcalf, Franklin Monroe Metcalf, Marie Buck Metcalf, and Grace Metcalf Muilenburg.

In regard to Chapter 2, I am grateful to Robert B. Hanson, Town Clerk of Dedham, MA, to Muriel Peters and Electa Tritsch, Dedham Historical Society, and to Mr. and Mrs. Arthur Blood and Mr. and Mrs. Clarence Buckley, curators of the Fairbanks House of Dedham. I thank Dr. Diane Calabrese for obtaining some early Dedham records. In connection with Chapter 3, I acknowledge assistance from Eleanor Anes, Medfield Historical

Commission, Laura and Paul Hurd (the latter then president of the Medfield Historical Society), Bob Voelk, and Richard De Sorgher of Medfield. I am especially grateful to Chris Davis, who, with her young daughter, Laura, spent much of a day showing me sites of historical interest in the Town of Millis, MA, of which Chris was Town Historian. Francis D. Donovan, the Town Historian of Medway, MA, helped me through correspondence and his publications and suggestions. Albert L. Clark of the Barre Historical Commission supplied information and maps concerning Barre, MA; Hazel Metcalfe of Barre was helpful. Also of use in regard to this and the following chapter has been correspondence from Edward G. Metcalf, Midland, Michigan, and Betsy Lang, Malvern, PA. In Chesterfield, NH, I was assisted by Vanetta C. Emery, Chesterfield Historical Society.

Major informants concerning the Salisbury, NY, area (Chap. 5) were two knowledgeable neighbors, Dorothea S. Ives, Salisbury Town Historian, and Susan F. Watkins, a specialist in historical research. Their files and their insights concerning local history provided far more than I had expected to find. Also of help were Evelyn Shedd Darling, Robert Winkler, Violet D. Fallone, Montgomery Co. Dept. of History and Archives, Marilyn H. Campagna, Herkimer County Clerk, and the staff of the Herkimer Co. Historical Society.

For so much included in Chapter 6, I am indebted to Elmer and Luella Veazey Metcalf, Houghton (Rushford), NY, who offered their hospitality as well as their knowledge of the Rushford and Centerville scences. I also appreciate the stimulating insights of their son, Daniel E. Metcalf, and the cheery contribution of Ethel Metcalf Freeman. Mary Lou Metcalf Burton, Arcade, NY, supplied useful information and documents. I thank, also, Lois Fiegl, Centerville Town Historian, Phyllis Clark, librarian at Rushford, Leland Damon of Houghton, and Bill Greene, Jr., of the Allegany County Museum, who kindly perused and summarized several documents of interest and extended his hospitality for an afternoon of work in the

museum. I appreciate the helpful attitudes of Margaret Stone Veness, Waterloo, NY, and her daughter, Bonnie Munson, Boise, Idaho.

Among the "Rochester branch" of Metcalf descendants, I first should thank Richard and Joyce Harmon, who were especially hospitable. I enjoyed my stay with them. I was, of course, happy to make the acquaintance of Mary Metcalf Mowers, one of the oldest living Metcalfs at the time, and a very gracious matriarch, at that. Ellen Harmon provided some diaries of her grandfather, Charles Metcalf, which were, to me, of inestimable value. Marcy Bush Arnold also assembled some valued documents. Pritchard and Elizabeth Harmon Douglass and Marion Harmon Mohnkern were helpful.

Of help in so many ways in supplying hard-to-find items of information, sources of information, and plain inspiration, has been Ray Vaughan of Hamburg, NY. John A. Smith, Cassadaga, NY, was helpful in several ways.

Pertaining to Chap. 7, in New York, I wish to thank Mildred Edmonds, Town Historian of Farmersville; Roy D. Goold, Brockport; Helen M. Gould, South Kortright; Irma Mae Griffin, Town Historian of Roxbury; Lloyd Slocum, Cadiz; Daniel Slocum, Franklinville; and Bette Stockman, Town Clerk, Friendship. I am also indebted to Robert F. Gould, Guilford, CN, Beulah Bitterman Gerren, Elkhart, IN, Roberta Hewett Boehlje, Sheffield, IA, and Cecilia H. Volkman, Nora Springs, IA.

In regard to Chapter 9, I am especially indebted to Eeva Duncan Metcalf, Jerico Springs, MO, for much information. She has maintained careful genealogical records of the descendants of Algeroy and Carrie Cross Metcalf, which are utilized in the genealogical section and elsewhere. I also enjoyed the hospitality of her home on several occasions. All of her children: Leland, Lois, and Lorraine, were helpful, in one way or another. Lela Remmy White, Cedar Vale, KS; Fernella Remmy Davison, Warren, PA; Ralph Fesler and Christine Fesler Owens of Dumas, TX; Lucille Metcalf Talbot, Fort Scott, KS; Irvin and Eilene Metcalf, Bauxite, AR; Marsha Metcalf Evans, Alexander,

AR, Lea Metcalf Trent, Norfork, AR and Woodrow and Uthema Metcalf, Jerico Springs, MO--all were generous in providing information and insights. I am unable to thank individually all the many persons who were of assistance at the reunion of the descendants of Ernest and Susie Metcalf at Arcola, MO, in June 1984.

For information included in Chapter 10, I am indebted to Gertrude Hotchkiss Canterbury, Freda McMillan Driscoll, Mary Hotchkiss Farmer, and Marge Hanson, all of Hotchkiss, CO, and Eula Frahm, Bayfield, CO. In Minnie Metcalf Hurt's line, many of her descendants in the area of Riverside, CA, exhibited the utmost in generosity and hospitality. Foremost among these was, certainly, Marie Hurt; her sister, Daisy Hurt Price, and brothers, Clair, Jerry, Verne, Zenus and Zorum, were also most helpful--I especially remember the day spent in Hemet, CA, with Zorum's family. Annette Price Dickson, a granddaughter of Minnie, in Riverside, has been helpful in many ways, including the hosting of two Thanksgiving dinners that I attended. Dorothy Metcalf Snider, Phoenix, AZ, very kindly provided me a genealogical listing of the descendants of her parents, Monett and Zora Thompson Metcalf and much other information about Monett (Chap. 11). In Ben Metcalf's line, Charles C. Metcalf, Richmond, VA, wrote several letters, and, last but certainly not least, are to be noted the efforts of Carl B. Metcalf, Littleton, CO (now, sadly, deceased), who contributed not only a great deal of information, but also wrote most of Chapter 11. I was also grateful for the hospitality of Carl and Eula's home. Carl also provided me with transportation and advice concerning various aspects of the present volume.

In gathering data for Chapter 12, I was fortunate to have the services of Marie Buck Metcalf, the oldest member of our clan whom I was able to interview. Of Aminzo's first family, Grace Metcalf Muilenburg, Manhattan, KS, and the daughters of Dolie Metcalf (Margaret and Ruth Metcalf and Dorothea Metcalf Lott) of Bartlesville, OK, were generous with records, photographs, and recollections. Madeira Fernandez Garcia,

Juanita Fernandez Tomasco, and Rita Garcia Currier, in Florida, all were supportive. Of the second family, Violet Metcalf Grayum provided information shortly before she passed on. Her son, Charles Stroup, III, Midwest City, OK, was also helpful. Maxine (Mrs. Wayne) Nellis made available a Nellis genealogy written by Amy C. Tant and furnished photographs. Ava Nellis Arrington, Fort Worth, TX, provided useful data. In New Mexico, Robert Brakey, Jr., Ralph O. Nellis, and Bessie (Mrs. Gail) Nellis assisted me. Susan Mock Vonderschmidt, Big Lake Village, MO, was most helpful. Earl, Ray, and Edward N. Metcalf of Caney, KS, provided information

Of help in writing Chapter 13 were two grandchildren of Ida Metcalf Hudson: Helen Hudson Elkins, Lawrence, KS, and Clarence H. McGuire, now deceased. Medea Gordon Hudson and Linda McGuire Last were also of assistance. Lena Davison Metcalf, Arkansas City, KS, industriously pursued sources pertaining to the Hudson family in that community and kindly transcribed and typed various items from microfilms and legal records, pertaining to both Chapters 8 and 13.

Much of the information presented in Chapter 14 was supplied by Joy Thomson Lindsey, El Paso, TX, daughter of Dora Metcalf Parsons Thomson. Her son, Gail E. Lindsey, El Paso, TX, was also helpful in numerous ways. Jean Strayer George, Riverside, CA, was surely unstintingly generous in supplying information, letters, photos, and other items pertaining to the family of her grandmother, Myrtle Parsons Strayer Gorton. Dorothy Thomson Poe, Lordsburg, NM, provided information and hospitality on several occasions. Alice Atkin Mountain and Patricia Mountain Wheeler of Oregon contributed information.

The families of Frank M. Metcalf, Artie C. Metcalf, Cecil S. Metcalf, as well as Myrtle Metcalf Johnson, provided a great deal of the information found in Chapter 15. The diaries of Frank M. Metcalf were especially useful

In connection with Chap. 16, I was privileged to visit with Jennie Metcalf Newton on three occasions before she passed on. Beth Metcalf Ewry has been very helpful through

correspondence and telephone conversations. Barbara Metcalf Hoover, Coffeyville, KS, told me numerous things of interest about Maurice Crump "Doc" Metcalf and his family. Bertha Metcalf Hillyard, Cherryvale, KS, and Rutheen Metcalf Hammock, Parsons, KS (daughters of Basil Metcalf), were both helpful. Patty Adey, Independence, KS, compiled a genealogical listing of Maurice Crump Metcalf's descendants, which I especially appreciated.

The above list seems long, yet there are ever so many others who surely deserve recognition, but whom I have not specifically mentioned. I hope that they will accept my thanks "collectively."

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENTS CONCERNING SOME MATERIALS INCLUDED

I gratefully acknowledge the following individuals and firms (listed alphabetically), which extended permissions to utilize materials found on pages or figures (of this study) indicated in parentheses:

Dr. Francis J. Bremer: for permission to quote from his book The Puritan Experiment New England Society from Bradford to Edwards. (pp. 6, 7).

"The Fesler Family": for permission to quote from The Fesler Family Cookbook. (pp. 165, 166).

Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc.: for permission to quote from the book Passengers to America A Consolidation of Ship Passenger Lists from the New England Historical and Genealogical Review, edited by Michael Tepper. (p. 10).

Mr. Robert Hanson and the Dedham Historical Society: for permission to quote and discuss passages from his book Dedham, Massachusetts 1635-1890. (p. 18 and elsewhere in Chapters one and two).

HBJ Farm Publications Inc., Kansas Farmer: for permission to reprint the article "Our Cover Story--'Land of the Post Rock'." by Betty Lou Denton. (pp. 438-439).

Clayton G. Metcalf: for permission to reprint "Whence Came You?" by Isaac Stevens Metcalf. (pp. 367-372).

Mrs. Eula Metcalf: for permission to include that part of Chap. 11 that was written by her late husband, Carl B. Metcalf. Acknowledgment is also made to several members of Monett Metcalf's family, who made contributions to Chapter 11.

W.W. Norton and Co.: for permission to quote from A New England Town The First Hundred Years by Kenneth A. Lockridge. (p. 11).

Oxford University Press: for permission to quote from Puritans and Adventurers Change and Persistence in Early America by T.H. Breen. (pp. 9, 28, and 29).

Mr. Charles B. Stroup: for permission to utilize some of his suggestions concerning the family of Aminzo Metcalf. (pp. 240-241).

Miss Cicelia Volkman: for permission to quote from her letter of 10 December 1985 (pp. 133-134) and from Historical Souvenir of Nora Springs, Iowa, published by the Nora Springs Historical Committee. (p. 133)

In addition, I acknowledge utilization of materials published in the following newspapers or periodicals, which appear on the pages indicated in parentheses: Arkansas City Traveler (pp. 436-437, 473, 483-484); Boston Evening Transcript (p. 392); Boston Traveler (p. 393); The Cedar Vale Messenger (pp. 436, 461, 469, 479); Coffeyville Journal (p. 492); FS Pacemaker (p. 443); Geneva Times of Geneva, NY (p. 404); The Vedette of Greenfield, MO (p. 425); Independence Reporter (p. 493); Lamar Democrat of Lamar, MO (p. 426); The Times-Union of Rochester, NY (p. 411); Seed World (pp. 441, 444); Silver World of Lake City, CO (p. 427); Winfield Daily Courier (pp. 469, 472, 482 and after p. 300).

## CHAPTER 1

### INTRODUCTION

I don't know why I got started tracing my Metcalf ancestors. It commenced once when I had little else to do. I never thought it was a very important endeavor, in the general scheme of things. However, any kind of game can be fun and I regard it as a game. Or perhaps it is more like trying to solve a challenging problem in mathematics. It could be habit-forming, I suspect. After starting, I soon found that I had acquired a very strong desire to push "just one generation farther back."

I suppose that my original motives lay somewhere between egotism and curiosity but as I went along it seemed more and more as though I were unraveling a serial story--with chapters almost--although some chapters were fuzzy and hard to read and some paragraphs were missing. And this story was, at the same time, a practical lesson in American History--something that I had shrugged off long ago in school. Ours is just an example of one family of ordinary Americans, of northeastern, "Yankee" rural and small town origins. However, it is repeated many, many times in the history of the Euroamericans--a history in microcosm, as it were.

I surely do not deceive myself that I am really very closely related to any distant ancestor. For example, if my math is correct, only one part in 1,024 of me could be attributable to the first male ancestor of my Metcalf lineage in America. Or, putting it another way, I have 1,023 other ancestors in his generation, ten back, who are as closely related to me as he is. That is not very much of a relationship. I am not about to trace the other 1,023. One game and one history lesson is enough!

I was always wishing in this "game" that some ancestor could be better visualized or understood. However, I was stopped short in putting flesh on old bones by a lack of data or by contradictory data. I didn't give up trying, however, but I did try to be cautious. For that reason, you will surely become tired of my incessant use of words like "probably," "seemingly,"

"perhaps" and "maybe." I am, nevertheless, inclined to climb out on limbs of speculation. That is my nature. If someone can come along and cut me down with a saw of facts, so much the better, and then she or he can climb out on yet another limb.

### The Name "Metcalf"

The name Metcalf often arouses curiosity as to its origin. Anyone who delves into the genealogical literature will find several theories presented, so I shall not dwell too much on this. Clayton Metcalf (1979:13-14) has reviewed a number of theories. A commonly encountered one suggests that the word "calf" derives from the name of some hills near Craven, Yorkshire, now called the Pennegent Hills, but formerly known as the "Three Calves" (C. Metcalf, 1977:14). Supposedly a Metcalf progenitor lived near the middle calf or hill, from which was derived the prefix mid or med, or met, or whatever. With the reference to hill, I once wondered if calf might be related to cop, which is an ancient English word still used to refer to the top or summit of a hill. However, a bit of research shows that the two words seem always to have gone their separate ways in English, much in their present forms.

The word calf is a venerable one in the Germanic languages, going at least as far back as Gothic kalfr, and throughout its development it seems to have retained the hard c or k sound, an a (or e?) sound, and an f, b, or y sound, as in Ger. Kalb, Du. kalf, and Scand. kalv. In earliest English it was something like caelf. The great Kurath and Kuhn dictionary of Middle English lists some 20 variants of calf. Although the name Metcalf is only some seven centuries old, we might suppose that any ancient Germanic ancestors that we had, descending from the cattle-loving, possibly pastoral Indo-Europeans, were saying things sounding like "come here, calf" back for some millenia.

My own favorite theory as to origin of the name would be that it simply means what it seems to say in 14th century Medecalf, and just refers to a calf in a meadow or mead. The two do often go together. I notice that a recent dictionary of

names (Smith, 1978) agrees with this in deriving the name from "a dweller at or near a meadow where calves were kept."

However, the story accounting for the name that came down my branch of the family, to my father, is the version that supposes that two brothers meet and subdue an escaped and angry bull. Later, when the brothers meet the owner of the animal, he asks them if they have seen his bull. They reply "We met a calf," and hence the name. Julia Metcalf Cary (1937:57-59) discusses this same legend and its possible sources. It was clearly already long in existence when the first Metcalf came to America, and she suggests that it goes back to the time of Edward II in the early 1300's or even farther back. I find it most impressive that this appealing little tale has been kept alive in the family for five or six centuries now. Perhaps this would not be the case if it were not so flattering.

#### Immediate English Ancestors of Michael Metcalf

It has repeatedly been written in genealogies that Michael Metcalf, our forefather, who came to Massachusetts in 1637, was baptized at Tatterford, Norfolk County, England (in the region called East Anglia, northeast of London), on 3 September 1586. Moriarty (1924:63) pointed out that an examination of the parish records at Tatterford showed, instead, that a Leonard Metcalf, son of Leonard, was baptized on that date. Banks (1926:312-313) examined the records at Tatterford and found no reference to Michael, but in the Diocesan Registry at Norwich (county seat of Norfolk County) he found "a deposition of Michael Metcalf in which he describes himself as of Norwich, dornick weaver, aged 45 years, and born in Tatterford." An editorial note adds that it is assumed that Michael, too, is the son of the Rev. Leonard Metcalf, the Anglican vicar of Tatterford. In the Diocesan Registry is an entry of 1614 indicating that Leonard Metcalf, then rector of the parish of Tatterford, where he had been incumbent for 40 years, had been born at Apperside in County York, and was 73 years old. Moriarty (1932:252) continues from all this to point out:

Considerable research shows the impossibility of establishing the ancestry of Michael Metcalf beyond his father, Rev. Leonard Metcalf, rector of Tatterford in Norfolk, who, according to his deposition (*infra*), was born in the hamlet of Apperside, in Wensleydale, Yorkshire. In the extracts from the subsidy of 1542-1544 for Apperside a large number of Metcalfs appear; and, when one remembers that this subsidy represents but a portion of the inhabitants, it is easy to see that a large proportion of the inhabitants were named Metcalf. The names Michael and Leonard were very common in the Metcalf family of this region, where the Metcalfs formed almost a clan. There can be no doubt that the gentle family of the neighboring Nappa Hall were related more or less remotely to the innumerable Metcalfs of the vicarage, but just how it is impossible to say, owing to the lack of wills. It may be suggested, however, that perhaps Rev. Leonard Metcalf was the son of the Michael Metcalf who is found at Apperside in the subsidy of 1542-1544.

McDonald (1937:350-351) also came to the conclusion that we can really only be sure of the fact that the Metcalfs were an old Yorkshire family, and that our forefather, who came to America, had, in turn, a father named Leonard. There are some genealogists who ambitiously attempt to trace the line farther back. Isaac Stevens Metcalf (19\_\_\_\_), for instance, wrote an account entitled Whence Came You, discussing the earlier English Metcalfs. I have included it as the first item in the Appendix, courtesy of Clayton G. Metcalf. The account is very entertaining, but it is probably best not to take some parts too literally, as I don't know how well they would stand up to close historical scrutiny.

Herein, I shall not attempt to look back beyond Apperside in County York, which sounds like nice enough a place, and I care little how closely related our own ancestors were to the "gentle family" that lived in Nappa Hall. I do recall an evening, long ago, in Yorkshire, when three of us Metcalf boys saw our family name on a truck that was parked by some farm buildings along a country road. We stopped, hoping to find some kinspeople about, but only a hired man was there, doing the milking--mead cows, no doubt.

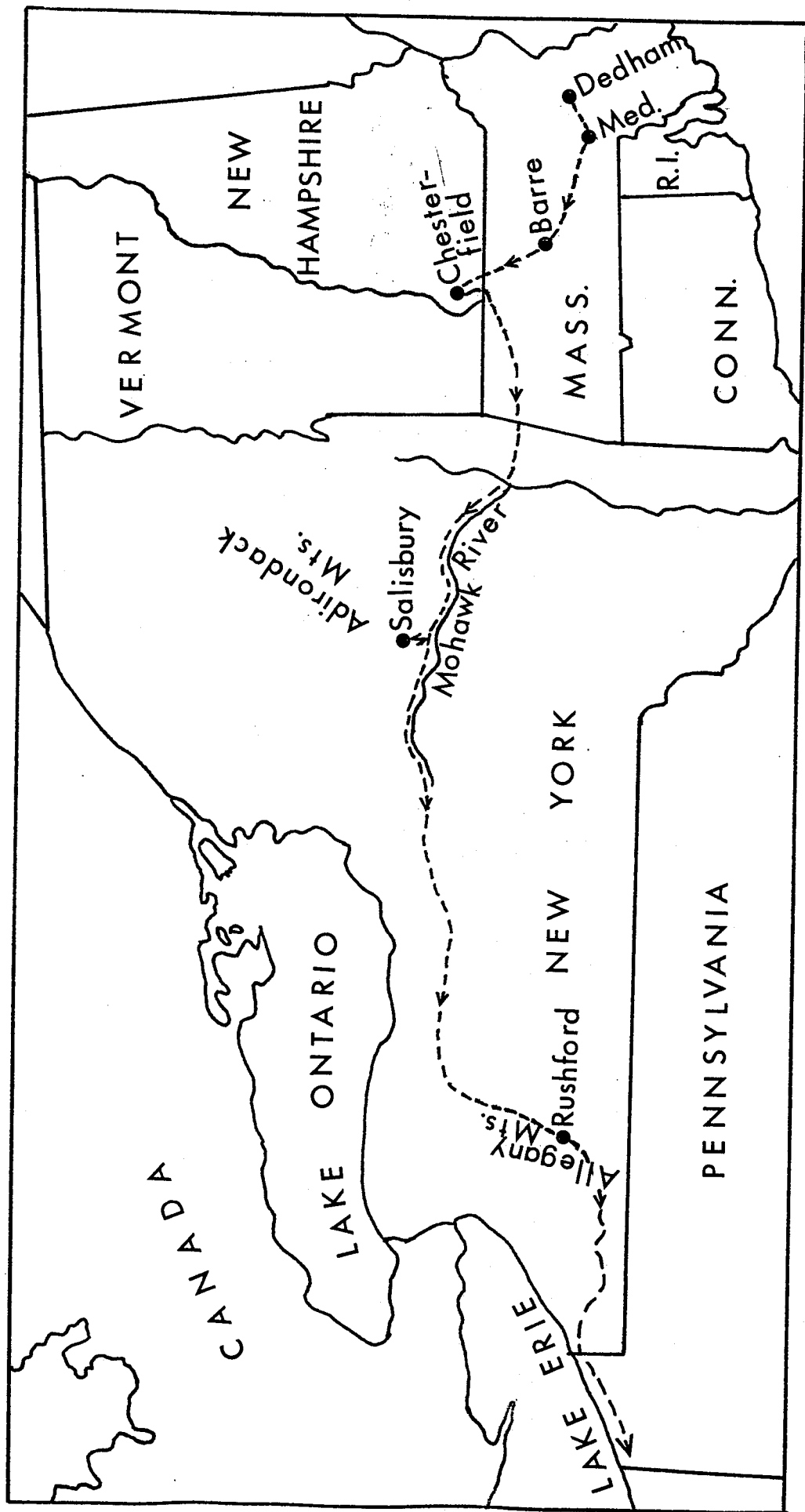


Fig. 1. Map showing areas in northeastern United States where ancestors of Zephi Metcalf lived between 1637 and 1850. Dashed line suggests general routes that might have been followed in progressing westward. The route extending west from Rushford indicates the start of Zephi and Harriet Gould Metcalf's own trek towards the West. Med.=Medfield/Medway area of Norfolk County, Massachusetts.

## CHAPTER 2

## MICHAEL METCALF - DEDHAM

As we noted in the preceding chapter, it seems that Michael Metcalf was born around 1590-1592 in Tatterford, near Norwich, Norfolk Co., England. As regards our remote English grandmother, according to Martin Metcalf (1894:95)\* the parish records of Heigham, a suburb of Norwich, show that Michael married Sarah Ellwyn (variant spellings include Sara, Ellwin and Elwyn) of Heigham on 13 October 1616. Sarah was baptized on 17 June 1598 and was the daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Ellwyn. Some members of the Ellwyn family were still living around Heigham when Martin Metcalf did his research there in the 1890's and he includes some information concerning the family.

Michael must have had a fair education, although I have found no indication that he attended a university. He seems to have been endowed with intelligence and initiative in view of the fact that he must have, as a clergyman's son, started with very little capital and yet he managed to become, even in a traditionalist society, a successful entrepreneur in the weaving industry, which flourished in East Anglia at that time. Of course, we shouldn't assume that all the credit necessarily should go to him. Sarah, no doubt, deserves credit also. The Ellwyn family ties may have been useful to them, inasmuch as Banks (1926:313) refers to the Ellwyns as being "a distinguished family" in Norfolk County. Michael became a master weaver with a factory in Norwich that produced dornix, a thick fabric used for hangings, rugs and heavy curtains. That he was a burgher of some stature in the city of Norwich seems attested to by his receiving a document known as a Freedom\*. This document, in the possession of the Dedham Historical Society, Dedham, MA, is illustrated in Anon. (1892:142) and in Cary (1937:60). It was written in Latin with the following annotation by Michael in elegant penmanship with many a flourish (Senor=Senior):

The Coppy of my fredome of the Citty of Norwich in ye County of Norfolke in ould England Made freman in ye month September: 1618. Michael Metcalf Senor

\* See Appendix

A translation of the first part of the Freedom reads (Anon., 1892:142):

Know ye that Michael Metcalfe, Dornix weaver, bearer of these present, our fellow citizen, in and because of the freedom of the city aforesaid, and dwelling in the same, and by reason of our liberties lately granted and conformed to us by various Kings of England, the same Michael is and ought to be free from every kind of...

There follows a long list of taxes and tolls that he was exempted from paying including tolls for using bridges, a tax for building and repairing town walls, a tax for cleaning out moats and a tax for grazing swine in the woods.

So, in 1618, Michael was doing very well, it seems, as a successful young businessman in the weaving industry. However, at some time and in some wise he became imbued with the spirit of Puritanism. Now, in the earlier 1500's, the Yorkshire Metcalfs had been good Catholics. So good, in fact, that some of their lands in Yorkshire were confiscated in the time of Henry VIII (McDonald, 1937:350). By the time of the Rev. Leonard, however, I suppose that they had become Anglicans, like him. But then came the dissenters--those who wanted to purify the Anglican Church--the Puritans. Quite possibly the Rev. Leonard, himself, had some leanings in this direction. Religion had become, in the Puritan view, more of a personal thing and less of a matter that was defined and administered by an institutionalized church and clergy. Yet, as Puritans were developing this view, the monarchy of Charles I and the Anglican hierarchy came to be especially obtrusive and intrusive into the local governments and churches of the kingdom.

Members of the growing middle class with aggressive, up-and-coming young men like Michael seem to have been especially attracted to Puritanism. It also seemed to appeal to those with better than average education. Bremer writes (1976:180):

In England the Puritans had been noted for their respect for learning, demanding it of the clergy, encouraging it among the laity, and spreading it by the endowment of schools and lectureships. Knowledge, they believed, was

important for reasons of religion--God revealed himself in nature, history, and the Scriptures, and it was man's responsibility to study and learn the lessons thus provided him.

To me, it really does seem that an education would have been necessary in order to understand the complex and difficult Puritan religious philosophy. As Bremer puts it (1976:201) "Puritanism was one of the most subtle and intellectually demanding variants of the Christian faith." Just reading the list of stages through which an individual might proceed in his religious development makes my head spin: election, vocation, justification, sanctification and glorification (from Bremer, 1976:23). Apparently it was none too easy to know just where one of these stages ceased and the next one began nor just how far along one might be in his personal religious quest.

Well, history amply demonstrates that Europeans took their religion very seriously in those long-ago times. So seriously, in fact, that Michael, despite his standing in Norwich, ran afoul of the ecclesiastical authorities there. By the mid-1630's a definite confrontational spirit had developed between the Anglican hierarchy in Norwich and the dissident Puritans. A Bishop Matthew Wren was especially harsh in his attitude towards Puritans and Michael was haled, at least twice, before him and other ecclesiastical authorities there. Eventually he thought it prudent, for his own safety, to forsake Norwich. In January, 1636, he was down in Plymouth, on the south coast. From there he penned a long letter back to his Puritan friends in Norwich, addressed: "To all the true professors of Christs gospel within the city of Norwich." The letter was transcribed into a more modern English by John G. Metcalf and published by him in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register in 1862 (pp. 279-284). I have included this letter in Appendix. I find that it becomes more interesting after several readings.

Michael's letter indicates that his differences with the Anglican church officials were not trivial. He declares that his enemies "conspired against my life, as you know, accusing me

with treason most unjustly." (Church and State were, at the time, essentially one and the same). He proceeds to write:

You are not ignorant (I suppose) of the great trouble I sustained, in the Arch-Deacon's and Bishop's court at the hands of my enemies concerning the matter of Bowing as well as for other matters of like consequence.

Michael refers to the Anglican practice of bowing when the name of Jesus was mentioned. Bremer (1976:10) mentions this, along with numerous other practices, which the Puritans routinely objected to. Many of these were Roman Catholic customs that had been retained by the Church of England, such as signing with the Cross, the dress of the clergy and certain rituals.

Michael displays little in the way of Christian forgiveness of his enemies. Rather, a major part of his letter is given over to railing against them. His language is rather vituperative in places but it is certainly colorful:

I could wish this viperous generation did not so multiply in your city as they do...

or

God (from whom nothing is hid) knoweth what they are; he hath found out your enemies to be profane, malicious, proud disdainful filthy shameless persecutors of and despiteful against his people and truth

or

These Jehus, I do hope, march too furious to hold out long. They may haply prove but summer birds.

On the other hand, however, it does appear that Michael had received his own fair share of invective from the other faction. In writing of his experiences in the ecclesiastical courts he claims that he tried to reason with his accusers using their own churchly writings but that they came back at him with vile crudities (consistory=ecclesiastical court).

..their learned and invincible arguments to refute my assertions were these, "Blockhead--Old heretick,--the Devil made you--I will send you to the Devil," with such other trim stuff, unfitting terms, to be used by a judge in a court of judicature: but of these no more, for these words were not spoken in a corner but in a Consistory.

Michael notes "many strange things are now preached in thine

ears, by your new teachers, which your old preachers would never have endured." In this connection, Breen notes (1980:54):

Motivation appears straightforward enough in a man like the Norwich master weaver Michael Metcalfe. Unlike his shipmates, Metcalfe left a detailed memorial of his particular troubles. He was a parishioner of the suspended Thomas Allen and was himself in trouble with the ecclesiastical courts in 1633 and again in 1636 for failing to bow at the name of Jesus.

I wonder if Michael might have had his own father in mind in referring to the "old preachers."

An element of homesickness creeps into Michael's letter: "O Norwich! The beauty of my native county--what shall I say unto thee." What he, in fact, says to Norwich, a bit later, has the tone of an Old Testament prophet:

O! Norwich! prepare to meet thy God: O Norwich! by repentance and deep humiliation, lest the Lord come against thee to avenge the quarrel of his covenant which thou has broken...

He admonished "sinful Norwich" that "the Lord is about to purge his floor and to thrash his church with the flail of affliction...."

It appears that after arriving in America Michael penned another brief\*or memorandum that describes, again, the trials of his last years in England. This was published by Luther Metcalf Harris (1852:171), who mentions for it the same date (13 January 1636) as for the longer letter, discussed above. Obviously this date is incorrect as events discussed in this second letter postdate 1636. Harris has modernized the English used in this letter:

I was persecuted in the land of my father's sepulchres, for not bowing at the name of Jesus, and observing other ceremonies in religion, forced upon me, at the instance of Bishop Wren of Norwich and his chancellor, Dr. Corbet, whose violent measures troubled me in the Bishop's Court, and returned me into the High Commissioners' Court. Suffering many times for the cause of religion, I was forced, for the sake of the liberty of my conscience, to flee from my wife and children, to go into New-England; taking ship for the voyage at London the 17th of Sept 1636; being by tempests tossed

\* See Appendix

up and down the seas till the Christmas following; then veering about to Plymouth in Old England; in which time I met with many sore afflictions.

Leaving the ship, I went down to Yarmouth, in Norfolk County, whence I shipped myself and family, to come to New England; sailed 15th April, 1637, and arrived three days before midsummer, with my wife, nine children, and a servant.

His three months aboard the storm-tossed ship that never made it to New England must have been terribly grim ones. As he notes, Michael then resolved to migrate with all his family to America. In order to do this the potential emigrant had to have an interview or "examination." Tepper notes (1977:38) (a version with modernized spelling appears in Hotten, 1962:289):

Aprill 8th 1637. The examinacion of Michill Metcalfe of Norwich, Dornix, weauear, aged 45 yeares and Sarrah his wif, aged 39 yeares with 8 Children, Michill: Thomas: Marey: Sarrah: Elizabeth: Martha: Joane: and Rebeca: and his Saruant Thomas Comberbach, aged 16 yeares, are desirous to passe to boston in New England to inhabit.

I have often wished that I could summon up Tommy Comberbach for an interview and get the real "low-down" on the Metcalfs. Note that the above dates would make Michael born about 1592. Tepper indicates (1977:37) that Michael's family is included in a group of whom it is written:

These people went to New England with William Andrews of Ipswich, Mr of the John and Dorethay of Ipswich, and with William Andrewes his Sone Mr of the Rose of Yarmouth.

Whittemore (1967:369) suggests that the ship that bore the Metcalfs was the Rose of Yarmouth. Note that the examination quoted above lists only eight children, excluding John, the second oldest son, then about 15 years old. However, Michael, himself, in the letter quoted above (Harris, 1852:171), noted that nine children came to America, and there is no doubt but that John was a very real person (else we, his descendants, would not be here). Presumably John was simply omitted because of a clerical error as suggested by Savage (1965:203).

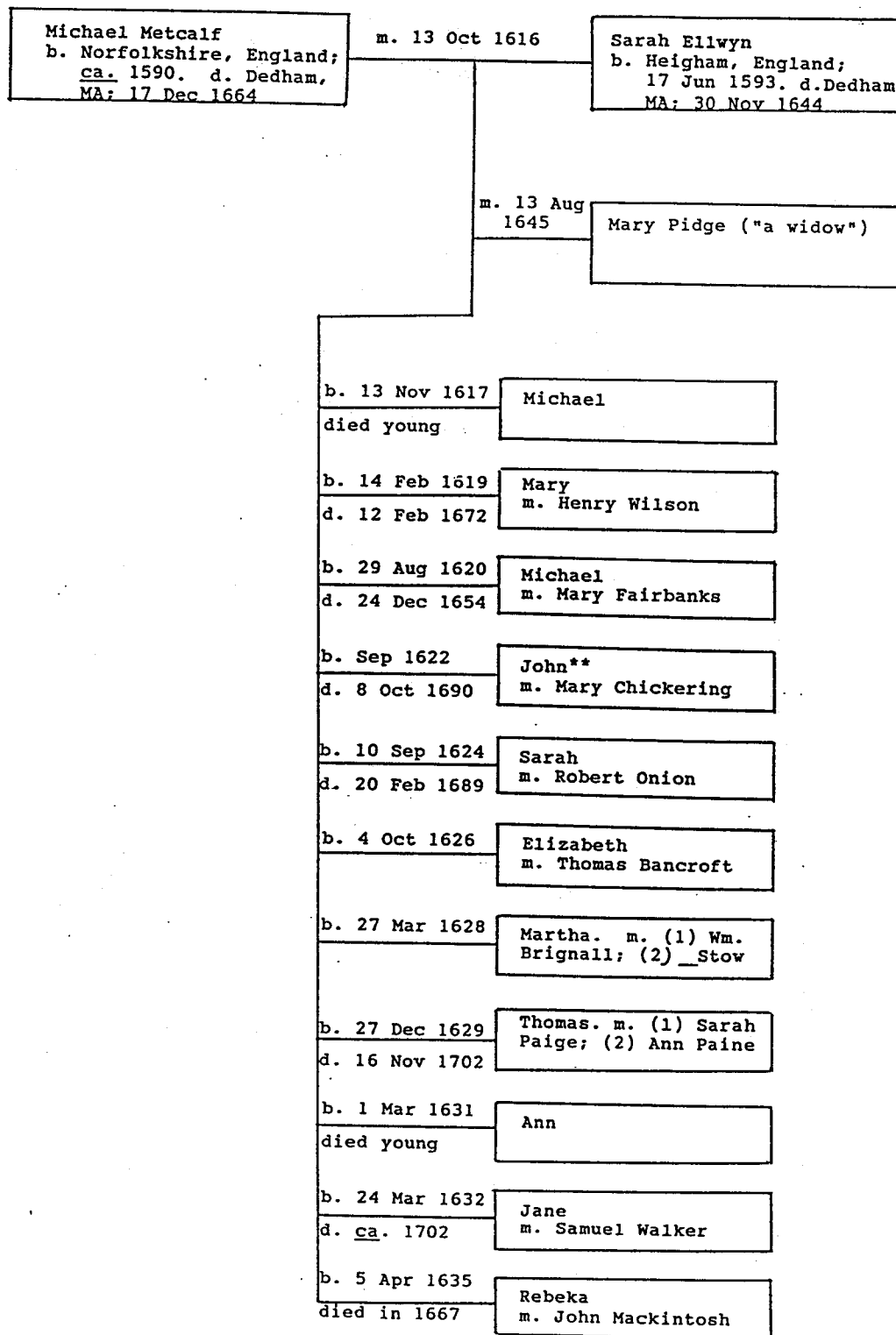


Fig. 2. Children of Michael and Sarah Ellwyn Metcalf, who emigrated from County Norfolk, England, to Dedham, MA. All children were born in England. The lineage leading to Zephi B. Metcalf is indicated by \*\* in this and in succeeding charts. Michael remarried, to Mary Pidge, after the death of Sarah.

Now, my father and uncles still have a tradition that three brothers, in our lineage, had come over from England and, indeed, there were three: Michael the younger, John and Thomas. I was amazed to find that this bit of lore had passed down accurately, across ten generations, and by word of mouth, to my own.

It is probable that Michael did not leave England willingly. As envisioned by Lockridge (1970:57-58) "On abandoning his homeland and his career as a master weaver in provincial Norwich.... Michael Metcalf would go out alone and unwilling to the savage land of Massachusetts. He went with his eyes on England, not on America." However, there may be a bit of hyperbole here, as Michael does seem to have adjusted very well to New England and, in any event, he can hardly be said to have gone out alone what with ten family members and a servant accompanying him.

Savage (1965:203) and Hanson (in litt., 30 September 1981) suggest that the ship bearing the Metcalfs was one of three mentioned in the Journal of Governor John Winthrop (1908:222,223) as arriving in Boston on 20 June 1637:

Three ships arrived here from Ipswich, with three hundred and sixty passengers. The last being loath to come to an anchor at Castle Island, though hailed by the Castle boat, and required, etc., the gunner made a shot, intending to shoot before her for a warning, but the powder in the touch-hole being wet, and the ship having fresh way with wind and tide, the shot took place in the shrouds and killed a passenger, an honest man. The next day the governor charged an inquest, and sent them aboard with two of the magistrates (one of them being deputed coroner) to take view of the dead body, and who, upon hearing all the evidence, etc., found that he came to his death by the providence of God.

This last comment seems an example of Puritan thinking. It appears, then, that the welcome to Massachusetts was not a very warm one for the Metcalfs. However, I assume that they soon made their way down to Dedham, southwest of Boston, where things were probably more cordial. According to Mr. and Mrs. Arthur Blood, curators of the famed Fairbanks House of Dedham in 1981, the families of Michael Metcalf and Jonathan Fairbanks had known

each other in England and I suppose that it would, indeed, have been a warm reunion when the Metcalfs arrived in 1637--they happy that the tribulations of their two-month voyage were over and the Fairbankses glad to see friends from "home." I suppose that a connection between the two families, back in England, could have come about in several ways: (1) an acquaintanceship harking back to the time when Michael's father lived in Yorkshire, home of the Fairbanks family; (2) a professional relationship stemming from Jonathan being a wool merchant and Michael a weaver; or (3) an acquaintanceship arising during a time when the Fairbanks family might have lived briefly in Norwich before embarking for America in 1633.

According to Mr. and Mrs. Blood, the Metcalf family lived with the Fairbanks family until their own home was ready for occupancy, two house-lots to the southeast of the Fairbanks house-lot (Fig. 3). Presumably, then, the first dwelling-place of our family in America is still preserved--in the Fairbanks House of Dedham. It is located at 511 East Street, a street that was originally an Indian trail (Hanson, 1976:25). The central part, consisting of two rooms, down, and two upstairs, was the original part of the home. There is also a roomy loft above the second story. Here, the Bloods suggested, must have been cozily bedded down the six Fairbanks and nine Metcalf children in hay or straw. For people who had endured the terribly crowded conditions of a trans-Atlantic crossing of those days, the loft would have seemed amply spacious I should imagine. Such lofts must have been common back in East Anglia, because Michael mentioned (Harris, 1852:171):

my enemies conspired against me to take away my life,  
and, sometimes, to avoid their hands, my wife did hide  
me in the roof of the house, covering me over with straw

In other words, the houses of early Dedham were constructed on an English model, as might be expected. Our ancestors, there, were not living in log cabins, a kind of dwelling that developed at a later time in America. As pointed out by Dow (1972:3) the New England colonists were at work sawing planks for houses,

fortifications, etc. almost from the moment of their arrival on the Mayflower.

The Metcalf family settled near their Fairbanks friends. Robert B. Hanson writes (in litt., 30 September 1981):

The Michael Metcalf "homelot" was situated two lots south of the Fairbanks "homelot" on East Street. Modern Park Street would approximate the southern boundary of the Metcalf plot.

A handsome, large home at 589 East Street, presently home of the Kenney family, seems likely to be on or very near the site of the Metcalf domicile. Mrs. Kenney (pers. comm., 2 August 1985) confirmed that this had been ancient Metcalf property and noted that the older, central part of the house was very old. Perhaps there are some walls or foundations dating back to Michael's time. I have always supposed that the Metcalf house was constructed much on the model of the Fairbanks house. However, Michael was independent enough and seemingly had enough knowledge of homebuilding, himself, that his home might have been rather different. Nevertheless, the experience that had been derived by the Fairbanks family in building their home in a new land should have been of much use to the Metcalfs. Despite its overall height, the ceilings of the Fairbanks House are only about six feet high and doorways so low that I got a good rap on the head when I forgot to duck my 5' 8". In Michael's time, people were obviously short.

In the Fairbanks House are preserved today (1981), two trunks (or chests) used by the Metcalfs. These are plain chests, some 4 to 5 feet long, and one of them has the MM of Michael Metcalf carved on the front. At the Dedham Historical Society Museum, High and Church Streets, are preserved two more chests, brought from England by the Metcalf family. One is a small one illustrated in Hanson (1976:1) about two feet long and a foot high, with hasp, in which Michael is said to have kept his important papers. The other chest is mentioned by McDonald (1937:352):

The great chest which he brought with him was treasured by successive generations of his descendants until

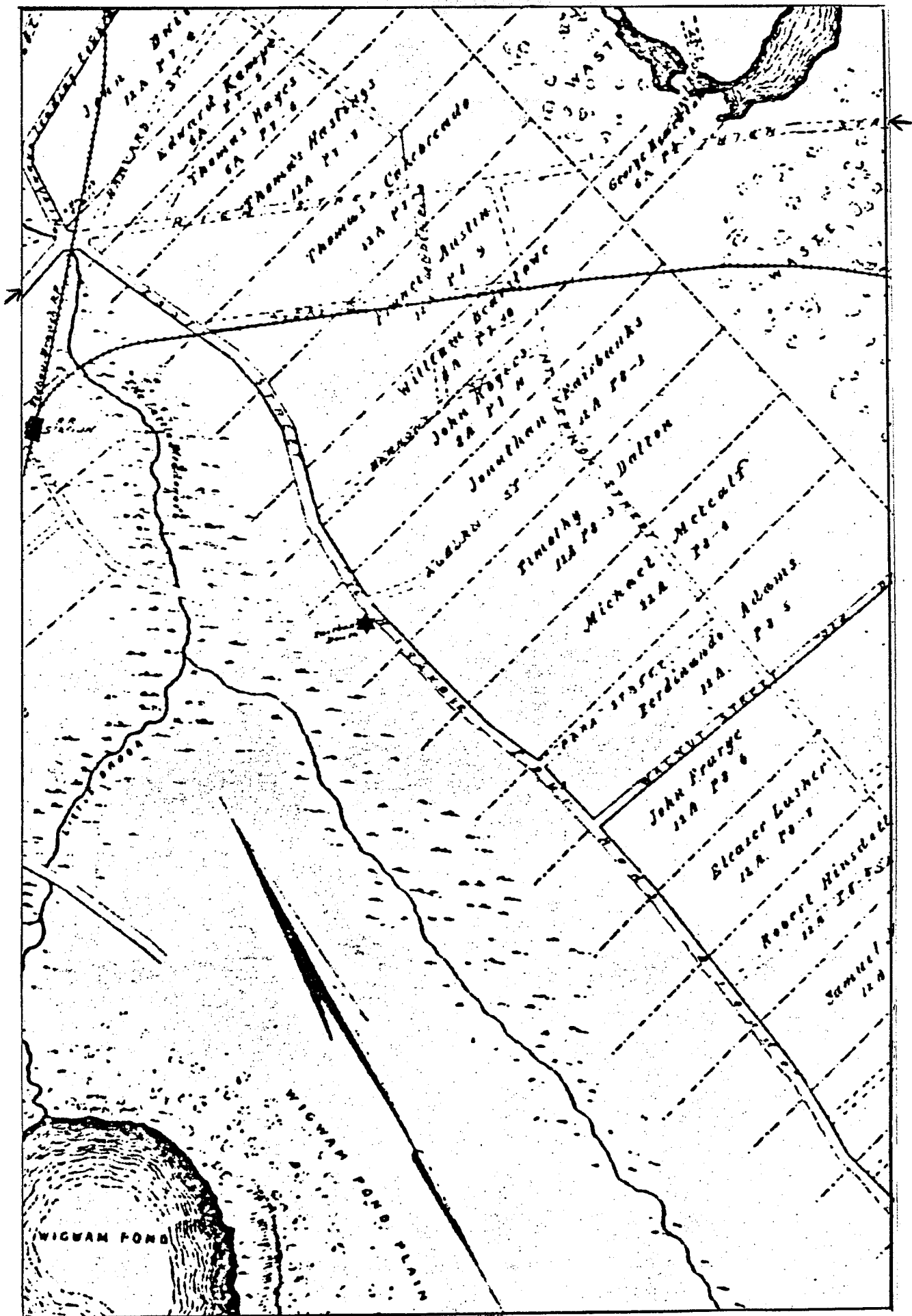


Fig. 3-a

Fig. 3-b

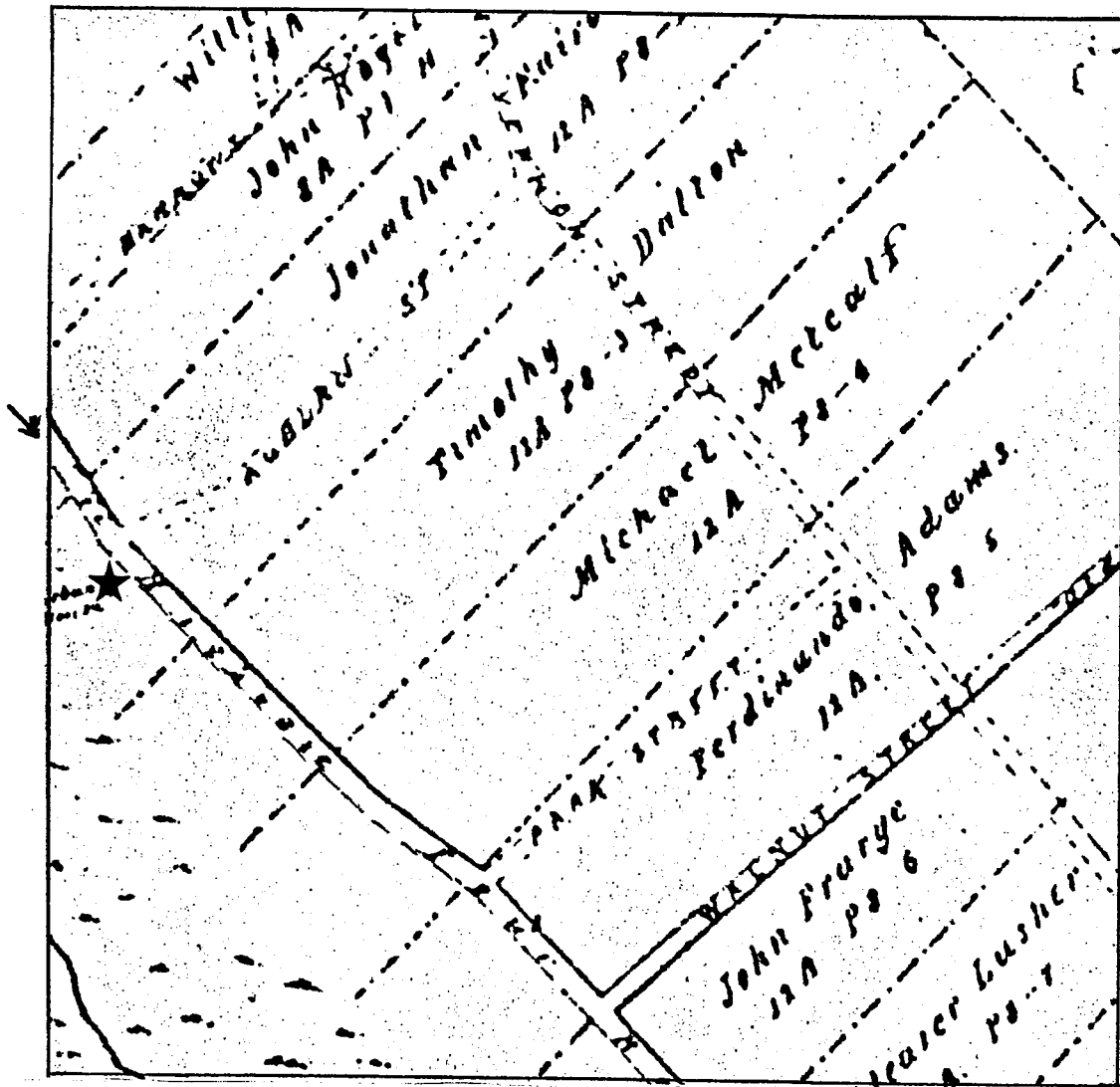


Fig. 3. This is a copy of a part of a map provided (August, 1985) by Mr. Robert Hanson, Town Clerk of Dedham, MA. Fig. 3-b is an enlarged detail from Fig. 3-a, showing the area of the lot of Michael Metcalf in the eastern part of Dedham. The legend on the map states: "Plan showing approximately the location of lots of land in Dedham Village and vicinity, as first granted by the proprietors to individuals. The references on the lots are to the Proprietors Records Vol. 2. The figures before the letter A denote the number of acres granted--Those after the letter P, the Page, and Item, in the Record. The original Roads are shown by black lines. Those of later date by dotted lines. Drawn October 1862-'76 by M.S. Talbot." Mr. Hanson informs me that the map was originally published by Talbot in a small brochure and later reprinted in a history of Dedham by Frank Smith (1936). I have indicated the location of the Fairbanks House by a star. It is located on East Street, the prominent street extending diagonally from upper left to lower right in Fig. 3-a, and marked by marginal arrows in Fig. 3-b. Presumably the original Michael Metcalf home occupied a similar position on East Street, two lots south of the Jonathan Fairbanks lot. The acreage and Proprietor's record information for the Metcalf lot is "12 A P 3-4." In Fig. 3-a, the small marginal arrows indicate High Street. The black rectangle near the upper left margin indicates the railroad station. A part of Wigwam Pond and Plain are shown at lower left

December, 1887, when it was deposited with the Dedham Historical Society by Elizabeth Metcalf.

This attractive chest is of a type now called a Nonsuch Chest, because it bears architectural designs of towers and buildings that resemble illustrations of Nonsuch Palace, built by Henry VIII at Cheam, Surrey. The designs are produced by inlays of woods of different colors and patterns. Near the chest is an oaken armchair made for Michael. It bears the letters MM and the date 1652 and is also illustrated in Hanson (1976:79). A placard concerning the chair states (1985): "Wainscot Chair. Southeastern Massachusetts, 1652, oak, the oldest dated piece of American furniture, this "great chair" was owned by Michael Metcalf. It was used with a large seat cushion and stool; underneath was safe storage for books." A "blanket chest" used by early Metcalfs is also in the Museum. Dow points out (1972:21) that there were no closets in 17th century New England homes and chests and trunks were utilized for storage of clothing, bedding, etc. (However, in the newer parts of the Fairbanks House there were some small closet-like cubicles for storage).

It is rather remarkable that, in the 1970's, two books were published concerning the history of Dedham: (1) A New England Town, The First Hundred Years, Dedham, Massachusetts, 1636-1736 (Lockridge, 1970) and (2) Dedham, Massachusetts, 1635-1890 (Hanson, 1976). These books draw, in turn, from the various exceptionally well preserved and published records of the town of Dedham, almost from the time of its inception, including especially those compiled and edited by Don Gleason Hill in the 1880's and 1890's. Thus, much is available for one interested in learning about this interesting community. Dedham was founded as a community by and for Puritans and with utopian ideals. The early townsmen produced a covenant, which had, as its first priority, a pledge to live in Christian, cooperative love with each other. The covenant was signed and bound the signator and his descendants (they hoped). Potentially worthy members were carefully culled before selection. Applicants had to undergo a

public questioning process before acceptance. The culling process began in August 1636 (Lockridge, 1970:4-8).

Michael Metcalf arrived in Massachusetts in June 1637 and was accepted as a townsman of Dedham on July 18 (?) so he must have sailed through the selection process faster than he sailed the Atlantic. It is not too surprising that a prominent businessperson with impeccable Puritan credentials should gain ready acceptance. Lockridge (1970:12) suggests that those who had already attained some wealth and prominence back in England received some preferential treatment.

After all that has been said about religion, it may seem strange that there was not yet a church in Dedham when the Metcalfs arrived, either as an organization or as a building. According to Hanson (1976:37) they did hold prayer meetings and services under trees during the warmer months of 1637 and, on 1 January 1638, a committee was chosen "to contrive the fabric of a meetinghouse to be in length 36 foot & 20 foot in bredth...and to order men to work upon same." The first name on this committee of four was that of Michael Metcalf. As Hanson points out (p. 37) the building of a meetinghouse was no small matter and the records seem to indicate that the committee was much involved with their charge. The meetinghouse was apparently finished towards autumn of 1638. Hanson notes (1976:38) "The creation of a meetinghouse was an involved process, but certainly no less complex than the creation of a Church to occupy the structure." The selection of early members of the church was a long and tortuous process, as the lives, philosophies, and works of potential members were analyzed in what seems to have been excruciating detail. In order to qualify, an applicant had to show convincing evidence of being among God's elect. Obviously the first step in this was to convince one's self of election, which, it seems to me, may not have been too easy. A group of eight members are identified by Hanson (p. 41) as pillars of the church and Michael's name is not among them. He did not attain membership until 1639. In fact, the first member of his family to be taken into the church

was not Michael, but his oldest daughter, Mary (Hill, 1888:21). Mary was "received" into the church in June, 1639, followed by Michael-1 on 24 August and mother Sarah on 11 October. Michael-2 was received on 1 March 1640, John on 19 May 1643 and Thomas on 3 May 1650. At this point I begin to suspect that Michael was, after all, perhaps more interested in building meetinghouses, in education (see below), and in tangibles like dornix and chests and construction materials than he was in the complex religious discussions and problems that developed in Dedham. At least, I don't see his name mentioned in connection with such discussions.

As mentioned above, Michael was granted a house lot (Fig. 3) on East Street. Additional parcels of land were also allocated for various purposes. Hanson (1976:30) illustrates a land grant certificate allocating him a parcel of meadow on 18 July 1637. This and other such parcels were some distance away from the home lot. Thus, the early Dedhamites employed a European practice of commuting to their lands from the village, where they lived rather closely together. Life was intensely social, it seems, with scant opportunity for privacy in the crowded houses nor in the village or fields--and yet they had just settled in a "wilderness." Life was preeminently centered on the village. The American farm, as it later developed, had not yet appeared.

Dedham was definitely not a socialist (though highly social) community, yet it did practice some interesting communal undertakings such as allocating parcels within a large field to individual farmers but with the decision as to what was to be planted in the field decided collectively by the entire group.

From his will (see below) it seems that Michael had woodlots and cedar swamps from which lumber was presumably harvested for the nearby sawmill. Harris (1852:171) notes that a clay pit used in the manufacture of bricks was located on his property. He had cattle, as he had privileges in the cow commons, and gave a cow to a son. In the deeds of Suffolk County is recorded (Liber I, Deed 2--Trask, 1880):

Jno dwight Constable of dedham: informed me & desired might be recorded that ...ffisher of Dedham: the 6 12/mo. 55 tooke up a strajed Cow wch was for Colour black bodied bobtajle some grey haires on his left flancke was Cryed at Boston & dedha to law. & Prised by michael metcalf. & Tho. metcalf at 3 lb 10 s wth in a weeke

The Dedham Town Records (Hill, 1892) show Michael involved in a variety of tasks in his new home and not ones that he likely had had much direct experience with back in England. As he was placed on the meetinghouse construction committee, it appears that he must have picked up some knowledge of building and of building materials somewhere in his career. The crafting of furniture seems to have interested him, as noted above, and he was apparently a skilled woodcarver himself. At least, in the Fairbanks House, there is a miniature (5 or 6 in. long) carving of a coach and pair, said to have been carved and painted by Michael for a young daughter. The coach is red with white decorations and wheels with green spokes. A lady in the coach wears a black cape over a red gown and has a black hat. The driver has a red uniform with white trim and ruffed collar. There are reins of cord. A coachman is riding one horse. There is also a box that Michael fashioned to contain this treasure. Michael's woodcarving ability interested me as I knew of several descendants, who also have woodcarving as a hobby (Artie C. Metcalf, F. Wayne Metcalf, Gail Lindsey).

In 1639, Michael, along with Francis Chickering (also our ancestor) and William Bullard, were woodreeves, whose duty was to "heerafter set out and appoynt such tymber trees unto such of our Towne as shall haue need thereof." At other times he was on committees to lay out lots. In 1640 he was chosen one of seven selectmen for the town for a year's term (he missed four out of 14 meetings--all in the fall and winter months).

Most surprising is the fact that Michael, when well into his sixties, had, as his final career (in a life marked by changes of occupation) that of village schoolmaster of Dedham. Dedham is

noteworthy for having established the first free public school in the colonies. Hanson (1976:45) describes it thus:

In Dedham, the process of education was open to all, and supported by a general taxation upon the whole of the town's population. For its day, that system was quite an innovation, but it was indicative of Dedham's great concern for the development of education in general....

Apparently the first session of the school was conducted in 1645, in the meetinghouse. This first meetinghouse, as noted above, was at the site of the present Unitarian Church on the south side of High Street between Bullard and Court Streets. In 1649, just to the east of the meetinghouse, between it and Court Street (in an area now a grassy lawn), was constructed a combination school and watch-house (for the night watch). The school portion was 15' x 18', the length including the chimney. A plaque on a large stone on High Street commemorates and points out the site of the school. Crawford (1941:12) notes that the Dedham public school was exceptional in another way:

Dedham's school enterprise differed from that of many another New England town in that its educational expenditures were regularly provided for, and the man entrusted with the training of its youth adequately paid for his work. We find it written down as the vote of eighty-four "freemen," who assembled in 1651 to legislate on these matters, that the "settled mayntenance or wages of the schoolmr.: shall be 20 pounds p ann at ye leaste." This at a time when men hired in some other Massachusetts towns were being given one pound. "to tech the biger children."

In 1656 a teacher was difficult to secure for the Dedham school and the selectmen turned to Michael, who was then around 65 years old. His years as Dedham's schoolmaster have been discussed by Slafter (1890), who includes, also, a small drawing of the Dedham school-watch-house on his page 89 and the signature of Michael on page 91. Pertinent pages are copied in the Appendix. It would appear that a good deal of close bargaining went into the preparation of the contract or covenant between Michael and the selectmen. Michael always seems to have had a good mind for details. Seemingly the adjacent meetinghouse was cooler than the schoolhouse, for which reason the provision

was made for teaching there in warmer weather. It is interesting to note that even young Puritan children might, on occasion, be expected to break out a windowpane. Michael taught two years and part of a third in his first stint. Perhaps illness or some other incapacity prevented him from terminating the third year. Another teacher took over but he, in turn, failed to finish his second year and Slafter relates another covenant on his p. 122, also given in the Appendix.

An arithmetic text written by Robert Record was used by Michael when he taught at Dedham. The book is still preserved by the Dedham Historical Society. I was shown the book in 1985 and told that some pages had recently been copied from it and distributed to a local mathematics class so that students could see how math was taught 350 years ago. The text by Record was also the subject of an article by Smith (1894). She quoted a number of the admonitions, exercises and problems contained in it. Such topics as loans, interest, tares and allowances, loss and gain, weights and measures, extraction of roots and barter were included. Lest we underrate the intellectual capacity of our ancestors, here are two sample problems (Smith, 1894:108):

A Student hath bought 3  $1/2$  yards of broad Cloth at 7 quarters broad, to make a Gown, and should line the same throughout with Lamb at a foot square each skin, the question is now, how many skins he ought to have.

Two barter: The one hath Kerseyes at 14 pounds the piece ready money; but in barter he will have 18 pounds: and yet he will have the  $1/3$  part of his overprice in ready money. And the other hath Ginger at eight groats the pound to sell for ready money. The question is, how he ought to deliver the Ginger by the pound in barter to save himself harmlesse, and make the barter equall.

(Kersey was a kind of coarse cloth or a garment made from it).

A deposition written by Michael was recorded in the deeds of Suffolk Co. (Liber II, 55) in October 1654. It has to do mainly with promises he had made ten years before to his son, Michael-2, at the time of the latter's marriage to Mary Fairbanks, daughter of Jonathan--just up the street. Some

mention is made also of two unmarried daughters and of Thomas, the youngest son. Michael-2 died in December 1654, so perhaps some premonition of this instigated formalizing and recording the deposition in October of that year. No mention is made of the remaining daughters nor of John, our ancestor. Recall, that John was also left out of the list of persons who were to sail to America. Did Michael have a habit of forgetting about John? Perhaps many second sons feel they are "forgotten." In any event, John seems to have done all right (did he try harder?), as indicated in a listing of the values of houses in Dedham in 1648 and 1651 as published in Hill (1892:153,154; 183,184):

	1648		1651	
	Pounds	Shil.	Pounds	Shil.
John Allin (highest value)	45	36	31	--
Francis Chickering	30	24	23	20
Jonathan Fairbanks	28	23	20	17
Michael Metcalf, Sr.	25	20	17	15
Michael Metcalf, Jr.	8	--	3	--
John Metcalf	8	7	6	5
Thomas Metcalf	--	--	5	--
Lowest value on list	2	--	--	3

Sarah Ellwyn Metcalf died on 30 November 1644. An entry concerning her demise appears in Dedham Church Records (Hill, 1888:39): "Sarah ye wife of our brother Micl Mettcalfe Senr died co'fortably Nov'r 30. 1644. aged 51 years 5 mo. 13 days. She was born at Wagnham near Norwich June 17. 1593--married October 13. 1616" According to Martin Metcalf (1894) Sarah was born at Heigham, not Waynham, and in 1598, not 1593.

Michael remarried, to Mary Pidge, a widow of nearby Roxbury, on 13 August 1645. Remarriages in these early colonial days were often even more hasty than this. Dedham Church Records (Hill, 1888:31) indicate that "ye wife of br: mettcalfe sen." was not received into the Dedham church until 1649. As noted below, it seems that the Widow Pidge must have been a woman of some means.

Michael-1 wrote a will\* in September 1664, the year of his death, the text of which has been published by Harris (1852:172-173). (I have changed "u" to "v" to accord with modern spelling). In regard to his second wife, Michael noted:

Wheras, there is a Covenant Between my selfe and Mary my Wife, made before our marriage, bearing Date the 13th of August 1645, wherein it may appear that she reserved to her selfe, and to her dispose, her Lands, and Estate, so that I received no Estate with her;...

However, he shows what a generous husband he is by going on to write:

...yet, neverthesse, I give unto her ffor the terme of her widowhood, in household stuffe, and other goods, as shee thinkes meete to Chuse, for her use, not exceeding the value of sixteene pounds, and being not such as I shall particularly otherwise Dispose of, in this my Last will; which household stuffe, so Chosen by her, shall Bee to ffurnishe the Roome, which my Executor shall prepare for her, at his house, to Receive her into, after my Decease.

Note that Michael did place some limits on how much and what things Mary could "chuse," in his usual painstaking manner of doing things. The executor mentioned was Michael's youngest son, Thomas. By this time, Michael-2 had died and John was living several miles away in Medfield. To Thomas (whose signature is depicted in Harris, 1852:173), Michael willed:

...all that my Land in Naponset plaine, and three Acres Laying in ye Low plaine, next Peter Woodward's. Also, halfe my Divident in ye Cedar swampe, neer the Saw mill, & 3 Commons & ye odde.

On his grandson, Michael-3a (the son of Michael-2), old Michael bestowed the greater part of his estate, which was subsequently reckoned at 364 pounds, 18 shillings and 5 pence (Harris, 1852:172):

Unto my Grandchild, Michael Metcalfe, the Elder, all that my Land and Improvements within the Lott I Dwell in, my three acres in ye wigwaom plaine, my swompe next my house, provided he give my Executor that Little parcell of his swampe west end of his house, otherwise my gifte to be voyd. Also I give him my Naticke Dividend of twenty three acres, more or Lesse; four Cow Commons; half my Cedar swampe, at the Saw mill; my wood Land, at the West end of the Towne; all the particulars I have

\* See Appendix

belonging to husbandry, in one Kind or another; all the Remainer of my Household stuffe not Disposed of in this my Will.

Note the little threat directed to grandson Michael-3a if he did not hand over the "Litle parcell of his swampe" to his uncle Thomas. A swamp extended, north-south, a short distance to the west of East Street, along which the Metcalf, Fairbanks and other houses in that area were located. The swamp was still there in August 1985 and supported a colorful stand of magenta fireweed around its edges. Beyond the swamp was Wigwam Plain and Wigwam Pond.

I was especially interested to see what Michael bestowed on his son, John, my own direct ancestor, and who seemed to have been overlooked sometimes, heretofore. John received "one ffeather bed & Bolster, my second Book of Martyrs, Mr. Perkins second Book, Luther on the gala;\*one silver spoone, one pair of sheets, one Long Chest, in the upper Chamber, one Diaper Boardcloth." The last item probably refers to a tablecloth with a repetitive diaper pattern. William Perkins (1558-1602) was a Calvinist preacher and author, whose writings were popular with the Puritans. Dow (1972:12) mentions an estate inventory of the 1630's that contained Perkins' works in three volumes. Well, apparently John didn't fare too well. Of course, he had moved off to Medfield, some 10 miles to the southwest, whereas Thomas had remained in Dedham, and, as noted in the will, had agreed to give Mary, his stepmother, a room in his home after Michael's death. It seems likely that the bulk of the estate went to grandson Michael-3a because of the prevailing system of primogeniture that entailed inheritance to firstborn sons (Michael-3a being the firstborn son of Michael-2, also an eldest son). Of course, there may also be some grandfatherly likes and dislikes involved.

John's second son was also named Michael (Michael-3b) and, in an addendum to his will, Michael-1 requests that "All the Books, aforesaid, given to my sonne John, after his Death, I give them to his Sonne Michael, my Grand childe." It seems a bit

\* Galatians

presumptuous to be telling John what to do in his own legacies but, perhaps, it gives us some insight into the personality of old Michael, probably a typical stern paterfamilias of his time. To his daughters Elizabeth and Rebecca he bequeathed five pounds each, to Sarah, three pounds, to Mary and Joane (Jane), 40 shillings each, and to poor Martha only 20 shillings. What criteria was he using with the daughters? Their legacies are not related to their age. I gather that there are some messages in this will. Was he telling Martha to mend her ways? Anyway, he gave her son, by her first marriage, four pounds. And did Michael-1 give John those religious books because he thought John needed them--as well as John's son, Michael-3b--both our direct ancestors? Apparently old Michael knew full well what he was doing (as usual) and anticipated some protest, because he sternly laid down the following:

Moreover, if any of ye p sons that are Legatees in ye my present will, shall by themselves, or by any others, make, or Cause to bee made, any Disturbance, or Contortion, in word or Deed, in Reference to any thing given, in this my will, then, all that Legacye, to that p son, shall be utterly voyde.

So that was our Puritan forefather getting in a last patriarchal admonition to his descendants. That he felt it necessary to make such admonitions indicates that he did not altogether trust his offspring not to make some kind of "disturbance"--these young people of the New World, already, perhaps shying away, just a bit, from Puritan precepts.

Although there are no stones for the earliest Metcalfs that died in Dedham, they are surely buried in the small cemetery at the south end of Bullard Street. A plaque at the entrance to the graveyard reads:

The Burial Place. This portion set apart in 1636. Enlarged in 1638. It was the only burial place for nearly a century. Here were buried Allin, Adams, Belcher, Dexter and Haven, Ministers of the Church....

The church referred to is the Congregational Church into which the Puritan "church" evolved. The Congregational Church building of today is a block north of the cemetery at the corner

of Bullard and High Streets, having been relocated there, across the street from its original site, where the old meetinghouse of Michael's day was erected and where the present Unitarian Church is located. I was amused to see that the cemetery is now adjacent to an Episcopal Church, which may throw its morning shadows onto Michael's resting place. Recall that he came to America precisely to escape some practices of the Anglican Church of his day, so I think he must not rest easy with his grave so close to this American version of the Anglican communion. Some information concerning the cemetery was communicated to me by Robert B. Hanson (in litt., 30 September 1981):

The oldest standing Metcalf stone in the Old Village Cemetery seems to date from 1702.

The oldest stone dates from 1678...prior to 1700(+) slate had to be imported, which made gravestones a luxury, and an expensive one, at that. Presumably Michael and most of his immediate family and progeny are all interred but unmarked at Dedham.

The Episcopal Church was not located at that site until 1850, so we can assume that Michael rested comfortably, free from Anglicans, for at least 200 years.

There is a row of 20 Metcalf gravestones, located about 175 ft. west of the back side of the Episcopal church, under some dark and brooding tamarack trees. The oldest, 1702, stone, mentioned above by Hanson, is that of Michael's youngest son, Thomas. Its inscription is still quite legible and reads (see also Hill, 1888:276):

Here lyes ye Body of Deacon Thomas Metcalf. Aged 73 years. Died Novembr ye 16, 1702.

As noted above, Michael-2 died rather young. He left five youngsters, the oldest about ten. He was the Michael-3a, discussed above, to whom old Michael-1 willed much of his estate. I suppose that Michael-3a remained in the old family home on East Street in Dedham. If the genealogy of Harris (1852:173-174) is correct, Michael-3a left no descendants named Metcalf beyond his grandchildren. Michael-3a had sons,

Michael-4a, Thomas, Eleazar and Daniel but only Thomas had sons: Thomas and Michael-5a. Michael-5a and his father, Thomas, before him, seem to have lived in the old Metcalf home.

Michael-3a's brothers, Jonathan and Eleazar, were more prolific. A son of Jonathan, named John, had 18 children, distributed among three wives. He gave the Metcalf name quite a boost. At least three of his children lived into their nineties--one daughter to age 99! Eleazar moved to the nearby town of Wrentham and gave rise to a large clan of Metcalfs there. All these Metcalfs are descendants of Jonathan Fairbanks, through his daughter, Mary, who married Michael-2. The descendants of Jonathan Fairbanks organized "The Fairbanks Family in America, Inc." in the early 1900's. They have their headquarters on the grounds of the Fairbanks House in Dedham, maintain the House and hold an annual reunion there. Already in 1902, over 700 gathered for the first Fairbanks reunion to be held in Dedham, according to the curators of the house. Mary Fairbanks Metcalf, left a young widow at about age 34, by the death of Michael-2, remarried a little over four months later to Christopher Smith and they had a son, John (Guild, 1897:105).

Old Michael-1's youngest son, Thomas, married Sarah Paige by whom he had several children, including sons Samuel, Thomas and John, who grew to maturity. After the death of Sarah, Thomas remarried, to Anne Paine. Thomas must have been a devout one as he became a deacon, which was considered a signal honor in Puritan society. There was also a sprinkling of deacons and ministers among the descendants of Michael-2 but none in John's line that I have noted, at least for several generations. Thomas must have been much liked for I find in records of the Suffolk Co. Court (Forbes, 1933:399,885) that he was chosen in 1674 by his nieces, Elizabeth and Hannah Onion, whose father, Robert, had died, as their guardian and, again, in 1678, Daniel and Hannah Farrington chose him as their guardian.

Against my better judgment, I might essay a few comparative remarks about those "three brothers, who came over from England" that I first heard about so long ago. Michael-2 hardly seems to

emerge from the shadows. Possibly he suffered from some impairment of health related to his early demise. In any event, one sees no evidence of the drive that his father had displayed as a young man. John may have been more like old Michael in this regard. Perhaps they were too much alike to get along well. Anyway, I fancy John as having more of the pioneering spirit than the others, who remained in Dedham. Probably Selectman John was more oriented towards worldly matters than his brother, Deacon Thomas. Thomas may have been the kindest and best-liked of the three, living out his days in Dedham in harmony with church and associates, we might suppose.

\* \* \* \* \*

Breen (1980) has analyzed the roots of the political, social and religious behavior of the New England Puritans, as they developed in Old England. He has given special attention to that "sample" of emigrants, which left England in the year 1637, deeming records of that year to be relatively more informative than of some other years. In 1637, 193 emigrants departed from Great Yarmouth in Norfolk County, listing their age, profession, place of origin and probable destination in America. Among these was the family of Michael Metcalf. His case was useful in such a study since he had set down in writing his reasons for leaving England, as we have observed above. As Breen notes (1980:54) Michael's reasons for leaving were all of a religious nature. Lockridge (1970:57) points out that he left England because of religious persecution--and unwillingly. This kind of evidence is of interest to those who ponder to what extent the migration from England to New England, at that time, involved religious and to what extent economic motives.

The pivotal issues that resulted in the exodus of Puritans to Massachusetts in the 1630's were, in the view of Breen, related to practices instituted by the monarchy of Charles I, who came to the throne in 1625 (and who lost both his throne and his head in the 1640's). Charles had a compelling desire to see his realm tidily centralized. He chipped away at the traditional

roles of the local governing bodies of villages, cities and counties and the traditional freedoms of their inhabitants. He attempted to build up the army for his military adventures on the Continent, a measure not well received by the populace. He tried to strengthen the role of the ecclesiastical hierarchy of the Church of England and this at the expense of the "Puritan wing" of the church. His archbishop, William Laud, was especially notorious for his persecution of the Puritan faction. The Puritans were in favor of more local autonomy for individual congregations, whereas Charles I and his clergy wanted a strong, centralized church administered from above.

Feeling so strongly that they had been mistreated by ecclesiastical authorities in England, it is not surprising that the colonists of Massachusetts were very sensitive about letting any such hierarchy develop in their new home. As Breen puts it (1980:16) they were "obsessed" with local autonomy. Thus, the individual church congregation became responsible only to its own self and beholden to no one above and, hence, the name "Congregational," which came to apply to the church that developed from these Puritan beginnings. There was a strong tendency to treat political matters in much the same way and here the "Town" was all-important. The New England Town continues on as our townships of today. In those days, however, town and congregation were inextricably interwoven, so much so that the term "theocracy" has even been used, on occasion, in referring to these communities. The meetinghouse served as a focal point for both sacred and secular purposes and matters pertaining to both were discussed at town meetings (see Chap. 3).

Breen (1980:51) found that the majority of the men departing England via Great Yarmouth in 1637 were urban artisans. Eight listed their occupation as weavers, among them, the master weaver, Michael Metcalf. Breen sought (p. 52) to establish something concerning the economic status of this group of artisans:

Freemanship did not necessarily indicate that an individual was more wealthy or prominent than the average yeoman. But many of the urban migrants were clearly reasonably well off, a few more than that....Nicholas Busby, Francis Lawes, and Michael Metcalfe, all freemen weavers of Norwich, merited the distinction of being among the ten individuals cited by name in the Long Parliament's indictment of the former bishop of Norwich for driving into exile the most important tradespeople of his diocese, some of whom had provided work for "an hundred poor people." Wren denied the prominence of most of the ten, Busby and Lawes included, but even he admitted that Metcalfe was "of some estate."

In the above-mentioned trial of Bishop Wren before Parliament when Oliver Cromwell was in power, a part of Wren's Article of Impeachment reads (McDonald, 1937:352):

That by suppressing means of knowledge and salvation, and introducing ignorance, superstition and profaneness, many of his majesty's subjects, which used trades, spinning, weaving and knitting, and making of cloth, stuffs and other manufactures of wool--that is to say Daniel Sonning, Michael Metcalf, John Besant, Nicholas Metcalf and many others, some of them setting a hundred poor people to work, have removed themselves into Holland and other partes beyond the seas....

I do not know how much of his presumed wealth Michael was able to transfer to New England. However, considering that he was on such a precarious footing with the religious and civil authorities at the time of his departure, he seems likely to have suffered a great financial loss. Certainly he gives no evidence of unusual wealth after arriving in Dedham so I assume that much was sacrificed when he left England.

Neither is there any indication that he sought to take up his old profession as weaver. Most of the urban artisans of the 1637 passage became farmers in Massachusetts. Breen discusses (1980:62,63) this transition. Some did attempt to reestablish themselves as weavers but failed. He supposes this was likely because of a lack of wool and a shortage of people skilled in the actual weaving process--that is, plenty of master weavers but insufficient labor force at the lower levels. Breen suggests (1980:67) that these urban artisans, turned farmers, may have

been somewhat amateurish in their new profession. However, my impression gained from the Dedham Town Records is that Michael adjusted very well to his lessened circumstances and change of profession. Maybe he felt that he had a better life in Dedham, in some respects, than when he was hiding out from the authorities back in England. Breen writes (1980:66):

Again, one might have expected more from the pugnacious Michael Metcalfe, who had been bold and learned enough to dispute theology with an episcopal court. Even Bishop Wren thought him an important if seditious inhabitant of his diocese. Yet Metcalfe's career in Dedham was anticlimactic: one term as selectman, a brief turn as town schoolmaster toward the end of his life, and an estate of £ 364. Perhaps the cantankerousness that stood him in such good stead in his personal war against prelacy in Norfolk was less useful in the more peaceful environment of Dedham.

Certainly the Dedham environment was more tranquil. Also, Michael was nearing 50 years of age by the time he was settled in Dedham and I can understand how he might have mellowed. I see no evidence that he became involved in the religious discussions that are documented as having developed in Dedham, which may well have been a prudent measure for his peace of mind. It seems admirable that he is recorded as having spent his last years instructing the young rather than bickering with his contemporaries over obscure points of theology. In this, he seems prophetic of the respect that developed in New England for education, a tradition that produced such notable institutions as Harvard and Yale Universities. As descendants of the Puritans moved inland they generally kept their high regard for education. Thus, I see little evidence of illiteracy among our branch of the Metcalf family as they moved westward.

## CHAPTER 3

## TOWNS OF MEDFIELD, MEDWAY, RUTLAND, AND BARRE

John Metcalf was the fourth child and third son of Michael-1 and Sarah Elwyn Metcalf. He was born on 5 or 15 September 1622. Tilden (1887:436) makes a point of mentioning the unpleasant experiences that he must have had as a youth when the family was enduring its persecutions in England.

I speculated, above, whether there might have been some coolness between John and his father, since John receives so little attention in the writings of Michael-1. Still and all, John did name his second son Michael in the traditional way. Surely Michael-1 could hardly have disapproved of John's bride, as she was Mary, daughter of Francis Chickering, who had been a staunch proprietor of Dedham and a close associate of Michael-1 on committees, etc., over the years. In fact, the Chickerings had the next lot southeast of the Metcalfs on East Street in Dedham. Neither Michael-2 nor John went far to find their brides: Mary Fairbanks and Mary Chickering. According to Lockridge (1970:42, 43) Francis Chickering was a prominent selectman of the town and one who was repeatedly returned to office. The selectmen were usually chosen from the wealthier, more mature men of the town. However, I see no record of Francis Chickering having been received into the Church, although his daughter, Mary, who married John, was received.

Mary and John were married on 22 March 1647. They did not remain long in Dedham. Although Dedham was not yet very old, eyes were already cast towards the west as they would continue to be for several centuries. In this case, a new town(ship), Medfield, was to be carved from the western part of Dedham Twp. According to Hurd (1884:441), a "society for removing to Medfield" was organized in Dedham about 1650. In 1651, Dedham granted township rights and self-government to Medfield. Medfield village was located about eight miles southwest of Dedham village.

# METCALF.

JOHN METCALF was the son of Michael, and was born at Norwich, England, in 1622. Michael Metcalf was a dornik weaver, and fled to this country from persecutions, which he thus describes:—

"I was forced, for the sake of the liberty of my conscience, to flee from my wife and children, and go into New England; taking ship for the voyage, Sept. 17, 1636, being by tempests tossed up and down the seas till the christmas following, then veering about to Plymouth in Old England: in which time I met with many sore afflictions. Leaving the ship, I went down to Yarmouth in Norfolk County, whence I shipped myself and family to come to New England; sailed April 15, 1637, and arrived three days before midsummer following, with my wife and nine children, and a servant."

In a postscript, he alludes again to the troubles he sustained at the hands of Bishop Wren and the Chancellor, in consequence of which he was driven from his family: "Sometimes my wife did hide me in the roof of the house, covering me with straw." The boyhood of John Metcalf was spent among scenes like these. The family settled at Dedham, and John married in 1647 Mary Chickering. He came to this town about 1652, with his wife and three children. His house stood near the site now occupied by that of John Y. Thurston. He served on the board of selectmen six years, and had the title of commissioner in 1682. He died in 1690, his wife in 1698. Children:—

- +2. JOHN, 1648.
- +3. MICHAEL, 1650.
4. ELIZABETH; m. Joseph Ellis (6).
- +5. JOSEPH, 1658.
6. EXPERIENCE, 1661-1730; m. Isaac Wheeler (1).
7. HANNAH, 1664-1719; m. in 1683 Elisha Bullen (9).
8. MARY, 1668-1727; m. in 1687 Eleazar Ellis (7).

2.

JOHN<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>) married in 1676 Mary Bowers (3). He settled in "Dingle dell," near the road leading to Centre Meadow. He

## GENEALOGIES.

437

had a house there as early as 1682. He served as a selectman five years, and was representative to the General Court in 1704-5. His wife, his son, aged twenty-three, and his daughter, aged twenty-seven, all died in 1707, leaving him alone. He married in 1708 Sarah, widow of John Plimpton (4). Both died in the same year, 1738; and the estate was given to Jonathan Metcalf, his nephew. Children:—

9. MARY, 1680-1707.
10. JOHN, 1681-1682.
11. JOHN, 1684-1707.

From: Tilden, William S. History of the Town of Medfield, Massachusetts, 1650-1886. Boston: Geo. H. Ellis, Publ., 1887. pages 436-438.

MICHAEL<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>) married in 1676 Elizabeth Bowers (4). On the same day, the two brothers married the two sisters. In 1682, he bought the Rockwood homestead on Bridge Street, a little way north-west of where Charles Russell now lives. He died in 1691, leaving five children, the eldest but eleven years old. Their uncle, Isaac Wheeler, was appointed their guardian. Elizabeth died in 1724. His first house was burned by the Indians in 1676. Children:—

12. MICHAEL, 1680; settled in Medway.
13. SARAH, 1683; m. in 1715 Daniel Saunders.
14. SAMUEL, 1684-1740; settled in Medway.
15. ELIZABETH, 1686.
- +16. JONATHAN, 1690.

JOSEPH<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>) inherited the home place near the cemetery. He was sexton for many years. He married in 1685 Sarah Bowers (5), the third brother to the third sister. In 1702, he was a selectman. His first wife died in 1727; and he married in 1730 Hannah, widow of John Fisher (26). He died in 1741; and, having no sons, he gave his homestead to Joseph Clark (73), his grandson. His widow died in 1746. Children:—

17. SARAH, 1686; m. in 1705 Timothy Clark (28).
18. ABIGAIL, 1694-1788; m. in 1713 Seth Clark (32).

JONATHAN<sup>3</sup> (Michael,<sup>2</sup> John<sup>1</sup>) inherited his father's place in Bridge Street, and also his uncle John's place in "Dingle dell." He resided on Bridge Street, evidently. He conveyed the "Dingle dell" property to Timothy, son of Samuel of Medway, who sold it in 1756 to Dr. Jabez Fuller, rights being reserved for Jonathan, during his lifetime, in the fruits of the orchard. He married, first, Elizabeth Plimpton (17), who died in 1725; second, in 1733, Hannah, widow of Benjamin Plimpton (39). She died

in 1744. His third wife was Abigail, widow of Samuel Hinsdale (20). He died in 1758, his widow in 1777. Children:—

19. SARAH, 1722-1736.
20. ELIZABETH, 1725-1763; m. in 1742 Joseph Plimpton (37).
21. HANNAH, 1734-1734.
22. HANNAH, 1736-1736.
23. JOHN, 1739-1740.
24. SETH, 1741-1742.
- +25. JONATHAN, 1744.

JONATHAN<sup>4</sup> (Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> Michael,<sup>2</sup> John<sup>1</sup>) inherited his father's estate principally, and appears to have resided in Bridge Street until his marriage with Patty Dwight (13) in 1777, after which he lived on the place which had been her father's, on Frairy Street, now owned by the Derby heirs. He served two years as a selectman, and was town clerk and treasurer four years. He was the village storekeeper in 1784; died in 1821. Children:—

26. DWIGHT, 1778-1857; was a merchant in Baltimore.
27. PATTY, 1779; died unmarried.
28. JONATHAN, 1782; said to have been educated at college.
29. CHARLES, 1783-1819; insane and a pauper.

To qualify as a potential townsman of Medfield, one had to sign an agreement in which various requirements were stipulated. For instance, no person was to become a townsman unless "honest, peaceable, and free from scandal and erroneous opinions" (Hurd, 1884:441). However, selection for townsmanship seems not to have been so rigorous as it had been in Dedham, suggesting that Puritan practices were already starting to relax, if ever so slightly. Hanson takes the view (1976:69, 70) that the settlers of Medfield were mostly solid, middle-class citizens of Dedham, who mainly left the mother settlement because of growing political, social, and religious differences there. These difficulties are detailed in both Hanson (1976) and Lockridge (1970). However, I think that one might well consider more prosaic motives, although motives tend to blend and even to hide themselves from their owners. Perhaps a major motive for John was the acquisition of a goodly holding of land--more than he might expect to acquire in Dedham. Perhaps, also, he sensed that he would be better off in terms of his personal and economic development if he moved a bit beyond the shadow of his father. Indeed, he does seem to have done rather well in Medfield, as we see.

John's house lot was not among the first 13 lots laid out in 1650 but he was apparently in the "second wave" to settle in Medfield. He is included in an enumeration of valuations for 1652 (Tilden, 1887:56). Fourteen valuations were listed, ranging from 88 to 322 pounds, and John's was 135 pounds.

House lots in Medfield comprised six to twelve acres. According to Cook (1918:175) John Metcalf's house lot was on West Main Street, between the railroad and the cemetery. Tilden (1887:57) notes that John's house lot was bounded on the southwest by the "burying place." And, indeed, John's house is still there (Fig. 4a) at 589 Main St., where it bears a wooden plaque: "Metcalf Homestead A.D. 1680." The house is described, as follows in a recent brochure produced by the Medfield Historical Commission:

# 18 METCALF HOUSE

559 Main Street  
1650

The straightforward, silver gray, colonial with center chimney evokes the 17th century and the 1680 date chiseled into a hand hewn oak beam in the house attests to that fact. The house may be older, as John Metcalf had a house here in 1652. The clapboard house has been considerably restored. There are exposed gun stock posts, chamfer-stop summer beams, and a section of wall panelling that measures 23" in width. A movable panel over the dining room fireplace reveals the old riven laths and early plaster. Another room panel conceals a secret hiding area along the chimney, used presumably as a defense against Indians.

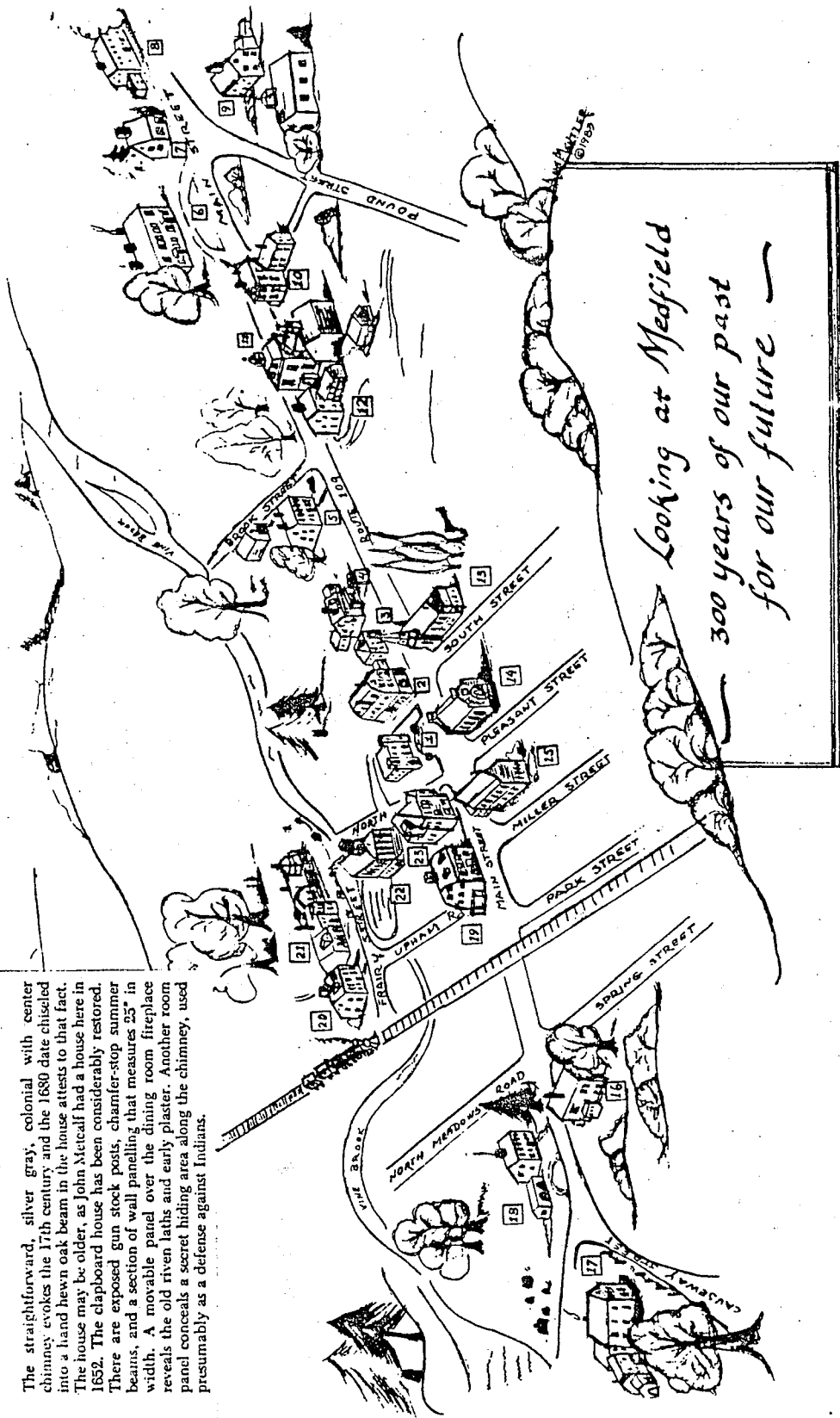
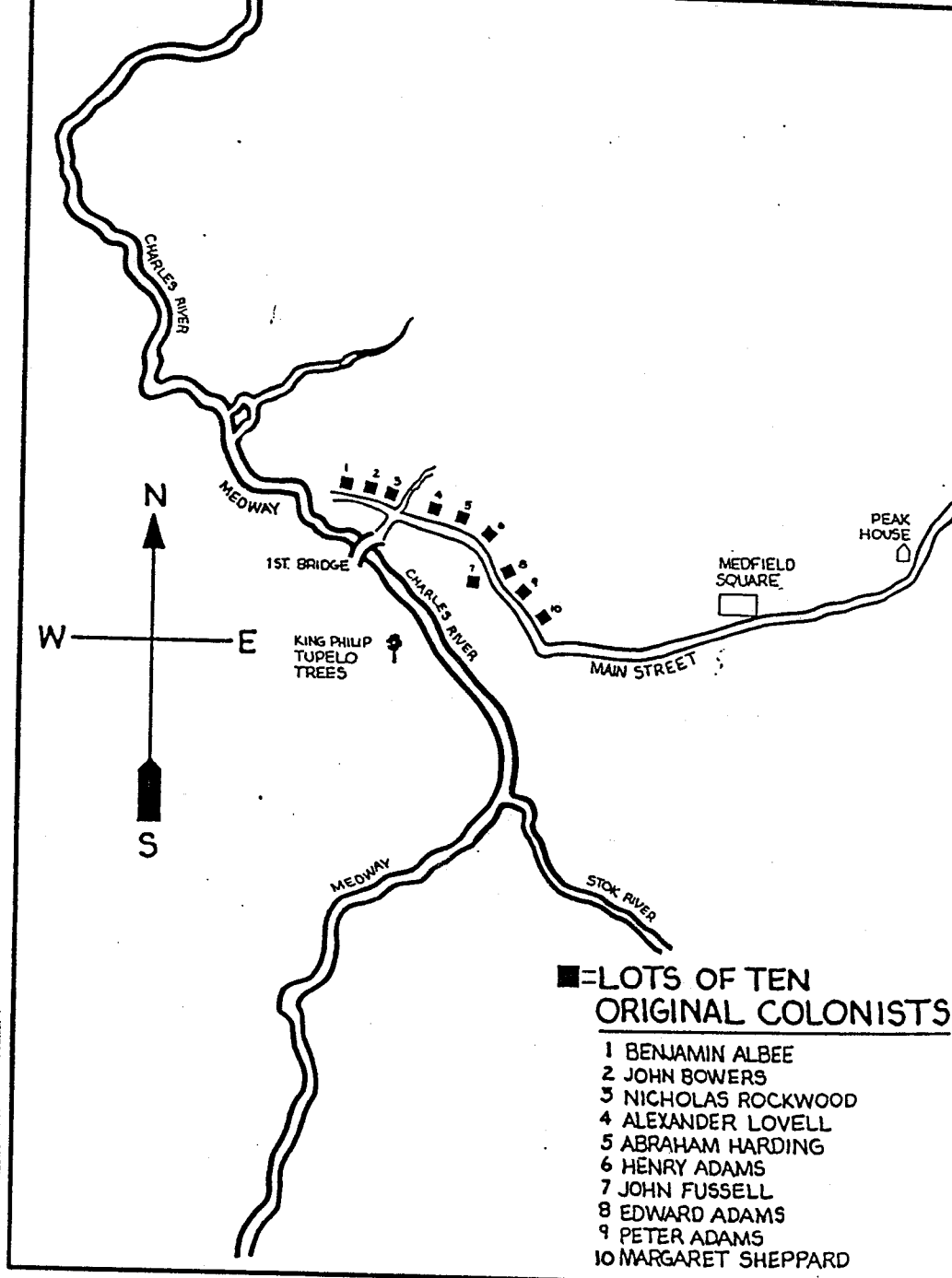


Fig. 4-a. A sketch showing some buildings of historic note in Medfield, MA, drawn by and courtesy of Ann Mentzer. The sketch and comments are from Historical Medfield...300 years, a brochure prepared by the Medfield Historical Commission. The beautifully preserved John Metcalf house (# 18) is near Vine Lake Cemetery (indicated by tombstones). The west part of Clark Tavern (# 6) was built around 1743 by the family of Seth and Abigail Metcalf Clark (daughter of Joseph Metcalf). The Peak House, next door (# 7), was built by Seth Clark's father, Benjamin, around 1677. The Daniel Sanders House (# 11) was built around 1817 by Daniel Clark Sanders, a grandson of Sarah Metcalf Sanders (daughter of Michael 3-b).



Hand drawn settlement map shows the sites of the original 10 homesteads along Bridge Street in 1652.

Fig. 4-b. Map from Medfield Reflections (325th Anniversary and Special Bicentennial Committee for the Town of Medfield, 1976, p. 74), showing Bridge Street and sites of the ten original homesteads along it in 1652. Home # 2 was the home of John Bowers, whose three daughters all married sons of John-1 Metcalf. Next to the Bowers home, the Nicholas Rockwood homestead (# 3) was bought by Michael-3b Metcalf in 1682. Both original homes were burned in King Philips War in 1676, and John Bowers and his son were slain here. Location is indicated of the first Great Bridge, leading to the Town of Medway (later Millis). Site of the King Philip Tupelo Trees is also shown.

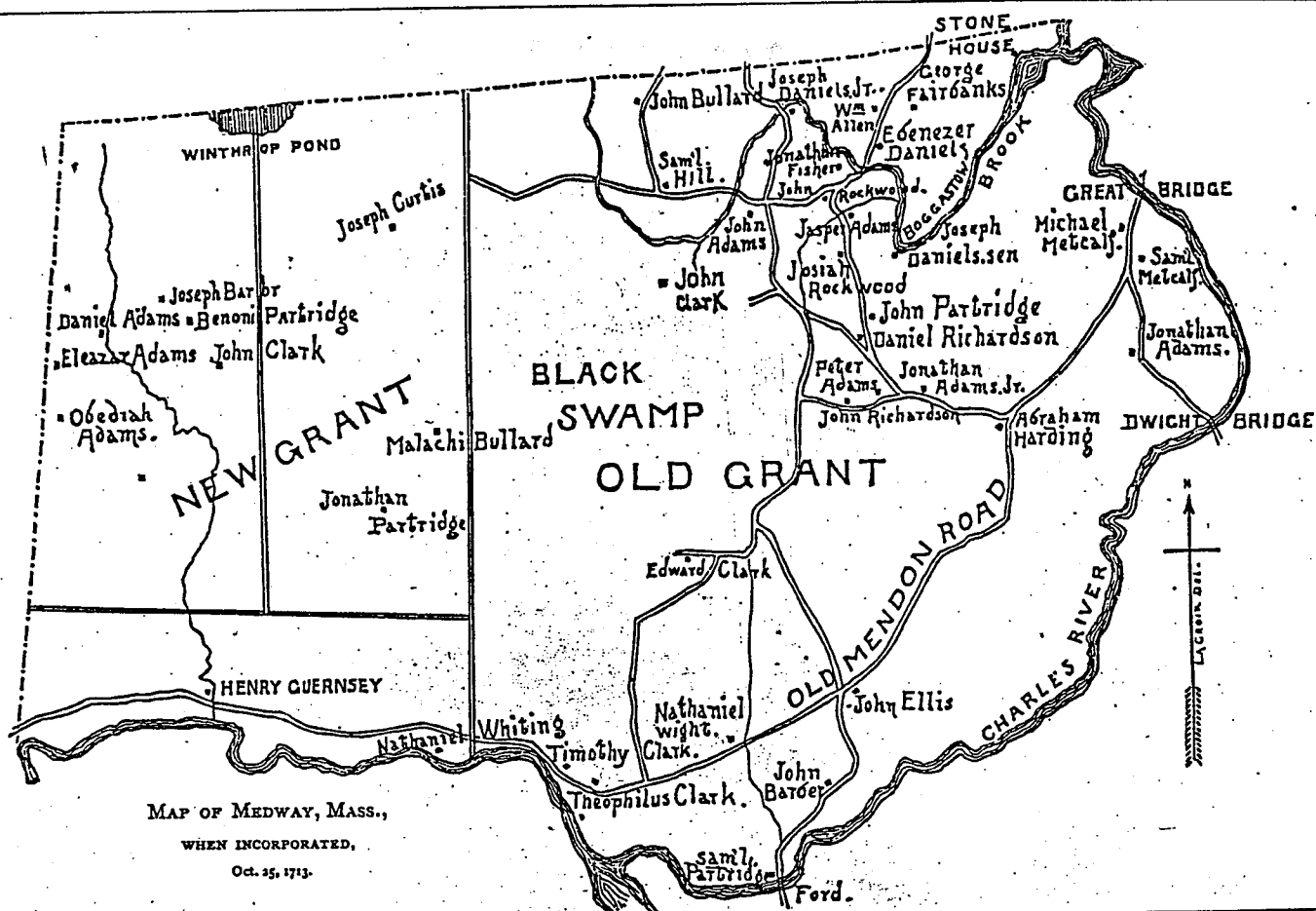


Fig. 4-c. Map of the Town of Medway as of 1713 (published in Jameson, 1886, and elsewhere). This map shows the same Great Bridge site as in Fig. 4-b, with Bridge Street of Medway becoming the Old Mendon Road. Dwellings of Michael-4b and Samuel Metcalf (sons of Michael-3b) are shown just across the bridge in Medway. In the south-central part of the town is the tavern of Timothy and Sarah Metcalf Clark (daughter of Joseph). Note numerous residences of members of the Adams Family, including that of Daniel Adams in the New Grant, west of the Black Swamp. Daniel was the father of Deborah Adams, who married Joseph Metcalf, a son of Michael 4-b.

The straightforward, silver gray, colonial with center chimney evokes the 17th century and the 1680 date chiseled into a hand hewn oak beam in the house attests to that fact. The house may be older, as John Metcalf had a house here in 1652. The clapboard house has been considerably restored. There are exposed gun stock posts, chamfer-stop summer beams, and a section of wall panelling that measures 25" in width. A movable panel over the dining room fireplace reveals the old riven laths and early plaster. Another room panel conceals a secret hiding area along the chimney, used presumably as a defense against Indians.

The dwelling is still used as a private home and, in fact, had been sold just before I visited there in June, 1986. (The former owners had asked \$315,000 for it, according to an advertisement). More information about John's ancient home is included in an appendix at the end of this study where two articles (in part) that have appeared in Boston newspapers are included.

Tilden (1887:58) states that the lots of John Bullard, John Plimpton and John Metcalf "like all the others on Main Street, lay on both sides of the highway--the house on the north side, the fields on the south." Hurd (1884:441) writes: "The meadows were laid out in grants to the owners of house-lots in 1652, and the following year the lands easily accessible to cultivation were also divided...."

The origin of the name Medfield seems as controversial as that of the name Metcalf. Whatever its origin, however, there is no doubt that Medfield was rich in meads or meadows, a good place for a mead calf. These extensive meadows along the Charles River had been a prime attraction to these early settlers. Hurd wrote (1884:439,440):

Special attention seems to have been first drawn to this region on account of the wide expanse of meadows lying along Charles River, and at the mouths of its tributary streams near this place.

The meadows in those days being much dryer than at present, and being kept clear of bushes by the annual fires of the Indians, produced great quantities of grass of such quality that it was very highly valued by the early settlers, as it furnished an available supply of fodder for their cattle during the winter seasons. This

was probably one of the chief inducements to men to look for a place of settlement in this immediate vicinity.

There were also upland clearings that provided pasturage for cattle (Hurd, 1884:440). With all this, it is not really surprising that John was enticed westward. In his small way, I suppose that he could be called the first American frontiersman in our lineage--to be followed by numerous others. In their thrust inland, here, settlers were following the Charles River Valley, first to Dedham, and now on to Medfield. The river flowed almost due north, west of Medfield village. Already in the early 1650's, a bridge, called the Great Bridge, spanned the Charles, west of the village, to allow utilization of the meadowlands on the west bank. In 1660 some lands west of the river were parcelled out to Medfield settlers in what was called the New Grant. The parcels of land available were described on lots and drawn from a hat so that a person received land "where the providence of God shall direct" (Jameson, 1886:21-23). John Metcalf drew the second lot and obtained 117 acres "next the River." However, as Jameson points out (p. 24) "not one of the original owners ever occupied these lands" of the New Grant. George Fairbanks was an early settler on the west bank of the Charles and John furnished him with rails and posts for fencing in 1660 (Jameson, 1886:26).

Other glimpses of John appear in the records. Tilden (1887:436) writes: "He served on the board of selectmen six years, and had the title of commissioner in 1682." In 1672 he was one of a committee of five selected to negotiate with the Nipmuck Indians concerning a controversy over lands (Jameson, 1886:17). In 1680 he and his son, John, Jr., were members of a group, who undertook to build a grist mill on the Charles River (Jameson, 1866:37).

According to the Vital Records of Medfield (Anon., 1903), John died on 8 October 1690, at age 68, and Mary followed him on 15 March 1698. Cook (1918:183) noted that the grave of John was among four graves of "original settlers" that could still be identified in "recent years" (i. e. before 1918).

A short distance on down Main Street from John's home is Vine Lake Cemetery (Fig. 4a) and here, it seems very likely to me, is the gravestone of John, himself. A "Catalog of Graves" prepared by the Medfield Historical Commission has allocated numbers to the graves. Stone No. 471 is listed as "nearly illegible, possibly John Metcalf." However, when I visited the cemetery in 1986, the stone was still well preserved, for its age, and "JOHN MED" was deeply chiseled into it. I surmised that both the fashioning of the rough stone and the engraving were the work of very amateur hands but the results have endured longer and better than many, more professionally produced stones in the cemetery. The letters "MED" are centered below "JOHN," and I don't think there was ever more than MED in the family name, judging by the size and shape of the stone. Next to it is a very similar stone (No. 470) with the letters "MM", again deeply chiseled into it. I agree with the compilers of the Catalog of Graves that this is likely for Mary Chickering Metcalf, wife of John. However, there is a possibility, I suppose, that it could be, instead, for John and Mary's son, Michael-3b, who died in 1691, only one year after his father, John. There is a space next to the stone with "MM" on it (No. 469), which might be the resting place either of Mary or of Michael-3b, depending upon whichever one is in grave 470. Finishing out this row of Metcalfs, northward, graves 472 to 476 are family members of John-1's son, John-2, and of Sarah Bowers Metcalf, the first wife of John-1's son, Joseph.

Seven children are recorded as born to John-1 and Mary (Hill, 1888:33; Tilden, 1887:436--note Fig. 5). There were three sons: John-2, born in 1648, and Michael-3b, born in 1650, both of these born in Dedham, and Joseph, born in 1658 in Medfield. John-2, Michael-3b, and their sister, Mary, were baptized in Dedham (Hill, 1888:30,32,33), Mary in October, 1652, at about the time that John and Mary moved to Medfield.

This third generation of Metcalfs in our line in America suffered a variety of misfortunes, a pattern that seems to have been typical of these years, full of tribulations for the

colonists. Hanson (1976:81) entitles a chapter treating this timespan in Dedham and surrounding area "Wrath of Heaven, 1674-1700," and so it may have seemed to our family at times.

This was a time when the British introduced some unpopular measures, when the Puritan churches suffered all manner of dissensions, and when the ugly issue of witchcraft left its imprint on the history of Massachusetts. There is some mention of witches in Medfield but, generally, the cluster of towns that sprang from old Dedham seems not to have been greatly affected by the witchcraft craze. Did old Michael-1 and the other early Dedham schoolmasters instill some common sense in regard to such matters in their students?

The greatest problem that marked this period of time had to do with the Indians. Medfield attained unwonted fame because of an Indian attack inflicted upon it on 21 February 1676. This was part of King Philip's War. The Indian Chief, King Philip, was a son of Massasoit, often mentioned in connection with the Plymouth Pilgrims. Medfield lay exposed at this time in its location as a western frontier town. According to Hurd (1884:442), 17 English settlers lost their lives in the attack on Medfield. Thirty-two houses, plus barns and many other buildings, livestock, two mills, and the Great Bridge (Fig. 4) were burned. The houses towards the center of the village were saved. This included the home of John-1, but that of his second son, Michael-3b (in our lineage), was burned. Michael 3-b was living on a property known as the Rockwood homestead on the western periphery of the village. A hand-drawn map reproduced in Medfield Reflections (Medfield 325th Anniv. and Special Bicent. Comm., 1976:74) and in Fig. 4b, herein, shows the Rockwood home as third from the end on upper Bridge Street, very near to the Great Bridge of that time and next to the home of John Bowers.

John Bowers had come from Braintree or from Weymouth, MA, and settled in Medfield about 1652 (Tilden, 1887:320). He had four children, John, Mary, Elizabeth, and Sarah. Son John had married Sarah Clark in 1673 and they already had a young son, also named John, in 1675. On the day of the Indian attack on

Parts of pages 11 and 12 of the Cemetery Book of Medfield,  
compiled by the Medfield Historical Commission, Medfield, MA.

page 11

Grave no.		Birthdate or age at death	Date of death
467	Morse, Silas; s/James & Maria	6 hrs	Nov.17,1770
"	Paul; s/James & Maria	17 days	Dec.4,1770
"	Joshua; s/James & Maria	4 mos	Oct.2,1775
"	Rebecca; d/James & Maria	1y 10m	Nov.3,1777
468	Gair, Rebeckah; d/Rev.Thomas & Rebeckah	19 hrs	Nov.5,1777
"	James; s/Rev. Thomas & Rebeckah	5m 13d	Apr.13,1779
469	(stone missing)		
470	"M M" (possibly Mary Chickering Metcalf)		(1698)
471	(stone nearly illegible; possibly John Metcalf)	(1622)	(1690)
472	Metcalf, John; s/John & Mary	23 yrs	Oct.3,1707
473	Metcalf, Mary; w/John D.	61 yrs	Oct.26,1707
474	(stone nearly illegible; probably Mary Metcalf, d/John & Mary		
475	Medcalf, John	in 92nd yr	Sep.26,--30
476	" Sarah; w/Joseph	in 64th yr	Aug.21,1727
477	Clark, Eunice; d/Joseph & Hannah	in 16th yr	Oct.20,1753
478	" Katherine; d/Joseph & Hannah	3y 6m	May 7,1736
479	(stone missing)		
479A	Plimpton, Sarah; w/Wales	43 yrs	Apr.7,1828
"	Ama; d/Wales & Sarah	5 mos	Feb.27,1828
479B	" Caroline; d/Wales & Sarah	in 20th yr	Jun.29,1831

page 12 ↓

480	Plimpton, Ezekiel (Capt.)	68 yrs	Jan.2,1817
481	" Esther; w/Ezekiel	70 yrs	Mar.10,1824
482	Ellis, Jesse	66y 3m 25d	Dec.14,1846
"	Elizabeth H.; w/Jesse	88y 9m 15d	Dec.28,1870
483	Everett, Mary Ellis; w/Edmund T.	Jul.15,1818	Dec.4,1884
484	Hill, Ann P.	Oct.20,1809	Mar.25,1892
485	" David	Dec.20,1801	Dec.16,1875
486	" Edwin Walter; s/David & Ann	Apr.18,1838	Aug.8,1856
487	Abell, Mary W.	1841	1920
(There is one monument for Graves 484-487, with individual graves being marked by footstones. Unmarked by a footstone but included on the monument is:			
	Kinsman, Eliza Ann; w/Eliphalet, d/David & Ann Hill	Sep.2,1827	Oct.24,1851
488	Jones, Henry	44 yrs	Apr.6,1846
489	Bowers, Sarah	in 69th yr	Jul.21,1779
490	" Elisha	in 66th yr	Feb.12,1775
491	" John (Ens.)	in 54th yr	Jun.13,1729
492	Medcalf, (rest of name illegible; possibly Elizabeth	"in 23rd..."	
493	" Sarah; d/Jonathan & Elizabeth	in 15th yr	Sep.21,1736
494	" Sarah; w/John	in 75th yr	Jan.12,1737
495	(stone missing; possibly Hannah Metcalf)		
495A	Plimpton, Olive; d/Wales & Sarah	4 yrs	Jul.16,1817
495B	" Thankful; w/Wales, "also her infant, buried with her"	23 yrs	Jul.10,1807

Medfield, both of the adult John Bowers, Senior and Junior, were killed and their buildings burned. I cannot resist quoting Tilden's (1887:320) observation that the Widow Sarah Clark Bowers "was married to Samuel Smith (whose wife was also slain by the Indians) on the first anniversary of the mournful event." It seems a curious commemoration but no doubt it seemed appropriate to them.

And what about the three Bowers daughters? Would you believe they all married Metcalfs--the three sons of John-1 and Mary? Mary and Elizabeth Bowers married, respectively, John-2 and Michael-3b on 21 December in that same memorable year of 1676 in Medfield. Younger brother, Joseph, married Sarah Bowers in 1685. Some basic data concerning the three couples are provided by Tilden (1887:436,437):

John...married in 1676 Mary Bowers (3). He settled in "Dingle Dell," near the road leading to Centre Meadow. He had a house there as early as 1682. He served as a selectman five years, and was representative to the General Court in 1704-5. His wife, his son, aged twenty-three, and his daughter, aged twenty-seven, all died in 1707, leaving him alone. He married in 1708 Sarah, widow of John Plimpton (4). Both died in the same year, 1738; and the estate was given to Jonathan Metcalf, his nephew.

John's civic record, especially his being delegated to the Great General Court of Massachusetts, seems to indicate that he was a citizen of considerable stature and ability. In Vine Lake Cemetery, John-2's first wife, Mary, and his two children, all of whom died in 1707, are buried in a row, continuing on, in graves 472-474, from the grave of John-1 (471) and are followed by the grave of John-2, who died as a patriarch of some 90 years of age. His second wife, Sarah, is in grave 494, some distance away. John-2's abode in Dingle Dell is no longer in existence. This is now a thriving, modern part of Medfield, replete with condominiums and other buildings, which someone referred to as being "phony colonial," while noting that the area had been "recolonialized." John-2 left no progeny to perpetuate his line, whereas, in the case of his brother, Michael-3b, the progeny were left without a father. Tilden (p. 437) writes:

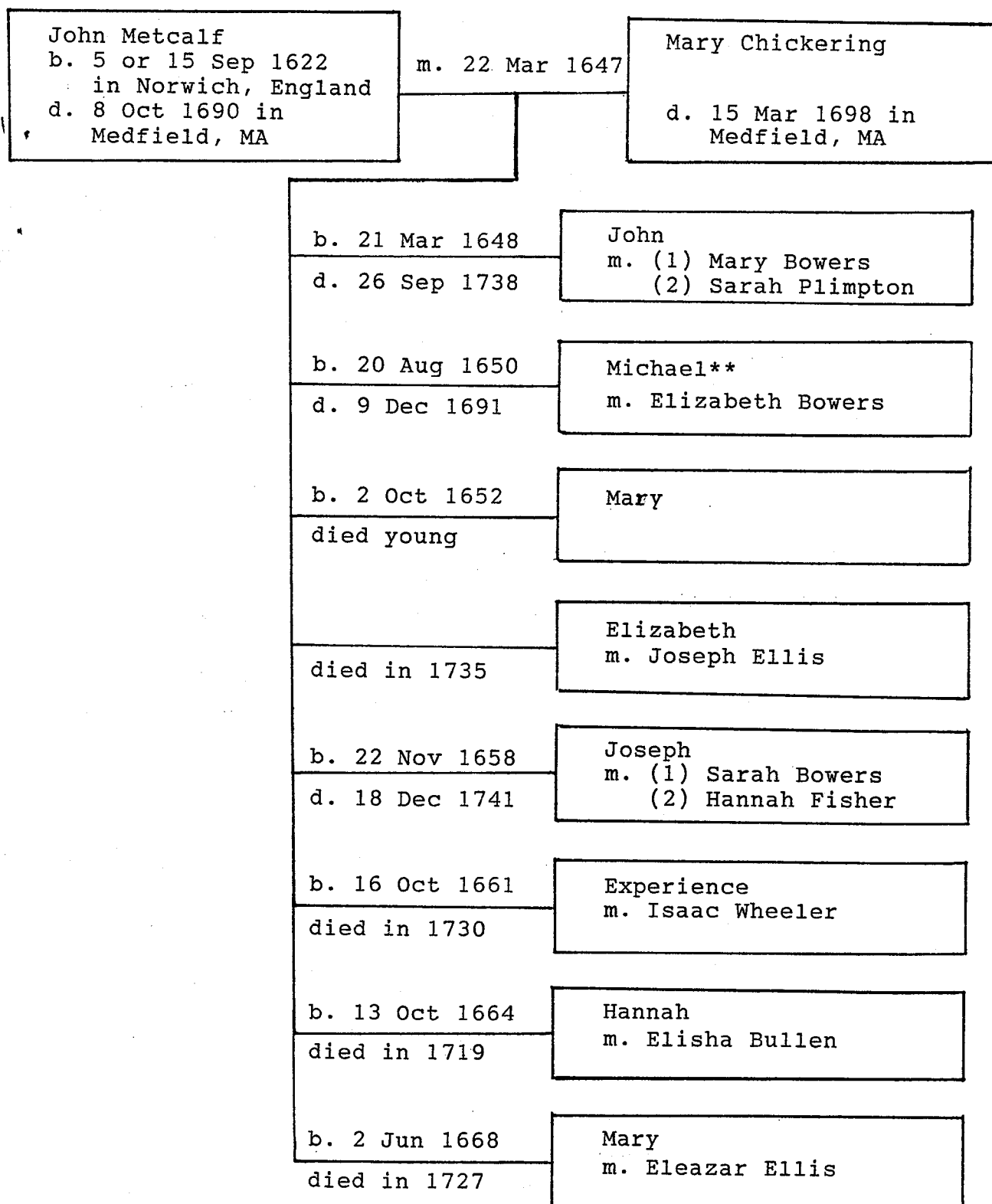


Fig. 5. Children of John and Mary Chickering Metcalf.

In 1682, he bought the Rockwood homestead on Bridge Street, a little way north-west of where Charles Russell now lives. He died in 1691, leaving five children, the eldest but eleven years old. Their uncle, Isaac Wheeler, was appointed their guardian. Elizabeth died in 1724. His first house was burned by the Indians in 1676.

I have not located the grave of Michael-3b, although suggesting, above, that it might be either grave 469 or 470, close to that of John-1. Isaac Wheeler was the husband of Michael-3b's sister, Experience. Michael-3b is in our lineage, as is his son, Michael-4b. As for Joseph, Tilden notes (p. 437):

Joseph...inherited the home place near the cemetery. He was sexton for many years. He married in 1685 Sarah Bowers (5), the third brother to the third sister. In 1702, he was a selectman. His first wife died in 1727; and he married in 1730 Hannah, widow of John Fisher (26). He died in 1741; and, having no sons, he gave his homestead to Joseph Clark (73), his grandson. His widow died in 1746.

It seems as though a sexton, such as Joseph, might well have been busy in those years that Hanson calls, as noted above, "Wrath of Heaven." Tilden records (1887:106) that in 1696 "The burying-place was let to Joseph Metcalf for a term of 14 years, he 'to make a good and sufficient fence around it, and to suffer such graves to be dug as there may be need of'." Joseph's first wife, Sarah Bowers, is in grave 476 in Vine Lake Cemetery but I did not locate the grave of Joseph or of his second wife, although they must surely be there, in view of the fact that Joseph lived next to the cemetery and was its sexton for many years.

Joseph's daughter, Sarah, married Timothy Clark in 1705 and his daughter, Abigail, married Timothy's brother, Seth Clark, in 1713. These Clark brothers were sons of Benjamin Clark, who had had his home, eastward on Main Street, burned by the Indians in 1676. He rebuilt, around 1677, a cottage with steeply pitched roof, hence called the Peak House (Fig. 4a). Today, it still graces Main Street and is maintained by the Medfield Historical Society. On 23 June 1986, I was privileged to attend a strawberry social and Historical Society meeting in the Peak

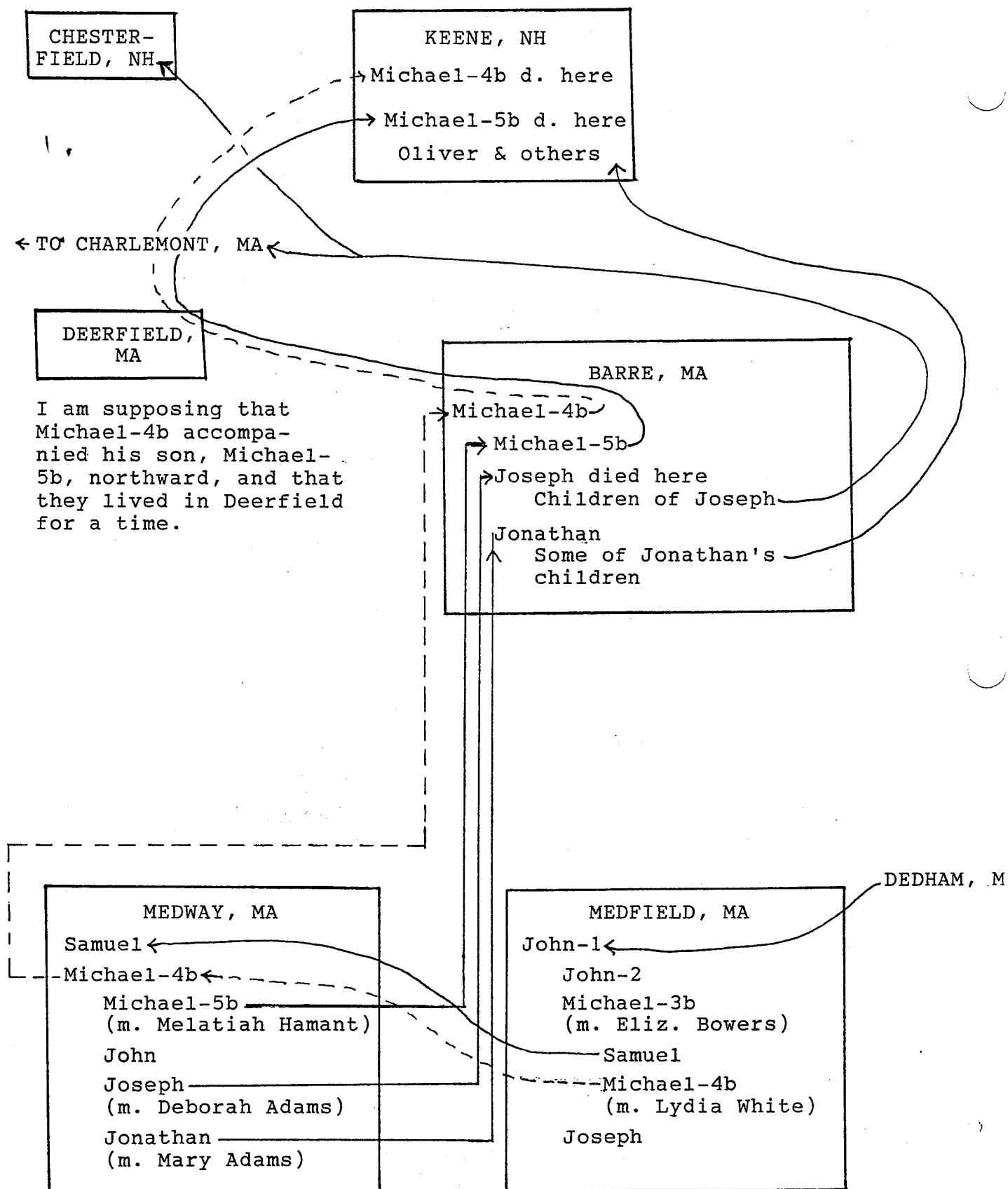


Fig. 6. Geographic movements of some of the descendants of John-1 Metcalf in MA and NH in the 1600's and early 1700's. Names of children are indented below those of parent(s). Peregrination of Michael-4b is indicated by dashed line.

House, built by Sarah and Abigail's father-in-law. Next to the Peak House, Seth and Abigail built an inn (Fig. 4.). A brochure (Medfield Historical Commission) notes in regard to the "Clark Tavern--353-355 Main St.":

The west side was built around 1743 by Seth Clark Sr., a most prominent local political and military figure. The house served as a public inn. His son, Ebenezer, expanded the inn and built the house on the east end in 1773.... The tavern served as a stagecoach stop on the Hartford to Boston turnpike, a one day's journey out of Boston.

Sarah and Timothy Clark settled to the west in the adjoining town of Medway, where they also established an inn--the first Ordinary or Tavern west of the Charles River according to Donovan (1976:20). Donovan notes also that Timothy became a prominent citizen, serving variously as constable, tythingman, selectman, member of the militia and, last but not least, his family "brought the first tea set to our town." Thus, I suppose that our remote cousins, Sarah and Tim and Abigail and Seth Clark must have been rather well known in those parts with their inns along much-traveled roads and their other, varied activities. I do hope that Sarah enjoyed showing off her tea set when important guests stopped at their inn.

As we have seen, only Michael-3b left any offspring named Metcalf. Before discussing them, we might note that his daughter, Sarah, married a Daniel Sanders. Their grandson, also a Daniel Sanders, was a minister, with D.D. from Harvard, and was a president of the University of Vermont in the early 1800's. His handsome home in Medfield, built in 1817, but remodeled, still stands at 402 Main Street (Fig. 4-a).

Michael-3b's youngest son, Jonathan, remained on his father's place on Bridge Street (the Rockwood place) in Medfield (Tilden, 1887:437). Jonathan had three wives and seven children but only one daughter and one son grew to maturity. As already suggested, those Medfield years were not the best ones in our family history.

The other two sons of Michael-3b, Michael-4b and Samuel, moved across the river into what was to become Medway Twp (and

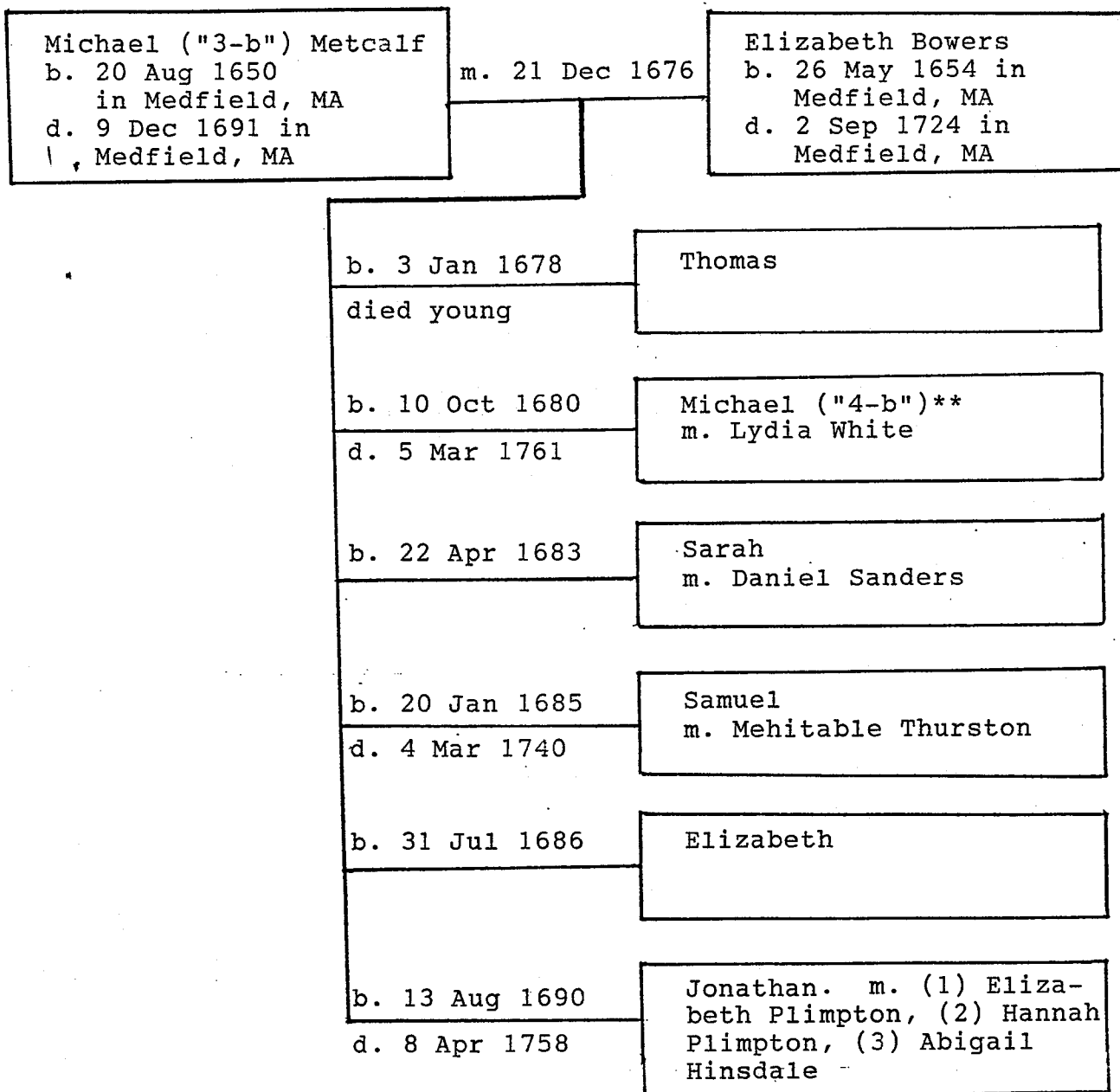


Fig. 7. Children of Michael ("3-b") and Elizabeth Bowers Metcalf.

today's Town of Millis). However, they were barely in Medway, as a map of 1713 (Fig. 4c) shows them as having the first properties on the west bank, just beyond the Great Bridge. The Great Bridge over the Charles River between Medfield and Medway Towns must have been a focal landmark in the lives of some three generations of our Metcalf ancestors.

The names of Michael-4b and Samuel appear on the Act of Incorporation, dated 25 October 1713, and titled "An Act for Dividing the Township of Medfield and erecting a new Town there by the name of Medway" (Jameson, 1886:44,45). Thus, Medway was carved out of Medfield Twp. just as Medfield had been carved out of Dedham Twp. at an earlier time. Much later (1885), the eastern part of Medway, where Michael-4b and Samuel lived, would become the Town of Millis, while the western part would remain as the Town of Medway. The Metcalfs had earlier acquired some lands in Medway, including John-1's 117 acres in the New Grant, and some acreage in an area to the west with the sinister name of The Black Swamp.

It seems likely that Michael-4b and Samuel had moved across the river a few years before the incorporation of Medway, probably at about the time they married (1705 for Michael and 1710 for Samuel). According to Jameson (1886:80-82), Samuel was chosen a selectman for Medway in 1725, 1728, and 1730 and in 1737 he, too, was the Town representative to the General Court of Massachusetts, as had been his uncle, John-2. Michael-4b was a Medway selectman in 1719 and 1731. Among Town expenditures recorded for the year 1734-35 he is recorded (Jameson, 1886:49) as receiving seven pounds for "building the pound."

Rather amazingly, the pound is still in existence, having outlasted other vestiges of Michael-4b in Medway/Millis it would seem. A brochure, Millis Historic Trail, prepared in 1985, notes:

20. The Town Pound: The Town Pound was built around 1734, when Millis was still part of Medway. The pound was constructed of large stones with a gate in the front. Stray animals were brought to the pound. When the owners of the animals came to claim them, a fine had to

be paid to the pound keeper. Each kind of animal had its own fine.

I, I was unable to locate any remains of the dwelling-places of either Michael-4b or Samuel on the west bank of the Charles River in what is now the easternmost part of the Town of Millis. The hand-drawn map of 1713 (Fig. 4c) shows their homes along the continuation of Medfield's Bridge Street into Millis, where it is also called Bridge Street. Although the first Great Bridge in this area (Fig. 4b) was southeast of the present one (southwest of 62 Bridge Street, of today, according to Mr. Richard De Sorgher of Medfield), comparison of the map of 1713 with one of 1876 indicates that, by 1713, at least, the bridge was at its present location very near the railroad bridge. Thus, I suppose that the Bridge Street of 1713, along which Michael-4b and Samuel appear to have had their homes must have approximated the Bridge Street of today, in the Town of Millis.

The grave of Samuel is No. 523 in Vine Lake Cemetery, Medfield. However, according to Edward G. Metcalf (in litt., 21 Nov 1986), Michael 4-b (b. 1680) migrated up to Keene, NH, in his old age and Whitcomb (1905: 207), in the vital records of Keene, notes: "Metcalf, Michael (Sr.) d. Mar 5, 1761, 81 y." Thus, I suppose that Michael 4-b is buried in Keene.

Records indicate that the Puritan/Congregational Church was still a very important part of Medway life in the time of Michael-4b and Samuel. The close union of church and state, then prevailing, are foreign to the experience of present-day Americans. Under this system, as Jameson shows (1886:48,49), at town-meetings such diverse topics came up as: (1) appointment of a "deer reeve" to enforce laws concerning deer hunting and a person to see that the "law relating to swine be kept and observed," (2) establishment of a "moving school,"--whatever that was, (3) the matter of buying a burying cloth that was "deacent for the Town," (4) allocation of pews in the meeting-house, (5) the manner of singing psalms, and (6) the building of a "noon-house" where the church congregation might receive a bit of warmth and sustenance between the long morning

and afternoon sermons in the unheated meeting-house. Such topics were discussed, no doubt, in the homes of Samuel and Michael-4b as well. As regards cold meeting-houses, there are several foot warmers on display in the Fairbanks House in Dedham. These were filled with hot stones from the fireplace. It is said that cats and small dogs also might be induced to curl around one's feet in church and provide a bit of warmth during a tedious sermon. (I wonder if this is really true?)

Michael-4b married Lydia (Ledia) White of Mendon, west of Medway. This marriage is a point of some genealogical confusion. We need to look back (Chamberlain, 1923:731,732) to a Thomas White, who was born in England and came to Weymouth, MA, about 1635. He had a son, Joseph White, who married Lydia Rogers on 19 September 1660. This Joseph and Lydia had a son, Joseph, born 5 July 1661, who must have died in infancy, because twins, born 17 December 1662, were named Joseph and Lydia (Weymouth Vital Records, New England Hist., Genealog. Soc., 1910:341-342). This family left Weymouth and settled in Mendon, which was beyond Medway, to the west (Mendon had been abandoned during King Philip's War, leaving Medfield on the "front lines"). Joseph White seems to have prospered in Mendon and the vital records there abound with names of his descendants. Among these, is the aforementioned son, Joseph, Jr. This Joseph, Jr. married another Ledia or Lydia (her family name not identified). Joseph, Jr. and Ledia are recorded (Baldwin, 1920:210,211) as having a son, Joseph, born in 1683 and a daughter, Ledia, born in 1686 ("Ledia, d. of Joseph Jr. and Ledia, May 10, 1686"). This third Ledia-Lydia must somehow have caught the eye of Michael-4b. Their marriage is recorded in the Vital Records of Mendon (Baldwin, 1920:347,428) under Medcalf: "Micall and Ledia White, Mar. 21, 1704-5" and under White: "Ledia and Micall Medcalf, Mar. 21, 1704-5."

To Michael-4b and Ledia-Lydia were born at least six children. The first two, Michael-5b and John-3b (haven't we heard these names before, somewhere?) were born in 1706 and 1709, when Medway was still part of Medfield, and are listed in

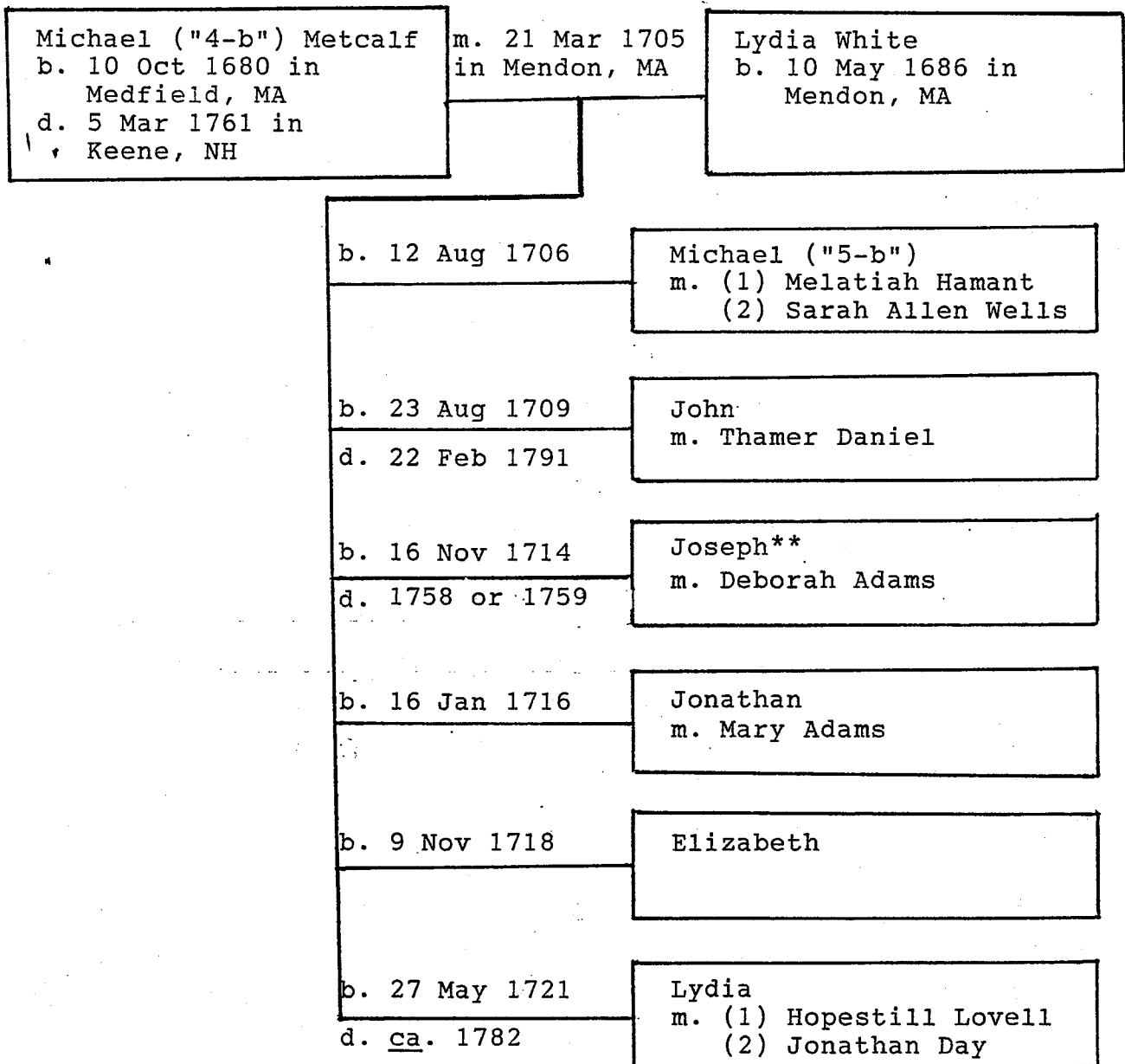


Fig. 8. Children of Michael ("4-b") and Lydia White Metcalf.

Medfield Vital Records. A son, Joseph, was born in 1714 or 1715 in Medway Town. Alas, the Vital Records of Medway (Anon., 1905:89) do not list his mother's name, only stating, under Medcalf: "Joseph (Midcalf), s. Michael (and) w., Nov 16, 1715 (dup. 1714, sic).". Of course, Joseph would have to be our ancestor! However, no Michael Metcalfs, other than those already discussed, are listed in Medfield or Medway Vital Records for the late 1600's and early 1700's, so I feel confident that the wife of the only child-producing Michael Metcalf in Medway in 1714 or 1715 had to be Lydia White. The name Joseph was certainly an extremely likely choice on the part of Lydia, the daughter, granddaughter, and sister of a Joseph White. Joseph is sandwiched between John-3b (b. 1709) and Jonathan (b. 1716), both of whom are attributed to Michael and Lydia. The next child (b. 1718) was Elizabeth, probably named for her grandmother, Elizabeth Bowers Metcalf--and the last child (b. 1721) was named Lydia! Further indication of the sibblingship of Joseph with the others mentioned is provided by the fact that he later migrated with Michael-5b and Jonathan to Rutland Twp, where they jointly bought real estate (see below).

Ever since the Metcalfs had come into the Medfield-Medway area they must have been acquainted with various members of the Adams family. The American patriarch of this clan was Henry Adams, who came to Quincy, MA, in 1632, escaping persecutions in England, like Michael Metcalf. Among his descendants was President John Adams, who had a monument erected to Henry at Quincy (Jameson, 1886). John Adams descended from a son of Henry, who remained in the Quincy and Braintree area, but four other sons migrated out to Medfield Twp. The records of Medfield and Medway are full of their families. Living in West Medway (Fig. 4c) in the early 1700's were Daniel and Sarah Sanford Adams, he a great-grandson of old Henry. Their second child was Deborah (b. 1717), probably named for her paternal grandmother, Deborah Partridge Adams. She married Joseph Metcalf, the son of Michael-4b, and (as I interpret it) Lydia, on 29 March 1739 in Medway.

I shall digress a bit here and indicate a few things concerning the Adams family in Medfield-Medway. A number of them were of prominence in these communities and some still are prominent there, for that matter. Daniel had been a selectman on occasion and his son, Moses Adams (Deborah's brother), must have been a leading citizen of Medway, as he was elected selectman during nine years and served as representative from Medway to the Great General Court of Massachusetts for three years (Jameson, 1886:80-83). He was also active in representing the cause of the town and of the new republic during the Revolutionary War.

An earlier Adams of note in Medway, whom the Metcalfs surely knew, was Mrs. Experience Cook Adams, who taught school in Medway around 1700 and who, according to Jameson (1886:42) "was the FIRST FEMALE TEACHER whose name has come down to us." I do not know how the words "FIRST" and "us" are to be interpreted, whether just for Medway or more broadly, but, in any event, I should think that she was surely among the earlier female teachers in the colonies. Another Adams woman of note was Hannah Adams, a distant cousin over in Medfield. She was born in 1755. In a short article in The Dedham Historical Record (Anon., 1895:99,100) it is stated: "It has been said of Hannah Adams that she was the 'first woman in America who made literature a profession'." Her works included View of the World's Religions and History of New England. Mention is made of her father (in Medfield) also as having literary tastes and possessing a substantial library where young Hannah spent much time.

I bring up the above examples to give some background concerning the family of Deborah Adams Metcalf. It isn't much, but it does suggest that, as an Adams in Medway, and, especially, as a sister of Moses Adams, she was likely exposed to a fairly enriched social, intellectual, and political environment, insofar as this was available at the time and place. There is a suggestion, also, of something in Adams family tradition that encouraged the accomplishments of women as well as of men.

Joseph and Deborah left Medway, probably in 1741 or 1742, between the dates of birth of their first and second children. Possibly they lived a short while in the Town of Holliston, just to the north of Medway, as their oldest child was baptized there on 19 April 1741 (Anon., 1908). They then moved northwestward about 30 miles to what was then the Town of Rutland in Worcester Co., MA. Joseph's brothers, Michael-5b and Jonathan, and their families also moved to Rutland in this Metcalf migration. Michael-5b had married Melatiah Hamant in 1728 and they had seven children born in the Town of Medway between 1729 and 1741: Oliver, Michael-6b, Melatiah, Amity, Abijah, Sarah, and Burgess. Child No. 8, Silas, was born in Rutland in 1745

Joseph's brother, Jonathan, married Mary Adams on 19 Oct 1742, in Medway (Anon., 1905a), although he is listed as already being a resident of Rutland at the time. Jonathan and Mary had nine or so children, all born in Rutland (=Barre, for later children): Lois, Mary, Jotham, Miriam, Luke, John, Comfort, and Solomon,--and, possibly, Simeon.

Daniel Adams, Deborah's brother, also moved out to this new frontier. This is a hilly area and, even today, one of the least populated areas in Massachusetts. This makes me wonder if farming may have been somewhat difficult there, although a Worcester County history of 1889 (Walker, in Hurd, 1889:330) describes it as an agricultural Eden.

As was usual for Massachusetts Townships, the eastern part of the Town of Rutland was settled first. According to Walker (in Hurd, 1889:333) it is traditionally supposed that a young Irishman, James Caldwell, first came into the western part of the town about 1729, "having driven cattle hither, and remaining with them during the following winter, living alone and finding shelter under a shelving rock...." The western part of the Town of Rutland was originally referred to as the "Northwest Quarter." In 1733, the proprietors of the Northwest Quarter held a meeting in Boston, where they agreed to divide their property into thirty-three "great farms" of about 500 acres each and 66 additional lots of fifty acres each. These proprietors

then endeavored to attract settlers to these lands (Sullivan, 1974:9). According to Hurd (1889:333):

- 1, Land was also tendered to parties provided they would build and occupy a house thereon, of certain dimensions and within a specified time, the usual dimensions being twenty feet long and eight feet studs, the houses to be made habitable by the following winter and to be occupied by the builder or his heirs for at least five years...

Among those attracted to these lands in the Northwest Quarter of Rutland Twp were the three sons of Michael-4b, as noted above. According to Worcester Co. deeds, Wm. Brintnall, one of the original proprietors, sold 280 acres in Great Farm No. 9 to Michael-5b and Joseph in 1737, "it being one half of ye great Farm No. 9--ye southerly part of ye upland of said farm containing two hundred and seventeen acres and ye uppermost part of ye meadow ground containing sixty three acres." Later, in 1747 (when deed was recorded, at least), the James Caldwell, already alluded to, sold an additional 277 acres in Great Farm No. 9 to Michael-5b, Joseph and Jonathan, to give a total of 557 acres for the Great Farm. (Indicated as comprising 560 acres in Fig. 9-a, discussed below). Hurd notes (1889:332) that "It is a matter of record that James Caldwell was here June 6, 1739, representing the ownership of Great Farm No. 9, which was in the east part of the town, lying on the banks of the Cannestow and Ware Rivers." Hurd also notes (p. 333) that the original proprietors had held a drawing at which time a Joseph Foster had drawn Great Farm No. 9 and that "it was a part of Foster's share of No. 9, which was afterwards represented by James Caldwell." A map (Fig. 9-a) of the Great Farms kindly supplied by Mr. Albert L. Clark, Chairman of the Barre Historical Commission, shows Great Farm No. 9 to be about 2.5 miles southeast of Barre Village and, as indicated above, the confluence of the Cannestow and Ware Rivers is within its confines. Mr. Clark observes (in litt., 4 December 1986), in reference to Great Farm No. 9, that "Jonathan Metcalf married Mary Adams in the town of Medway in 1742 and they definitely lived here. They had a farm east of the Ware River near what was to become the site of our one covered



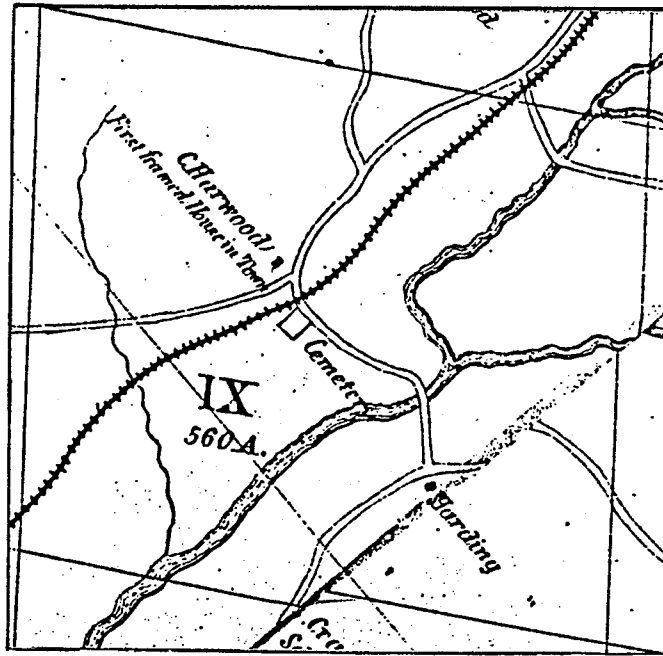


Fig. 9-b

Fig. 9-a,b. In the 1730's and 1740's, three sons of Michael 4-b: Michael 5-b, Joseph, and Jonathan, bought Great Farm No. 9, consisting of 560 acres, and located southeast of Barre Centre, Worcester Co., MA. Great Farm IX (enlarged in Fig. 9-b) is shown on this rare old map (somewhat askew) kindly copied by Mr. Albert L. Clark, Chairman of the Barre Historical Commission. The valleys of the Ware and Cannestow Rivers traverse the farm, NE to SW, and there are upland areas in the northwestern and southeastern part of the farm.

bridge in town and near what we now call Harding Hill. It is the one on the map labelled 'Harding'." (Harding is shown east of the Cannestow River in Great Farm No. 9 in Fig. 9-a). Mr. Clark also notes that Great Farm No. 9, at the present time, is "part of the Metropolitan District Commission, part of the watershed for City of Boston water supply."

In 1748 the three Metcalf brothers sold 277 acres in Great Farm No. 9 to a Sam Caldwell, so apparently they didn't keep their entire Great Farm very long. I seem to have developed a feeling that buying and selling real estate was a favorite pastime of this and of the next generation of these New Englanders, as we continue to see this sort of thing. It appears that Michael-5b bowed out of ownership in Great Farm No. 9 at this time (1748). Not long after this he seems to have appeared in Keene, NH, then known as Upper Ashuelot. According to a descendant of Michael-5b, Mr. Edward G. Metcalf (in litt., 21 November 1986), as early as 11 Feb 1750, Michael-4b, Michael-5b, and Michael-5b's son, Oliver, were settlers at Upper Ashuelot, being among its founders. Thus, it appears that Michael-4b left Medway and moved up to Barre with his son, Michael-5b, and, still later, accompanied Michael 5-b on to Keene, New Hampshire, where, as noted above, Michael 4-b died in 1761 (Whitcomb, 1905:207) (see Fig. 6).

According to information supplied by another of Michael-5b's descendants, Ms. Betsy Lang (in litt., 29 November 1986), the wife of Michael-5b, Melatiah Hamant Metcalf, died in 1751. Ms. Lang has also pointed out the likelihood that Michael-5b remarried to a Widow Sarah Allen Wells of Deerfield, MA. Deerfield records that she has studied suggest that Michael-5b might have lived in Deerfield for a short time between his sojourns in Barre and Keene. Deerfield is some 30 miles to the west of Barre in northern Massachusetts. Records show most of the children of Michael-5b living around Keene by the early 1760's. He became, via his five sons, patriarch of a numerous clan of "Keene Metcalfs," a group added to by at least two sons of Jonathan Metcalf, these also migrating to Keene from Barre,

at a later time. This large group appears, in subsequent years, to have sent off many shoots northward and westward.

As for Joseph and Jonathan, it appears that they kept 277 acres, more or less in the eastern half of Great Farm No. 9, after Michael-5b left. In 1749, they both signed a petition (Town of Barre, 1875:51) requesting that the Northwest Quarter of the Town of Rutland be granted separate town or district status. The petition makes it clear that the civil and ecclesiastical aspects of this society were still much interwoven and that such things were not greatly changed from what they were in previous towns where our Metcalfs had lived. The petition requests (p. 50) powers for:

...building houses for Public worship settling & maintaining ministers laying out & making Roads & for all other Services of a Public nature... (Note: Public is spelled in two ways)

As was often the case, the petitioners complained that it was too far to the meeting house in Rutland village (p. 47):

...there was no organized church, and on sacrament days they were obliged to go to Rutland in order to participate in the holy rite of communion. The distance was from six to fourteen miles, and in some seasons of the year the road was almost impassable.

District status was granted to this part of the Town of Rutland in 1749. It was called Rutland District at first, and later, in 1774, became the Town of Barre. Records concerning the families of Joseph and Jonathan earlier than 1749 are in the Vital Records of the Town of Rutland (Anon.: 1905b) and later ones in Vital Records of the Town of Barre (Anon.: 1903b).

The Metcalf-Adams family interconnections are very complex about this time. Jonathan had married Mary Adams, a distant cousin of Deborah. However, there was another Jonathan Metcalf, descended from Michael-2, via his son Eleazar, and of the Metcalf stock from Wrentham Twp. This Jonathan's grandfather had migrated from Wrentham to the Franklin area, south of Medway Twp. This Jonathan also married a Mary Adams, who was none other than the daughter of Moses Adams, Deborah's brother, aforementioned. Thus, "our" ancestral Deborah had a Mary Adams

Metcalfe, who was married to a Jonathan Metcalfe, and who was her sister-in-law on the Metcalfe side, and she also had a Mary Adams Metcalfe, who was her niece on the Adams side! Although I hear cries of "Stop!", I shall hasten on to note that a sister of the Jonathan Metcalfe of the Wrentham/Franklin stock, who was named Martha, married still another Adams, an Asa, who was a nephew of Deborah by her brother Thomas. According to Hixon (1900:90-92), there was an Adams and Metcalfe Tomb in "the old burying ground" in West Medway. It was "demolished" in 1881 and had contained, among others, the remains of Moses Adams and some of the Wrentham/Franklin-derived Metcalfe-Adams group (but none of our branch, descended from John-1 Metcalfe).

Deborah Adams Metcalfe seems to have had a major input in naming her offspring, as most bear Adams names, rather than the Metcalfe names seen so frequently up until now. There is not a single Michael, John, or Jonathan among them. Their names were Asa, Deborah, Nathan, Elijah, Joseph, Tabitha, and Silence.

Joseph Metcalfe died young, at about 43 years of age, probably in 1758 or 1759, for Silence, his youngest child, was born in August of 1758 and on 8 May 1759, Deborah was appointed administratrix of "the estate of your late husband Joseph Metcalfe." In this regard I happen to note the following, recorded in A History of Rutland by Jonas Reed (1836:69):

In 1759 or 1760, a soldier passed through the town from the army, who was not cleansed from the small pox;--it being on the Sabbath, his dog went into the meeting-house and gave the infection to several persons, of which the following died and were buried on their farms:

Joseph's name is not listed (but was the Northwest District or Quarter included?), and, of course, there are many other possible causes of his death. According to Albert L. Clark, no graves of Joseph nor of Deborah are identifiable in the Town of Barre.

Deborah was appointed administratrix of Joseph's estate by a Judge Chandler (Worcester Co. Probate Records, Vol. 107, p. 212). The judge then appointed three persons to take an inventory of Joseph's estate. The inventory revealed total

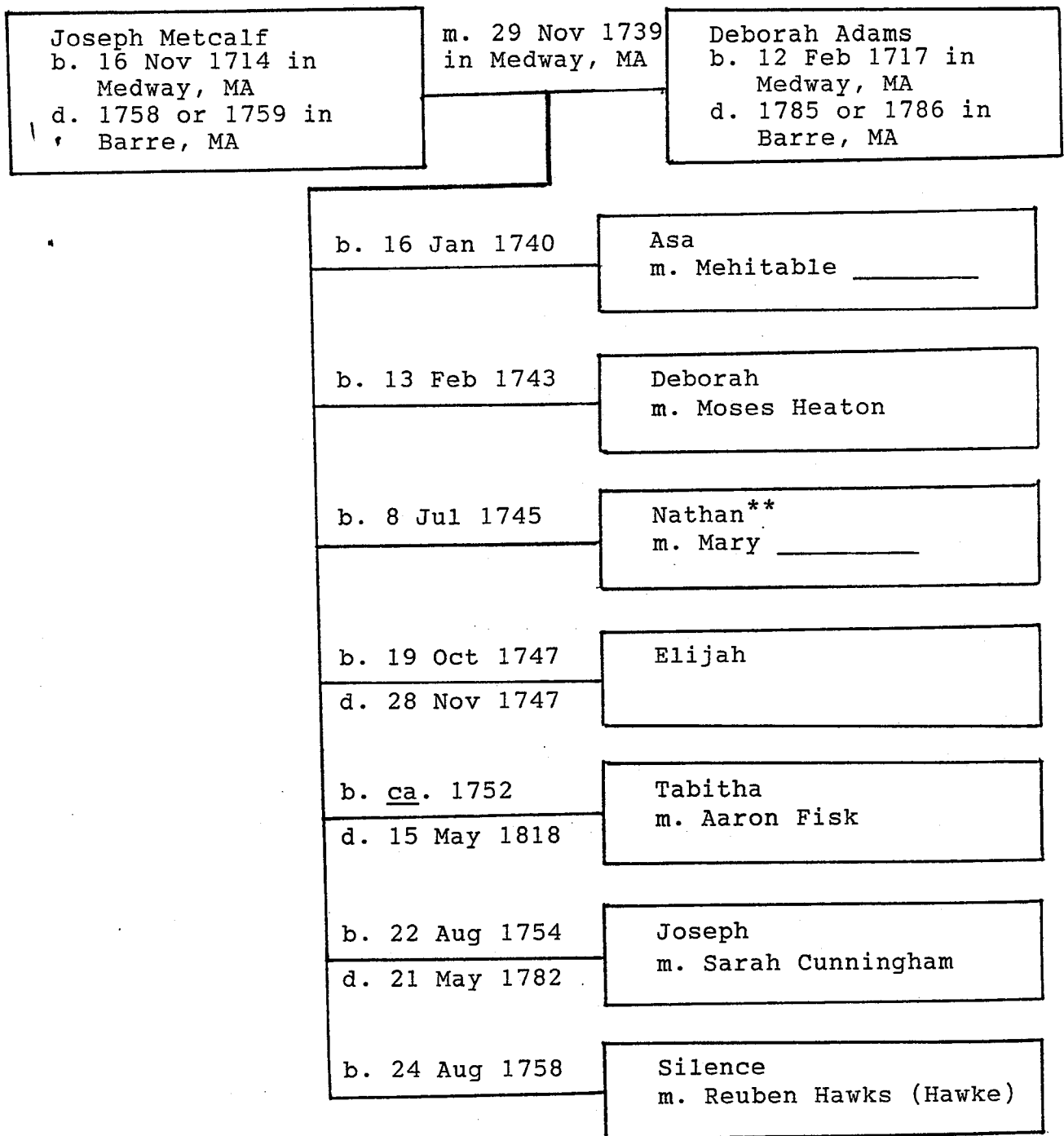


Fig. 10. Children of Joseph and Deborah Adams Metcalf.

assets of 339 pounds, 7 shillings, 4 pence, and some farthings. It disclosed the following (Probate Records, Book 6, pp. 1226-227):

140 acres (253:6:8)	two coats
a pew in the meeting house	one shirt
2 yoke of steers	bed curtains
4 cows and calves	4 lbs. cotton wool
2 heifers	some linen yarn
5 yearlings	old chests
5 sheep	feathers
7 lambs	4 geese
1 gun	sheeps wool
1 pot	grain
trunk	3 beds and bedding
skillet	some old books
dish	looking glass
kettle	iron wool card
an old kettle	an old table and chair
some old pewter	1/2 of a cart
old wooden ware	plow
pork barrels and pork	other iron ware
glass bottles	bay mare (4:13:4)
earthen ware	black mare (2:13:4)

Finally, those making the inventory recorded that "There is one old Sow, Six Shoats and Two Piggs they are in the woods and cannot be found but by the best information of the Neighbours they are worth 4:0:0." Deborah swore to the accuracy of the inventory and vouched that "if anything more appears she will add of same."

So here we can obtain an idea of just what a home of one of our ancestors contained, in the 1700's. It might be an interesting mental exercise to try to put ourselves in their setting. It may seem to us that Joseph and Deborah had not accumulated much of this world's goods, although the inventory does tell us that the family must have gone to services in the meeting house. Numerous things are described as being "old" and the sleeping accomodations sound a bit crowded for a family of nine. However, the basic items inventoried and the monetary evaluation of the estate is similar to that noted for yeomen (=farmers) of Dedham in its first 100 years (Lockridge, 1970:69-70). Lockridge notes that a farmer's estate would amount

to 200 to 400 pounds and Joseph's falls in the middle, at 339 pounds.

A sketch-map in a deed of 1760 shows widow Deborah with 147 acres in the east central part of Great Farm No. 9, and her brother-in-law, Jonathan, with 45 acres to the north and 85 acres to the south of her holding. By now, the New England farm, as we know it today, had taken shape. On such a farm, then, Joseph and Deborah's children must have grown up in somewhat more of a rural, frontier atmosphere than the preceding two or three generations had experienced, back in Medway and Medfield. Perhaps this had some lasting effect on the shadowy figure of son, Nathan, with whom we are especially concerned, and who seems always to fade into the woods like his father's pigs, noted in the inventory.

Joseph's estate was not settled until July, 1760, when Judge Chandler authorized (Probate Records, Book 10; 26 July 1760) Deborah to take one-third of the balance and directed that "she pay to ye deceased's children as they respectively come of age or marriage viz. to Asa, Nathan, Joseph, Deborah, Tabitha & Silence, leaving to ye said Asa a double share, a single share being twenty six pounds two shillings and two pence." (Asa reaped the benefits of primogeniture).

At various times after the death of Joseph it is indicated by probate records that guardians were appointed for all his children except Asa. Moses Adams, back in Medway, was appointed guardian to his nephew, Nathan, in 1762 (Probate Records, Vol. 109, p. 241). In 1769, Uncle Eleazar Adams was appointed guardian for Tabitha and Joseph, whereas Deborah, herself, was appointed guardian for Silence (Probate Records, Vol. 112, pp. 109-113). I gather from contemporary records that children had a hand in selecting their own guardians when they were in their "teens."

The Metcalfs did not leave much of an imprint on Barre, I'm afraid, although the Rev. James Thompson, in a discourse given at the Centennial of the incorporation of the town (Thompson, 1875:46) did mention: "...it would utterly fail me to tell of

those brave pioneers, Cunningham and Davis and Heaton...or of Wallis and Forbush, of Nurss and the Metcalfs, all men of substance...." (A son and daughter of Deborah and Joseph married, respectively, a Cunningham and a Heaton).

\* \* \* \* \*

#### Visiting Medfield/Medway

Back in the old, old days I might have been able to stay in the inn of cousins Abigail and Seth Clark in Medfield, but by 1986 progress had eliminated such anachronisms and the closest place I could find accommodations was six miles away on Hwy. No. 1, east of Walpole. From there, I walked over to Medfield of a morning, having romantic ideas of approaching via country lanes and seeing, from afar, Medfield nestled in the Charles River Valley. What I encountered, instead, was constant traffic along Rte. 27 from Walpole to Medfield, although there was usually a good mowed walkway alongside the highway, only occasionally infested with poison ivy. The Boston weather forecaster had promised a dry morning, but it commenced to shower about halfway to Medfield. However, I reasoned that this only added a certain New England flavor and pulled a raincoat out of my backpack. I never got a distant view of Medfield. I just oozed into it along Spring Street and presently came to Main Street, which was my principal goal that day. Along Main Street are many historic buildings, several connected with John-1 Metcalf and his descendants in one way or another, such as Seth and Abigail's inn, the Daniel Sanders House and, above all, John-1's homestead itself. John's old home had just been sold, and the former owners, Mr. and Mrs. Bob Voelk, were packing. However, Mr. Voelk kindly gave Mrs. Eleanor Anes, of the Medfield Historical Commission, and myself a tour of the home. There was so much to take in so quickly and I was emotionally so elated to be exploring such an ancient Metcalf home, that I was dumbstruck, could think of no appropriate questions to ask and emerged with a tangle of impressions.

Externally, the home is presently painted gray with red trim. The weatherboarding had, Mrs. Anes thought, been replaced

by a Mr. Ernest B. Daniels, who acquired the home in 1928. In any event, the weatherboards showed straight saw-marks, as if made by a hand saw, as would have been the case in the 1600's, of course, long before the use of circular, power saws. The main part of the house is rectangular and of two stories, plus attic. From the roof emerges a massive square chimney into which is led the smoke from six fireplaces, up and downstairs. We were shown the door that leads to the space around the chimney. It has been suggested that this could have functioned as a hiding place from Indians; however, I tend to agree with Mr. Voelk, who observed that this was probably not such a good place to hide, considering the habit that local Indians had of burning buildings.

Mrs. Anes was interested in various aspects of beams, floorboards, etc. that seemed to bespeak antiquity. Mr. Voelk said that the square, hand-forged nails tended to work out of the ancient floorboards, producing something of a hazard for children playing on the floor. A series of four single-story rooms extended out westward from the main part of the house. Mr. Voelk suggested that these rooms might be a good 200 years old. The third room had clearly been used as a stable, and a hayloft and stalls still remained. John-1's son, Joseph, who lived here, left a white-faced cow at his demise and perhaps she munched timothy hay here during the winters if this part of the house is, indeed, that old. Joseph had been the sexton of the "burying ground," a short distance away on the north side of Main Street. It was a prerogative of the sexton to graze his cattle on the grasses of the cemetery and I suppose that a good Metcalf like Joseph probably availed himself of this privilege.

At the strawberry social and Historical Society meeting at the Peak House that evening, I met Mrs. Chris Davis, Town Historian for the town of Millis just across the Charles River to the west. Millis Twp had been carved from the eastern part of old Medway and was the part in which our ancestors lived in the 1700's. Next day, with the able guidance of Mrs. Davis and with the indulgence of her young daughter, Laura, I was able to

view some features related to the former environs of our clan. We viewed the Charles River at various places. The floodplain meadowlands that had attracted the early Medfield pioneers are not as well developed now as back then. The floodplain is much grown up to low shrubs now. However, there are some plots of meadow grass left--enough to provide an idea of what the former meadows might have looked like. This is especially the case near the bridge on Route 127. No vestige of the dwelling-places of Michael-4b or of Samuel Metcalf, west of the Charles, seem to remain. However, some locally famed tupelo trees, called King Philip's Trees, still persist and must have been on or close to their properties. Under these trees, it is said, King Philip's Indians are supposed to have celebrated and to have roasted a cow as they withdrew after their burning of Medfield and the Great Bridge in 1676.

To the west of the village of Millis we viewed The Black Swamp in which John-1's sons, John and Joseph, and the heirs of his son, Michael-3b, had received allotments in 1702 (Jameson, 1886:40,41). The swamp was not so sinister as I had imagined it, after all, and was, in fact, very interesting, biologically. As we explored Millis Town, Mrs. Davis would point out, from time to time, some historic home of a member of the Adams family. They seemed to abound in the Town and Adams family members still live there, unlike those descendants of John-1 Metcalf who bore his surname and who departed so long ago.

CHAPTER 4  
TOWN OF CHESTERFIELD

1 ,  
The association of our family with the Town (or District) of Barre in Massachusetts was not very lengthy. I have suggested that the farm there was not a very productive one and this hunch is strengthened, I think, by the fact that none of the children of Joseph and Deborah stayed there. The sons, along with sister Tabitha, migrated off to the frontier, as had done their father. Their frontier lay in the Town of Chesterfield in Cheshire County in southwestern New Hampshire. The Town is bordered by the Connecticut River on the west, where its most productive lands are located. In the central part is the village of Chesterfield, sometimes called the "Centre Village." North of the village is Spafford Lake, comprising some 700 acres. The eastern part of the town is hilly and called Hardscrabble.

Chesterfield is about 50 miles northwest of the Barre area. I assume that availability of cheap, virgin land was an enticement to the Metcalfs from Barre. Their first real estate transaction in Chesterfield is dated 1767. The country was still raw frontier then, the first white child having been born there only five years earlier, in 1762 (Randall, 1882:37). Hostilities existing during the French and Indian Wars had deterred settlement previously. However, by 1767 the township had 365 inhabitants (Randall, 1882:38). According to Hurd (1886) wolves and bears were still troublesome to those early settlers. He relates (pp. 130-131) that a group of hunters once staged a successful bear hunt in the eastern part of the town and received as bounty from the grateful town fathers a barrel of rum, valued at \$20.00. The hunters remained at the house of the selectman who had given out the rum until it was all drunk. So apparently there were some persons of a raffish sort in the town. I assume that the Metcalf boys did not indulge in such goings-on and remained staunch congregationalists, judging by the religiosity of a will of one of them that is given below.

Nathan and Joseph Metcalf became much involved in real

estate during their New Hampshire years as indicated in the Cheshire Co. registry of deeds. I was told by a New England historian that buying and selling parcels of land was a favorite Yankee pastime in those days, especially in the long winters. The deeds registered, which I was able to find in a hasty survey, surely do not reflect all their transactions but I counted up at least 250 acres that Nathan bought at one time or another and 347 acres that he sold. Some of this property was located near Chesterfield village, some over in Hardscrabble and some in the Towns of Swanzey, Hinsdale and Monadnock. Joseph bought some 150 acres in Chesterfield, 50 of these from Nathan for 37 pounds, plus 30 acres in Swanzey Town to the east.

Even mother Deborah Adams Metcalf got into the act. In 1771 we find her selling a lot in the village of Chesterfield and buying 49 acres on a prominent hill immediately west of Spafford Lake. An old (but very well preserved) house on this farm still stands atop the hill offering a grand view, westward, across the Connecticut River Valley and on to the Green Mountains of Vermont in the distance. I think it likely that Deborah lived here with the Fisks, her daughter Tabitha's family. The Aaron Fisks came to Chesterfield about 1771 according to Randall (1882:311), when Deborah was making her purchase and we note below that they were living in the "house on the hill" in 1777. I like to visualize an independent Deborah, who grew tired of village life and preferred her lonely hilltop with its view to the west and the encroaching forest of pine and hemlock, sugar maple and beech on the east. There is still a piney odor in the air up there but the scenic view has enticed "developers" and the result is not so scenic. One reaches Deborah's aerie by turning north onto the Pinnacle Spring road just west of the intersection of Highways 67 and 9, north of Chesterfield.

I am afraid that my romantic imaginings about Deborah, in the preceding paragraph, are probably all wrong. It is more likely, I suppose, that she bought the hilltop farm for the Fisks to live on and that she then went back to Massachusetts, herself, after a longer or shorter period of time. In November,

1779, a Deborah and Michael Woodcock sold the 49 acres on the hill for 40 pounds to all the sons and sons-in-law of Deborah:

Asa, Nathan and Joseph Metcalf of Chesterfield

Aaron Fisk of Chesterfield

Moses Heaton (husband of Deborah, the younger) a  
physician of Charlemont, Hampshire Co. (now Franklin  
Co.), MA

Reuben Hawks (husband of Silence), a yeoman, also of  
Charlemont

Then, in the same year, the hill property was sold for 40 pounds to Aaron Fisk by the remaining persons listed. It appears, then, that Deborah married a Michael Woodcock and, after some legal maneuvering, her property on the hill went to the Aaron Fisks, who, as I noted, seem to have been living there anyway. There is no record of any Woodcocks (people, that is) from Chesterfield. Probably Michael was from "back home" in Massachusetts and Deborah must have gone back there before or after she married him. At least, she died in Barre, probably in 1785 or 1786. In May, 1786, Aaron Fisk was appointed the administrator of her estate (suggesting, again, that Deborah had a special closeness to Tabitha's family). In this legal document (Worcester Co. Probate Ltrs.; Vol. 119, p. 29), she is referred to as "Deborah Metcalf," again, rather than as "Deborah Woodcock." Had the shadowy Mr. Woodcock died in the meantime or did the relationship terminate in some other way? Clearly Deborah got around quite a bit for her time and place. I picture her as a spirited and intelligent woman and should like to have known my great-great-great-great grandmother. Her son, Nathan (great-great-great grandpa), leaves no inklings of information that suggest similar qualities.

The three Metcalf brothers were living in Chesterfield at the time of the Revolutionary War. They were clearly not loyal to the crown. Perhaps they had received an anti-royalist bias down through the generations from the likes of Michael Metcalf and Henry Adams. As outlined in Hurd (1886:131-133), on 14 March 1776, the General Congress of the "United Colonies" called for all persons not loyal to the cause of the revolution to be disarmed. To effect this, all white males ("Lunaticks, &c.,

excepted") were required to sign a declaration of allegiance to the revolutionary tenets. In the Town of Chesterfield only 13 refused to sign and 139 signed the declaration. Among those signing were Nathan, Joseph and Michael Metcalf. I don't know where Asa was on the day of the signing; perhaps he was back in the Barre area. The Michael listed was a "spillover" from neighboring Keene, where there were numerous Metcalfs. These Keene cousins are a bit bothersome to the genealogical investigator involved with our lineage in Chesterfield. They had names like Amos, Phebe, Sarah, John, Hamah, Abijah, Calvin, Meletiah, Hannah, Thomas and that good old, enduring Michael. Clayton Metcalf (1979:303-304) mentions these Keene-based Metcalfs, tentatively tracing them back to the old, original Michael-1's son, Michael-2. However, it seems clear that they descended, instead, from Michael-5b, son of Michael-4b, discussed in Chap. 3, and brother of the elder Joseph, who died at Barre. Michael-5b married Meletiah Hamant in Medfield in 1728. He, together with his old father, Michael-4b, and, at least some progeny (Oliver, Abijah) migrated to Keene. His daughter, Sarah, married an Amos Davis and the Davises moved to Chesterfield. Oliver, Abijah and Sarah would have been first cousins of Joseph's children and perhaps had something to do with the migration of Joseph's offspring up to southwestern New Hampshire. (See Fig. 6, which attempts to illustrate this.)

But to get back to the Revolutionary War-- The following remarks are based on Hurd (1886:136-140). In 1775, three regiments were organized in New Hampshire and Joseph Metcalf from Chesterfield was in a Captain Whitcomb's company. The men in this company served 3 to 3 1/2 months and received 6 to almost 9 pounds pay. In July and August, 1776, another regiment of New Hampshire men was raised and in a Col. Wingate's company we find listed both a "Joseph Metcalf, corporal" and a "Joseph Metcalf, Jr." This may have been a clerical duplication or perhaps there were two Josephs around. In any event I should suppose that "Jr." was, at least, "our" Joseph, since his father was named Joseph. This company served for several months. Again,

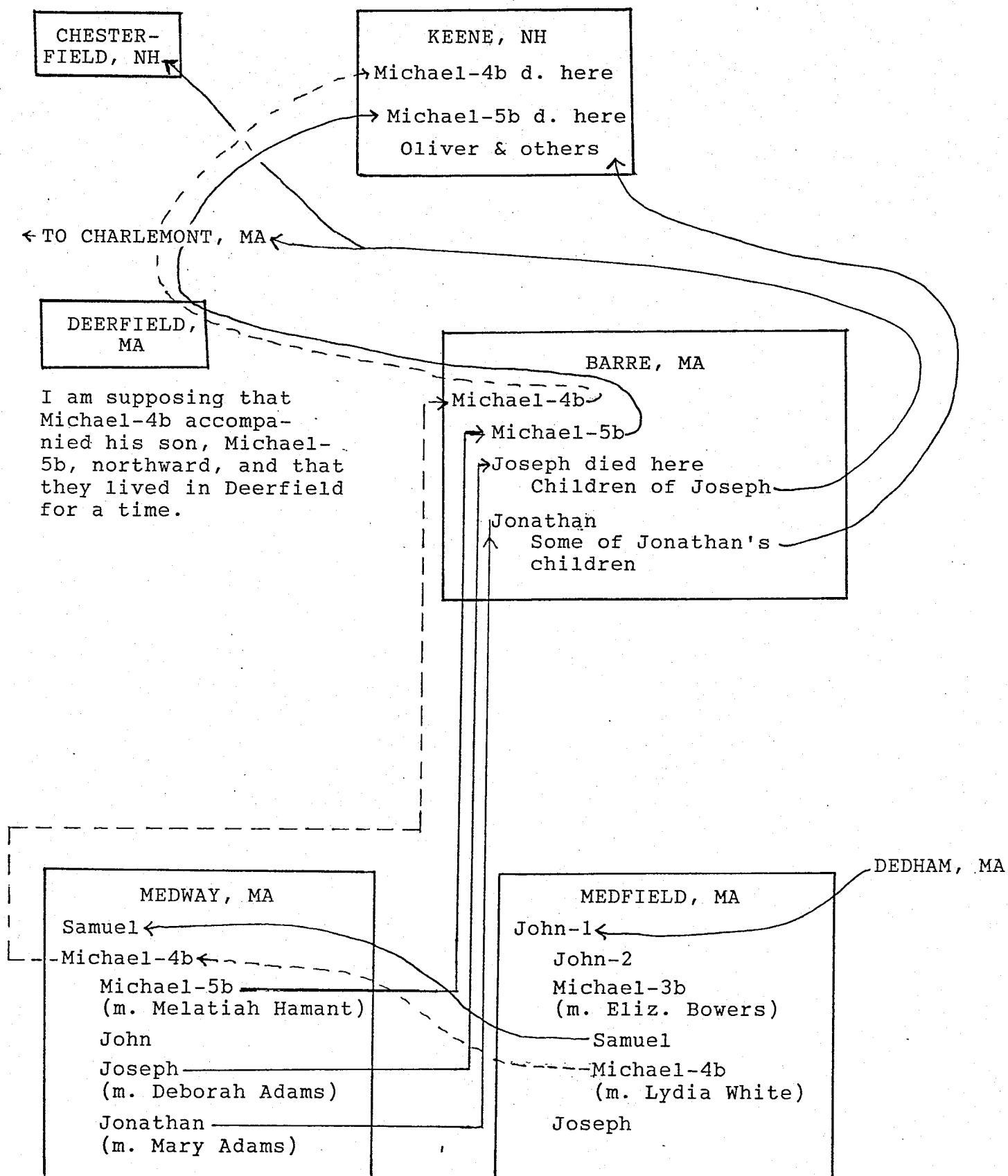


Fig. 6. Geographic movements of some of the descendants of John-1 Metcalf in MA and NH in the 1600's and early 1700's. Names of children are indented below those of parent(s). Peregrination of Michael-4b is indicated by dashed line.

in May, 1777, a Joseph Metcalf joined with a company sent to assist an attack on Fort Ticonderoga, New York, to the northwest. The alarm proved without foundation, however, and the men returned home, receiving, in addition to their monthly pay of 4 pounds and 10 shillings, three pence per mile for marching to Fort Ticonderoga and two pence per mile for the return march. However, they had scarcely returned home, when word came that Burgoyne's army really was approaching Ft. Ticonderoga and another regiment set out for Ticonderoga on June 29. However, the fort was evacuated on July 6 and the New Hampshire men again returned home, after service that had lasted two to thirteen days. Both Joseph Metcalf, Joseph Metcalf, Jr., and Nathan Metcalf are listed as being in this last-named regiment (so perhaps there was a second Joseph around). This seems to have been the only Revolutionary War service seen by our ancestor, Nathan. However, a Joseph again trooped to the colors on July 22, along with Aaron Fisk, Tabitha's husband. This time the New Hampshire men actually got to do some fighting in the Battle of Bennington, Vermont, an event still amply commemorated by a tall monument at Bennington. The crucial battle took place on 16 August. Hurd (1886:140) relates (referring to Chesterfield):

It has always been claimed that the roar of the cannon on that eventful day, was heard by several different persons in this town. It was heard, it is said, by the wife of Aaron Fisk, who lived on the hill west of Spafford's Lake. Greatly agitated thereby, she walked about the house as long as it continued.

It seems quite likely that Tabitha's young ears did pick up the reverberations, especially since "Deborah's Hill" rises high above the surrounding countryside. It is natural that she was distraught, what with her husband and, quite likely, her favorite brother (see Joseph's will, below) off fighting. However, no Chesterfield men are known to have been killed in the battle at Bennington.

On 1 June 1780, Joseph, who had apparently kept ties back in Barre, MA, was married in Barre to Sarah Cunningham. The vital records of Barre stipulate "Joseph of Chesterfield and Sarah

Cunningham," indicating that Sarah was a local girl. Less than a year later, Sarah died, on 1 March 1781 "in the 23rd year of her age" and Joseph, himself, died a year later on 21 May 1782 "in the 28th year of his age." Perhaps he and Sarah died of some gradually debilitating disease such as tuberculosis. It seems that the Barre area was bad for Metcalfs, as both the older and younger Joseph died there, as well as their wives. Joseph's will (Cheshire Co., NH, Probate Records, Vol. 1, p. 51) reads:

In the Name of God Amen. I Joseph Metcalf of Barre in the County of Worcester and Common Wealth of Massachusetts Yeoman: Being weak in body; but of sound mind and Memory, blessed be God, therefor, Do this twenty first day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and Eighty two, Make, Publish and Ordain this my Last Will and Testament, in manner and form following, that is to say, I commend my Soul into the hands of Almighty God, who gave it me, & my Body to the Earth from whence it came in hopes of a joyfull Resurrection through the Merriits of my Saviour Jesus Christ: And as for that worldly Estate wherewith it has Pleased God to Bless me: I dispose thereof as follows, After my just Debts are paid and Funeral charges Defrayed and Deasant Grave Stones Erected at my own grave, and my wifes, who is Deceased, for which purpose I alow four Pounds Lawfull Silver money: I give to my good Friend Mr. Robert Cunningham of Barre, the sum of Twenty Pounds, money as aforesaid to be paid by my Executor in one year after my Decease.

Item: To my Sisters Deborah Heaton and Silence Hawk and my Brother Asa Metcalf, I give Equal shares.

Item: To my sister Tabytha Fisk as much as one and a half of the above mentioned.

Item: To my brother Nathan Metcalf half as much as one of the first named: all the above Legacies to be paid in one year after my Decease by my Executor.

And I make, constitute, ordain and appoint my good Friend Mr. Jonathan Metcalf of Barre aforesaid sole Executor of this my Last Will and Testament with full power to collect and Receive all the personal Estate of which I shall die seized and possessed, and also dispose of my Real Estate in land, in Chesterfield or Else Where for the purposes aforesaid: he retaining to himself his Reasonable Charge for settleing said Estate.

In Witness, whereof I the Said Joseph Metcalf have hereunto set my hand and seal the Day and Year above writ.

Signed, Sealed and Delivered by the Testator as his Last  
Will and Testament in presents of us

Josiah Dana

Jonathan Fletcher

Ezra Jones

Joseph Metcalf

I suppose that the Jonathan Metcalf, appointed executor, was either Joseph's uncle, who had married Mary Adams, or possibly their son, recorded in vital records as "Jotham," born in 1748, and, thus, about the age of his cousin Joseph.

I notice that Joseph did not bequeath Nathan as much as his other siblings. I come to suspect that Nathan was not the most liked member of this family. I notice, for example, that Tabitha named sons for all her brothers except Nathan. I don't think that I like him too well, myself, as he has caused me a lot of time and expense because he did such a rotten job of having things recorded.

In his history of the Town of Chesterfield, Randall (1882:392) notes:

METCALF, NATHAN, was in Chfd. in 1770. His wife was Mary \_\_\_\_\_. His name is not found after 1791. Only 2 ch. were recorded: Levi, b. Dec. 13, 1767; Joseph, b. Feb. 10, 1770.

The births recorded by Randall also appear in Chesterfield Town Records (LDS Genealogical Library Microfilm 015,098, p. 27). These records also show (p. 72) the names of Nathan and of Aaron Fisk in the record of school wards as they were laid out by a committee chosen for that purpose on 15 December 1785. They were in School Ward No. 12.

We take a last look at Nathan's siblings before moving on. Asa was still recorded as being in Chesterfield in 1779, when a son, Nathaniel, was born to him and his wife Mehetable (Randall, 1882:392). However, the 1790 federal census records his name in the Town of Marlborough to the east of Chesterfield. Thus, everyone except the Aaron Fisks seems to have left old Chesterfield by the early 1790's. The Fisk name is still well represented in southwestern New Hampshire up to the present

time. I even noticed an Aaron Fisk in the Keene, NH, telephone directory in 1981.

To Tabitha and Aaron Fisk were born Lavina, Aaron, Asa, Joseph, Abel, Elijah, Ezra, Levi, Lois and Betsy. Tabitha died in 1818 and her grave and gravestone are in the little cemetery behind the town hall in Chesterfield village. Her inscription (which seems to contain something of an admonition to Aaron) reads:

Mrs. Tabitha  
wife of  
Mr. Aaron Fisk  
who died  
May 15, 1818  
AE 66

Farewell dear partner here below  
Your care of me all ceases now,  
Persue the ways of truth and love,  
That we may meet in heaven above.

I was quite taken by this and other quaint verses appearing on gravestones of this vintage in the cemetery. I suspect that they were written by one of the locally renowned poets, Stephen Streeter, Sr., or Stephen Streeter, Jr., who are discussed in Randall (1882:195-202; 463). An epitaph for "Rachel" begins: "Here lies her urn/ She'll ne'er return..." and for "Pascal": "The envenomed shaft of ruthless Death is hurled/ and Pascal droops away & quits the world."

It took quite a while for Aaron Fisk to quit the world; he lived on and on. I suspect that he was the proverbial laconic Yankee farmer. Randall (1882:311) notes: "It is also said that he was never known 'to whistle, sing, or use profane language'." His will sounds as though it would not have made his children very happy, except for his son, Ezra (not a first son), who didn't live to enjoy its provisions. Aaron wrote his will in 1830, leaving one dollar to each of his children (or to their heirs if the child had already died), except for Ezra, whom he appointed executor and who received everything else. Then, in 1835, Ezra having died in 1834, Aaron amended his will, appointing a new executor, Abishai Wetherbee, and replacing Ezra

with Ezra's widow, Hannah, as chief beneficiary. Aaron finally died in 1837, almost 88 years old. Ezra's daughter, Caroline W., married a William Bennett and they settled on what was, by then, I suppose, considered the "old Aaron Fisk place," but which had originally been what I've called Deborah's house on the hill.

The oldest daughter of Tabitha and Aaron Fisk, Lavina, is mentioned in two places by Randall (1882). In going to balls in her era it was the custom for the young lady to ride on a pillion behind the young man, on his horse. However (p. 152), "Lavina Fisk, daughter of Aaron Fisk, once went to a ball with a young man, riding on a separate horse: a circumstance which was regarded by some as an evidence of extravagance!" Lavina (p. 311) "attended school only 6 weeks, but learned to read very well, though not to write. She was a tailoress by trade, and went from house to house, making clothes." A working woman in those days? Perhaps she had some of the independent spirit that I have attributed to her grandmother, Deborah Adams Metcalf.

Lists of the children of Silence Metcalf Hawks (or Hawk or Hawke?) and of Deborah Metcalf Heaton are available in the vital records of Charlemont, MA.

CHAPTER 5  
TOWN OF SALISBURY

Now the curtain of time is drawn and we must leave the Barre and Chesterfield scenes, played out by Deborah Adams Metcalf and her progeny. For such a distant time, the record left by them seems remarkably extensive. The next decade or so are much murkier. As already mentioned, Deborah's son, Nathan, was not good at leaving records.

Nathan is listed in the Chesterfield census for 1790 but Randall writes (1882:392) that "His name is not found after 1791." The latest date that I found for real estate transactions involving Nathan at Chesterfield was 1783 (date of signature on a deed). Nathan may have resided in Berkshire Co., MA, for a few years in the early 1790's. At least, Hardin and Willard (1893:318), in a history of Herkimer Co., NY, note "Nathan Metcalf came from Berkshire county, Mass., and settled in the extreme southern part of the town in 1794." The town referred to is Salisbury in present-day Herkimer County (Fig. 1.). Nathan's family seems to have been back and forth a good deal between New Hampshire and Massachusetts. Perhaps their roots were never very deep in New Hampshire as they lived there only some 20 years. Now, you will immediately ask how we can be sure that the Nathan who left Chesterfield is the same one who arrived in Salisbury? This question has caused me much grief as well. The cornerstone of my sleuthing here rests on an account by Flora Metcalf Thomas concerning our Metcalf ancestors who were living in Rushford, NY, in the 1800's. Her account chiefly treats the Rev. Elijah Metcalf and commences (Thomas, 1910:166):

The subject of this sketch was born in Chesterfield, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, December 25, 1777. He was one of a family of ten children. When he was quite young his parents moved to Salisbury, Herkimer County, New York, where he lived many years.

From this my argument proceeds:

1. Inspection of records concerning Chesterfield and Salisbury townships shows the only Metcalf name in common

between the two to be that of Nathan. Only the names Nathan, Elijah and Simeon appear in Salisbury records in the early 1800's. Randall (1882:392) lists, for Chesterfield, Nathan and his brothers, Joseph and Asa, in the late 1700's, plus members of the Metcalf cousins centered around Keene, NH (Thomas, Reuben, John, Roswell, and George).

2. In the early 1800's, Elijah and Simeon Metcalf lived on adjoining farms in the extreme south part of Salisbury Town (Fig. 12) and Nathan lived on a farm that was seemingly nearby, probably adjoining theirs on the north (information from deeds, mortgages and analysis of route taken by the census-taker in 1820--the latter courtesy of Susan Watkins).

3. "Beers" (1879:279) writes, pertaining to Lorenzo Dow Metcalf: "Captain L.D. Metcalf was born in Salisbury, July 4th, 1819. He is a son of Simeon Metcalf, who came with his father, Nathan, from Berkshire county, Mass., in 1794 and located in this town." A news item abstracted by the Herkimer Co. Historical Society from the Herkimer Democrat of 19 October 1892 shows that Lorenzo Dow was a cousin of Levi Metcalf of Rushford, Allegany Co., New York, who had just died there, and who was Elijah's son. Therefore, if you are still with me, and if we assume that Lorenzo and Levi were first cousins, which seems extremely likely, then their fathers, Simeon and Elijah, must have been brothers and both were the sons of Nathan. A Nelson Metcalf, cousin of the above-mentioned Levi of Rushford, lived near Rushford in Cattaraugus Co. in the 1800's. Adams (1893:1152) notes, in a history of Cattaraugus Co., that Nelson was the son of a Levi and grandson of a Nathan, "who moved from Vermont to Salisbury, New York."

Statements ("Beers," 1879:279; Hardin and Willard, 1893:318) that Nathan came to Salisbury from Berkshire Co., MA, are a bit disturbing as is the assertion by Adams (1893:1152) that he came to Salisbury from Vermont. However, in census records, both Simeon and Elijah are listed (in different years) as being born both in New Hampshire and in Massachusetts. Obviously, then, there was confusion, even in their minds, as to just where they were born and indicating that the family had lived in both New Hampshire and Massachusetts at times. Possibly they also lived in Vermont, which was scarcely five miles west of Chesterfield.

4. Inspection of family names (although very risky for making inferences) suggests relationship between the families of Nathan, Simeon and Elijah: (1) Nathan had a brother named Elijah, who died in infancy (Anon., 1905-b:66, 236) so it seems likely that he might have named his son Elijah, as did Nathan's sister, Tabitha Metcalf Fisk. (2) Only two of the children of Nathan and Mary seem to have had their births registered: Levi and Joseph. As noted below, they may, in fact, have named two sons Levi. Elijah named a son Levi and we find that there is still an Elmer Levi Metcalf in Rushford, NY. (3) There was a Simeon Metcalf back in Barre, MA, a cousin of Nathan's. (4) Simeon of Salisbury named a son Charles Nathan.

5. In 1926 a listing was made of the graves in the Protestant cemetery east of Salisbury Corners (obtained, courtesy of Susan Watkins). In the list are the following grave numbers and names in a "Metcalf row."

301	Metcalf, Levi
302	Metcalf, Sarah Johnson
303	Metcalf, Wm. Van Tassel
304	Metcalf, Mary
305	Metcalf, Lavina DeWit
306	Metcalf, Mary Berl
307	Metcalf, Nathan
308	
309	Metcalf, Rhoda, dau. of Simeon & Mary
310	Metcalf, Huldah, dau. of Simeon & Mary
311	Metcalf, Mary, wife of Simeon
312	Metcalf, Simeon

There are no stones for graves 301-308; however, there is a long gap in the row sufficient to accomodate that many graves. The last four graves have stones; probably they are later than the others, and are clearly for members of Simeon Metcalf's family. The fact that Nathan and Simeon are listed for the same row gives one more bit of evidence for supposing a close relationship. I suspect that the "Mary" in grave 304 is Nathan's wife. I once thought that the "Mary Berl" next to Nathan might be his wife and that her maiden name might have been Burrell. A Burrell family lived nearby. However, I was able to contact a Burrell descendant and ascertain that there was no Mary Burrell who married a Metcalf. Thus, I have no clue as to what her maiden name was. The names shown for graves 302, 303, 305 and 306 may well reflect a custom much in vogue in that region around the 1820's and 1830's of naming a child after a friend of the family and using the friend's first and family names. Van Tassel, DeWitt, Burrell (=Berl?), and Johnson are all names that appear within 19 entries in the Salisbury census listing for 1820 and are close to the entries for Simeon, Nathan, and Elijah. Levi Metcalf, grave 301, is discussed below. It is tempting to think that the graves might be arranged in a chronological sequence, but in the case of Simeon's family, at least, this is not the case.

Thomas indicated (1910:166) that there were ten siblings in the family of Elijah Metcalf. That is to say, as I interpret it, that Nathan and Mary had ten children. Here is what I know or, more properly, what I often don't know, but speculate about, in regard to these children.

1. The Levi, born in 1767 in Chesterfield, must, I suppose, have died young if there was, as indicated by Adams (1893:1152), a second son named Levi, who was born in 1792.

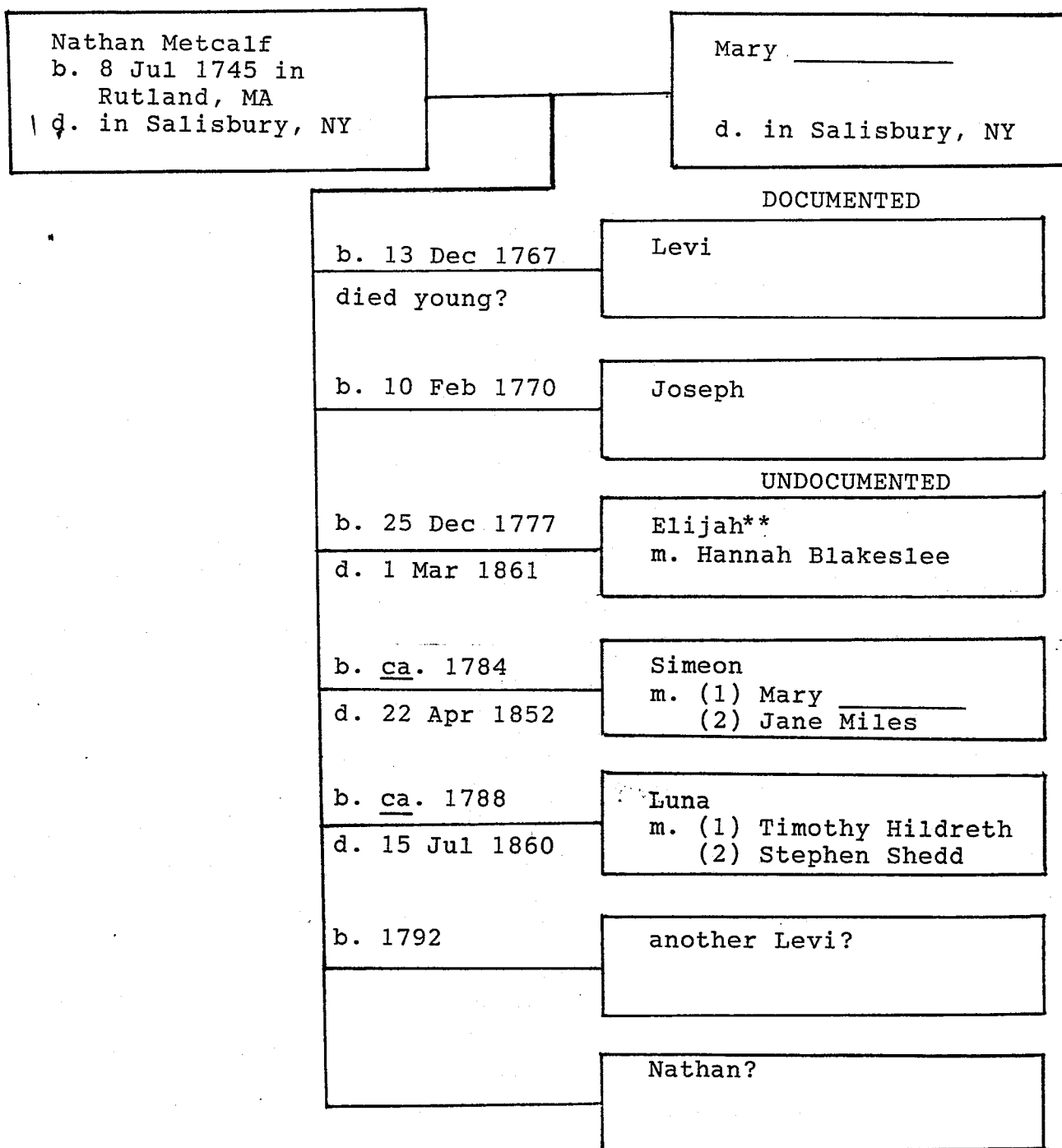


Fig. 11. Children of Nathan and Mary Metcalf. Supposedly they had ten children. Only the first two, above, are well documented in records. Numerous reasons for considering Elijah and Simeon as their children are noted in text. Assuming the record of Adams (1893: 1152) to be valid, there was a second Levi, born in 1792. Luna is included solely on circumstantial grounds and there are only vague hints that there might have been a son named Nathan. The identity of the remaining children is unknown.

2. A son, Joseph, was born in 1770 in Chesterfield. I can find no further recognizable record about him. However, the name is very common among the Metcalfs of that time and he could be one of several persons of that name in NH, VT or NY.

3. Elijah, born in 1777 in Chesterfield.

4. Simeon, born in 1784 (in Chesterfield?).

5. Another Levi is recorded by Adams (1893:1152) in his history of Cattaraugus Co., NY: "Gilbert Metcalf is the son of Nelson, the grandson of Levi, and the great-grandson of Nathan Metcalf, who moved from Vermont to Salisbury, N.Y., where his son Levi was born in 1792. Levi married Diana Van Steinberg, by whom he had one child, Nelson, born in 1814." There seem to be some mistakes in this quote. It is not too likely that Nathan came to Salisbury from Vermont and other sources indicate that he came in 1794 and was not yet there in 1792. This Levi does not appear in any census for Salisbury Twp. It is very likely that, at 18, he was not yet a head of household in 1810 and I suppose that he may have married, had son Nelson, and died before the time of the 1820 census. Thus, he may well be the Levi of grave 301 in "Metcalf row" in Salisbury cemetery. A Levi (Levy) Metcalf does appear in the 1820 census for Little Falls, Herkimer Co. However, I suspect that he is a Levi Metcalf, who was born in Lebanon, CT (Michael-2, Jonathan, Ebenezer, Ebenezer), and who moved from Connecticut to Vermont and then on to Herkimer Co. In Vermont he married Lucy Grant and had sons Philander (b. 1807) and Levi (b. 1809). An item abstracted from the Boston Transcript of 22 October 1913 (Godfrey Memorial Library) states that this Levi's family "settled in and around Herkimer, N.Y." Philander is in the 1830 census for Herkimer Township.

6. Nathan and Mary may very likely have been the parents of Luna Metcalf Hildreth Shedd. Luna was born in New Hampshire about 1788 and married, first, a Timothy Hildreth (good Chesterfield name) and, second, a Stephen Shedd (=Shead) in the Salisbury area. According to Shedd (1921:290) Stephen Shedd was also possibly born in Chesterfield, "was taken in childhood to

Hancock, Berkshire Co., Mass., and thence to Herkimer Co., N.Y." He settled in the southern part of Salisbury Twp between 1805 and 1808 and married Luna about 1808. It is not clear whether Luna was widowed by Hildreth in New Hampshire or in New York. She and Stephen went on to have eleven children, none of whom have recognizably "Metcalf" names,\*although one was named Timothy Hildreth Shedd, after Luna's first husband. I happened upon a descendant of Timothy H. Shedd, Mrs. Evelyn Shedd Darling, in 1986. At that time she was town clerk of the Town of Salisbury. I met her, quite by accident, when I stopped to look over the old Methodist Church in Stratford (northeast of Salisbury Center) on a Saturday afternoon and found her tidying up the church. When I returned for services the next morning I found that she was also the organist

7. There are the slightest of suggestions, some of which crop up below, that Nathan and Mary might have had a son named Nathan or Nathaniel, who lived in the southeastern part of Salisbury Twp, southeast of Salisbury Center. Anyone who delves into Metcalf family history in Herkimer Co., will encounter a problem, as there were still other Nathan Metcalfs, these living in Herkimer Twp to the southwest of Salisbury Twp. An older Nathan, originally from Dover, MA, died there around 1820, and he had a nephew (son of Ozias), also named Nathan, who probably died there in 1893. These Nathans are not part of our line, although descendants of John and of Michael-3b of Medfield. Just to make things a bit more confusing, there was also a Nathan W. Metcalf, who lived south of the Mohawk Valley in Otsego County; however, he is clearly derived from a different branch of Metcalfs, who came to Otsego Co. from Lebanon and East Haddam, CT, in the late 1700's (descendants of Michael-2).

8. The 1790 census indicates four females in Nathan's family. Assuming one of these to be wife, Mary, and one to be daughter, Luna, that leaves two probable daughters unaccounted for. A Phoebe Metcalf married a Christopher Spencer in Salisbury in 1813 (record supplied by Susan Watkins). However, she was born in 1796, a bit late (though not impossible) for Mary and

- - - - -  
\*but see page 268

Nathan's brood. Also, an "E.H." written after her date of birth suggests that she was born in East Haddam, CT, and belonged to the Otsego Co. Metcalfs mentioned in the preceding paragraph.\*

A point of concern stems from the fact that the 1790 census schedule for Chesterfield indicates that there were, in the household of Nathan, two males over the age of 16, one male under 16, and four females. It seems that there should have been two males under 16: Elijah, who was born in 1777, and Simeon, who was born in 1784. Did you make a mess of the records once again, Nathan? Still, despite the various reservations and "puzzlements" noted, I am convinced that Nathan of Chesterfield and Nathan of Salisbury are one and the same and that Elijah and Simeon, at least, were his children.

I consider Nathan to be the most poorly documented link in our chain of American ancestors. At one point I did spend considerable time trying to piece together as much as I could of the story of Metcalf migration from MA to surrounding states in the century 1720-1820. In all this, I learned nothing that discounted the premises about Nathan that I've made above--so it is the best I can come up with at this time. From beginning to end, Nathan and Mary have been a genealogical problem. I guess you two must have liked your privacy, and so I leave you to it now, sleeping in your unmarked graves.

They sleep in environs, which, to my western eyes, seem beautifully lush and green. Not far to the north of the cemetery begin forests much like those that first greeted Nathan's family when they came to Salisbury. The cemetery, for the researcher wishing to find it, is on the north side of Road # 29, less than a mile east of Salisbury Corners (=Salisbury of maps) and a little over a mile west of Salisbury Center. It is likely that anyone travelling up to the verdant Salisbury highlands will come by way of the Mohawk Valley, where are located various villages and cities mentioned, such as Herkimer, Little Falls, St. Johnsville and Nelliston.

---

\* Luna Metcalf Shedd had a daughter, Phebe, born in 1813. Could Luna and Phoebe Metcalf Spencer have been sisters, after all?

Another tip for researchers: Salisbury and Manheim Townships did not become part of Herkimer County until 1817. Before then they were part of Montgomery County. This means that pre-1817 records for those townships are to be found in the courthouse at Fonda, county seat of Montgomery Co., and not at Herkimer, county seat of Herkimer County.

Before the Revolutionary War a William Johnson came into the region of greater Montgomery County. He was esteemed both by the British government and by the Mohawk Indians and he rendered valuable services to the Crown during the French and Indian Wars. As a consequence, he received an honorary chieftainship from the Mohawks, a title (baronet) from the British and some 90,000 acres of land in the area. The papers granting him these lands were signed by King George III, and, for this reason, his lands became known as the Royal Grant. They included the territory between East and West Canada Creeks in present Salisbury Town. (Several studies exist concerning Johnson).

These lands are still legally described as belonging to a certain lot in a certain allotment of the Royal Grant. Elijah and Simeon Metcalf, for example, were to acquire property in Lot 86 (see Fig. 12) in the 4th Allotment, also sometimes identified as Margaret Johnson's tract, in reference to a natural daughter of Sir William.

Sir William continued to support the British during the Revolutionary War. As we know, this was a bad bet and he did not fare at all well after the war. The new state of New York confiscated the Johnson lands and redistributed them to "loyal Americans" at \$2.50 per acre. Those who were attracted to these lands were mainly New Englanders such as the Metcalfs.

Regardless of whether they came directly from Chesterfield or via Berkshire Co., in western Massachusetts, it appears that the Metcalfs would have travelled over to the Albany-Schenectady area. Possibly they made the necessary transactions to acquire their land at Albany, the capital, as the state was handling this land-disposal (suggestion of Susan F. Watkins). From Albany they would have journeyed up the Mohawk Valley to somewhere

south of Salisbury, probably near present Little Falls. Here they would have struck northward through the sparsely settled hills. "Beers" (1879:209) describes this last part of the journey, as made by oxcart by the Ives family in 1795: "From this place to Salisbury was almost an unbroken wilderness, the route having to be followed by marked trees. They were one day in going two miles." Arriving in Salisbury, a task of clearing an almost unbroken expanse of forest confronted them.

These pioneers struggled northward to arrive on a piedmont of the Adirondack Mts., country that is considered high by northeastern standards. It is some 1,200 ft. in elevation in the environs of Salisbury and reaches 1,800 ft. a short distance to the west, near Fairfield. Of course, the Adirondacks, which are very much with one at Salisbury, on the northeastern horizon, are even higher. Down from them come restless, rocky streams such as East and West Canada Creeks. Spruce Creek flows across southern Salisbury Twp (Fig. 12) to East Canada Creek. Formerly it powered a variety of mills along the way. Surely the Metcalfs would have come to the grist mill at Ives Hollow, on Spruce Creek, to have their grain ground. Eastward, near Salisbury Center, Spruce Creek still flows below an ancient covered bridge just north of Fairview Cemetery, final resting place of Luna Metcalf Shedd and husband, Stephen, mentioned above.

Coming up the Mohawk Valley, the Metcalfs would have moved through settlements of the people referred to as Palatine Germans or Mohawk Dutch. They were from that part of southwestern Germany called The Palatinate or today's state of Rheinland/Pfalz (bringing back old memories to me). These so-called "Palatine" families also filtered northward, where their presence is commemorated by the township name, "Manheim," just south of Salisbury Town (Mannheim, Germany, is just across the Rhine River from Rheinland/Pfalz). The Metcalfs settled on the border of Salisbury and Manheim Twps but with their properties mainly in Salisbury. They had some Palatine neighbors like the Klocks and Pecks, and, to the west, lived a Peter Philip Nellis, of a Palatine family. By coincidence, a century

later and a thousand miles to the west we will find that two great-grandsons of Peter Nellis are to marry two great-granddaughters of Elijah Metcalf, although the Nellis and Metcalf families moved westward at different times and by different routes.

Most of the neighbors of the Metcalfs were of New England origin, however, like the Lambersons from Connecticut or Silas Thompson from Chesterfield. Silas and Nathan had been comrades-in-arms during the brief call-up of the Revolutionary War in which they participated in 1777 (Hurd, 1886:139).

I have been unable to locate a record of the earliest deeds obtained by the Metcalfs in Salisbury Town. However, the Montgomery Co. (new courthouse) records in Fonda do show that in 1815 Elijah had the SE 1/4 and that Simeon had the adjoining W 1/2 of Lot 86 of the 4th Allotment of the Royal Grant (Fig. 12). In that year they both mortgaged these properties to a Dirck Lansing. Two other interesting documents turned up in the Old (versus New) Courthouse in Fonda, where a historical collection is maintained. One is a warrant for the arrest of a Nathan Metcalf:

The People of the State of New York, by the Grace of GOD, FREE and INDEPENDENT. To the sheriff of our County of Montgomery, Greeting:

We command you as before we commanded you that you take Nathan Metcalfe if he shall be found within your bailiwick and him safely keep, so that you may have his body before our Judges and Assistant-Justices of our Court of Common-Pleas, to be held at the Court-House, in and for our said County, on the Second Monday of June next, to answer unto Philo M. Hackley in a plea of trespass on the case, to his damage of sixty dollars on premises. And have you then there this Writ. Witness, SIMON VEEDER, Esquire, First Judge of our said court, at Johnstown, the twenty first day of January in the year of our Lord, One Thousand Eight Hundred and six.

Griswold and Ford, Attornies  
Per Curiam Henry F. Yates, Clerk

On the back of the above document it is noted that "Deft. lives on the Royal Grant." Philo was the son of Aaron Hackley, who maintained a store and tavern in Salisbury (Hardin and

Willard, 1893:318). Philo was in the "mercantile business" in the village of Herkimer and active in county politics around 1805-1820 (Benton, 1856:337-338).

Nathan would have been 60 years old by now, and it is hard to imagine what he could have been up to. I find no record of the case coming to court in the records of the next June session (court met three times per year). It seems likely that, between January and June, Nathan and Philo were able to reach an accomodation out of court. However, Philo did haul a Faucett Fox into court that session. This suggests that he had a habit of doing such things. As noted below, there is a slight possibility that another Nathan lived in Salisbury Twp at this time, so we can't be positive that the person referred to here is our ancestor, although it seems likely. In another document, dated 1810, Nathan is the plaintiff, and is attempting to collect \$300 that he had loaned to William and David Scott of the Town of Manheim. This time, Aaron Hackley, Jr., is Nathan's attorney, so I gather that things had been patched up between the Hackleys and the Metcalfs.

As pointed out to me by Susan F. Watkins, one sees no evidences in the records of Salisbury of Nathan being involved in any works oriented towards the public good. I am really afraid that his old uncle, Moses Adams, who was appointed his guardian, and who had served on the Great General Court of Massachusetts, would not really have been very proud of this nephew.

Probably of much significance to our three Metcalf families in the southernmost part of the Town of Salisbury was the State or Military Road, which angled southeasterly from Salisbury Corners (Figs. 12-a,b) to Brockett's Bridge (present Dolgeville). Beetle (1946:8) discussed this thoroughfare:

The pioneers--mostly restless New Englanders seeking new frontiers--were afraid that their ox teams would get bogged down in marshes and so stuck to high ground. For example, when the State decided on the 1803 equivalent of a farm-to-market thruway, it built the road, not close to the Mohawk and West Canada, but through what would seem today to be the out-of-the-way hamlets of Salisbury, Norway, Cold Brook, Russia and Prospect. Over it went ox-carts, itinerant missionaries, tally-hos, and droves of sheep. Back to Albany went venison, furs, potash.

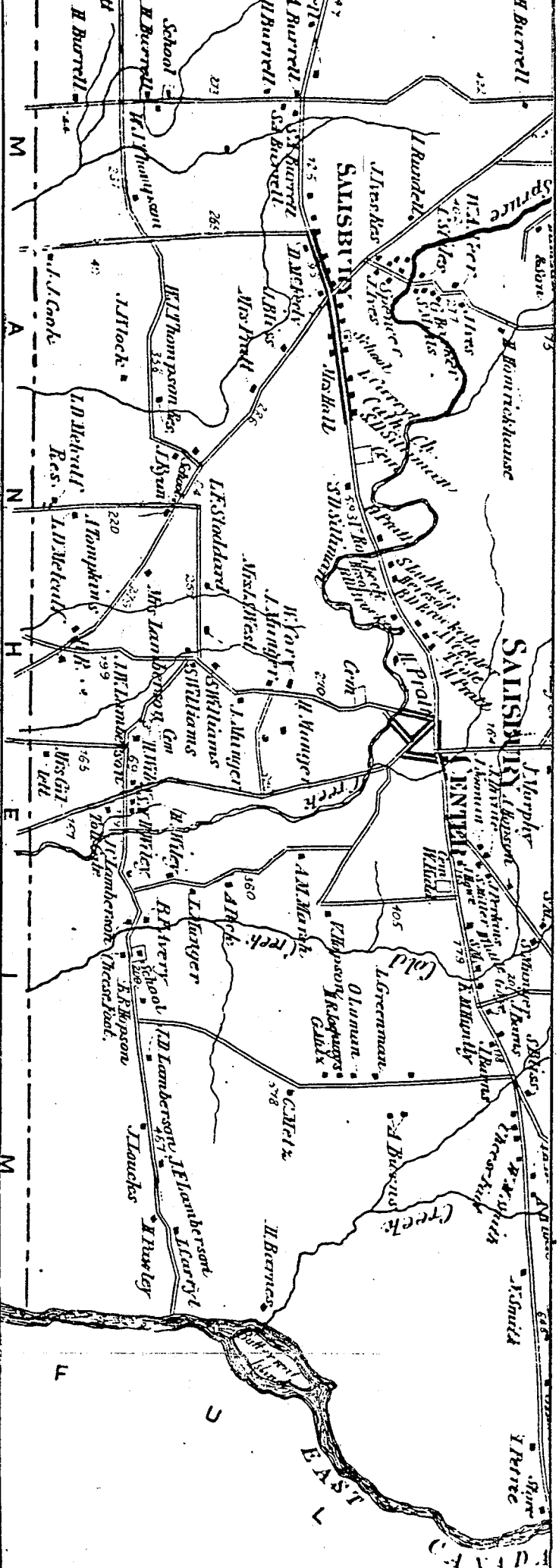


Fig. 12-a

Fig. 12. Figs. 12-a to 12-d show features in southern Town of Salisbury and northern Town of Manheim, Herkimer Co., NY, that are pertinent to Metcalf family history there. Fig. 12-a is from a map of 1868 and Fig. 12-b from a map of 1906. Fig. 12-c is an enlargement of a part of 12-b. The boundary between the towns of Salisbury and Manheim is shown to angle slightly more northwest-southeast in the 1906 map (abbreviated as Sal. and Man. in Fig. 12-c).

The village indicated as "Salisbury" is also called Salisbury Corners. On the north side of the road leading from Salisbury Corners east to Salisbury Center are located, first, the Catholic, and then the Protestant cemetery, the latter indicated by "CEM.," just above the a in Salisbury in Fig. 12-b. A number of Metcalf graves are in the Protestant cemetery (southeast part). The road extending diagonally



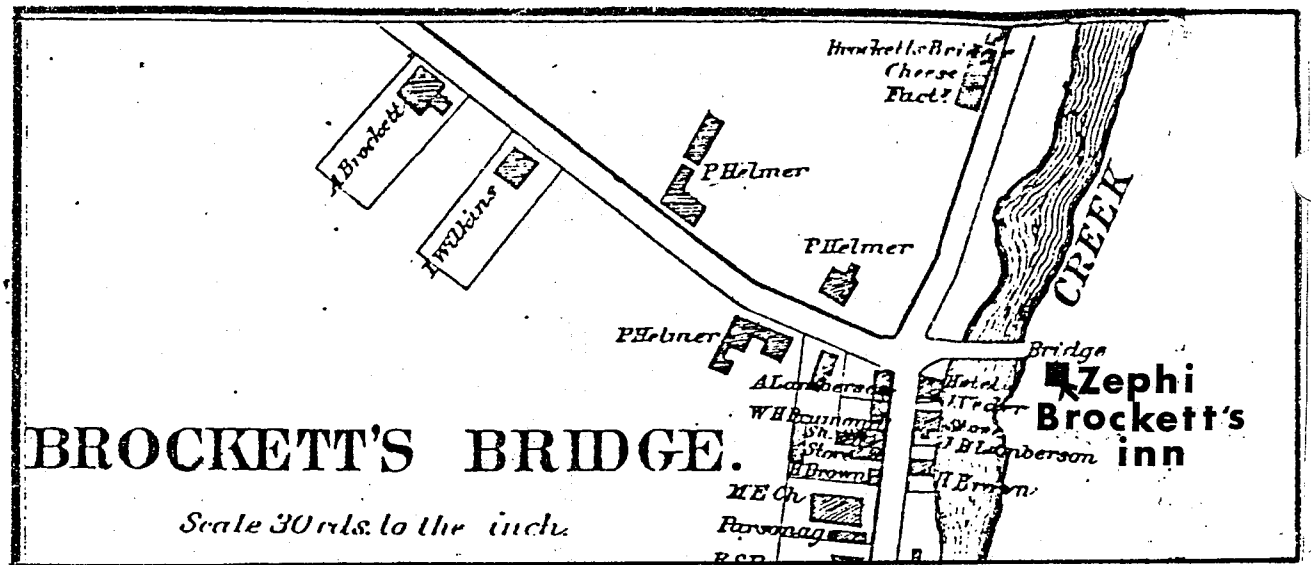


Fig. 12-d

from northwest to southeast through Salisbury Corners is Military Road. It leads southeastward from Salisbury Corners to the area of the Metcalf properties along the boundary of Manheim and Salisbury Townships. The "school No. 6" (Figs. 12-b,c) indicated on Military Road was called Metcalf School and was at the junction of Military Rd. and Metcalf Rd. (the north-south road shown--now called Moore Rd.). Just NE of the school, across Military Rd., was formerly a small cemetery called Metcalf Cemetery (approximate location indicated by "Cem." and a cross in Fig. 12-c). With all these references to Metcalfs, it seems likely that Metcalfs lived in the house shown on both maps just SE of Metcalf School, on the SW side of Military Rd., and indicated by "N" in Fig. 12-c. I think it likely that Nathan Metcalf lived here, although there is no proof. Further south along Metcalf Rd., lived Simeon Metcalf and, at the time of the 1868 map, his son Lorenzo Dow (L.D.). Farther SE, Military Rd. transected the farm of Elijah Metcalf.

The 1906 map (Fig. 12-b) shows numbers of the lots that were carved out of Sir William Johnson's lands. Simeon Metcalf owned 100 acres comprising the west half of Lot 86 by 1815, at least, and later owned Lot 5, to the north, where Metcalf School, Metcalf Cemetery and the home suggested above for Nathan, were located. Simeon also owned several other properties in the area. Elijah owned 50 acres comprising the SE $\frac{1}{4}$  of Lot 86 by 1815, at least. As shown in Fig. 12-c, this acreage was transected by Military and (present) Carlson (=Car.) Roads (see page 76). Elijah sold this property in 1824 and purchased a five acre tract on the outskirts of the village of Brockett's Bridge, the village shown in Fig. 12-d. Military Rd. continued on southeastward to Brockett's Bridge, now called Dolgeville. The name Brockett's Bridge was acquired from Zephi Brockett. Elijah, as we know, named a son Zephi Brockett Metcalf. Zephi Brockett and Elijah were active in founding the Methodist Church in Brockett's Bridge. Zephi Brockett maintained an inn just across the bridge over East Canada Creek in present Fulton Co. (Fig. 12-d). This inn is still standing and in use.

I have noted, above, that Elijah had a property in the southeast quarter of Lot 86 (Figs. 12-b,c) near where Military Road crosses the boundary of the Towns of Salisbury and Manheim. Simeon had the west half of Lot 86, more or less east of present Moore (formerly Metcalf) Road. Metcalf Road joined Military Road in the west central part of Lot 5, where School No. 6, also known as Metcalf School, was located. Formerly, a "Metcalf Cemetery" was located across Military Road, northeastward, from Metcalf School (these features indicated in Fig. 12-c).

Now I must make it clear that I do not know what property Nathan Metcalf owned or where he lived, as I have seen no deeds pertaining to him. As usual, he remains nebulous. However, the convergence of Metcalf Road, Metcalf School, and Metcalf Cemetery at one particular corner on Military Road, in Lot 5 (Fig. 12-c) makes me think that Nathan, the original Metcalf pioneer father, here, must have lived nearby, and I suspect that he lived in the house (still standing) that is a short distance east-southeast of Metcalf School on the south side of Military Road, and across the road, south, from the cemetery site. This house ("N" in Fig. 12-c) was called the "Giachetti House" in the early 1980's and had been called the "Simpson House" at an earlier time in the 1900's. The rear part of the house appears ancient, and could well have been Nathan's residence in the early 1800's. However, I have no proof of this. It might be good, at this point, to indicate just what I do know about Nathan in Salisbury:

1. He arrived in 1794, according to several published accounts.

2. I have been unable to locate him or any of his children in the 1800 census.

3. In 1806 the warrant for the arrest of a Nathan Metcalf, discussed above, was issued. It stated that he lived on the Royal Grant and in Montgomery County of that time.

4. In the 1810 census he is listed as "Nathan Matcoff" of Salisbury, Montgomery County.

5. In 1813 there is a reference in the Salisbury Town Clerk's Book (No. II, p. 41) to a "Nathaniel Metcalf," who lived

in School District No. 5 (East Canada Creek School, to the east of Dist. No. 6 (Metcalf School). I don't know who this "Nathaniel" was.

6. In 1815, Nathan is on the Montgomery Co. assessment roll for Salisbury Twp. He had real estate valued at \$300, half of the \$600 evaluation for his son, Simeon. Neighbors, Silas Thompson and Amos Brockett, by contrast, had real estate valued over \$2,000.

7. In the 1820 census for Salisbury Twp, now in Herkimer Co., Nathan is listed as "Nathan Medcalf," with one male and one female over 45 and a girl of at least 10 years but under 16, listed in the domicile. Possibly the latter was a young hired girl. Nathan is indicated as not engaged in agriculture so I assume that, at age 75, he had "retired." The census-taker shows Nathan living close to Elijah and Simeon and the census-taker visited his home between visits to homes of the two sons. An analysis of the census-taker's route by Susan Watkins accords with my suggestion, above, that Nathan was living near Metcalf School. ("N" in Fig 12-c)

8. In a tax list of 1821, Nathan has a real estate value of \$75 and Simeon of \$750.

9. In 1824 and 1826, as with the "Nathaniel" noted above, there is reference in the early Clerk's records (Book II, pages 83 and 93) to a "Nathan" living somewhere east of Spruce Creek and apparently south or southeast of Salisbury Center.

10. In the 1825 New York State Census a Nathan located to the east (indicated by census sequence) also appears in Salisbury Twp. It hardly seems that this could be our Nathan, who would have been 80 years old by then. This Nathan had 30 acres, ten cows, three horses, 18 sheep, etc., and it seems unlikely that a Nathan not engaged in agriculture in 1820 would have been so engaged in 1825.

I don't know who this enigmatic Nathan or Nathaniel is, who crops up east of Spruce Creek. Possibly he was a son of Old Nathan, who farmed there briefly and then died or moved elsewhere. If he is not "Old Nathan" then I would suppose that

Old Nathan died between 1820 and 1825. However, if there were two Nathans in the Town of Salisbury in 1820, why is only one listed in the census? There is a Nathan Metcalf listed for Little Falls, not far to the south, in the 1820 census. Possibly he is the same one who was living east of Spruce Creek in the Town of Salisbury at times, or possibly he is the same Nathan, mentioned earlier, who lived in the Town of Herkimer, at least until the 1820 census.

Just to make things a bit more confusing, there was also a Nathan W. Metcalf, who lived south of the Mohawk Valley in Otsego County; however, he is clearly derived from a different branch. Michael-2 had a son, Jonathan, who had two sons (Jonathan and Ebenezer), who migrated to Connecticut, where their descendants seem to have been substantial citizens in the area of East Haddam and Lebanon. Several members of this group later moved on to Otsego Co., NY, where their families lived mainly in the Cooperstown area. One of these, Arunah Metcalf, was notable as a member of Congress and of the New York Assembly in the early 1800's. I doubt that this group had much in common with their distant relatives north of the Mohawk. In the early 1800's, at least, they appear to have been more prosperous--and they seem to have been predominantly Presbyterians.

Anyway, from beginning to end, our Nathan remains a genealogical problem. And, speaking of mysteries and of endings, we might turn, next, to still another mystery--the enigma of Metcalf Cemetery (Fig. 12c), the location of which has already been mentioned. People still recall (1980's) having seen tombstones in Metcalf Cemetery--in the 1920's according to Mrs. Dorothea Ives. Nobody seems to remember what inscriptions the stones bore, although I heard murmurs of "someone named Mary" and "an Indian princess." Who were those persons who were interred there? Are they still buried there? What happened to the gravestones? All these are mysteries and there is another mystery, as well. As mentioned earlier, a list of persons buried in the Protestant cemetery just east of Salisbury Corners on Route 29 was compiled in 1926 (supplied, courtesy of Susan Watkins). In it are listed some Metcalf names for whom there

are no gravestones. However, there is a long gap in the row of stones that could easily accomodate that many graves. I might have supposed that these remains were transplanted from the old Metcalf Cemetery on Military Road except that they are in a part of the cemetery that dates back much earlier than the 1920's. Is it possible that the remains were transferred long ago, but that the tombstones were not? Well, that really doesn't seem too likely does it? It is all part of the mystery that seems to surround Nathan and Mary and their chapter in our history.

Getting back onto Military Road, now, and continuing southeast from the area of Metcalf School, the site of Metcalf Cemetery, and of Nathan's presumed home, we find that the road cuts across the 50 acres that Elijah owned in the 1815-1824 period (see Fig. 12-c). The junction of Military and Carlson Roads would have fallen in the northeastern part of his property. I don't know where Elijah's house stood. None of the possible candidates seem very satisfactory. The "Tompkins Homestead" of a 1906 map (Fig. 12-b) is on the boundary of the SE and NE quarters of Lot 86. The "M. Brobt" homesite (Fig. 12-b) straddles Lots 86 and 87, and the ruins of a third homesite about a half mile to the southwest, down Carlson Road (Fig. 12-c), are in the Town of Manheim (Elijah lived in Salisbury then, according to the census), and are probably just south (in Lot 78) of Elijah's property. Standing at the junction of Military and Carlson Roads, one is surrounded by fairly gentle slopes leading down to a swale in the southeast part of Elijah's farm. Here a few cattle could have been pastured, as today, and a few plots tilled. However, the gentle slopes become steeper and rise to a thickly wooded hill, which arcs across the northwest part of his farm (perhaps this was Elijah's sugarbush). Once atop this scarp, one is again on more level terrain, where Simeon and (probably) Nathan lived (Fig. 12-c). The land is better suited for pasture and tillage here.

Simeon's original house was, I suppose, about 0.4 mi. south of Metcalf School, either at the west edge of Lot 86 or just over the line in Lot 85. In 1848, Simeon sold the west half of

Lot 86 to his son, Lorenzo Dow, who is shown living at this location in a map of 1868 (Fig. 12a). However, Simeon remained close by, for his remaining few years, as his dwelling is listed next to Lorenzo's in the 1850 census. Mr. and Mrs. Robert Winkler live on Lorenzo's homesite at present (early 1980's) and had a fine herd of Holstein cattle, which were up for the evening milking, when I was there in 1981. The Winklers previously lived in the same house that the Metcalfs had occupied but had pulled it down a few years ago and built a new home. They showed me photos of the old house. A part of an old barn has been incorporated into their modern dairy barn.

Mr. Winkler had known a Mr. Dan Barragan, who had worked as a hired man for the Metcalfs here. He told me what is probably the only "Metcalf story" surviving in Salisbury Twp. It seems that Mr. Barragan was driving a yoke of oxen, hitched to a sledge full of manure one wintry day. An elderly Metcalf woman opened the door of the house when he was near it and shouted something. The oxen interpreted this as a command to stop and stop they did, without warning, and Dan plunged headlong into the cargo of manure. Reportedly, the woman who caused all this found it a good winter's amusement.

Residents here stress the rigors of the winters in Salisbury. Old Forge, in Herkimer County, sometimes boasts the nation's coldest recorded temperature in the winter months. First frost may come any time after 10 September, as the cold breath of the Adirondacks makes itself felt. According to Robert Winkler it is likely that on the Metcalf farm, house and barn were interconnected by dairy sheds as one way of combatting the harsh winters. Cattle are, of course, kept in barns during the winter and it seems most reasonable to be able to go from house to dairy to barn without having to step outside.

I don't know how much Elijah Metcalf may have been concerned about the hilliness and probable unproductiveness of his small farm. Surely he had religion much on his mind in those days and perhaps the mundane was not so important to him. For, according to Thomas (1910:166), Elijah was "converted at the first service

of the first Methodist minister who preached in Salisbury. As there was no church, the meeting was held in a barn." Elijah's conversion was no ephemeral thing and he felt called to the ministry himself. Thomas discusses his life as a circuit rider in western New York in her article of 1910, pages 166-167, an account of Elijah and other early Metcalfs of Rushford, NY. (See also the Appendix). A similar account is presented by J.G. Benjamin (1908:215-216):

One of the first Methodist ministers on the west side of the Genesee river was Elijah Metcalf, a circuit preacher. Rev. Metcalf at that time resided in Salisbury, Herkimer County. His circuit commenced at what is now Batavia and extended south through Genesee, Wyoming and Allegany counties into Pennsylvania, thence west through Cattaraugus and Chautauqua counties. He travelled mostly on horseback, fording streams, stopping where night overtook him, receiving such hospitality as one always found among the early settlers of this section of country. During one of these circuits the first class in the town of Rushford was formed at the home of Daniel Woods, father of D.C. Woods. The members of this class were Daniel Woods and Joshua Wilson and wives. The time...was sometime between 1810 and 1816. During this period his home was at Salisbury.

In 1816 Rev. Metcalf organized the first M.E. church in Rushford with ten members....

Archives of the United Methodist Church show (Ramona Hyatt, in litt., 3 September 1980) the following chronology for Elijah's ministerial career:

- 1809 - Admitted on trial to New York Conference, Chenango-Cayuga District.
- 1810 - Remain on trial, Genesee Conference, Wyoming-Susquehanna District.
- 1811 - Holland Purchase and Caledonia-Susquehanna District.
- 1812 - No record.
- 1813 - Located.

Mr. Richard Henn, Chairman, Archives and History Commission of the western New York Conference of the United Methodist Church, confirms (in litt., 11 September 1980) 1813 as the year when Elijah left the Genesee Conference and notes "After this he

THE

# HISTORY OF METHODISM

WITHIN THE BOUNDS OF THE

ERIE ANNUAL CONFERENCE

OF THE

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

BY REV. SAMUEL GREGG,

AUTHOR OF "INFANT CHURCH MEMBERSHIP," AND "EARLY DAYS FAITH."

"Bright visions of the golden past  
Fly back on wings of love to me."

VOLUME I.

New York:

PUBLISHED FOR THE AUTHOR,

BY CARLTON AND PORTER, 200 MULBERRY-STREET.

1865.

98 METHODISM WITHIN THE

1825, when he became a member of that body. Here he labored until 1845, when on account of failing health he was superannuated. After serving the Church with great fidelity and usefulness for fifty years, during which time it is said he seldom disappointed a congregation for any circumstance, he died in peace and joyful hope October 6, 1850. "Servant of God, well done."

Rev. ABEL ROBINSON was admitted on trial in the Baltimore Conference March 20, 1811, and appointed to the Shenango Circuit; was received into full connection and ordained a deacon in 1813, and an elder in 1815. We shall have occasion to refer to him again.

Rev. ELIJAH MERCALF, one of the preachers appointed to the Holland Purchase by the Genesee Conference, labored this year in Chautauqua County, N. Y., occasionally extending his labors down into Warren County, Pa., preaching in a new settlement on the Conewango, and at Mother Reece's on the Alleghany River, one or two miles below Warren, and also on the Brokenstraw Creek, where the parents of the author then resided, having moved from Oil Creek to the Brokenstraw in 1808. The Hartford Circuit in Ohio, under the labors of Mosera, Knox and Monroe, was extended some distance west, and a class was formed in the town of Northampton, Summit County, consisting of Abraham Vanhining (leader) and wife, William Prier, Elizabeth Perkins, John Cockran, and Catharine Prier. Soon after this class was formed another class was organized in the town of Stow, to which Mr. Vanhining was transferred and appointed leader, leaving Mrs. Vanhining

1811

would have the status of a local preacher and the Conference would keep no further record."

Thus, it appears that Elijah's formal clerical career was actually rather short, from about 1809 to 1813. Thomas (1910) writes: "In Pennsylvania he met Hannah Blakeslee, a resident of Vermont, whom he married January 13, 1813. Realizing that he could not support a wife on the meager salary he was receiving, he was located and returned to Salisbury." and "After his marriage, when he was not engaged in the regular work of the ministry, he frequently preached in schoolhouses, and acted as a supply." If the date quoted above from J.G. Benjamin is correct, Elijah was back out at Rushford, Allegany Co., in 1816, for a time. However, he must have been in the Salisbury/Manheim area for most of the time from 1813 to 1832. He is listed on the 1820 census for Salisbury Twp, although not indicated as "engaged in agriculture." He is lacking on an 1821 tax roll for Salisbury. A deed dated 4 March 1824 shows Elijah and Hannah selling their 50 acres in the SE 1/4, Lot 86 (Fig. 12c) for \$500 to Dirck Lansing, to whom they had mortgaged the property in 1815. In the 1825 state census they are listed for Manheim Twp and on 7 March 1829 Elijah mortgaged a 5 acre plot in the southeast part of Lot No. 53 at the southwest corner of the village of Brockett's Bridge, in Manheim Twp, to Nicholas Klock, an old neighbor of the Metcalf's, for \$112.

When in Herkimer Co., Elijah seems to have gravitated towards the village of Brockett's Bridge, which became the Dolgeville of today. Elijah was involved with the fledgling Methodist Church at Brockett's Bridge. Concerning the founding of this church, "Beers" (1879:205) presents a document reading:

Be it remembered that on the nineteenth day of May, 1814, a meeting of a number of the members of the Methodist society in the town of Manheim, being notified according to law, convened at the meeting house, and after making choice of George Gray and Zephi Brockett as their chairman and returning officers, voted that Nathaniel Spencer, Ezra Cheadel, Thomas Sherwood, Elijah Metcalf and Charles Lamberson be their trustees;...

Here enters Zephi Brockett, for whom was named Zephi Brockett Metcalf, Elijah's son, and whose name you have seen commemorated in the title of this study. According to "Beers" (1879:205), in a discussion of Brockett's Bridge:

Zephi Brockett, a native of Wolcott, Conn., first visited this place in 1801, as a tin peddler, driving one horse, before a peddler's cart. He was then sixteen years of age. In 1804 he located in Salisbury...where he remained until 1814, when he removed to Brockett's Bridge and purchased the tavern property of Abram Spofford, which was afterwards kept by him and his descendants for over forty years.

Seemingly, young Zephi Brockett did well, going from itinerant tin peddler to tavern owner. In addition, "Beers" (1879:205) notes that "The post-office was established here in 1826, under the name of Brockett's Bridge, after Zephi Brockett, who was appointed the first postmaster." According to Susan Watkins (pers. comm.), the Brocketts managed to keep the postmastership in the family for many years. Zephi Brockett's tavern (perhaps better called an inn, today) still stands on the east side of East Canada Creek at the bridge in Dolgeville, NY. The families of Zephi Brockett and Elijah Metcalf were seemingly unrelated and were just close friends and co-religionists. As noted, Elijah named a son Zephi Brockett. Both had daughters named Rachel. (See Fig. 12-d in regard to the above).

I wonder if there was some sort of attraction of opposites between Zephi and Elijah. In his capacities as tin-peddler, tavern-keeper, postmaster and elected chairman of his church, Zephi Brockett seems likely to have been a socially-outgoing, gregarious person. Brockett's grave memorial (he d. 20 Apr 1850 at age 65) is in the southeast part of Dolgeville Cemetery. It is of metal, as befits a former tinsmith, I suppose. The epitaph suggests that he remained, if not politically, at least socially inclined to the end: "Farewell companion, children, brothers, sister, neighbors and friends till we meet again." In Elijah Metcalf, farmer, circuit rider, "local" preacher, I picture a more dour and introspective nature. Years later, Damon

(1910:409) wrote of him as "Father Metcalf who needed not a book from which to read the Scriptures, an old pioneer preacher who loved 'the old paths,'...." In discussing early Methodists in Herkimer County, "Beers" (1879:220) notes "These early Methodists were subject to considerable ridicule." Perhaps the Methodist Metcalfs of early Salisbury were sensitive about this and concentrated their energies on family, farm, and church, and kept their friends limited to sympathetic fellow-Methodists. At least, as noted above, their names are lacking in records concerning civic and political involvement.

In the 1830 census, Elijah is surely the "Elisha Matcalf" listed for Stratford Township, Montgomery County. The eight people in his family match the census listing exactly in regard to age and sex. The Town of Stratford is now in Fulton Co., although the village of Stratford is on the boundary with the Town of Salisbury in Herkimer Co. The present Methodist Church (actually in Salisbury) was not built until the 1840's, so Elijah did not preach in it. I suppose it is likely that he was involved, to some extent, with both the ministry and with farming when the family lived in Stratford Township.

In 1832, according to Thomas (1910:168), Elijah's family moved west to Rushford, Allegany County. Others of their Salisbury/Manheim neighbors moved out there at about the same time. Next to Elijah's name in the 1820 census is the name of Mrs. Lodema Williams. Elijah officiated at the marriage of Lodema's daughter, Abigail, to Robert English in 1824. The English family, plus Lodema Williams, followed the Metcalfs to Rushford in 1833, and their daughter, Cornelia, married Elijah's son, Levi, previously mentioned. Other neighbors from Salisbury were the Lambersons and Lobdells. John Lamberson married Nancy Lobdell, and they came to Rushford along with the Robert English family in 1833 (Gordon, 1910:178-179). Thus, there was something of a transplanting of close neighbors from Salisbury to Rushford. Later, we meet the Gould and Slocum families, which made a similar migration.

Having transported Elijah over the hills and valleys to Rushford, we turn for a last look at Uncle Simeon, who stayed on in Salisbury. While in the Salisbury area, Elijah seems to have accumulated little property but a number of heirs, whereas Simeon did just the opposite. He acquired property in 7 or 8 different lots in the area and had a real estate evaluation of \$4,950 in 1850 (and his son, Lorenzo Dow, \$4,000). Simeon did have several children by his first wife, Mary. However, of these, only his son, Lorenzo Dow, seems to have married and had children. Lorenzo Dow was surely named for a famous evangelist of the time, the Rev. Lorenzo Dow. The name was very popular at that time. Mary died in 1847 when she and Simeon were about 62 and 63, respectively, and lo and behold, the next year the old boy up and marries a girl of about 23, Jane Miles, born in Ireland! Perhaps Jane was a servant girl in the home, such Irish servants being common then and there. The following year, when Simeon was about 65, Jane bore him a son, Charles Nathan.

Lorenzo Dow Metcalf also had bad luck with wives and children. Six children are recorded from his first marriage, to Rosanna (or Rosina) Wood (or Ward). Of these, only two daughters grew to maturity. After the death of Rosanna, Lorenzo married Amanda Wood (a sister of Rosanna?). They had three children, two of whom, Frederick L. and Jessie M., lived to maturity. Frederick, born about 1860, calls himself a manufacturer in the 1892 census. Probably he was the "Metcalf part" of a Metcalf and Ives mill that made cheese boxes at about that time (Dorothea S. Ives, in litt., 8 April 1981). Frederick married Sarah Cole, granddaughter of one of the Brocketts. He seems to have been the end of the line for the name Metcalf, in our branch, in Salisbury Twp. Lorenzo's widow, Amanda, and his daughter, Mary Metcalf Watkins, may have continued to live on Lorenzo's farm into the 1900's, as they are shown as living there, with Lorenzo Dow, in the 1892 census. Mary is listed as a music teacher. Perhaps Amanda was Mary's aunt as well as her stepmother. Amanda may be the "old Metcalf woman" of Robert Winkler's little story, related above.

DESCENDANTS OF SIMEON METCALF

Simeon Metcalf, b. ca. 1784 in NH or MA; d. 22 Apr 1852; m. (1) Mary \_\_\_\_\_ (b. ca. 1785 and d. 12 Mar 1847) and (2) Jane Miles (of Ireland) on 27 Jul 1848.

Children of Simeon & Mary

- A. Rhoda; b. ca. 1817; d. 8 Apr 1847 (unmarried)
- B. Huldah; b. ca. 1818; d. 15 Jan 1845 (unmarried)
- C. Lorenzo Dow; b. 4 Jul 1819 in Salisbury, NY; d. 20 Jul 1892; m. (1) in 1842, Rosanna (Rosina) Wood (Ward), who d. 5 May 1854, and (2) in Oct 1854, Amanda Wood.

Children of Lorenzo Dow and Rosanna

- 1. Mary A., b. 1843 or 1844 in Salisbury, NY; m. David Watkins  
a. Elizabeth, b. ca. 1869.
- 2. Ellen M.; b. ca. 18 Mar 1845 in Salisbury, NY; d. 2 May 1853
- 3. Burt Simeon (or vice versa), b. 7 May 1847, d. 29 May 1852
- 4. Clinton A.; b. ca. 1849 in Salisbury, NY; d. 29 Apr 1853.
- 5. Daniel E.; b. ca. 1852 in Salisbury, NY; d. 25 May 1868
- 6. Rosanna D.; b. ca. 1854 in Salisbury, NY; m. \_\_\_\_\_  
Wiggins (removed to Columbus, Nebraska).

Children of Lorenzo and Amanda

- 7. Eddie; b. 24 Feb 1857 in Salisbury, NY; d. 26 Apr. 1858
- 8. Frederick L.; b. ca. 1860 in Salisbury, NY; m. Sarah H. Cole (b. ca. 1863).
- 9. Jessie M.; b. ca. 1862 in Salisbury, NY; m. \_\_\_\_\_  
Ingham (removed to Highland, Ulster Co., NY).

Child of Simeon and Jane Miles

- D. Charles Nathan; b. ca. 1849 in Salisbury, NY.

Probably Simeon had other children. My fragmentary notes concerning his will suggest a Flora and, possibly, a son named Simeon. I assume that such children all died young. The deaths of Ellen M. and Clinton A., three days apart, suggest an epidemic of some kind of disease at that time.

Simeon Metcalf died in 1852. In the 1855 census, we find his widow, Jane, with six-year-old Charles Nathan and Jane's brother, William Miles (age 22), living in a dwelling listed next to that of Lorenzo Dow (as in 1850). As William Miles was born in Ireland and had been in the Town for only three years it causes me to wonder if Jane brought over her kid brother from the old country after she had access to Simeon's estate. In any event, Jane and William now had a servant family of their own: Patrick and Margaret Dynan and child, also from Ireland. The last trace I find of Charles Nathan is in the 1870 census, when he is 21 and listed as a medical student in Fairfield Twp, west of Salisbury. Probably he was attending Fairfield Academy there, a school of some renown at that time. At about that time, also, Charles Nathan sold several hundred acres of land in Lots 5 and 136, in Salisbury Twp, which he had inherited from his father, Simeon. Clearly, Simeon had prospered greatly since the early days when he had to mortgage his farm to Dirck Lansing. The uplands of Salisbury Twp, to which the New Englanders had migrated in the late 1700's proved to be prime dairy country. The cheese and related industries thrived and Herkimer Cheese was renowned. Emigrants from Salisbury took their knowledge of dairying and cheesemaking to lands farther west. Such a one was Elijah Metcalf, who in his earlier years had been a circuit rider to Allegany County, and who returned in 1832, established a farm there, and prospered more than he ever had in Herkimer County.

\* \* \* \* \*

If I could have occupied some "loafer's bench" outside Nellis Tavern located in the Mohawk Valley between Nelliston and St. Johnsville during its first 50 years (1750-1800), the passing scene might have illustrated a good deal of American, as well as family history.

In the early years, there would still have been Mohawk Indians utilizing the natural migrational pathway that this valley, which bears their name, has always provided. Dutchmen

from down along the Hudson Valley might have come by on occasion and the ruling Britishers would have been in evidence, moving along their "King's Highway," past the tavern. I suppose that Redcoat soldiers stopped by the tavern, as soldiers are apt to do, and, no doubt, an occasional British official spent the night there. It seems likely that Sir William Johnson came past, now and then, perhaps with a British/Mohawk retinue and some of his half British-half Mohawk children.

But the majority of passersby in pre-revolutionary times would surely have been local Palatine folk, living along the Mohawk Valley, and I suppose that most of the palaver in the tavern would have in the Pfalzdeutsch dialect of the German Palatinate. The Palatine emigration that accounted for these people being here is well and concisely summarized in a brochure of the Palatine Society, which I obtained at Palatine Church, near Nelliston.

They were of German ancestry. They came from the Rhine Valley as far south as Switzerland. They embarked from Holland for England on the invitation of Queen Anne. They were Protestant in faith, Reformed and Lutheran. As many as 30,000 were in London in 1709, the guests of the Queen and the Board of Trade.

They left their homeland for a number of reasons; one of which was that they might escape the conditions covering religious and social freedom.

And the British authorities saw a chance to settle them on the colonial frontier of the Colony, which was at that time the upper Hudson, Schoharie and Mohawk Valleys. Also they were to be engaged in manufacturing pitch, tar and other naval stores for the British navy.

They were settled on the middle Hudson in October of 1710 by Governor Hunter, on the east side of the river at East Camp (now Germantown) in Columbia County, and on the west side of the river at West Camp, which still bears its original name. They were to repay to the British Crown all expenses incurred in transporting them to America and for their maintenance of food and implements and utensils for their personal use and the carrying on of the project of the pines. And each man, woman and child was to receive eventually 40 acres of land.

But adequate provision was not at hand; the party in power in England which had conceived the idea, lost its position and the "distressed Palatines" (as they are called in colonial records) were left quite on their own. There was the direst need. The trees were not of the right kind for the making of naval stores. Dissension arose in their ranks. Colonial leadership failed them. Many left the camps and spread out to the north and south along the Hudson. Some took up the task of living in the Schoharie Valley. And some journeyed to the Mohawk. One group went to Berks County in Pennsylvania.

From these pioneers have descended thousands and thousands who have helped make America.

Among the Palatine immigrants were three brothers named Nellis: William, Christian and Johannes. They are honored by a plaque mounted on a boulder that is on the lawn of the village hall at Nelliston:

Dedicated to  
William, Christian and Johannes  
Nellis  
who came to the Mohawk Valley in 1710  
and settled what is now called Nelliston

Given by  
The Nellis Descendants  
1976

William and Christian Nellis married daughters of Hendrick Klock. Klock was a prominent citizen of the area, apparently highly regarded by the British and the Mohawks. The Mohawk chief, King Hendrick, is supposed to have been named for Klock. Caroline, the first of two Indian "wives" of Sir William Johnson, was a niece of King Hendrick. Despite all this, Hendrick Klock's son, Jacob, was a hero of the Revolutionary War on the American side. This Palatine patriarch, Hendrick Klock, lived to age 97 and is buried in a small cemetery just east of St. Johnsville, together with other Klocks and Nellises. William and Magdalene Klock Nellis were ancestors of a branch of the Nellis family discussed again in Chap. 12, as two of their descendants married Metcalfs.

During the decade beginning in 1775, the view from Nellis Tavern might have been exciting at times--and it was not always a safe place from which to be viewing. The Palatiners, who had gotten along quite well with the British and their Mohawk allies for over half a century, now had to make difficult decisions about whether to continue their support or turn it to the cause of the American revolutionists. Families were divided and some Nellises moved to Canada with the departing British. However, like Jacob Klock, other Nellises distinguished themselves on the American side in the Revolution. The Palatine homes and farms suffered greatly as contending forces fought along the Mohawk Valley and many Palatiners lost their lives, as at the Battle of Oriskany. Eventually, for those who had taken up the American cause, a high point was the triumphal visit of General George Washington to the valley in 1783 (much of the above from the history of Nelliston by Lupo, 1978).

If I were still observing the old road past Nellis Tavern, which clearly was no longer called the King's Highway, a decade or more after the end of the Revolution, I would have seen passing by some families of New Englanders making their slow way, often with ox-drawn wagons. They advanced up the Mohawk Valley and peeled off, to north or south, to settle lands in the highlands that had been wrested from the recently-deposed British, such as Sir William Johnson, with his vast tracts of land. One family, headed towards former Johnson lands, must have been that of Nathan Metcalf, which came by in 1794. Despite the recent ravages of the Revolutionary War, I imagine that the farms of the industrious Palatiners, along the Mohawk, looked very fertile and prosperous to the Metcalfs as they plodded west. Did they stop at the tavern for refreshments? A few miles farther on, they left the Mohawk Valley to push northward to Salisbury, a laborious undertaking through the dense woods.

Now and then, from Nellis's Tavern, I might have seen that tin peddler from Connecticut pass by: Zephi Brockett with his one-horse cart. Later on, Zephi would erect a tavern of his own, similar to the Nellis Tavern, not far away at Brockett's Bridge

on East Canada Creek. Dare I imagine that a clan of Slocums might have inquired about the way to Oppenheim (good old Palatine town-name)? Just possibly, I might have espied some of those mysterious Goulds, who were across the river in Canajoharie already by 1790. How nice if I could have asked one of them some questions that have plagued me!

The Mohawk Valley is narrow and, so, later generations of Palatiners were also forced to look elsewhere for living space and, as has been mentioned, Peter Phillip Nellis, great-grandson of William and great-grandfather of Oscar and Earl Nellis, who married Metcalfs, moved up to Manheim and then to Fairfield Twp in the higher country of Herkimer County. There, these Nellises were not far from the Metcalfs of Salisbury/Manheim. A Nicholas and a Joseph Klock were even closer neighbors of the Metcalfs and, as noted, in 1829, Elijah Metcalf mortgaged a five acre plot to Nicholas Klock. Peter Phillip Nellis's son, Peter Spraker, attended Fairfield Academy, as did Charles Nathan Metcalf, son of Simeon.

Leaving my imaginary, time-transgressive bench outside Nellis Tavern and returning to the real world of June, 1986--I did, in fact, spend an interesting day exploring the haunts of the Palatiners, past and present, beginning at Nelliston, with its Nellises and Nellis memorabilia. A short distance west of Nelliston is Palatine Church, with its sturdy stone walls and its tower surmounted by a weathervane bestowed by the Nellis family. Two fair-haired children unlocked the door so I could view the immaculate white and gold interior. A handsome, small pipe organ must have accompanied many a chorus of Ein' feste Burg ist unser Gott. Then I was on to Fort Klock, where my guide was a German-born Schwabian blacksmith, who treasured the old German ways that the Palatiners had brought over to the area, as well as the ingenuity and inventiveness that the early Palatiners had shown in adapting to the Mohawk Valley environment. Finally, I continued on down State Highway 5 to Nellis Tavern and beyond to the small cemetery, just east of St.

Johnsville, where Hendrick Klock and Christian Nellis and many of their relatives lie at rest.

1. All in all, that day, time and place were a bit warped for me. Nellis was probably the first family name that I learned after my own, but that was long ago and far away in Kansas. And I had been in many Palatine taverns before but they were in the original, German Palatinate and that was long before I knew about the Palatine district here and about my own ancestors who lived on its fringes.

CHAPTER 6  
TOWN OF RUSHFORD

Hannah and Elijah and their children (oldest to youngest): Lyman B., Roxana, Levi, Rachel, Zephi B., and Elijah, Jr., moved from the Salisbury area to the Town of Rushford in September, 1832. Thomas notes (1910:168):

...making the journey in a wagon with an ox team. They made so slow progress that the two oldest boys became tired and started on afoot, arriving in Rushford before the rest of the family.

Perhaps they moved in September because it was a drier month and their oxen were less likely to be bogged down. It seems a bit late in life for Elijah (now 55) to be pulling up stakes in the Salisbury area. (Actually, he may have been living in nearby Stratford Township, Fulton Co., as at the time of the 1830 census). I suspect, however, that he had always had a special place in his heart for Rushford, the little village he had known as a circuit rider. Certainly Rushford now returned the affection. The farm that he acquired, northwest of the village, proved fertile and productive. The census of 1850 shows that he had 254 acres of land, 140 acres improved, with a cash value of \$4,064. Some products of the farm are indicated in Table 1.

It would appear from published sources that Elijah and Hannah lived out their lives much respected in Rushford. Damon (1910:409) and Eldridge (1910:221) refer to Elijah as "Father Metcalf." Elijah died on 1 March 1861. In 1858, Elijah set down instructions regarding the conduct of his funeral, which have been recorded by Thomas (see Appendix, her pages 168, 170). His statement reflects a philosophy of life that surely would have gladdened the heart of his old Puritan forefather, Michael of Dedham, 200 years earlier. According to Thomas (1910:170), Hannah died on 26 Jan 1866. However, I believe the date should be 1860. Hannah is not listed in the census of either 1860 or 1865, although Elijah is shown living with his children, Rachel and Elijah, Jr., in 1860. The final number of Hannah's date of

Table 1. Values, produce, livestock, etc. for farm of Elijah Metcalf, as shown in 1855 New York Census (to left) and for farms of Elijah, Levi, Lyman and Zephi Metcalf and Micah Gould, as shown in the 1850 New York Census (to right).

	1855	1850				
	Elijah	Elijah	Levi	Lyman	Zephi	Micah
Acres of land:						
Improved	100	140	40	30	35	20
Unimproved	65	114	41	30	35	30
Cash value of farm	\$4,500	\$4,064	\$1,700	\$1,000	\$800	\$600
Number of:						
Horses	6	3	4	1	2	2
Milch cows	28	26	13	6	4	3
Other cattle	2	12	7	2	—	1
Sheep	—	24	32	16	7	28
Swine	6	4	2	4	1	2
Value of:						
Farm implements	\$200	\$165	\$60	\$95	\$62	\$83
Livestock	\$1,350	\$917	\$617	\$286	\$271	\$196
Animals slaughtered	—	\$75	\$22	\$20	\$12	—
Eggs sold	\$5	—	—	—	—	—
Bushels of:						
Indian corn	—	—	—	—	—	20
Beans	2	—	—	—	—	—
Wheat	40	70	25	20	25	10
Buckwheat	—	—	—	10	—	6
Oats	300	200	20	100	100	20
Barley	14	30	—	—	—	6
Irish Potatoes	75	120	130	130	—	40
Apples	300	—	—	—	—	—
Pounds of:						
Butter	600	300	300	100	100	300
Cheese	9,000	7,200	300	—	—	—
Maple sugar	500	800	—	500	700	50
Wool	—	80	90	57	21	60
Barrels of cider	5	—	—	—	—	—
Tons of hay	25	60	25	12	15	6

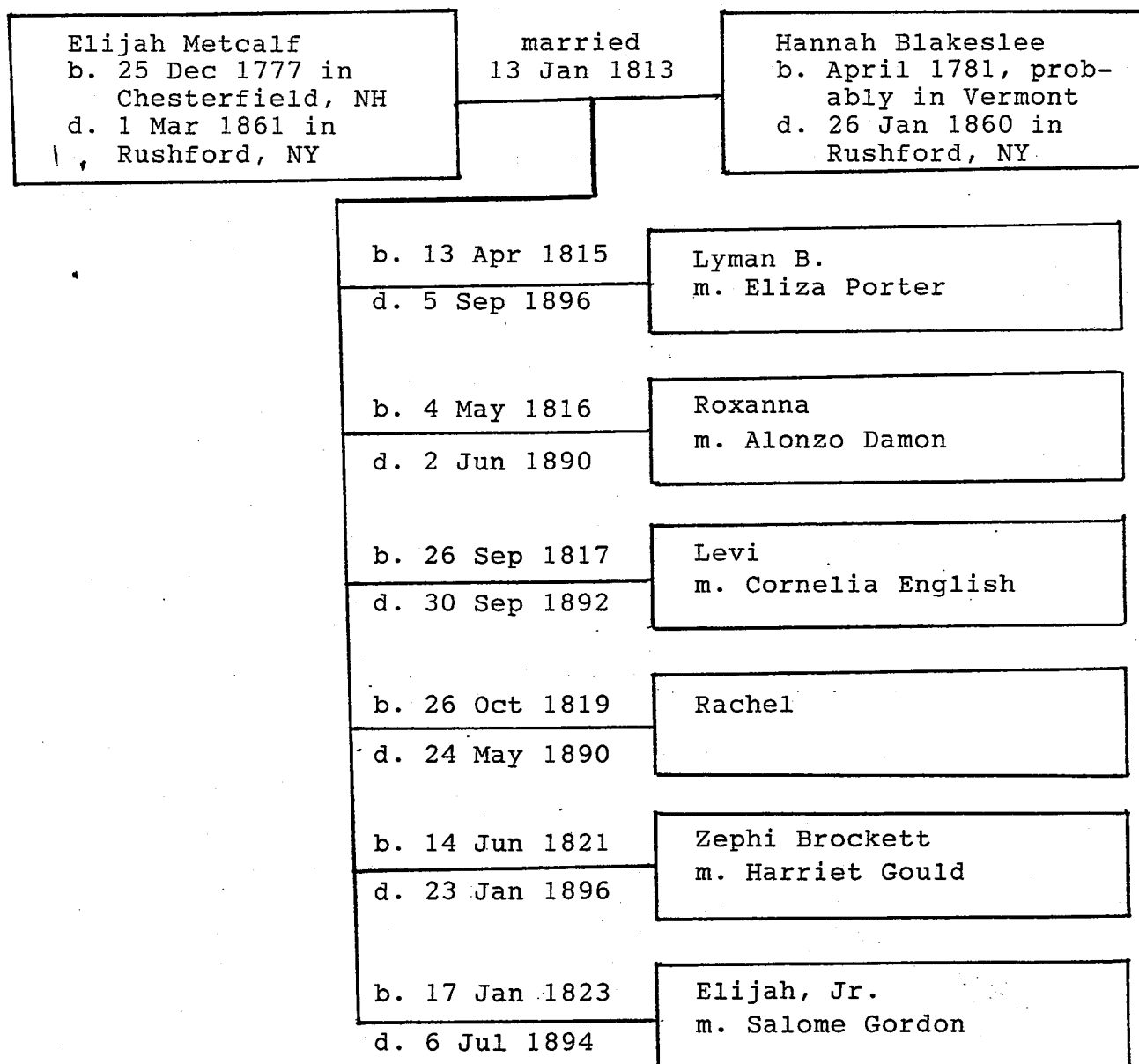


Fig. 13. Children of Elijah and Hannah Blakeslee Metcalf. All were probably born in Salisbury Township, Herkimer Co., New York. Although they had a late start in commencing their family (she 34 and he 37 when Lyman was born), Hannah and Elijah seem to have produced an especially sound and healthy family. The regularity and close spacing of births suggests a lack of miscarriages. No children died in infancy, and all lived into their 70's--Lyman to age 81.

death on her tombstone looks like a zero to me, not like the preceding number, a six.

1, Elijah's request that "On Jordan's Stormy Banks" be sung at his funeral was honored, as it was sung by Mr. Ely Woods (Eldridge, 1910:221). However, someone, along the way, has disobeyed his request to mark his grave with a white oak plank and he now has a nice white marble stone instead. Of course, he might have had an oak plank originally.

I suppose that Elijah fairly well characterized the spirit of frontier Methodism in its early years. My 20th century father once lamented: "How nice if he could have left us a recording of one of his sermons." Elijah must have perceived considerable change in the Methodist Church during his lifetime. In his youth, Methodists were apparently a novelty and, as noted in Chap. 5, even subject to ridicule around Salisbury. By his later years, however, they were certainly completely socially acceptable--maybe he thought they were too much so. Perhaps he felt the church was growing away from him. At least, his children apparently felt that way and most of them transferred from the Methodist Episcopal to the Free Methodist Church, as discussed by Thomas (see Appendix, her page 172).

All of Elijah's children, save Zephi Brockett, lived most of their days in the environs of Rushford. The only one of these to leave any descendants named Metcalf, beyond the first generation, was the oldest, Lyman B. The Metcalfs presently residing in Rushford Town descend from him.

Lyman B. married Eliza Porter on 7 September 1836. They were married in Lyndon, Cattaraugus Co., where Eliza's family lived. They had four children:

Elijah E. (1839-1876)

Hannah Juliette (1840-1913)

Rachel L. (1846--apparently died young)

Fred Lyman (1855-1930)

The census of 1855 lists Lyman's son, Elijah E., as being born in Illinois and daughter, Hannah, in Cattaraugus Co. I am rather suspicious of the "Illinois" entry, although I suppose it

#### THE METCALFS

At the time of Rushford's Centennial and Home Coming Week fifty years ago, Charles Metcalf, his wife Nellie Persons Metcalf, his daughters Millie and Mary, and his mother Mrs. Cornelia Metcalf, were living in the house on upper Main Street directly opposite the Methodist Church. The eldest daughter, Myrtie had married Dr. William W. Bush.

Since that time there have been many changes. On February 9, 1921, Mrs. Cornelia Metcalf passed away at the age of 93 years. She was one of the oldest and most highly esteemed residents of Rushford, her strong Christian character having left an indelible imprint upon her descendants.

On September 26, 1926, Nellie Persons Metcalf passed to her reward following a long period of illness.

Her death was followed nine years later on Memorial Day, 1935, by that of her husband, Charles Metcalf. Charles Metcalf was a highly regarded and useful citizen of Rushford, having served for many years as an Assessor of the town, and also as a member of the School Board. He was always keenly interested in maintaining high standards of morality, scholarship, and discipline in the schools.

The eldest daughter of this family, Myrtie, (Mrs. William Bush), suffered the loss of her husband on January 17, 1957. She is living in Belmont, New York. Her son Arthur, his wife Janet Peirson, two daughters, Marcy (12), and Wendy (8), and a son, William (2), live in Rochester, New York, where Arthur is employed as a Chemist for the Eastman Kodak Company. Arthur served as a Captain in the Coast Guard in World War II.

This account (cont. on next p.) of some Metcalf families originating in Rushford, NY, is from pages 161-162 in The Spirit of Rushford, 1808-1958, published by the Rushford Sesquicentennial Committee in 1958.

The second daughter, Millie, is married to Herbert H. Harmon who for nearly thirty years has been employed as a designer at the Eastman Kodak Company. They reside in Penfield, a suburb of Rochester. They have four children. Elizabeth, the eldest, is married to Pritchard C. Douglass, a Chemist with Bausch and Lomb Company, Rochester. They have three children, Kenneth (15), Steven (12), and Marilyn (7). Their home is in Brighton, a suburb of Rochester. Their second daughter, Ellen, is employed at the Main Office of Eastman Kodak Company, and lives with her parents in Penfield. Their third daughter, Marion, is married to Dr. Victor S. Murphy, a Medical Practitioner and Head of the Medical Department of the Rochester Institute of Technology. In the Korean War he served two years as a Captain in the Army Medical Corps. Their home is located in Penfield, and their four children are Ellen (12), Richard (10), Elaine (8), and David (1). Their only son, Richard, a Veteran of World War II, served two years overseas in the Army Engineer Corps. While in London, England, he met Mary Joyce Rutten, whom he later married. They and their two daughters, Deborah Anne (10), and Elizabeth Jane (7), reside in Brighton. Richard is employed by Eastman Kodak Company.

The youngest daughter of Charles and Nellie Metcalf is Mary, wife of Arthur E. Mowers, a Pharmacist for the LaMay Drug Co. of Rochester. Their two children are Robert and Mary Jane. Robert served in World War II as an Air Corps Radio Technician in North Africa. He and his wife, Patricia, live in Rochester, where he holds a position at Eastman Kodak Company.

Mary Jane is married to Donald Avery, a Civil Engineer for Rochester Products Division of General Motors Company. They have two boys, Kenneth (4), and Robert (1). They live in Gates, a suburb of Rochester.

It might interest many to know that the original farm bought as early as 1832 by the Rev. Elijah Metcalf and occupied by him until his death in 1858, is now owned by his great-great-grandson, Elmer Metcalf who is living in the very same house. This farm is located on the Creek Road toward Centerville, and adjoining the farm originally owned by Levi Metcalf and later by his son, Charles E. Metcalf.

Fred L. Metcalf, son of Lyman B., married Mari-

ette Elmer (1875). To them were born two sons, Lyman B. Jr. (1878), and Ora L. (1889). Lyman B. Jr. married Ruth McVay (1900). Their children were Elmer, Ethel, Eleanor, Claude and Max. Fred died (1930), and Mariette. (1935).

Elmer married Luella Veazey (1928). Their children are, Daniel Elmer (1938), and Margaret Lucy (1942). Daniel was married in September, 1957, to Ruth Smith.

Ethel Metcalf married Archie Freeman. They live in Alden. They have a son, Harold in Tonawanda, who married Margaret Whol. They have twin boys and a daughter. A daughter, Ruth, married Gene Bisig of Alden. They have four children.

Eleanor Metcalf married Gerald Crosby of Arcade (1927). Their daughter, Eva, married Russell Knapp of Dansville. They have three children. A son, Arthur, married Barbara Vosburg, (granddaughter of Burt and Dora Vosburg of Centerville) and they live near East Coy with their four children.

Claude Metcalf married Mary Fuller. They have one son, Ronald.

Max Metcalf was married to Lillian Sprague of Batavia (1953). They have one son, Max Jr. (1954).

Lyman's wife, Ruth, died (1918). He was married to Lura Westland (1921). To them were born eight children, three now living. The oldest girl Chickoa Bell married Eldred Johnson. June married John Maniscalco. The youngest girl, Lyma, a twin, is married to Donald Stringham. Her twin brother died of polio in 1936. Lyman Metcalf died (1957). Ora Metcalf, the oldest living member of this family, married Ethel Brook of Michigan in 1912. They had no children of their own. In 1929 they adopted a baby girl and named her Mariette Louise. She is now married to Alfred Burton. They have two girls. Ora's wife Ethel, died (1954) and he married Mrs. Margaret Flammger of Arcade (1957).

Besides raising their own two boys, Fred and Mariette Metcalf adopted an eleven year old girl to grow up with them. Her name was Bell and she helped to lighten the household burdens until she married Seymour Strait. They lived in this area for a number of years. To them were born two boys and two girls. Winnifred married Burt Weller and lives in Ellicottville, Clarence is married and they reside in Jamestown. Royal married a southern girl and they now live in Mississippi. Bell passed away in April, 1956; her husband preceded her in death by a year or more.

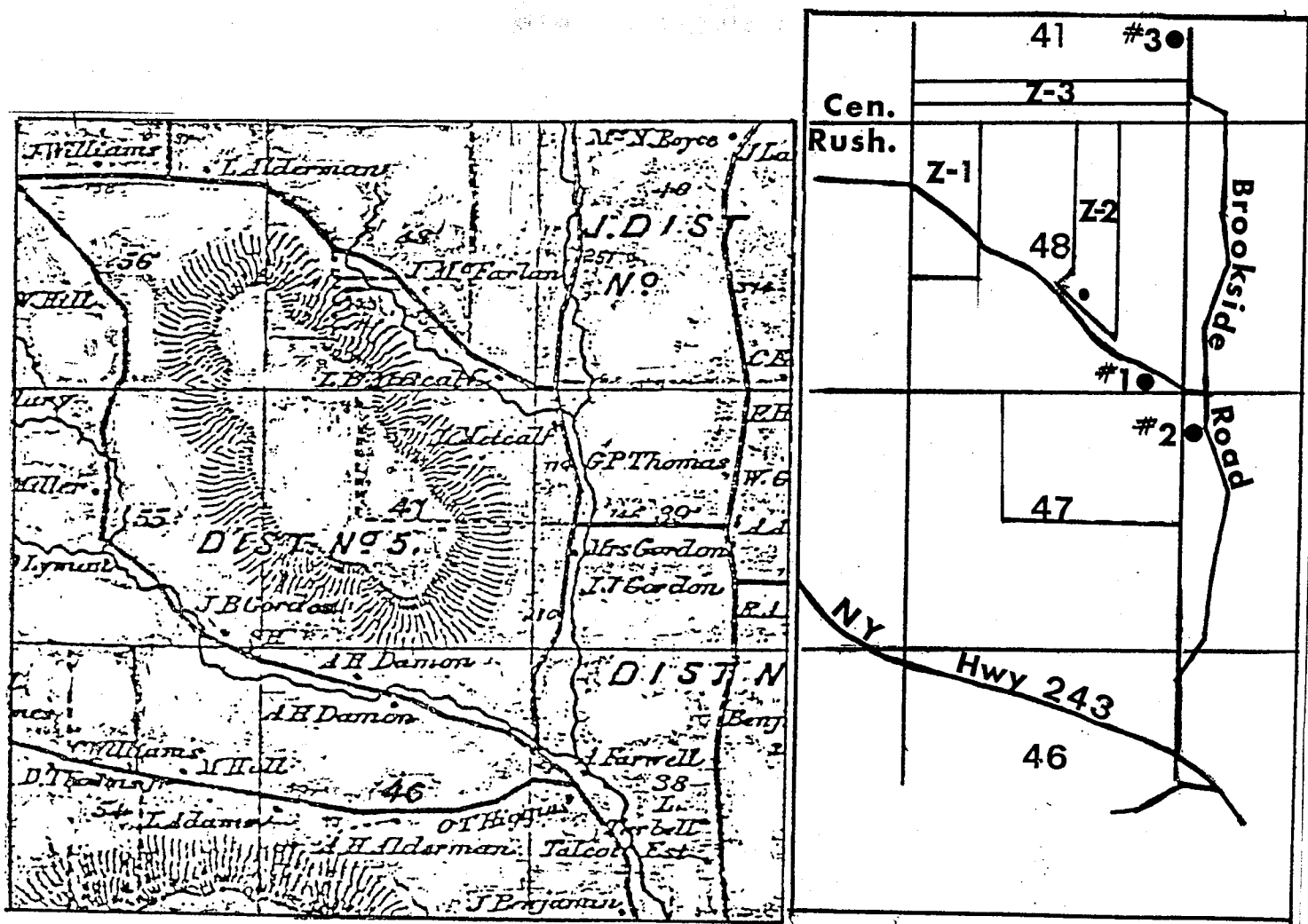


Fig. 14. Various Metcalf properties were located in north-central Rushford (Rush.) and adjacent Centerville (Cen.) Townships mainly in Lots 41, 48, and 47. In Fig. 14-b, Home #1 was the original home of Elijah Metcalf's family when they came to Rushford in 1832, and has been occupied by Metcalf descendants most of the time since. Fig. 14-a is from a map of 1869, and indicates that Lyman B. Metcalf lived in house #1 and Levi Metcalf in house #2. Previously, in the 1850's, Lyman B. had lived in house #3. As newlyweds, young Zephi and Harriet Metcalf lived (1846-1847) on the 50-acre tract indicated as Z-1 (=d in Fig. 15). They then moved to Lyndon Township, to the southwest, in Cattaraugus Co., for some years, but returned to acquire the properties indicated as Z-2 and Z-3 (=m and n in Fig. 15). Probably they lived along the diagonal road, bounding Z-2 on the southwest, as there is evidence of a former dwelling near the black dot (pointed out by Elmer Metcalf). A bit farther northwest along this same road are the better preserved ruins of the old McFarlan home. The Damon family lived to the south in Lot # 46, where two homes are shown as "A.H. Damon."

is possible that the newlyweds, Lyman B. and Eliza, could have migrated west for a few years and then returned to Cattaraugus Co. Lyman B. was certainly quite capable of doing unpredictable things, as we see below. An atlas of the Farmers Loan and Trust Co. (seen at Cattaraugus Co. courthouse, date unknown) shows Lyman B. having the east half of Lot 31, T 4, R 3, in Lyndon Township, the center of which property was about two miles north of the small village of Elgin of that time (see Fig. 17). There is no deed recorded for his acquiring this land, probably because he didn't finish paying for it. Instead, he passed it on to his brother, Zephi, in 1847. Lyman B. and Zephi traded farms at this point and Lyman B. came back "home" to a 50-acre property in the NW corner of Lot 48 near his father's home (i in Fig. 15). Lyman B. sold the farm in Lot 48 in 1851 (o in Fig. 15) and bought 170 acres in adjoining Lot 41, just to the north (p and q in Fig. 15). The house on this property (house # 2 in Fig. 14) was along Brookside Road, as shown in an atlas of the 1850's, near present Windy Hills Farm. Elmer Metcalf recalls that Lyman B.'s son, Fred, mentioned having lived in this house, when young. Lyman B. owned this property until 1855, when he sold it to his brother, Elijah, Jr. (perhaps he continued to live on it, however). I really don't know what happened to him at this point as I don't see any record of him buying another property in either Allegany or Cattaraugus Counties, and his family is not listed in the 1860 census of Rushford, Centerville, or Lyndon Townships (or, at least, my eye didn't pick them out). Where did they go, then? There is no trace of them in the 1865 census for these townships either. Lyman, himself, would have been away then, in the Civil War, but where were Eliza and the children?

Lyman B. must have been an idealistic and/or patriotic type, in view of the fact that he enlisted in the Union forces during the Civil War, not once but twice, with the first enlistment at an age of 46 years! The first enlistment was in Co. D, 64th N.Y. Volunteer Infantry on 13 September 1861. He served a little more than one year during this first "hitch."

## Figure 15

This is a worksheet that I contrived in trying to obtain an understanding of the complex real estate transactions of the Rushford Metcalfs in the 1835-1860 period. There are eight sketch-maps, arranged chronologically, with the timespan of dates of deeds covered by each map indicated below. Lots are of 360 acres, with numbers shown on Map 1. The location of the original Metcalf home is shown by a solid circle in Maps 1 and 8. Lots are of 360 acres. Tracts are identified by lower-case letters, with letter changing with each transaction involving the tract. Provided below are grantor, grantee, date of indenture, acreage, the liber and page on which the deed is recorded (in parenthesis), monetary amount of the transaction, and pertinent remarks. Only the given names of Metcalfs involved are indicated. (Elijah, Sr.=Rev. Elijah).

### Map 1 (1835)

a. Holland Land Co. (Wilhem Willink et al) to Elijah, Sr.; 4 Jan 1835; 100 acres; (3:30); \$252.35 (or \$242.35?)

### Map 2 (1838-1841)

b, c. Farmer's Loan and Trust Co. to Elijah, Sr.; 31 Dec 1838; 110 acres in b and 24 acres in c; (9:270); \$533.50 for b + c..

d. Lemuel Farwell to Elijah, Sr.; 28 May 1840; 50 acres; (22:618).

e. William Gordon to Elijah, Sr., \_\_\_ Nov 1840; one acre; (13:189); \$100.00.

Elijah, Sr. also acquired 18 acres in Lot 17, southern Centerville Township, from Farmer's Trust and Loan on 31 Dec 1838 (9:268).

### Map 3 (1843-1846)

f. Elijah, Sr., to Levi; 26 Dec 1843; 60 acres; (33:181); \$600.00. This purchase also included e, the one acre lot, noted above, upon which Levi's house stood (and still stands) on the west side of Brookside Road. A triangular plot of one acre in the extreme NW corner of f was reserved to Elijah, Sr. I have not tried to show this small plot on the map.

g. Elijah, Sr., to Alonzo H. Damon; 31 Dec 1845; 50 acres (25:172); \$300.00.

h. Elijah, Sr., to Zephi B., 12 Jan 1846; 50 acres; (32:629); \$500.00.

### Map 4 (1847-1848)

i. Zephi B. to Lyman B.; 10 Jun 1847; 50 acres; (32:631); \$500.00.

j. William Keller to Elijah, Sr.; 8 Sep 1847; 100 acres; (22:619); \$1,200.00.

k. Alonzo H. and Roxana Damon to Levi; 1 Jan 1848; 30 acres; (33:180); \$150.00

### Map 5 (1850-1853)

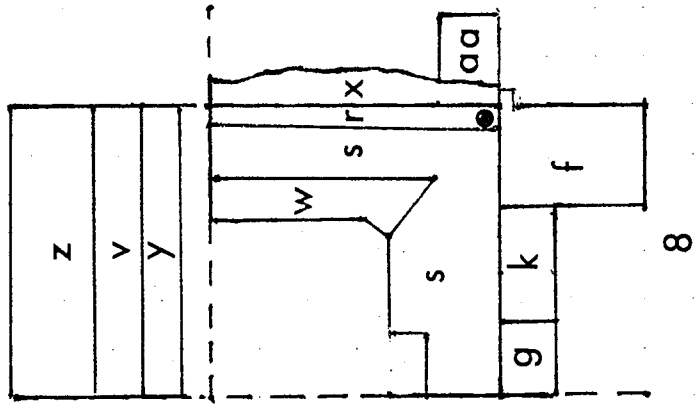
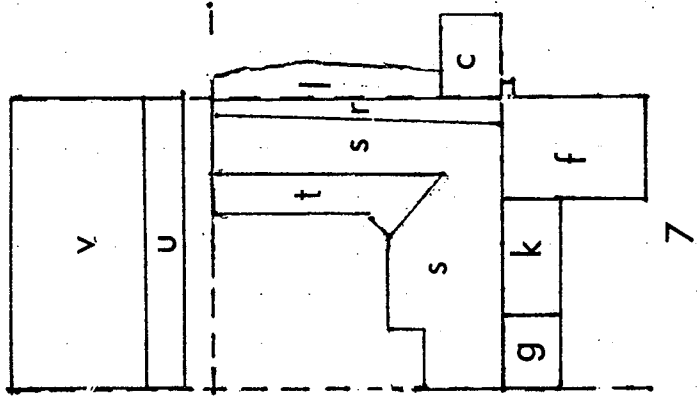
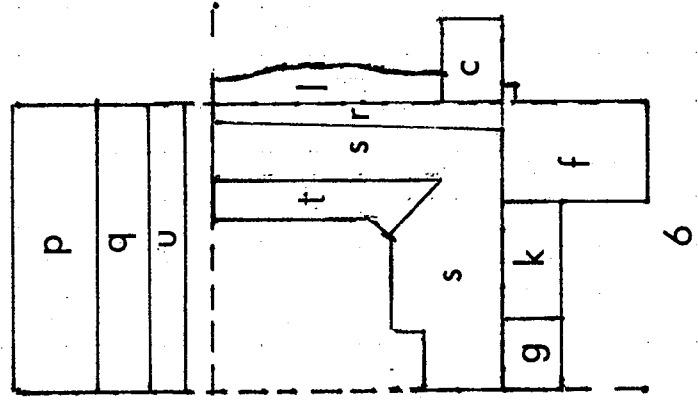
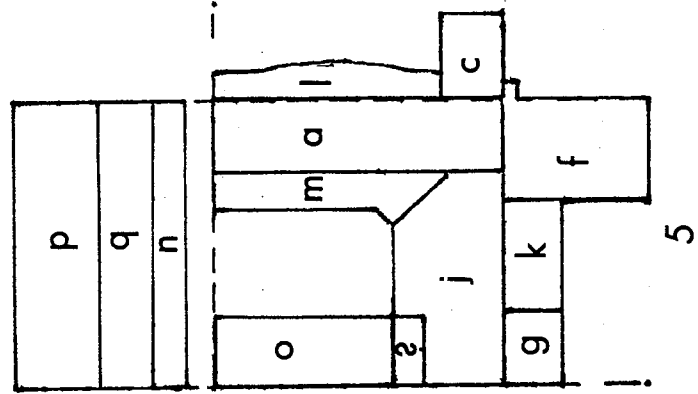
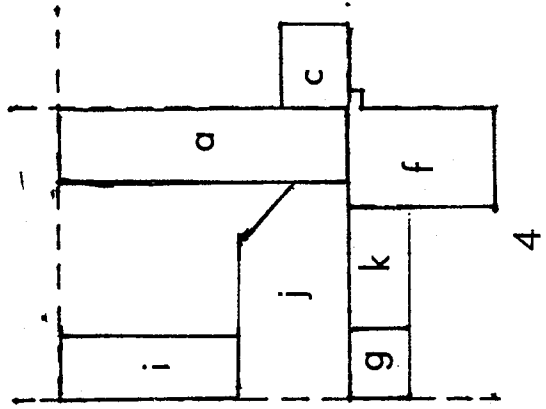
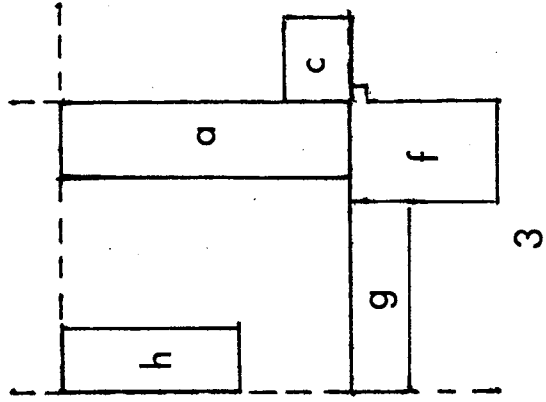
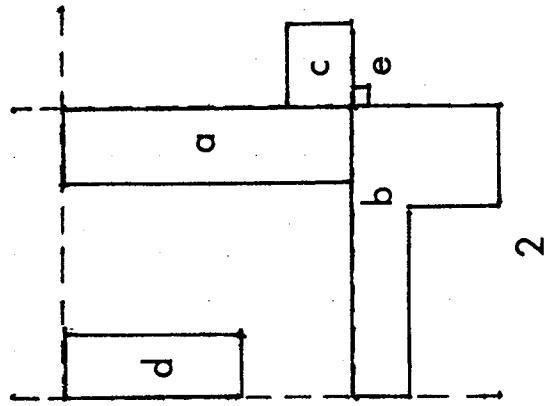
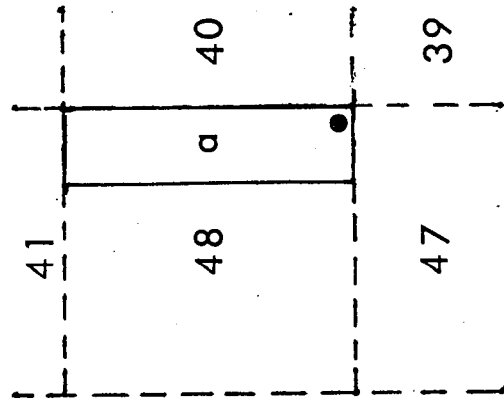


Fig. 15

1. Dewitt C. Ely to Elijah, Sr.; 1 May 1850; 29.2 acres; (38:188); \$292.00. This addition on the east extended Elijah's property out to Brookside Rd., as does the farm today.

m, n. William Fish to Zephi B.; 3 Dec 1850; 35.17 acres in m, and 35.75 acres in n; (31:347); \$800.00 (for m + n).

o. Lyman B. to James Hilliary; 29 Nov 1851; 50 acres; (35:87); \$840.00. On 11 Sep 1850, Elijah, Sr., had sold 10 acres south of this property (from his tract j) to Lyman B. (32:630). Apparently Lyman B. also sold this 10 acres to James Hilliary. However, I did not locate the deed and indicate the plot by ?.

p. Gideon L. Walker to Lyman B.; 26 Feb 1852; 100 acres; (39:225); \$700.00.

q. Peter Kyes to Lyman B.; 9 Nov 1853; 71.5 acres; (39:223); \$1,140.00.

#### Map 6 (December 1854)

r. Elijah, Sr., to Rachel; 13 Dec 1854; 25 acres; (41:507); \$500.00.

s. Elijah Sr., to Elijah, Jr.; 13 Dec 1854; 160 acres (41:504); \$1,200.00.

t, u. Zephi B. to Elijah, Sr.; 17 Dec 1854; 35.17 acres in t and 35.75 acres in u; (41:506); \$1,000.00 for t + u.

#### Map 7 (October, 1855)

v. Lyman B. to Elijah, Jr.; 20 Oct 1855; 171 acres; (44:515); \$3,000.00.

#### Map 8 (1858)

w, x. Elijah, Sr., to Elijah, Jr.; 8 May 1858; 35.17 acres in w and 29.2 acres in x; (50:261); \$1,100 for w + x. Some time in 1856, Elijah, Sr., had sold the east part of c (east of Brookside Rd.) to Charles Farwell (aa in Map 8), so that Brookside Rd. made a convenient east boundary for the Metcalf land.

y. Elijah, Sr., to Rachel; 8 May 1858; 35.5 acres; (50:262); \$400.00.

z. Elijah, Jr., to Daniel Noble; 26 Jul 1858; 100 acres; (50:498); \$3,000.00.

In Map 8, then, Elijah, Jr., having sold z, owns s, w, x, and y; Rachel owns r and y, Levi owns f and k, and the Damons own g, plus other properties to the south. Levi also owned other property besides that shown in Map 8. At this time, the Rev. Elijah (Elijah, Sr.) has divested himself of his properties. He continued to live with Elijah, Jr., and Rachel in what was now Rachel's home (it appears to me), until his death in 1861. Except for one brief interlude, these properties (at least in Lots 40 and 48) belonged to Elijah, Jr., and Rachel until their deaths in the early 1890's.

The pension records pertaining to Lyman B. contain a Certificate of Disability for Discharge that specifies that he suffered an "inguinal hernia of right side" while "loading and unloading corn" on 18 July 1862 at Harrisons Landing, Virginia. This led to his hospitalization and subsequent (first) discharge from the army on 9 October 1862 at Fort Monroe, Virginia. Testimony taken from a comrade-in-arms, Roswell S. Wilmarth (a sergeant, who had, himself, lost an arm in the Battle of Fredricksburg) states:

...he was well acquainted with Lyman B. Metcalf, a private in the same company and Regiment, and was knowing to said Metcalf, hurting or straining himself by shouldering Bags of Grain to such a degree as to cause Hernia, which pained him so much that he was deemed unfit for service, and was sent to the Hospital at Harrisons Landing. He further declares that said Metcalf, previous to being hurt, appeared to be sound and able bodied, and that the accident occurred when he was in the line of his duty, at Harrisons Landing, Va. and that he heard said Metcalf complain bitterly of the injury he had received. In addition to the above deponent states, that the Commissioned Officers of said Company D are all dead! and that he, himself, had the Command of said Company for a short time, acting as 2nd Lieutenant.

The exclamation mark after the word "dead" is quite clearly written. A history of Allegany Co. (Minard, 1896:809) has this to report:

Lyman B. ...served under Gen. McClellan, was in battle of Malvern Hill. His health failed and he was discharged and told he could not recover, but he did and re-enlisted in the 2nd Mounted Rifles and served till close of the war.

Indeed, on Christmas Day, 1863 (seems a bit strange), at age 48, Lyman B. reenlisted, in Co. B, 2nd New York Mounted Rifles. However, he was not "mustered into service" until 22 February 1864. His second enlistment seems to have been marked by illness and hospitalization, like his first. A memo from the Adjutant General's Office to the Commissioner of Pensions notes:

On the Muster Roll of Co. B of that Regiment, for the months of July and Aug., 1864, he is reported Sick in Hospital. Same to Feby. 28/65. May and June 1865, Transferred to V.R.C., Apl. 6, 1865.

The dates and information about transferring, in this memo, are confusing but, in any event, he was transferred from the Mounted Rifles to the Veteran Reserve Corps sometime in late 1864 or early 1865. He had come down with more health problems due to "overwork building breastworks, marching, Exposure, &c" during a march to Petersburg, VA. He had been hospitalized in Washington, D.C. Perhaps his transfer to the V.R.C. took place in Washington, D.C.; at least, he was discharged there (second time) on 9 August 1865.

A list of pensioners (Anon., 1970) indicates that Lyman B. received a monthly pension of \$6.00, beginning in 1868. However, a history of Allegany Co. (Minard, 1896:809) notes that "Mr. Metcalf receives a pension of \$14 per month."

Lyman B.'s great-great grandson, Daniel Metcalf, of Houghton, NY, has preserved his ancestor's bayonet, belt, cartridge box (held paper cartridges and loading paraphernalia), cap box for percussion caps, canteen and two powder horns (one still containing powder!). He also has a large document, with elaborate illustrations in the margins and a handwritten summary of the numerous battles, etc. in which his units had participated. Mrs. Marcy Bush Arnold has a small photo of Lyman B., a trim looking soldier with a long beard and dressed in military uniform with his gun and bayonet. This was sent from Washington, D.C. in 1865, thus, near the time of the termination of his second enlistment. His records state that he was 5 ft., 10 in. high, with sandy complexion, blue eyes and light hair.

It is difficult for me to understand how a man of Lyman B.'s age and background, with his family responsibilities and his state of health, could have enlisted twice (or even once). As a private, often sick and hospitalized, there can have been little glamour in his military career, or so it seems to me. His apparent patriotism makes us stop and ponder.

Despite his military career and its associated problems, Lyman B. must have been quite a peaceable and affable person back in Rushford. Thomas (1910:170) describes him thus: "Uncle

Lyman, as he was familiarly called by both old and young, was of a jovial, fun-loving disposition which made him quite a favorite with children and young people." He was active in the Free Methodist Church, as indicated in a diary kept by his son, Fred.

When Lyman B. returned from the military service in August, 1865, I think it likely that he soon settled on the "old Metcalf farm." (I'll try to use this term for the farm that was originally bought by the Rev. Elijah, which still forms the nucleus of the present Metcalf farm northwest of Rushford Village, as outlined in Fig. 15-Maps 1-8, and which has always had as its center of operations House # 1, of Fig. 14). It was a few months later, in October 1865, that Elijah, Jr. and Rachel bought back the farm (page 102, below). Since Rachel owned the property upon which the house stood I can imagine that she may have wished to return there and perhaps she was happy to share the home with Lyman B.'s family so that she didn't have to live alone. Luella Metcalf informs me that Rachel lived in the east part of the home. Indeed, they must have been congenial because Rachel remained with Lyman B.'s family the rest of her life I believe. An atlas of 1869 shows Lyman B. living on the old Metcalf farm. The diary kept by son, Fred, in 1872 almost surely indicates that the family was living there then, also. However, the state census of 1875 shows Lyman B., Eliza, Fred and Aunt Rachel living in Rushford village (or perhaps, more precisely, East Rushford village). However, Lyman B. is still categorized as a "farmer" having 100 acres of improved and 65 acres of unimproved land. This may refer only to the old Metcalf farm that he had been renting (?) from Elijah, Jr., as it had about that acreage. I find no deed indicating that Lyman B. then owned any land in Allegany or Cattaraugus Counties.\* Perhaps I have not looked hard enough, because Straight (1910:89), in discussing the Daniel Ely family, notes "They moved to Rushford in 1816 and settled on the farm, in later years owned and occupied by Lyman Metcalf." Perhaps Straight only thought he owned it, when actually it belonged to his brother, Elijah, Jr.\*

Later, in 1875, Fred married Maryette (or Mariette) Elmer

---

\* In the pension records of Lyman B. there are 2 affidavits attesting that his widow, Eliza, has no real estate nor income.

and they must have set up their own household. Whether or not this was back on the old Metcalf farm or not I don't know. (Elmer Metcalf once mentioned that Fred had lived somewhere on the east side of Brookside Rd. at one time). It does appear that Lyman B., Eliza and Rachel were back out on the old Metcalf farm again at the time of the 1880 census. It also seems that, in 1880, Fred, Maryette, and their oldest child, Lyman B., II, are living in a separate home, but not far away. Also, the diaries of Charles Metcalf of 1888 to 1894 all indicate that Fred was living close to Houses #1 and #2 of Fig. 14. In September, 1892, Fred and Maryette gave Lyman B. and Eliza a life lease on a lot in the village and I suppose that Lyman B.'s lived there the rest of their lives and that Fred occupied the old Metcalf farm. (His obituary states that he spent "most of his life" on it). Eventually, in 1914, Fred and his son, Ora, bought the farm from Flora Metcalf Thomas, who had inherited it from her father, Elijah, Jr. Still later, Fred's grandson, Elmer, and his wife, Luella, acquired the old Metcalf farm.

After 81 years, the curtains were finally drawn on Lyman B.'s interesting life on 5 September 1896. Eliza passed on in 1900. An entry in the diary of Charles Metcalf for 28 October reads: "Aunt Eliza died last night. I went to Fred's to tell them." This implies that Eliza was living in the village, that she died unexpectedly, that Fred lived nearby, probably on the old Metcalf farm, and that Charles might have had a telephone.

Lyman B.'s oldest son is referred to in most places as "Elijah E." However, on his gravestone the inscription is "Elyah E." According to Porter (1982:18) he married Mary Emaline Ayers at Lyndon in 1869 and had two daughters and one son: Mary Lovina, Emeline and Dennis. Although Porter also lists Flora Metcalf Thomas as his daughter, she was, instead, the daughter of the Rev. Elijah's son, called Elijah, Jr., herein (and an uncle of Elijah E.). Like his father, Elijah E. volunteered for military service in the Civil War, enlisting in June, 1861, with Co. B, 70th N.Y. Volunteer Infantry (Gilbert, 1910:321). I have been unable to obtain any military or pension records for Elijah

E. I doubt that he or his widow ever applied for a pension, in view of what is discussed below.

As a veteran and young married man, Elijah E. once hired out to a farmer at Scio in the south-central part of Allegany Co., some 20 to 25 miles from his father's home. From there, he wrote to them on 2 December 1875 (letter preserved by Mrs. Mary Lou Metcalf Burton):

Scio      December the 2- 75

My dear parents and Brother and Sister I take my pen in hand to answer yours which came to hand last fortnight and was glad to hear from you it found us all well and doing well for these hard times. we live in the same place yet and shall this winter I have hired out to the same man for all winter and i board myself. we have got a very comfortable house to live in we have got a large kitchen and \_\_\_\_\_ sink and buttry, and a sitting room and bedroom and have got a good wood shed and we have got a good heating stove it is a easy place to work in the winter nothing to do only chores and drive team i have got two teams to work a pair of big black horses and a yoke of oxen. my horses shine i tell you i do all the roughfest work with my oxen. i have all the grain i want to feed my teams we raised six hundred and 50 bushels of oats and four hundred and 25 bushels of corn enough of that. now Fred you did not say one word about them puppys I was disappointed not to see you out here with your wife. if you feel above comeing out to see me you just write and say so a\_\_ i liked to forget it i wish you and your wife much joy and happiness. i say your wife for i dont know her name. you did not give me an interduction to her now if i cant see my new sister i would like very much to have her write. now we want you to come out as soon as you can and we shall look for our folks next week and you the week after. little Emma says she wants to see ganma ganpa she says tell granpa to fetch her a 1\_\_\_\_\_ Christmas present Lovina talks about granpas folks and uncle Fred every day. now please send them puppys out with our folks if you have got them. Mother if you have got plentty of yarn i wish you would bring me a pair of mittens or some yarn to knit a pair with it is getting bedtime so i will have to bring this scribble to a close now if you cant read this just bring it out here and i will read it for you. now please come out here as soon as you receive this. good by for this time

Emma and the children sends their love to you all.

E.E. Metcalf

According to Porter (1982:17,18), Elijah E. and Mary Emaline's son, Dennis, was born on 9 December, two months after the death of Elijah E. on 10 October 1876 at age 37. There is no

further mention of Dennis, so I assume he died young. The defensive, yet pathetic tone of the above letter, plus these other factors, paint rather a bleak picture for Elijah E.'s final year. He is buried in Lewellen St. Cemetery in Rushford. His epitaph reads: "Elyah E. son of L.B. and E. Metcalf 1839-1876." There is no stone nearby for Dennis nor for Elijah E.'s wife. There are stones in White Cemetery, Rushford, for daughter Emeline's son, Linford Lafferty and his wife, nee Florence Mae McFarlan--McFarlan being a name long known by the Rushford Metcalfs, since a McFarlan farm was embedded in the central part of Lot 48, where the old Metcalf farm was located. Thus, some of Elijah E.'s descendants seem to have remained in the area.

Lyman B.'s daughter, Hannah Juliette, married William F. Stone in 1856 and had enough descendants to merit over eight pages in the Porter genealogy. I confess that I have not made an effort to look into Stone family genealogy. However, I had the privilege of meeting Mrs. Eva Stone Tullar, a granddaughter of Hannah, at a memorial service in Centerville Methodist Church in June, 1984. Eva came dressed all in red, which, she pointed out in her tribute, was the favorite color of the deceased. I thought it was a nice gesture. I have corresponded with Eva's sister, Margaret Stone Veness, an aviatrix, who is known also as "The Finger Lakes' Flying Great-Grandmother." A news item from the Geneva Times of 23 March 1985 reports:

Margaret Veness celebrated her 85th birthday Saturday afternoon at the controls of a one-engine Cessna, high above Seneca County. ...Mrs. Veness, who has been flying for the past 27 years, noted that the Cessna 172, purchased by her in 1970, is getting old. Although it's been several years since she's flown solo, Mrs. Veness said she still flies regularly and doesn't intend to give up the hobby. It wasn't until 1958--at the age of 58--that Mrs. Veness learned to fly. But seven years later, she competed in the Women's International Air Race from Caldwell, N.J. to the Bahamas.

Lyman B.'s youngest child was Fred Lyman, whom we have already encountered, and to whom his brother, Elijah E., had addressed some rather pointed remarks in the letter quoted

above. The new wife to whom Elijah E. referred was Maryette (also appearing as Maryett or Mariette) Elmer, whom Fred married on 10 September 1875. Later in the chapter, I discuss a diary, which Fred maintained during a part of the year 1872 and I also mention again some of his descendants presently living in the town of Rushford. Among the documents preserved by them is an obituary for Fred Metcalf:

Fred L. Metcalf was taken suddenly very ill November 23, 1929. Although his illness was not considered critical and but few were aware of it, he was taken much worse, Friday afternoon, January 10, and even though his family and friends did everything possible for his comfort and need, the Lord knew best and called him home to rest at 4:20 Tuesday morning, January 14, 1930. The community was sadly shocked at the news.

Mr. Metcalf was born in the town of Centerville, March 12, 1855, the son of Mr. and Mrs. Lyman B. Metcalf. His parents came from Herkimer County and after a short time came to the farm at Brookside and there he spent the most of his life.

He married Maryette Elmer of Fillmore, September 10, 1875 and to this union were born two children, Lyman B. of Oakfield and Ora of Arcade. Besides his two sons and his widow there are ten grandchildren and four great grandchildren to mourn his loss.

Of him it can be said he loved his home and family and was a kind friend to everyone.

The family feels very grateful to their friends for their tender sympathy and assistance and for the beautiful flowers.

A prayer was offered at the house at 12 o'clock Thursday, and the funeral services were held from the Free Methodist Church at 1 p.m. The pastor of the Baptist church, Rev. F.L. Smith's sermon "The Broad and Narrow Ways," was very comforting to many hearts, as were also the two beautiful hymns sung by Mrs. F.L. Smith and Robert Warren, and Rev. Cooley's prayer.

Turning to the second of Elijah and Hannah's children, Roxana was born 4 May 1816. She married Alonzo H. Damon. The early Damons of Rushford were, in the words of Charles M. Damon (1910:153) "Among the substantial families of Rushford's citizens...." In describing the family, Charles notes (p. 155):

"Alonzo was the most rugged and most prosperous." Alonzo and Roxana lived on what was referred to as the Creek Road (now Highway 243), west of Rushford village and south of the homes of Rev. Elijah and Levi Metcalf (see Fig. 14.). Charles M. Damon (1910:403) recalled childhood visits to his uncle Alonzo's farm "on the 'Creek' or Buffalo Road," noting: "Aunt Roxy Damon made cheese in their powerful home-made press, the whole process a great curiosity to us, and the well-kept farm, thrifty buildings, excellent stock, vigorous sugarbush and good orchard, with a red sweet apple as a special treat to us, made our visit with our cousins very enjoyable."

The "cousins" mentioned were Rhoda, Thomas, and Riley, all listed as living at home at time of the 1865 census and listed as of 24, 21, and 15 years of age, respectively. Alonzo H. Damon died in August 1871, at age 56. He is interred in Lewellen St. Cemetery, Rushford. His gravestone was found broken in two in 1986 and 1987. In the 1875 census, Riley is listed as head of household, comprising also his mother and Rhoda, now 34. Thomas had married and acquired his own home by then. By the 1880 census, Riley had married, had a son, one year old, and still seems to be on the "home place" with Roxana. At some point Rhoda married a Mr. Baker and they must have lived on a farm nearby, possibly in one of the houses labelled as "A.H. Damon" in Fig. 14. In Charles Metcalf's diaries for 1888, 1890, and 1894, Rhoda is mentioned frequently. It is obvious that there is no husband with her at this time and that she has a farm to tend to. Charles seems very solicitous of his cousin, Rhoda, helping her out frequently. In the autumn of 1894, Charles and his mother, Cornelia, were involved with helping Rhoda acquire a home and settle in the village of Houghton, to the northeast of Rushford village. A stone in Lewellen St. Cemetery, next to that of Alonzo H. Damon, reads: "Rhoda Baker. 1840-1899." There is no stone or epitaph referring to the shadowy Mr. Baker, whose name she shared. In the settlement of the estate of Rachel Metcalf (discussed below), in 1891, money was allocated to be distributed "Between Thomas Damon and Sarah J. Damon his wife

and Rhoda Baker, children and heirs of Roxana Damon, late of...." This is an estate settlement and not a will so I assume that all heirs are listed. Thus, it appears that Riley Damon and any heirs he may have had, must have died before 1891. I assume, then, that, of Roxana's three children, only Thomas had surviving descendants. In fact, I visited with his grandson, Leland Damon, in Houghton in July, 1987, and was able to ascertain that Thomas did leave a number of descendants as indicated in the genealogical section, hereafter. I was not able to locate Roxana's tombstone, although she is surely buried next to Alonzo H. in Lewellen St. Cemetery. I was not able to decipher the lower part of his broken stone, which may commemorate Roxana.

I will depart the sequence of births here and say something about Rachel Metcalf, as she and Roxana seem to make a natural pair, being the only daughters in the family of Elijah and Hannah. Rachel never married. You will want to read Flora Metcalf Thomas's complimentary remarks about her aunt Rachel in the Appendix. Rachel's readiness to help the infirm was, I suppose, called forth in caring for her aged parents, with whom she lived until their deaths. Flora writes that Rachel always lived on the old Metcalf farm after the family came to Rushford. This is almost true--but not quite.

By some means, Rachel was able to purchase two plots of land from her parents. On 13 December 1854 she and Elijah, Jr., took over what had been the nuclear old Metcalf farm in Lot 48. Elijah, Jr., acquired 160 acres in the western part of the property (s in Fig. 15) and Rachel acquired a narrow 25-acre "slice" (r in Fig. 15) along the original east side, which, I believe, after some calculation, included the farmhouse and farmyard buildings. She paid \$500 for this property.

On 8 May 1858, Rachel acquired from her parents, for \$400, a 35.5 acre tract in Lot 41 (y in Fig. 4.5) just to the north of Lot 48. This was a property, which Zephi Metcalf had previously owned, and which he had sold to his parents in 1854. Thus, she owned 60.5 acres, total.

Now, on 16 January 1865, Elijah, Jr., and Rachel jointly sold their 255.17 acres in Lots 48 and 40 (not in 41) for \$6,240 to Melville C. Day of Biddeford, Maine. Lo and behold, on 23 October 1865 of the same year they bought the same property back from Mr. Day for \$1,854 or for a profit of \$4,386. Rachel regained title to her 25 acres that she had previously held. The motive for these transactions is clear. There were petroleum springs in the area. One was on Levi Metcalf's\*property, next door, just south of his house (house # 2 in Fig. 14) and an oil well was sunk near it. Clearly, Mr. Day was hoping to gain a petroleum-producing property. He must have changed his mind rather soon, however. Nevertheless, he did retain a seven-year lease on the property for oil and mineral rights when he sold it back. All in all, it seems that Elijah, Jr., and Rachel carried out a very lucrative "deal."

In the census of 1865, Rachel is shown living with the family of her sister, Roxana Damon, having sold her property shortly before this time. However, I suspect she was soon back on it after she bought it back. As suggested above, her brother, Lyman B., came home from the Civil War at just this time and no doubt needed a home, which Rachel was probably glad to offer him. As noted, also, she seems to have spent the remainder of her life with Lyman B.'s family. Again, however, it appears that she departed the farm for a while around 1875, as she and Lyman B.'s are listed in East Rushford village in the 1875 census.

There is a short reference to Rachel in a reminiscence by Charles M. Damon (1910:401): "... 'Old Dr. Stacy,' who told Rachel Metcalf the devil never told the truth but once, that was when he said 'All that a man hath will he give for his life'...." I assume that Rachel must have been fond of quoting this admonition. As noted in Thomas (1810:170), Rachel and Roxana died only eight days apart in May and June, 1890. These days are recorded in the diary of their nephew, Charles Metcalf:

May 22. Took Hosea load of wood. Had horses shod. Aunt Rachel sick. Had the doctor today.

---

\*Levi's petroleum spring is mentioned in Herrick, 1949:31. (see next p.)

The upper excerpt is from page 31 in Herrick, John P. (1949). Empire Oil: The Story of Oil in New York State. New York: Dodd, Mead & Company. The lower excerpt is from page 809 in Minard, John S. (1896). Allegany County and its People. . . . Alfred, NY: W.A. Fergusson & Co.

#### EARLY OIL DISCOVERIES IN NEW YORK STATE

The Potter County *Journal* news item quoted would fix the date that oil was struck in the Moore Well as late in July, 1860. The newspaper account of the well stated that the drilling bit—then forty feet in the sand—was to go deeper. The record of a well drilled a mile and a half to the north and east, some years later, shows 46 feet of first sand, and it is fair to assume that the thickness of the sand in the Moore Well was about the same.

When oil was struck, Jones, Marden & Company had under lease only the John T. Moore and Levi Metcalf farms, the two on which there were oil springs. Drilling was suspended until protective leases were secured of the Thomas Agett, William G. Thomas, James Gordon, and Emerson Kendall farms. The Agett adjoined the Moore farm on the north, the Thomas and Gordon farms adjoined the Metcalf farm, and the Kendall farm was on nearby Lot 45. From the Metcalf farm spring, early settlers skimmed off oil to grease their boots and oil harness. A Rushford pioneer who told of many trips to the spring for boot oil, was Jebediah B. Gordon. The Thomas lease called for one-twelfth royalty and a dollar a year rental for one-tenth of an acre for a well site that was just over the fence from the Metcalf oil spring.

Leonard Williams, son of Solomon, son of Solomon, was born in Essex Co., N. Y., in 1818. Solomon, his father, married Aurilla Handy from Vermont. Children, Angelina, Leonard, Martin and Franklin. He moved from Granville, Washington Co., N. Y., to Centerville in 1836. Leonard, always a farmer, married in 1840, Sarepta, daughter of Daniel Ely, whose ancestor came in the Mayflower. His wife was Mrs. Mary (Goss) Carrier. Her children by Mr. Carrier were, Julia A. and Parmelia; by Mr. Ely, Caroline, Betsey, Christopher C., DeWitt C., Sarepta born in 1820 and Cordelia. Mr. Ely settled on the present Metcalf farm, on which an oil well was drilled in 1865. Near this well on Eneas Gary's farm was a sulphur spring that Sarepta used to drink from after removing a scum of oil half an inch thick. People came and boarded at her father's to drink this water about 1826 to 1830. Mr. and Mrs. Williams settled in Farmersville where they lived till 1867. They had two children, Wilbur E. and Julia. Julia attended Rushford Union School and married George Straight of New Hudson, where they now live. They have two children, Arthur and Edith. Mr. Williams served as assessor in Farmersville, removed to New Hudson in 1867, and to Rushford village in 1885.

May 23. Aunt Rachel worse today. Went down to farmer's meeting.

May 24. Aunt Rachel died at 12 o'clock today.

May 26. The funeral at 1 o'clock--a large turnout.

May 28. Went over to Farmersville after feed. Aunt Roxy taken sick tonight.

May 29. Draged a little. Aunt Roxy very sick.

May 30. Drawed stone. Mary and Wilts were up--Pa staid over to Aunt Roxys.

June 1. (Sunday). Went over to Aunt Roxys. She is very low.

June 2. Aunt Roxy died at half-past-twelve last night. Sawed some today.

June 3. Sowed some barley and planted some corn.

June 4. Went to the funeral--a good turnout.

We wonder, of course, whether Roxana and Rachel fell victim to an epidemic disease that invaded the community then or whether the shock of Rachel's death brought on the demise of Roxana.

Elijah, the youngest child of the Rev. Elijah and Hannah, I am calling Elijah, Jr. His daughter, Flora Metcalf Thomas, has summarized his life (see the Appendix). In 1860, the census shows Elijah, Sr., 82, Elijah, Jr., 38, and Rachel, 40, living together on the old Metcalf farm. The following year, Elijah, Sr., died on 1 March and Elijah, Jr. married Salome Gordon, of a prominent and numerous Rushford family, on 20 March. It seems as though they may have postponed getting married until after the passing of Elijah, Sr. Perhaps they continued to live on the farm until 1865, when, as noted above, it was sold, for a time, to Melville Day. Presumably with the profits of this sale, Elijah, Jr., bought, in May 1865, for \$5,360, the 178.67 acre Benjamin Claus farm in northeastern Rushford Township, as noted by Thomas (1910:171). According to her, he lived there "a few years." However, the 1865 as well as the 1875 census shows him living in Rushford village, although listed as a "farmer." Although he may have administered his holdings from the village,

he apparently did engage in some farm work, as on the day of his death. Charles Metcalf's diary entry for 6 July 1894 reads: "Uncle Elijah fell off load of hay and was killed at noon today." On 8 July Charles writes: "Went to funeral of Uncle Elijah. Large turnout."

Elijah, Jr. (and/or Salome) must have had a good business head and accumulated several hundred acres of land. Minard (1896:810) refers to him as "a prosperous farmer." This land was inherited by Flora, only child of Elijah, Jr., and Salome. Flora sold the old Metcalf farm to an Irve Worden around the turn of the century, but, like her father before her (in 1865), soon bought it back. In 1914, as aforementioned, she sold the farm (in two parcels) to Fred Metcalf and to his son, Ora. Still later, the two parts were reunited by the Elmer Metcalfs, who still owned the farm in the 1980's.

Flora married Luther J. Thomas of Welsh stock. Minard (1896:810) notes that William W. and Luther J. Thomas established, in Rushford, in 1893 "the present gents' furnishing and clothing firm of Thomas Bros." and adds: "The W.U. telegraph office is in their store...also the telephone office." Thus, Rushford had telephones 20 years after Bell first exhibited his device in 1876. On 22 December 1933, the diary of Charles Metcalf records "Flora died last night." Flora and Luther are interred in the Lewellen St. Cemetery in Rushford next to the graves of Elijah, Jr., and Salome.

Levi (that good old Metcalf name) was the third-born of the children of Rev. Elijah and Hannah. Unlike his brothers, Lyman B. and Zephi, he seemed quite content to obtain a farm next to his father's and remain rooted there for the remainder of his life. He bought 60 acres from his father in 1843 (f in Fig. 15) and 30 acres from Alonzo and Roxana Damon in 1840 (k in Fig. 15). I believe that he acquired additional acreage, but I have not looked into his later deeds. The 1869 atlas, for instance, shows (see Fig. 14) that he had a rectangular property rather than the "dogleg" configuration that I show in Fig. 15, Maps 4-8. He also acquired some land from brother, Elijah, Jr., in

Lot 48 at a later time. In addition, his son, Charles, seems to have had property close by, as he, in his diaries of 1888-1894, refers to "my" place, crops, etc.

Levi is listed in a history of Cattaraugus County (Ellis, 1879:316) as being the sixth minister (1870's) of the Free Methodist Church in Lyndon, a community to the southwest of Rushford, which I have mentioned several times already.

Levi married Cornelia, daughter of Robert and Abigail Williams English, who had come out from Salisbury shortly after the Metcalfs, as noted in Chap. 5. Robert and Abigail had been married by the Rev. Elijah back in Herkimer Co. (Gordon, 1910:178). Mrs. Cornelia English Metcalf wrote a short piece entitled "Recollections of my Younger Days" for the Rushford Centennial volume (1908:241). Most of these "recollections" deal with the early Methodist church in Rushford. Cornelia's portrait appears in Thomas (1910:169). She lived to age 92, highly esteemed in Rushford, as indicated in the following article written at the time of her death by J. Fred Iulig in The Free Methodist:

Mrs. Cornelia English Metcalf, widow of Levi Metcalf, was born at Norway, New York, May 25, 1828, and passed to her heavenly reward from the home of her son, Charles L. Metcalf, Rushford, New York, February 9, 1921. When but six years of age she came with her parents, Robert and Abigail English, to Rushford. In 1844 she was united in marriage to Levi Metcalf, who for many years was a very efficient local preacher in the church. She was always by his side, and very ably assisted him in his services. Their wedded life covering a period of forty-eight years was lived on the Metcalf farm in Rushford. Three children were born to them, two of them, Mrs. Edward Dietrich, of Syracuse, New York, and Charles L., remain to mourn the loss of their saintly mother. She is also survived by one sister, Mrs. Victoria Gordon, of Rushford, New York, and one brother, Charles English, of Belfast, New York, six grandchildren and seven great-grandchildren. Since her husband's death, twenty-nine years ago, she made her home with her son. She had been in failing health since the latter part of November, but was not confined to her bed until a few days previous to her decease. She was converted at the early age of sixteen and united with the Methodist Episcopal Church, where she held her membership until the organization of the Free Methodist society in this

place, of which she became a charter member. For more than three quarters of a century she espoused the cause of righteousness, and graced the church of her choice throughout her long and useful life, with a clear testimony to the efficacy of the atonement. During the many years that she was permitted to labor in the church, she held definitely to the doctrines of the church, and with the blessing of the Spirit upon her. Again and again she urged everyone to press into the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ. She was endowed with very strong characteristics, which were beautifully mingled with admiration for the strong and love and sympathy for the weaker ones. Her mind was keen, alert, and she maintained a lively interest in the activities of the church until the very last. When she could no longer go to the house of worship, she still upheld the work of God by her prayers and faith, and was always ready to give spiritual counsel and encouragement to the many who sought her presence. She was a loyal Free Methodist, she loved the Bible, the government of the church, and was a diligent reader of the church paper since it was first published, a pattern of godliness and depth of piety. Her passing is a distinct loss to the church. The high esteem and great regard in which she was held by her children were manifested in the thoughtful and loving ministrations of her daughter, Mrs. E. Dietrich, and the extraordinary devotion of her only son, Charles, and his estimable companion, who in the twenty-nine years of her widowhood and confinement to the home, ministered to her every want most tenderly. The funeral service was held at her son's home, conducted by her pastor, assisted by Rev. B.N. Miner. Text, Rev. 22:14. Her remains were laid to rest, beside her husband's in the beautiful Garden Cemetery at Rushford.

The terms "very strong characteristics" and "keen, alert" mind may be especially noteworthy, from what I have read about Cornelia. From the perspective of the diaries of her son, Charles, she and Levi seem to have been very active, going and coming, mainly, I suppose, in connection with their church work. After Levi's death, Cornelia still seems to be going places, on her own, and, I suppose, in her buggy.

The oldest of Levi and Cornelia's three children was Mary, born in 1849. She married Wilson G. Robbins. In his 1888-1894 diaries, Charles Metcalf frequently mentions visits of Mary and "Wilts." Wilson seems to have helped out on the Levi Metcalf farm a good deal. Perhaps he had originally been an employee on

the farm. I don't know if he had a farm of his own. A photo, probably taken in the later 1880's, shows Wilson with a crutch, Mary (a bit obese), and their only child, Nellie. I noticed in June 1980 presence of a U.S. flag at Wilson's grave, which probably indicates that he (born in 1841) was a Civil War veteran. The crutch suggests that he might have been disabled in the war. Mary died in 1895, at age 46, but Wilson survived to 1930 and a venerable age of 89. Although he seems to have married a second time, he is interred with Mary in the "Metcalf row" in Rushford's Lewellen St. cemetery.

Levi and Cornelia's daughter, Nelia, was born in 1869. The 1875 census lists her as "Cornelia," but apparently she was always called "Nelia." In the diary of her brother, Charles, for 1888, there is frequent mention of an Ed Dietrich in the employ of the Levi Metcalfs. The gist of these entries indicates that Ed is not an ordinary hired man. There is mention of a "Mr. Dietrich," his father, coming to visit, as though he was an old family friend. We see entries such as "Ed took the girls to meeting." In June, Nelia came down with the measles. Shortly thereafter, Ed is similarly afflicted. On 8 October we read: "Mr. Dietrich and sister came today." and on 9 October: "Nelia married today. A very good time." Incidentally, Nelia's uncle, Zephi Metcalf from Kansas, was visiting at the time.

Apparently the newlyweds, Edward and Nelia Dietrich, did not settle in Rushford. Edward went on to become prominent in the dairy supplies business and located at Syracuse, New York. Mr. Pritchard Douglass, who worked for Dietrich as a young man, and knew him over a number of years, told me a good deal about his career. Dietrich initially built up the Gowing-Dietrich Company, which was later sold to Cherry-Burrell, another dairy supply company. After some years, Edward started Dietrich Supply Company, still selling dairy supplies. This company persisted until the 1940's. Edward and Nelia had a daughter, Gertrude, who married Lloyd Wheeler. An interesting sidelight is that Lloyd Wheeler, having learned the dairy supply business with his father-in-law in the Gowing-Dietrich Company, moved into

Cherry-Burrell after sale of the former and became a manager in Cherry-Burrell. When Edward Dietrich started Dietrich Supply Company, this put him in direct competition with his son-in-law's company. However, according to Mr. Douglass, everything was handled with decorum and finesse within the family. Mr. Douglass was high in the praise of Edward Dietrich, whom he characterized as being a good businessman, level-headed, much respected by employees and other businessmen, alike, and noted for helping and advising young people (including Mr. Douglass).

The only son of Levi and Cornelia Metcalf was Charles Levi, born in 1855. He remained in the Town of Rushford all his life, where he and his wife, Nellie Persons Metcalf, were prominent citizens. In the early years of their marriage they lived on the old Levi Metcalf farm (house # 2 in Fig. 14), apparently with Levi and Cornelia. Early in the century, they moved into Rushford Village, where they had a handsome home on Main St., opposite the Methodist Church. Charles "served for many years as an Assessor of the town, and also as a member of the School Board"--(Rushford Sesquicenn. Comm., 1958:161). Despite their close identification with Rushford, it appears that the horizons of Charles and Nellie did extend beyond, as well. For example, their daughter, Mary, mentions that they attended the Chicago World's Fair in 1893. (When someone asked how they travelled to Chicago, Mary drily observed "I'm sure they didn't fly."). In this particular conversation someone referred to Nellie as a "liberated woman." Later, I noted her epitaph, in Lewellen St. cemetery, which is:

Nellie L. Persons  
wife of  
Charles L. Metcalf  
1861-1926

A newspaper account of 1 October 1926 reports of Nellie:

Her funeral was held at the home Wednesday afternoon. ...Mrs. Metcalf was a member of the Free Methodist Church of Rushford and as long as her health permitted was an active worker. She was an exceptionally sweet alto singer and in her church and at funerals and on

other occasions her voice was lifted in praise for her Master. In her home she was an ideal wife and mother and will be sorely missed by Mr. Metcalf and her daughters, Mrs. Wm. W. Bush of Belmont, Mrs. Herbert Harmon of Rochester and Mrs. Arthur Mowers of Rochester.

Charles L. Metcalf lived some 80 years (1855-1935). From the late 1880's until the early 1930's he kept yearly diaries, jotting down very terse summaries of the day's happenings. His persistence in this, over so many years, seems exceptional. About 15 of these diaries are now preserved by his granddaughter, Ellen Harmon, and I was privileged to be able to peruse some of them into the wee hours of a July morning in 1987, in which effort I was kept company by another grandchild of Charles, Richard Harmon. I have cited from these diaries frequently above, and will cite a good deal more, below.

The Metcalf name in Levi's line terminated with Charles L., as he and Nellie were blessed only with daughters: Myrtie, Millie, and Mary. A good deal is written about the families of these daughters in The Spirit of Rushford (Rushford Sesquicenn. Comm., 1958:161).

A photograph of Myrtie appears in the Rushford Centennial volume (Rushford Cenn. Comm., 1908: facing p. 114). She married Dr. William W. Bush, who was a dentist in Rushford for some 20 years as well as Town Clerk and later County Clerk at Belmont. Myrtie and William had one son, Arthur, who went to Northwestern University and was a chemist with Eastman Kodak at Rochester, NY. Myrtie's granddaughter, Marcy Bush Arnold, has preserved a number of ancient photographs and original deeds of much interest to anyone delving into Metcalf family history. The photographs are labelled (perhaps by Myrtie?) and include pictures of Lyman B. and Rachel Metcalf and Roxana Metcalf Damon. Among the deeds are two signed by both the Rev. Elijah and Hannah Metcalf and others signed by Levi and Cornelia Metcalf and by Roxana and Alonzo Damon.

Millie married Herbert H. Harmon, who combined engineering, draftsman, and photographic skills both in his own studio and hobbies and in the employ of Eastman Kodak, Rochester. In 1986

and 1987, I was happy to be able to visit with several of the children of Millie and Herbert: Elizabeth and her husband, Pritchard Douglass, mentioned above, Marion, Ellen, and Richard, together with his wife, Joyce, a talented artist, of British birth, whom Richard met while she was sketching in St. Paul's Cathedral, London. Joyce has collected and nicely systematized memorabilia of her husband's family. I was especially happy to find that she had photos of Hannah Blakeslee Metcalf. Ellen and Richard Harmon were also employees of Eastman Kodak.

Like her grandmother, Cornelia, and mother, Nellie, Millie was a woman of much intelligence, energy and initiative. She combined a career as a high school teacher in the Rochester schools with her homemaking. I was delighted to learn that she was a biology teacher, as we seem to be of rare occurrence in the greater Metcalf family. Millie had wide interests. As her son, Richard, remarked: "When she enjoyed something, she pursued it right along." Young Millie researched the history of the Free Methodist Church in Rushford and wrote a short article on it for the Rushford Centennial volume in 1908 when she was only about 17 (Millie Metcalf, 1908:211). After retiring as an educator she was active in public service in Rochester. An article discussing these activities is included in the Appendix.

Mary Metcalf married Arthur E. Mowers, who was a pharmacist in Rochester. When I visited with her in 1987 she was an active and very attractive lady of 88.

Zephi Brockett was Elijah's next to youngest child. He was born in the Town of Salisbury on 14 June 1821. Zephi grew to manhood in Rushford. He married Harriet Gould there in 1844. Harriet was born on 1 March 1824. The certificate of marriage from a Metcalf family Bible in possession of Frank and Elizabeth Metcalf, Grenola, Kansas, reads:

Zephi B. Metcalf of the town of Rushford St NY and  
Harriet Gould, of town of Centervill St NY on the 22 day  
of february 1844 were joined together, by Nathen Fellows  
Minister of the gospel

Witness:

Alonzo H Damon  
Levi Metcalf



As noted above, Alonzo Damon was Zephi's brother-in-law, husband of Roxana, and Levi was his brother. Nathan Fellows was a Methodist minister, who was apparently much admired by the Metcalfs. Cornelia English Metcalf (1908:242) refers to him as "of precious memory to me."

As indicated in the certificate (and discussed further in Chap. 7), Harriet Gould's family lived in Centerville Township, directly north of Rushford. They lived about 2 miles NNW of Rev. Elijah's old home (see Fig. 14) and would likely have gone past it on occasion when going down to Rushford village.

Zephi and Harriet lived about ten years in New York state after their marriage. Zephi bought 50 acres from his father and mother (Rev. Elijah and Hannah) in the northwest part of their farm in Lot 48 for \$500 on 20 January 1846 (property h in Fig. 15). This tract bordered the Rushford-Centerville Town line on the north. There may have been a house north of where the diagonal road (Fig. 14) intersects the west boundary of plot Z-1. At least I saw a mound of stones there, suggesting this. The first child of Zephi and Harriet, Algeroy, would have been born while they lived here (October 1846). Later (10 June 1847) they sold this property for \$500 to Zephi's brother, Lyman B. At that time, Zephi and Harriet are listed as living in the Town of Lyndon, Cattaraugus Co. As noted above, they had, in fact, traded farms with Lyman B. As noted in Chap. 7, a number of Harriet's relatives in the Slocum family lived in the Town of Lyndon and thereabouts, and, in fact, one Slocum family still lived in the Town in the 1980's. Lyndon Township strikes me as being rather more hilly and wooded than Rushford and Centerville Townships--real Allegany Mountains! I wonder if it may have seemed a bit backwoodsy to Harriet and Zephi? In any event, they didn't stay there long, although long enough for their second child, Hartley Andrew, to be born there in February 1849 (Anon., 1905c:275).

On 3 December 1850 Zephi and Harriet bought, from William Fish, 35.17 acres in the north-central part of the same Lot 48 where they had lived previously (m in Fig. 15). They also

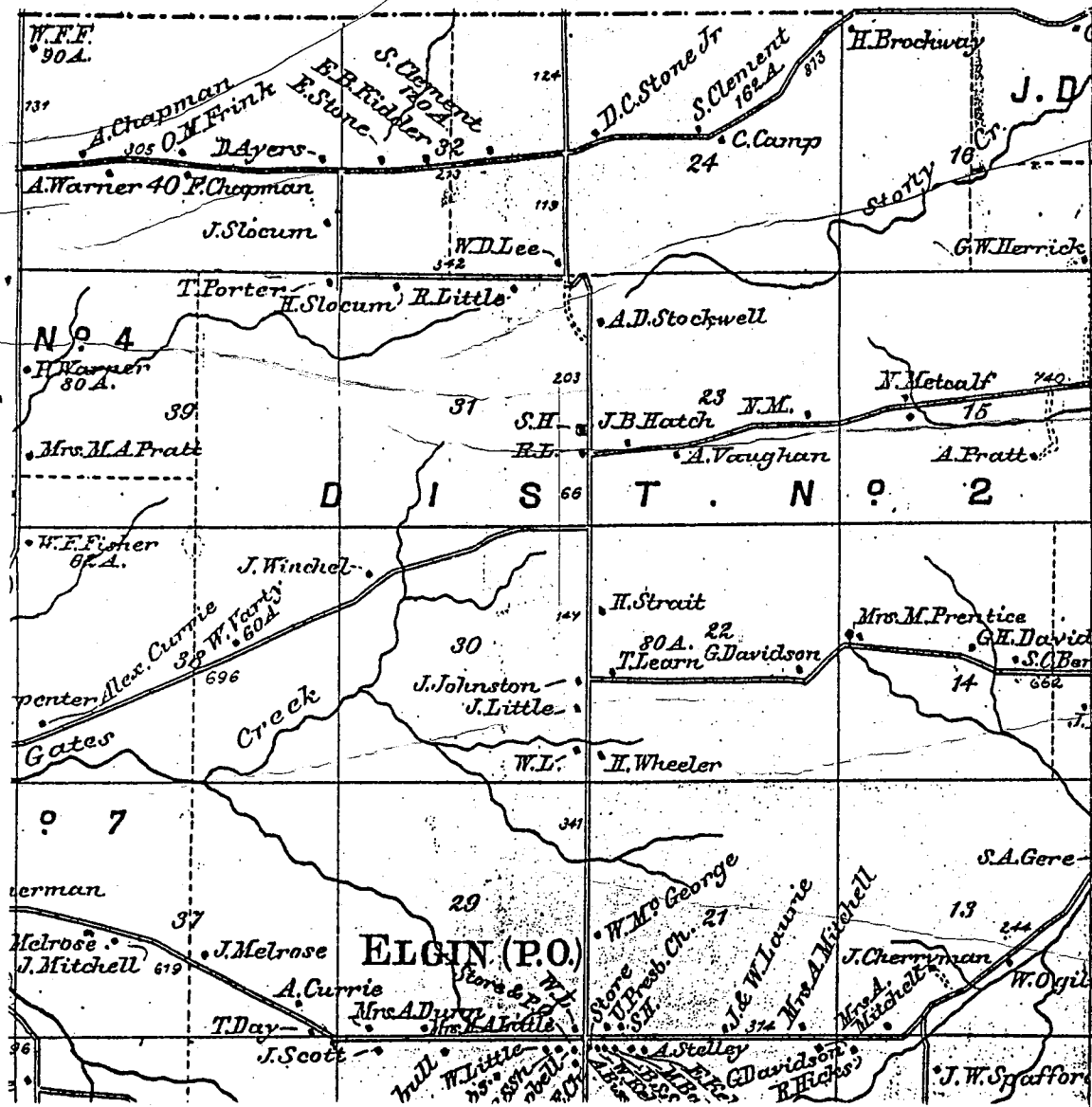


Fig. 17. Map of the northern part of the Town of Lyndon, Cattaraugus Co., NY (probably of the 1860's). The village of Elgin was apparently later referred to as Lyndon or Lyndon Center. The village no longer exists. Lyman B. and, later, Zephi B. Metcalf lived in the east part of Lot 31, two to three miles north of the crossroads in Elgin. They had 100 acres, or a little less than the east one-third of the lot. Lyman B. lived here in the 1840's, transferring the property to Zephi in 1847. Zephi's family probably had returned to Rushford as early as 1849, since a deed of August, 1849, gives their address as Rushford. In this deed, Zephi and Harriet sold one-fourth acre of their land (for \$500.00) to the trustees of the local school district, for purposes of constructing a school. The school is indicated as "S.H." on the map. Presumably their residence would have been at the place indicated by "R.L." About a mile to the east was the home of Nelson and Sophronia Porter Metcalf ("N. Metcalf"), cousin and sister, respectively, of Lyman B. and Eliza Porter Metcalf. Just to the northwest of the Metcalf property, the map indicates residences of some of the Slocum cousins of Harriet Gould Metcalf.

st part have hereunto

Elijah Metcalf  
Hannah Metcalf

Elijah Metcalf  
Hannah Metcalf

....., stated above, and, therefore, asks that his present pension, Certificate No. 66,710,  
may be increased on account of said new disability. That he further says nothing, except that he hereby authorizes and  
empowers MILO B. STEVENS & CO. of Wash. D. C......, to act as his attorneys in the prosecution  
of said claim.

Lyman B. Metcalf  
(Signature of Claimant.)

A. H. Damon  
Roxana Damon

William Fish  
Levi Metcalf

I further declare that I have no interest in said case, and am no  
concerned in its prosecution.

☒ If either affiant sign by X mark, two persons who write their names MUST sign here as witnesses thereto.

(Name of one witness X mark.)

Signature of  
Affiant, or of  
each Affiant.

Z. B. Metcalf



Signatures of various of the "Rushford Metcalfs." The  
upper two of Elijah and Hannah Metcalf, followed, below, by  
Lyman B. Metcalf, A.H. and Roxana Damon, Levi Metcalf, and Z.B.  
(=Zephi Brockett) Metcalf.

acquired a very elongate 35.75 acre tract in Lot 41, just north of Lot 48, and in Centerville Township (n in Fig. 15-5). Zephi was back practically within a stone's throw of his father's home again, if, as seems likely, he lived in plot m. In 1986, Elmer Metcalf showed me evidences of a homesite in the south central part of plot m, just north of the diagonal road (Fig. 14) and even better evidences of an old McFarlan homesite, just north of the same road in the acreage between plots o and m (Fig. 15-5). Zephi's family apparently had the McFarlans as close neighbors both times when they lived in Lot 48. Coincidentally, Elmer and I had been making hay that day with the help of a descendant of the McFarlans, Bryan Armison. Zephi and Harriet had moved back to Allegany Co. soon enough to be on the 1850 census (probably taken in June). Their children, Aminzo Demetrius and Ida Ellen, would have been born while they lived here (July 1851 and February 1853). They bought the property from Mr. Fish for \$800 and in December 1854 they sold it to Zephi's father, Rev. Elijah, for \$1,000, the last of their real estate transactions (t and u in Fig. 15-6) in New York. In summary, Zephi and Harriet are showing early signs of the restlessness that characterized their lives. I suppose that they departed for the West in the warmer months of 1854 or in the spring of 1855, as they are absent in the 1855 (June?) census. I wonder what Zephi's siblings thought about his inability to settle down, and whether the Rev. Elijah pondered the parable of the prodigal son as they departed westward?

\*\*\*\*\*

#### Religion

Books concerning Rushford indicate that considerable religiosity was maintained by the immediate descendants of Rev. Elijah. C.M. Damon (1908:246) wrote:

Those who remember Uncle John Worthington's fiery exhortations in the great revival of 1857-58, as he swung back and forth across the width of the church in front of the altar; the fervent testimonies of Levi Metcalf; the earnestness of Elijah [Junior], after he was reclaimed from years of backsliding.... Cornelia Metcalf and her brother Charles [English] both earnest

and spiritual, added much interest.

Cornelia English Metcalf, herself, elaborated on this theme in her "Recollections" article (1908:241), noting that "A revival spirit seemed always prevalent." In her youth (1840's), people drove into Rushford for a 11:00 a.m. service and stayed for another one around 1:00 p.m. The time between services "was used for class meeting, Sunday School and luncheon." Thus, things were still rather similar to what they had been in the New England Puritan/Congregational church services of earlier times. Cornelia further describes a class meeting (p. 243):

The class meeting at the noon hour was well attended. Each member was expected to tell present experience or how he had prospered during the past week. The leaders were very searching. Such questions as the following were frequently asked: Have you indulged in speaking evil of any person during the past week? Have you engaged in foolish conversation, jesting or joking, which is contrary to the Word of God? Have you given way to unholy tempers? Is so, have you repented and sought forgiveness?

Cornelia describes a Methodist preacher thus (p. 242):

His dress, like that of all Methodist ministers of his time, consisted of a clerical coat buttoned to the neck, and a vest likewise, a white kerchief about the neck, and a white hat. A Methodist preacher was known as far as he could be seen.

Indeed, it does seem as though they would stand out in any crowd. The photos of the Rev. Elijah Metcalf and his son, Levi, presented by Thomas (1910:167) show these white kerchiefs.

C.H. Damon (1908:244) describes a weekend during the time of the quarterly meetings of the Methodist Church, with sermons on Friday, Saturday and Sunday evenings plus Sunday morning. The quarterly meeting, itself, was on Saturday afternoon and a "love-feast" was held early Sunday morning. This latter was a time that featured scripture-reading, prayer, hymn-singing and testimonials. A token meal of bread and water was also consumed, and Damon notes (p. 245): "It was now high time for more enthusiastic singing, and we all began to feel good and 'get blessed'."

## Yearly Activities on Farms of the Rushford Metcalfs in the later 1800's

Fred Metcalf, son of Lyman B., I, kept a diary in the year 1872, making short entries up until mid-June for almost every day. After that, he gradually fizzled out, with the last entries being in August. Fred's cousin, Charles L. Metcalf, son of Levi kept diaries over a long number of years from the late 1880's to the early 1930's. For permission to inspect these diaries I am indebted to Mrs. Mary Lou Metcalf Burton for Fred's diary and to Ms. Ellen Harmon for various diaries of Charles Metcalf. In the following remarks I have utilized his diaries for 1888, 1890, and 1894.

In 1872 Fred (reaching the age of 17 in March) was living on the old Metcalf farm (farmhouse # 1 in Fig. 14). Charles, a young married man, lived close by in the old home of the Levi Metcalfs (farmhouse # 2 in Fig. 14). During this period of time, Levi died (1892). The diaries of Charles give excellent summaries of the yearly cycle, even though each daily item is very terse. They are, of course, the observations of a male, of a farmer, and do not tell us much about the female side of life on the farm. In a few instances I bring things up to the present with quotes from letters by Luella Veazey Metcalf, written in the 1980's, from the same farm as Fred lived on.

I'll start with late spring. That seems to have been an especially important time on the farms and seems always to be associated in the minds of people who lived there with sugaring, or the making of maple syrup. On Rev. Elijah's farm the making of maple sugar seems to be one of those activities that has endured as long as there has been a farm. A book concerning "sugaring" in nearby Cattaraugus and Chautauqua Counties, by Smith and Smith (1978), has been helpful here. In 1872, according to Fred, trees were tapped on 30 March and 2 April and sap was gathered and boiled between 3 and 24 April. Charles indicates that tapping began on 27 March in 1888 and on 12 March in 1890. He brought in the buckets, indicating end of the season, a month later, on 27 April 1888 and 14 April 1890. There

was probably still snow enough then that they could go up with the bobsled into the sugarbush and visit several hundred trees a day to gather sap. The sap would have dripped through wooden spouts into wooden pails and was dumped into a wooden tub on the bobsled. Sap was then transported to the boiling area. Fred does not mention a sugar house but does record drawing (=hauling) wood to the "boiling place" on two occasions. At that time they probably boiled sap in large cast-iron kettles over an open wood fire, outside. According to Smith and Smith (1978), the use of stove-like "arches" upon which were placed flat, shallow tin or galvanized boiling pans was not introduced until the later 1800's. Charles had a sugar house that he sometimes drewed (hauled) wood to and which he spent several days working on (hanging a door, etc.) in 1890. Fred notes that they "shugured off" on 5 and 11 April; that is, the syrup was converted on to maple sugar. There must have been a great deal of sugaring off, indeed, in the 1850's to produce the 500 to 800 lbs. of maple sugar indicated in Table 1 for the various farms involved. Fred notes that the sap-gathering buckets were brought in on 25 April after which there was, I suppose, the laborious task of washing them.

The production of maple syrup still continues on the old Metcalf farm. On 22 March 1981, Luella Metcalf writes:

Elmer has just come down from the woods, he went up to see if the sap is running and if it is he and Lynn will have to gather tomorrow. They have 200 buckets hung and we have made about 8 gal. of syrup. It has been too cold for sap to run much.

On 21 March 1982, Luella writes:

Our neighbor Lynn whom you met, still helps us as they still have their horses here. He and his oldest boy and a friend of Lynn's tapped 139 trees Sat. or hung that many buckets in p.m. The snow is still rather deep in the woods. Elmer drove the team on the sleigh with buckets, covers and spouts while they did the work. This p.m. they gathered one tub of sap and said if it had not been raining and then snowing they would have gathered another tub full. Danny came up this p.m. and helped Lynn and his middle boy today while Elmer drove the horses. So I boiled some of it in but the wind blew the top two sections of the smokestack nearly off so I

quit.... At least I got off 3 batches of syrup probably 4 or 4 1/2 gal. It sure smelled good! We are boiling Tom and Judy Morris's sap this year too so boiled that in early this morning as he brought up a tank last night and one the night before and Judy brought up 65 gal. tonight that makes 295 gal. of their sap. This last week I was busy boiling sap Mon. through Thurs.--then it rained and turned cold-- only 10 degrees above zero Sat. and today.

Very late (by Kansas standards), the ground was made ready for planting oats (for the horses) and some wheat, barley (good for calves), corn and maybe some buckwheat and field peas. Fred wrote that he plowed at various times (13 entries) between 23 April and 7 June. He also notes that he often "draged" (i.e., harrowed or worked down the soil with a drag harrow) after plowing. Charles, on the other hand, seems to have done more plowing in the autumn.

Luella writes (4 Oct 1987) in answer to a query as to when plowing is or was done:

Mostly in the fall if not too wet. It depends on the weather. Sometimes the ground gets too saturated to try plowing in the fall so it has to be done in the spring. But fall plowing works better on this land. That way, spring planting can get done sooner.

A variety of techniques were available for planting small grains, ranging from simple broadcasting by hand, to using hand-cranked portable broadcasters to the more sophisticated employment of horse-drawn drills that planted numerous rows of oats, wheat or barley all at the same time. When Fred "sowed wheat" on 6 May 1872, I suppose it was by hand or hand-powered broadcaster. By 1888, Charles seems to have had a drill, but utilized both techniques. Thus, on 3 May he "Draged sowed wheat and some oats. Drilled." and on 11 May he "Draged sowed and drilled 4 acres of oats." It is probable that the oats, which had been hand-sown would have been dragged with a drag-harrow to cover them. Drilled oats wouldn't have been dragged. Charles also mentions on 26 April that he "Rolled the wheat."

Luella (4 Oct 1987): There is a piece of equipment named "roller," it was used to go over a piece of oats or wheat to make it smooth after planting (and push the

stones down) and especially after grass seed is sown with either oats or wheat. Years ago rollers were made of wood, (later iron).

In 1888 Charles planted spring wheat on 26 and 28 April and oats off and on between 30 April and 15 May. Charles also planted a half acre of field-peas on 15 May 1888. Potatoes were planted on 17 and 18 May and 6 June in 1888 and on 29 April and 8 and 13 May in 1890. Right after potatoes went in the ground, it was time to do the same for corn, which was planted on 22 and 23 May in 1888, but not until 3 June in 1890. Barley was also planted late: 1 June in 1888 and 3 June in 1890. Still later, Charles planted some buckwheat on 25 June 1888. Charles notes that they "made garden" on 13 May 1890, his only allusion to gardening, probably not a major masculine concern. On 6 May Fred "sowed wheat," on 16 May he planted potatoes, and on 1 June he writes that he "sowed peas and oats and planted." On other occasions, in May, he merely notes that he "planted."

So, one could conveniently characterize the period from late April to late June as "planting time." Late in June, Charles mentions hoeing corn and potatoes and in early July there are several references to "Parisgreening" the potatoes. Paris green was an insecticide of arsenic and copper-based compounds used to kill Colorado potato beetles. When planting, hoeing, Parisgreening, and a little cultivating of the cornpatch was over, a major change was imminent. It was time to think about haying.

As with their farmer cousins in Kansas, the Fourth of July seems to have been a signal for the beginning of haytime. Thus, in Charles' diaries we find mowing beginning on an early 30 June in 1890 and on 4 July in 1888, when the family did not go to a Fourth of July celebration. In 1894 there was a trial run of the mowing machine on 3 July, when it "did not work good," interrupted by observance of the 4th in the village of Houghton, and with haying getting under way in earnest on 5 July. This involved mowing, raking into windrows, loading onto wagons, and "drawing" the hay by wagons to the barns. Hay was lifted into

and stored in the hayloft of the massive barns that are so characteristic of Allegany County, even now. An excess might have been placed in a "pole barn" and if there was still more hay, in a very good year, a haystack might be built. On 1 August 1894, late in the season, Charles notes that they "commenced to build stack." I suppose that even by 1872 mowing machines were being employed, although earlier in the century cutting was by scythe--surely time-consuming, laborious work. Haymaking continues on to the present on the old Metcalf farm, still making a major phase in the year's cycle. In a letter of 6 July 1982, Luella Metcalf writes:

We are haying and it goes rather slow. We have had quite a lot of rainy weather and not much help till yesterday. We are promised a fellow tomorrow p.m. if it doesn't rain. There is a field of clover down so we hope it will be cured by tomorrow p.m.

Luella is referring, here, to hay being put up by her husband, Elmer, Fred's grandson. Elmer (almost 84) was still making hay when I was there in 1987. He once quoted Fred's advice about haymaking: "You can't get it up if you don't knock it down."

Early in August, haying would finally be terminated. Charles notes this as being on 3 August 1888, 9 August 1890, and 4 August 1894. On two of these dates, he went into Rushford village in the evening, perhaps to celebrate the occasion (although in a decorous way, I'm sure). It would seem that one did deserve to draw a breath or two before beginning the next major phase, mainly involved with harvesting. Oats, wheat, and barley were harvested first. On 14 and 17 August, Fred notes that he "bound oats and drewed in." The 1888-1894 period may have been a time when a transition was being made from cutting (mowing?) and then binding by hand to the use of mechanical binders (reapers) that accomplished both operations. In binding by hand, the binders came behind the cutter (in earlier times a cradle, but probably a mowing machine by 1872) and made small bundles by adroitly twisting strands of grainstalks around the bundle and tucking the ends in, so as to secure the bundle. In

1888, Charles notes that on 7 August "Frank cut some oats. Hosea helped bind and Fred." as though some binding was still being done by hand. However, on 9 August he stipulates: "Charles Metcalf cut my oats with binder." I can't be sure, but I suspect that Charles, who elsewhere does not refer to himself in the third person, is probably bragging just a bit about having acquired a binder. This would have greatly speeded the harvesting process for small grains and on the following day we note: "Finished cutting my oats this forenoon." In this same August, he cut wheat on the 14th and 16th and barley on the 14th and 17th. Perhaps Charles' binder developed problems. At least, he notes on 9 August 1894 that he "Cut oats, had Fred's binder." Later, on 10 and 11 August, he "mowed oats," but does not indicate whether these oats were then bound by hand or whether they were stacked like hay. After mowing oats on 11 August he went to the village, it being a Saturday night and a natural time for farmers from the area to gather, as they commonly did in small-town America in that era and even into my own. I can almost hear the farmers talking about the stage of their harvesting activities and how productive they thought the crop would be.

After small grains were bound, shocked and sufficiently dried out they were "drawed" to a suitable location and stacked (heads of bundles in, and butts out I suppose) to await threshing.

Luella writes (4 Oct 1987): Oats and wheat were shocked before loading on a wagon so they could dry out or cure for the threshing, if not dry they do not thresh off the stalks or stems. When dry then loaded on wagons and drawn, sometimes they are taken near the barn and stacked, or stored in the barn or shed waiting for the threshing machine to come.

Drawing-in must have been a time-consuming process, as it is recorded for seven days in August and September, 1888. Threshing of small grains did not take place until the last of September or first of October. As diary entries indicate that several days were involved with threshing, I suppose that several neighbors collaborated and helped each other as a "threshing crew." After

5 October 1888, Charles enumerated his harvest results after threshing. He records 337 and 478 bushels of oats, the first number preceded by "I had," which I take to refer to oats from his own, personal acreage. The second number, then, may refer to oats from Levi's farm. He also records the following bushels for other grains: winter wheat, 48; spring wheat, 24; and barley, 45. In 1890 he garnered the following numbers of bushels: oats, 128; wheat 27; barley, 24; buckwheat, 12; and peas, 4.

Corn was cut on 5, 7, 20, and 21 September in 1888, in which year it was husked on 29 and 31 October and 2 and 7 November. In the fall, and at other times, as well, corn, wheat, and buckwheat would be taken to the grist mill in East Rushford to be ground and provide flour and meal. Potatoes would be dug at various times between mid-September and mid-October: between 24 September and 27 October in 1888 and between 18 September and 16 October in 1890. Apples were gathered on 20 and 24 October in 1888 and on 11 and 13 October in 1890. In Table 1, we note that on Rev. Elijah's farm, in 1855, some cider was produced from apples and perhaps this custom persisted into the later part of the century. Blackberries and raspberries ripened in August and might last up until Labor Day. They are still picked today. On 10 August 1980, Luella Metcalf writes: "I have been picking red and black raspberries and freezing what we didn't eat." and "Blackberries are starting to ripen so I'll be going up in the woods after some."

In general, then, harvesting and gathering activities lasted from early August to late October, involving grains, potatoes, fruits and, no doubt, garden vegetables as well, which Fred and Charles do not mention.

Part of the wheat harvested was winter wheat and part was spring wheat. The ground was plowed and harrowed in September for the next crop of winter wheat. An acre and a half of winter wheat was planted on 8 and 28 September 1890 and 1 1/4 acres on 1 September 1894. Later in the autumn, more plowing was under way on the Levi/Charles farms, this to prepare for the following spring planting. In 1888, Charles plowed on 30 October and on 12

to 15 November and in 1890 he plowed on 28 October and on 12-15 and 26 November.

I asked Luella Metcalf for more information about how the various crops, mentioned above, were utilized. Her responses, in a letter of 4 Oct 1987 are as follows:

Oats: Still are fed to our horses, but years ago & even since we were married, the oats and corn were ground at the mill & mixed with protein, minerals and salt for cow feed. Also don't forget the old favorite "oat meal" for breakfast.

Wheat:...ground at the grist mill and used for human consumption, and also used with oats and cracked corn for hens. Wheat bran was made for cow & calf feed too, and middlings, like very fine brown flour, for calves & hogs.

Corn: Kernels of corn were ground very coarse and called cracked corn (see above, under wheat).

Barley: Barley was, & I guess might still be, ground for hogs or calves also with other grains for cow feed & horse feed. My Dad used to plant oats, barley & buckwheat together for a mixed feed for hens & then have some ground for the cattle & horses. He used to think the three kinds used to help hold each other up if weather was rather wet before harvest time so it would not lodge so bad he could not get it.

Field or cow peas: They were fed to the cows.

During November or December hogs were butchered. Two were butchered at a time on 20 and 28 October 1888 and on 20 November 1890. Of those butchered on 31 November 1894 it is noted that they "took two to village."

Despite the prolonged harvesting activities, it does not appear that Thanksgiving was much of a holiday. Charles mentions it once in the three years covered (27 Nov 1890): "Thanksgiving. Father plowed. I worked most all day. Cold." By contrast, Christmas was observed, although there is no evidence of it looming large in Charles' mind. He merely notes for 25 December:

1888. "Went to Belfast to Uncle Charleys". This would have been Charles English, Cornelia's brother.

1890. "Went down to Charley Gordons. Had a good time.

1894. "Went to Houghton this morning."

On 31 December 1888 and 1894, Charles records going to a "watch meeting."

Of course, even in winter there was plenty of work to do. Cattle and horses were kept in the large barns during the cold months and had to be fed and the manure removed and returned to the fields and meadows to enhance their fertility. Another important winter activity was the gathering of wood. Judging by Fred's diary, there was a lot of wood-gathering and lumbering going on in 1872. He mentions that he "drew wood" numerous times and on six days between 21 and 27 March he wrote "We went a lumbering" or "We went a logging." A photo of later years shows Fred with some logs that are loaded on sled runners in readiness to be taken to the sawmill. There is frequent reference to drawing wood in the diaries of Charles, as well. Apparently Levi and Charles sold wood to others, on occasion, as they mention drawing wood to other homes. No doubt the paraphernalia needed in the upcoming sugaring operation were gotten ready and repaired in winter.

Zephi and Harriet had seven sheep in 1850 and produced 21 pounds of wool, so there surely must have been a spinning wheel in their home and it is likely that Metcalf women of that time did considerable spinning and knitting in the winter months. This practice must have continued on into the 1870's, at least, because we note in the letter quoted above, written in December, 1875, by Fred's brother, Elijah E., that he asked his mother to bring him some wool mittens or the yarn to knit them with.

Thus, we finish the annual cycle, from an agricultural point of view. In summary, it seems as though the farm year of Charles and Fred could reasonably be divided into five rather distinct phases: (1) sugaring; (2) planting; (3) haying; (4) harvesting; and (5) winter tasks. These are, of course, superimposed on the more routine tasks, which Fred refers to as "chores." These were, after all, dairy farms and milking and the handling and production of milk products were ever with them. On the

Levi/Charles farm, I gather that a good deal of this was done by hired help. In February 1888, Charles hired a boy for \$6.00 per month and on 17 December 1894 he records: "Will Butisfort commenced work for 1 year for \$180." On 23 November 1888, poor Charles laments: "Done the chores. Our folks went to Houghton. I am alone. Milk 25 cows."

Despite the cycle of farm tasks, it appears that Charles and Fred had time for some other activities. Fred went to a Swiss bell concert in January and to another concert in July. He went to an oyster supper once and mentions going fishing on 4 June. He was going to school from the time the diary began, on 1 January, until 20 February. Then, on 14 August, he is back in school again. His usual entry for school days was "went to school had my lessons."

Charles went to town meetings, to the Cheese Meeting (held in March), and to "Farmer's Meeting." On 26 October 1888 he notes: "Went to Belfast to Democrat meeting. Had a good time." and on 2 November: "Went to Republican Meeting tonight." He makes several comments about the outcome of national elections. On 26 September 1888 he mentions going to Franklinville to the fair where he heard the governor speak. And, on the lighter side, he sometimes went to baseball games, which he called "ball plays." Rushford played other, nearby villages and he records the score. Also, the sporting types along Brookside Road seem to have had their own baseball team, at least in 1894.

Occasionally the family went to a lecture, to a picnic, once to a circus and on 5 October 1894 Charles and "Nell" Metcalf went with Mary and Wilson Robbins to hear the "Silver Lake Quartet." On 14 July 1894 Charles records that they made ice cream.

Religious affairs loom fairly large in both diaries. An entry from Fred's diary of 7 January may reflect a typical Sunday of the Rushford Metcalfs in the 1870's: "I went to meetting in the morning and went down to Uncle Levi and went to meetting in the evening it was a very cold day." More often he merely wrote: "Went to meetting twice" on Sundays. He records

that on 25 January his parents, Lyman B., I, and Eliza, plus his uncle Elijah, Jr., went to Allegany, Cattaraugus Co., where they remained until 30 January. There was a Free Methodist church in Allegany and it seems almost certain that they were attending a revival or some kind of church meeting there. While they were gone, Fred spent the nights at the home of "Ant Slomy" (=Salome Gordon Metcalf, Elijah, Jr.'s wife). Fred, himself, attended a Free Methodist revival held in Rushford in February and March, where he "got blessed."

Charles makes frequent mention of his parents, Levi and Cornelia, being gone for several days and sometimes notes specifically that they had gone to camp meetings, etc. of their church. Charles and Nell (as he calls her in the diaries) also went to regular Sunday meetings of the church, to quarterly meetings, to temperance meetings, and, on occasion, to what are referred to as a "camp meeting" or "tent meeting." On 18 August 1894 he writes: "Finished drawing grain. Nell and I went to the Delevan Camp Meeting. Mother and Myrtie went with Wilson. We stayed at Charlie Persons. Nelia and Edd are to camp meeting." Thus, during an "August lull" the family goes to Delevan, a village some 15 miles northwest of Rushford village. Levi has died, but Cornelia attends, riding with her granddaughter, Myrtie, and son-in-law, Wilson Robbins. Mary Robbins died the following year, so may already have suffered some health problem and didn't go. We also learn that Nelia and Edward Dietrich are apparently still living not too far away from Delevan and not yet in Syracuse. Isn't it amazing how much one can extract from such a simple diary entry!

### A Visit to Rushford

I was informed by Marie Buck Metcalf in 1979 (when she was a jaunty 100 years old) that she had corresponded with Elmer and Luella Metcalf of Rushford and she suggested that I should visit them. I was first able to do this in June 1980. So far as I knew, I was the first descendant of Zephi and Harriet to return to Rushford but perhaps others have, of whom I am not aware.

I came up towards Rushford from the south over country roads with few road signs. Once or twice I had to stop and ask the way. Then I saw a sign announcing the border of the Town of Rushford. But I saw no "town." I didn't know yet that "town" in New York and the New England states meant township, as used in the West, and that what I called a "town" would be a "village."

Such a bonny Sunday afternoon it was. The country here is in the Allegany Mountains, sturdy hills with gentle slopes and broad intervening valleys. The road twisted amongst the small farms with their meadows and pastures and with woodlots and sugarbush back towards the hills. It seemed that generation upon generation must have maintained and manicured these farms. Some of the less God-fearing were out putting up hay. I came to a rubbly stream, its pools reflecting the summer clouds, and beyond it was Rushford village. Sunday afternoon peace reigned in Rushford. There were chairs on the high school lawn for a graduation ceremony. Some residents at an outdoor family gathering directed me to the Metcalf farm, a few miles northwest of the village and thus I arrived at the Elmer Metcalf residence where large letters on a red barn announced the fact. However, the Metcalfs were in town at the graduation ceremony so I amused myself by making the first of several bird-watching sorties along Brookside Road, which runs along the east side of the farm and leads northward to Centerville. Presently the Metcalfs arrived home and bade me welcome. Their minister came by, which seemed appropriate for the ancestral home of the Rev. Elijah (even though this minister was Baptist) and there were evening chores to be done, a good initiation to any farm.

## Metcalfs Of Rushford Honored On Anniversary

RUSHFORD — Mr. and Mrs. Elmer L. Metcalf were guests of honor at a reception Sunday afternoon to celebrate their 45th Wedding Anniversary. The open house, hosted by Mr. and Mrs. Daniel Metcalf and Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Morris, was held at the Bible House on Lower Street in Rushford.

The table, decorated with floral arrangements and earlier pictures of the couple, featured a tiered wedding cake made by Mrs. Clarice Furniss.

Mr. Metcalf and the former Luella Veasey of Centerville were married at the home of the bride's parents on Dec. 22, 1928, with the late Rev. Frank L. Smith, pastor of the Rushford Baptist Church, officiating.

Their attendants were Harmon Veasey, brother of the bride, and Miss Agnes Veasey, a cousin of the bride. Mrs. Metcalf taught school in the Elliott District in Centerville and in Meadowview District 5 of Rushford for three years following the marriage.

The couple have lived on the Metcalf Farm on Brookside Road, Houghton RD, all of their married life, except the first six months when they lived in the village of Rushford. The home has been in the Metcalf family for over 100 years, with Mr. Metcalf living there since a young teenager, taking over the farm management from his grandfather. Mr. Metcalf served as a star route mail

carrier between Rushford and Caneadea for three years during the late 1920s. His main interests, in addition to farming, are lumbering and horses.

Mrs. Metcalf has "never had time to pursue any hobbies" but has many general interests. She has always taken an active part in church activities and has taught Sunday school and released time classes in religious instruction for "longer than I can remember." Both Mr. and Mrs. Metcalf have been members of the Rushford Baptist Church since before their marriage. She was appointed Town Clerk of Rushford following the death of Howard Cline in December of 1971. She was later elected to fill the term, which will expire December 31.

Elmer Metcalf is son of Lyman B., II, grandson of Fred Lyman and great-grandson of Lyman B. Metcalf, I. At this time he lived on the ancestral farm where the Rev. Elijah Metcalf settled in Rushford.



1973

(Photo by Jewell)

Mr. and Mrs. Elmer L. Metcalf

Although far past the conventional age of retirement, Elmer still worked the farm. He no longer maintained a dairy herd, as he had for many years, but he still kept two teams of Belgian horses, a bay and a chestnut team. These were huge, magnificent animals. Elmer liked to harness them up and use them, whenever possible, around the farm and during local celebrations in Rushford. There is a photo showing his first participation in a Rushford Labor Day parade, in 1923. He especially enjoyed having one of his teams pulling the bandwagon. Luella is a former school teacher and clerk of Rushford Twp. Elmer and Luella celebrated their 60th wedding anniversary in 1988. Luella's maternal grandfather was also a Metcalf (Millard) but from a different branch of the family (via Michael-2. etc.).

I thought the farm was a delightful place but then I didn't have to do any work. Instead, as one long midsummer morning was getting organized, I walked west up the country lane, which had been a road in the Rev. Elijah's time, and which surely must have led up to the houses occupied by Zephi and Harriet when they lived in the northern and northwestern parts of Lot 48. The lane was lined with blooming blackberries, with wild apple trees and with columns of beech, hickory and sugar maple--and there were more birds to see. The lane leads uphill to a meadow of red and white clover, alfalfa, timothy, orchard grass and birdsfoot (a yellow-flowered legume). It was spangled with white daisies and buttercups. These meadows are productive and may yield three cuttings per year. They have been generously fertilized over the years with manure from the cattle and horses, kept inside barns during the long, cold winters. At this time, in fact, hay was being baled by Elmer's grandson, John Metcalf, and several others. Rectangular bales were made and conveyed up into the ample hayloft of the red barn by endless belt elevator. This barn is relatively new, an older one having burned some years ago. It was designed for a dairy herd and dairying has been a principal activity on the farm during most of its 150+ years of existence.

The old Metcalf house is a large and sturdy structure like most old farm homes in the area. It possesses two stories to the east and a single story on the west. This west part of the house is, according to Elmer, older, with the east part added later. The older, west part probably dates back to Rev. Elijah's time or, perhaps, even a bit earlier, since Elijah bought the farm from a Daniel Ely in 1832 (Thomas, 1910:168). A map of 1857 clearly shows a house on this spot. In the west part of the house, floors are of ancient boards, varying in width from about 9 to 14 inches. They have become wavy underfoot. There is a massive wood heater in the kitchen, which is the center of operations as on many a good farm. The Metcalfs burn lots of wood in the long, cold winters. They recounted one memorable night, long ago, when it reached 50 degrees below zero, F.

Luella Metcalf had a garden just east of the house. Here the woodchuck came, as we sat down to supper one evening, and it began to devour a row of peas. Woodchucks were a novelty for me but they were very common on the farm that year. I was enlisted to shoot this one but whenever I appeared with the gun it disappeared so I didn't have to demonstrate my poor marksmanship and, maybe, shoot a cow on the old Charles L. Metcalf farm (# 2 in Fig. 14) nearby. The Metcalfs were hoping, barring too much nibbling by woodchucks, for new potatoes and peas for the Fourth of July.

The garden and the fields seemed very stony to me. Such stony fields are typical of the area. An early resident of Rushford (Wilson, 1910:371) wrote: "I chopped wood, picked up stones in the meadows, for Rushford was a stony place and scythes would easily dull...." I wonder if the Rev. Elijah ever used the parable about stony fields in his sermons? It seems that it might have come readily to mind in Rushford.

The environs of the brook, down alongside Brookside Road, east of the house, was a place I liked to explore. Actually, the Metcalfs called it a "crick," just as would their relatives in Kansas. There were schools of stonerollers (fish) in the pools and darters that quickly hid under rocks. Big glossy amber

snails came out onto the cool flat stones along the brook in the evening.

If one follows Brookside Road north towards Centerville, as I did one day (a road over which Zephi and Harriet must have travelled very often) the crick is on the east and another meadow on the west. Just before Brookside Road crosses the crick there is a rough road veering off to the northwest, called "Dugway Road" by the Metcalfs, as it is dug into the hillside. Dugway road led me into the Metcalf woods, over 100 acres of it. Here are the sugar maples that have been producing a staple of the Metcalf economy on the farm since it was settled. There is also some lumbering of hickory, ash and oak. Oak is used for planking in the stables and "ash bolts" are cut and sold in Ellicottville, Cattaraugus Co., to be made into baseball bats. There is some aspen or "poppel," pine and hemlock. It was a quiet place. I stopped for awhile listening to a lonely sounding Peewee and a distant crow. Then, out of the corner of my eye, I noticed that someone was watching me: a Whitetail, silky and chocolate-colored. The Metcalfs say there are also wild turkey, ruffed grouse and partridge in the woods.

One evening Luella gave me a guided tour about Centerville Twp and village. Around Centerville there are fine vistas of the green hills of the Alleganys. Luella's girlhood home was here, not far from that of Harriet Gould. To attend high school, Luella drove (in good weather) a horse and buggy down Brookside Road, past the Metcalf farm, picking up Elmer's sister and continuing on to Rushford. It was thus that she became acquainted with Elmer.

On my last night on the farm (on that visit) I sat alone in the old, old house of the Rushford Metcalfs. The Elmer Metcalfs had gone out and kindly left me to commune with the spirits of my ancestors. Unfortunately, they weren't inclined to communicate with me, although I did wish the walls could speak or that some gossipy spirit would emerge to explain things that puzzled me.

The following morning, before leaving Rushford, I paid a final visit to the graves of Rev. Elijah and Hannah in Rushford village. Wild strawberries were fruiting on the gravesite. I picked one and ate it--and departed.

CHAPTER 7  
RELATIVES OF HARRIET GOULD METCALF

The most frequent genealogical question that I have been asked by descendants of Harriet Gould Metcalf is "How are we related to Jay Gould"? I think I should make it clear at the outset that I cannot answer that question, just to save someone the trouble of having to look vainly in this chapter for such information.

As was indicated in the preceding chapter, Harriet Gould's family lived in the Town of Centerville, directly north of the Town of Rushford. Her father was Michael (also spelled Mica and Micah) P. Gould and her mother was Sarah Slocum Gould. The 1855 state census for Allegany Co. indicates that Harriet's sister, Mary Elizabeth, was born in Herkimer Co. and that she had lived in Centerville Town for 13 years. Harriet's mother, Sarah, on the other hand, is indicated as living in Allegany Co. for 16 years. Thus, it seems likely that the Michael Gould family had moved from Herkimer to Allegany Co. in the period 1839 to 1842, or a bit later than the Elijah Metcalf family, which made the move in 1832. Both Harriet and Zephi seem to have been born in Herkimer Co., or nearby (county boundaries were still fluid at that time), and made their first journey westward when rather young.

Michael Gould bought a 50-acre property (Fig. 16) a short distance southwest of the village of Centerville, with indenture dated 1842. The west side of the property began 0.126 mi. east of the west boundary of Lot 42 (T. 6, R. 2, Tract HC) and extended the full length of the lot, north-south. Thus, the tract was quite long and slender, a bit over 0.1 mile wide and 0.875 mi. long. The dwelling was located, I believe, in about the center of the tract. There is no house there now, but a small, tin-roofed building that I noted there in 1984 (from a distance) may be near the site of the Gould house.

In 1847 Michael sold his property to his son, Isaac. However, in the 1850 census, Michael is indicated as still

farming 50 acres in Centerville Township and he and Isaac are in the same household. They had only two horses and three cows--not much for a family of nine, and their assets were really very modest (see Table 1 on page 90). In 1850, Michael's daughter and son-in-law, Abigail and Dilworth Shepherd (Sheppard), and their two-year-old daughter were also living in the same domicile. Dilworth is listed as a mason by occupation. Michael and Sarah's daughter, Mary Elizabeth (age 22), and her husband, Jerome Pell, are living with Jerome's father (Orrin Pell, 55) probably just southwest of Centerville village. Daughter and son-in-law, Louisa and George R. Clark, are living in Centerville with George indicated as working on wagons, sleighs, etc.

I believe that Michael must have died in Centerville between 1850 and 1852. It would help this hypothesis, however, if his grave could be located there. However, Mrs. Lois Fiegl, Town Historian, who has good records of the cemeteries, has no listing for him. There are, of course, many graves of that vintage which are lacking tombstones or which have illegible inscriptions. In May, 1852, Isaac and Sarah, his mother, sold the north 30 acres of their property to Levi B. Chase. In 1855, they sold the remaining south 20 acres to William I. Van Slyke. The 1855 State Census also shows Sarah "Gold" and her youngest daughter, Sarepta (12 years old), living with Jerome and Mary Pell, along with two Pell children. George and Louisa Clark are still in Centerville, at this time--he listed as a "wheelwright." Slocum (1882:109) indicates that the Clarks later lived in Rochester, NY. In the 1860 Centerville census there is no trace of any of Michael and Sarah Gould's family. Levi B. Chase seems to be living on their old farm, as is indicated in an old atlas of 1869, available in the Allegany County Clerk's archives in Belmont. All in all, then, the Goulds did not leave much of an imprint in Centerville, apparently living there for less than 20 years. If you go looking for Gould ancestors there, you will probably not find much, unless you have better luck than I did.

Slocum (1882:109) states that "Sarah, married Michael P. Gould and removed to Iowa" and also notes that Isaac "died in the

West." At least six of the Gould siblings did move westward, and, as indicated above, it seems likely that Sarah went with them. The six that are known to have gone west are: Isaac, Harriet, Mary Elizabeth, Philip, Roswell, and Joseph (Isaac included only on the basis of the information from Slocum). The Pells apparently moved to Iowa, as Mary Elizabeth was living in Greene, Butler Co., at time of the 1900 census, with her daughter, Lilian, and her brother and sister-in-law, Roswell and Ida Gould. Mary Elizabeth seems to have had a custom of taking in those who needed a home, as her mother and sister were living with her in 1855. It seems likely that mother, Sarah, went west with the Pells.

Two of the Gould sons, Philip W. and Joseph W., became Methodist ministers and both seem to have spent most of their ministerial careers in Iowa. Photos of both are provided in History of the Upper Iowa Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church (Fellows, 1907: Plates).

Rev. Philip W. Gould left New York some time between 1865 and 1878, judging by the time and place of birth of his children. In 1880 he was at Ridgeway, Winneshiek Co., Iowa. He is listed in Fellows (1907:168) as having died 11 December 1900 at age 68. He had 46 years in the ministry, having entered in 1854. His son, Philip W., was living at Clear Lake, Iowa, in 1900. Some other descendants are shown in the genealogical listing, hereafter.

Rev. Joseph W. Gould was born in 1836 in Boonville, in Oneida Co., NY (near Herkimer Co.--showing that the family had not yet migrated to Allegany Co. then). He married Mary Totten in Warrens Corners, NY, in 1858, and she died a decade later in Rockford, Floyd Co., IA. They had four children. Their third child, Herbert, was born and died in 1867. Their fourth child, Florence, was born in June 1868 and her mother, Mary, died in December 1868. Joseph remarried, to Alice Knapp, in May 1869, and little Florence died in September of that year. Joseph and Alice also had four children.

Joseph was already in Iowa by 1866 and seems early to have

established a special relationship with the small town of Nora Springs, a few miles east of Mason City. Thus, in a booklet produced by the Nora Springs Historical Committee (1975:80) we read:

During the year of 1866 the Rev. Joseph W. Gould was seen crossing the prairie from Mason City to Nora Springs on foot. He was cordially welcomed by "Father Forks," who lived at Rock Grove, south of Nora Springs.

The school house on the farm was opened at once to Rev. Gould where he preached the gospel and soon organized a Methodist class meeting. His daughter, Mrs. E.L. Bitterman (Imogene), has been a most faithful member of our present congregation.

A remarkable revival followed in the winter of 1867-68. A "watch-night" service was held and seventy of the converts were added as members to the Methodist Episcopal Church. About this time, Nora Springs began to assume the proportions of a village and Rev. Gould preached in an upper room somewhere in what has been called "old town" near the old mill. According to Methodist rules and usage, a class was organized August 27, 1867.

However, Rev. Joseph was not the first official pastor in Nora Springs, when the Methodist Church was formally organized there in 1876. From the birthplace of his children, it appears that he ministered at various places in northeastern Iowa, including at least Rockford, Floyd Co. (1867-1868), Shellrock, Butler Co., (1871), and Marble Rock (1873). However, the family seems to have been back in Nora Springs by 1881, as daughters were born there in 1881 and 1885. A communication from Miss Cicelia Volkman of Nora Springs (in litt., 10 Dec 1985) informs us:

Rev. Joseph W. Gould and wife, Alice Knapp Gould had three daughters--Imogene, Beulah and Mable.

Rev. Joseph W. Gould died in 1922, age almost 87. His wife, Alice Knapp Gould died in 1929, age 78 years. They are buried in Nora Springs Park Cemetery.

Imogene married Ed Bitterman Dec. 12, 1895, and they lived on a farm 4.5 miles west of Nora Springs. They were members of the Methodist Church. Imogene and Ed Bitterman had two daughters, Marjorie and Beulah.

Beulah Gould, Joseph Gould's daughter was born April 24, 1881 and died Feb. 6, 1948. She was employed in the First State Bank in Nora Springs for 26 years beginning in 1921. She and her sister Mable lived together in a new house which they had built. They were members of the Methodist Church.

Mable Gould, Rev. Gould's daughter, died October 6, 1953, age 68 nearly 69. She taught school in Nora Springs, mostly third grade, for 37 years.

I was able to contact Imogene Gould Bitterman's daughter, Mrs. Beulah Bitterman Gerren, and her great-granddaughter, Mrs. Roberta Hewett Boehlje, in 1986. They, together with Miss Cicelia Volkman of Nora Springs, supplied most of the information pertaining to Rev. Joseph W. Gould and his family, which is included in the genealogical listing below. Much of this information was extracted from a family Bible by Mrs. Boehlje. I have no further information concerning the remaining siblings of Harriet Gould, aside from what is shown below. I do not know whether they all remained in New York state or whether some also moved west.

#### SOME DESCENDANTS OF MICHAEL P. AND SARAH SLOCUM GOULD

1. Louise Gould, b. ca. 1820 in Herkimer Co., NY, m. George R. Clark, a wheelwright, b. ca. 1823. Later they lived in Rochester, New York.
  - a. Edith A. Clark; b. ca. 1843 in Centerville, NY.
  - b. Olive R. Clark; b. ca. 1845 in Centerville, NY.
  - c. Anna M. Clark; b. 1850 in Centerville, NY.
2. Isaac Gould; b. ca. 1822; "died in the West"; m. Ruth \_\_\_\_\_
3. Harriet Gould; b. 1 March 1824; m. Zephi Metcalf (See Chap. 8)
4. Dudley Gould; b. ca. 1826.
5. Mary Elizabeth Gould; b. July 1827 in Herkimer Co., NY; m. Jerome A. Pell of Centerville. The Pells were living in Centerville in 1855, with Mary's mother, Sarah (a widow) and Mary's youngest sister, Sarepta.
  - a. Orren J. Pell; b. ca. 1849 in Centerville, NY.
  - b. Ellen L. Pell; b. ca. 1854 in Centerville, NY.

Others?

- ? Lilian M. Pell; b. Sep 1863 in NY.

6. Laura Ann Gould. I am not sure of her sequence, but she may fit in here.

7. Abigail Gould; b. ca. 1831; m. Dilworth Shepherd (or Sheppard--he b. ca. 1823 in Vermont). Abigail died as a young woman.

a. Elizabeth E. Shepherd; b. ca. 1850 in Centerville.

8. Philip W. Gould; b. ca. 1832; m. Minerva K\_\_\_\_; d. 11 Dec 1900. In the 1880 census he is listed at Ridgeway, Winneshieck Co., IA. As a Methodist minister, he probably moved about a good deal.

a. Philip W. Gould, (Jr.?); b. Mar 1857 in NY; m. Nettie \_\_\_\_\_ (she b. June 1890). Lived at Clear Lake, IA, in 1900.

(1) William E. Gould; b. Jan 1890.

(2) Philip W. Gould (III?); b. Sep 1896.

(3) Kent McK. Gould; b. Jul 1899.

b. Mattie K. Gould; b. ca. 1865 in NY.

c. Ralph N. Gould; b. ca. 1878 in IA.

9. Roswell H. (or W.) Gould; b. Apr 1834; m. Ida V\_\_\_\_\_, she b. Feb 1845 in IL.

Roswell and Ida were living with his sister, Mary Pell, in Greene, Butler Co., IA, in 1900.

10. Joseph W. Gould; b. 25 Apr 1836 in Boonville, NY; d. 6 Dec 1922 in Nora Springs, IA; m. (1) Mary Totten on 25 May 1858 (she b. 18 Jun 1841 in Wilson, Niagara Co., NY, and d. 9 Dec 1868 at Rockford, Floyd Co., IA) and (2) Alice Knapp on 20 May 1869 in Rockford, IA (she b. 10 Jun 1851 in Winnebago Co., IL, and d. 7 Nov 1929 in Nora Springs, IA).

#### Children of Mary Totten Gould

a. Hattie Gould; b. 25 Jun 1859 in Royalton, Niagara Co., NY.

b. Mary A. Gould; b. 15 Jun 1861 in Colden, Erie Co., NY; m. \_\_\_\_\_ Schenk.

(1) Evelyn Schenk

(2) Roy Schenk (a legislator in Wyoming?)

(3) Leo Schenk

c. Herbert W. Gould; b. 9 Feb 1867 in Rockford, Floyd Co., IA; d. 10 Mar 1867 in Rockford.

d. Florence Mable Gould; b. 20 Jun 1868 in Rockford, Floyd Co., IA; d. 28 Sep 1869 in Marble Rock, IA.

Children of Alice Knapp Gould

e. Charleton Joseph Gould; b. 11 May 1871 in Shellrock, Butler Co., IA; d. 5 Feb 1942 in Nora Springs, IA; m. Minta Phillips (dau. of William Phillips; she b. Sep 1874 in MN).

In 1900, Charleton and Minta were living in Northwood, Worth Co., IA, and her father, William, and brothers, Art C. and Dee Phillips, were living with them.

(1) Arthur P. Gould; b. Oct 1898.

f. Imogene Gould; b. 22 Jan 1873 in Marble Rock, IA; d. 30 Oct 1967 in Mason City, IA; m. Ed Bitterman on 12 Dec 1895 (he d. 1953).

(1) Marjorie Bitterman; m. Mose Brim.

(a) Bonnie Bell Brim; b. 1918; m. Claude Hewett in 1934; d. 1965.

i. Robert E. Hewett

ii. Roberta E. Hewett; m. John Boehlje.

iii. Richard D. Hewett

iv. Ronald D. Hewett.

v. Rose Marie Hewett; m. \_\_\_\_\_ Booker.

(b) Imogene Brim; m. \_\_\_\_\_ Rudd

(2) Beulah Mae Bitterman; m. Orres Gerren

g. Beulah Alice Gould; b. 24 Apr 1881 in Nora Springs, IA; d. 6 Feb 1948 in Nora Springs, IA.

h. Mabel Grace Gould; b. 7 Feb 1885 in Nora Springs, IA; d. 6 Oct 1953 in Nora Springs, IA.

11. Alfred Gould; b. ca. 1839.

12. Sarepta N. Gould; b. ca. 1843 in Centerville, NY.

# Ancestry of Michael (Micah) P. Gould (Gold)

Having looked at Harriet Gould Metcalf's generation, and beyond, we now look back to her forebears, beginning with her father and possible paternal grandfather. There is a Philip Gould listed in the 1790 and 1800 censuses for Montgomery Co., NY (in the Town of Canajoharie in 1790) and a Philip Gold is listed in the 1810 census for Montgomery County. It is very likely that these are all the same person (see discussion of name "Gould," below), and I think that it is also likely that Philip was the father of Michael P. (P. for Philip?) because:

- (1) According to the 1850 census, Michael was born in New York and was 62; thus, born about 1788, and Philip had a son, less than 16 years old, in 1790.
- (2) Michael named his third son Philip.
- (3) Marriages of more than one couple between closely allied families were common at the time--especially in the same religious community. Thus, when I see that Sarah Slocum Gould's half-brother, Daniel, married a Susan Gould and that they named a son Philip Gould Slocum (Slocum, 1882:108,180), I strongly suspect that Susan was a sister of Michael and a daughter of Philip. In the Gould line, I have not been able to push back beyond the Philip Gould living in the Town of Canajoharie, assuming him to be the father of Michael P. There was also a Simeon Gould living in the same Town at that date. Perhaps he was a brother of Philip. I did visit Canajoharie in 1986. As indicated in Chap. 5, I learned a good deal about Nellises at Nelliston, just across the Mohawk, but nothing about the long-forgotten Goulds of Canajoharie.

It is likely that Philip stemmed either from the Goulds of early Connecticut, which were numerous, or from those of early Massachusetts, which were even more numerous. I have not found the name Philip listed among early Connecticut Goulds (Golds), and it is rare in Massachusetts. A Philip Gould was born in Amesbury, MA, in 1765, son and grandson of other Philip Goulds (Topsfield Historical Society, 1913:112-113), but I do not know anything else about him. If Philip was from the Connecticut

line, then he might well have been a relative of Jay Gould, the noted railroad magnate, whose clan was living not far to the south of Canajoharie, in Delaware County, NY, by the late 1700's. Many relatives have recounted to me a family legend about Harriet being related to Jay, including the information that she had no use for him. However, I have not been able to find such a connection to Jay Gould's family. As one might suspect, Jay Gould's ancestry is well documented. He was of the Golds of Fairfield, CT, who descended from Nathan Gold, a prominent citizen in CT in the 1600's, and whose son, Nathan, was a Lt. Governor of CT.

Mrs. Beulah Gerren informs me that there was also a strong legend in the family of Rev. Joseph W. Gould (discussed above) concerning a relationship to Jay Gould. Since it is doubtful that Joseph and Harriet ever saw each other again after Harriet and Zephi left New York in the mid-1850's, it would appear that either they were (1) aware of a relationship before that time or (2) learned about it through subsequent correspondence among family members. Jay's name did not become a household word until the latest 1860's when Harriet was already in Kansas. Thus, I am somewhat inclined to suspect that, indeed, the Goulds were aware of some connection to the Delaware County Golds as far back as when they lived in Herkimer County. Incidentally, the family of Talcott Gould, who lived in the Town of Freedom in southern Allegany County, was definitely descended from the Connecticut line to which Jay belonged. However, I have not been able to document a similar connection for Michael and Philip. So--deciphering the Gould ancestry beyond Michael P. still remains a challenge and something to solve.

According to Gold (1946:15-16), the name Gold is documented back to the 11th century in England with the variants Gould and Goold appearing in the late 12th century. It appears that in our (?) line, Gold was changing to Gould during the time of Philip, as he is listed as both. However, I see the name Gold being used as late as the 1855 census for Harriet's mother, Sarah. The name also changed from Gold to Gould at about the same time in Jay Gould's line in New York.

### Ancestry of Sarah Slocum Gould

In the 1790's and early 1800's, the family of Jesse Slocum, Sarah's father and Harriet's grandfather, was living in the Town of Oppenheim, which was in the Montgomery Co., NY, of that time, and is presently in Fulton Co., the town bordering present Herkimer Co. on the east. Oppenheim was just across the river from Brockett's Bridge (now Dolgeville), where the Metcalfs and Brocketts seem to have intermingled (Chap. 5), especially in connection with the early Methodist church there. It may be that the Goulds and Slocums mingled with them too. For instance, we find another brother of Sarah (a William Slocum) marrying a Jane Adeline Curtis, daughter of Bartholomew and Lucy Brockett Curtis in Salisbury in 1841 (Slocum, 1882:183). The marriage was performed by a "Rev. Almanzo Blackman, M.E." and the couple named their first son Almanzo. Harriet's uncle, Monson Slocum, also named a son Almanzo B. Apparently this minister was held in much esteem by the family. (I wonder if this is also the possible origin of the name Aminzo given by Harriet and Zephi to their third son?) I suspect, then, that Metcalfs, Slocums, and Goulds were all in the early Methodist community that centered, more or less, around Brockett's Bridge in Herkimer and Fulton Counties. Elijah Metcalf, himself, is listed in the 1830 census (as Elisha Matcalf) from the Town of Stratford, Fulton Co., just to the north of the Town of Oppenheim and bounded by Herkimer County, on the west. Quite a few of the members of these families moved west to Allegany Co. and adjoining Cattaraugus Co. in the 1830's.

A Slocum family genealogy was published by Dr. Charles E. Slocum in 1882 (Harriet and Zephi appear on page 109). It carries the family from the time of their arrival in America up to the time of Dr. Charles. An Anthony and a Giles Slocombe seem to have come to America separately, although Anthony was probably the father of Giles. Anthony settled in Massachusetts, eventually making his home in Dartmouth. Giles settled in the Town of Portsmouth, Newport Co., Rhode Island, in 1638.

# A SHORT HISTORY

OF THE

JAN 15 1882

## SLOCUMS, SLOCUMBS AND SLOCUMBS

OF AMERICA,

GENEALOGICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL;

EMBRACING ELEVEN GENERATIONS OF THE FIRST-NAMED FAMILY  
FROM 1637 TO 1881:

WITH THEIR ALLIANCES AND THE DESCENDANTS IN THE FEMALE LINES  
SO FAR AS ASCERTAINED. ALSO THE ETYMOLOGY OF THOSE SUR-  
NAMES, AN ACCOUNT OF SOME RESEARCHES IN ENGLAND  
CONCERNING THEIR ANCESTORS WHO BORE THE  
PARENT SURNAME, SLOCUMBE, ETC.

BY

CHARLES ELIHU SLOCUM, M. D., PH. D.

Pages 108-110 from Vol. 1 of Charles  
Elihu Slocum's work (1882) concerning  
the Slocum family. Page 109 contains  
a reference to Harriet Gould and  
Zephi Metcalf.

New Jersey, 10 January, 1759, and married Hannah ——— who was born 15 May, 1759. They resided on a farm near the Long Branch, N. J., and there died—he, 10 April, 1808 (his will proved 30 April, 1808); she, 15 February, 1835,—and were buried in Slocum Cemetery near the present Long Branch Village. Children:

- i. DANIEL, b. 27 Jan., 1779; m. Rebecca Lane; d. March, 1836
- ii. PHEBE, b. 18 Dec., 1780; m. James Joline; d. 18 June, 1846
- iii. DEBORAH, b. A. D. 1785; m. Garret Jeffrey; died in 1845
- iv. HANNAH DIMOND, born 24 November, 1788; married ——— Polley. She died 15 April, 1871, without children, and was buried in Slocum Cemetery.
- v. JACOB, b. 9 March, 1791; m. Elizabeth Howland; d. in 1839
- vi. NATHANIEL, born A. D. 1795; died 9 February, 1867.

JESSE<sup>6</sup> SLOCUM (*Samuel's (?) Samuel, Nathaniel, Giles, Anthony,*) was born A. D. 1760 in Shrewsbury Township, Monmouth County, New Jersey, and removed in early manhood to Dutchess County, New York. He married first, ——— Woolley (?), and second, Elizabeth Burch. Soon after his second marriage he removed to that part of Palatine Township, Montgomery County, N. Y., which was organized the 18th of March, 1808, as Oppenheim Township, and which became a part of Fulton County the 18th of April, 1838. He died in the year 1822 in Oppenheim and was there buried. His widow died in 1863 in Cattaraugus County, N. Y., and was buried in Farmersville. Children—perhaps not born in the order here given—by first wife:

- i. AMAZIAH, was twice married in southeastern New York, and died previous to the year 1848 (?). A son by his second marriage, James, married Louisa Canada of Elmira, N. Y., and had a son James, born about 1846. James, senior, was drowned soon after this date (?).
- ii. MARY, married ——— Hall and had a son James (?).
- iii. SAMUEL, m. 1st, Nancy Hayes; 2d, Sarah Livingston; d. 1839
- iv. DANIEL, b. A. D. 1788 (?); mar. Susan Gould; d. A. D. 1838

Children by second wife:

- v. ELIZABETH, died at the age of eighteen years.
- vi. JOHN, married Margaret Motrow. He died A. D. 1846. East Otto, N. Y. Children: Nathan J., and E. Luzes farmers; Mrs. Sarah J. Holmes; Mrs. Elizabeth A. Re

Many of these early Slocombes (many gradually changed the name to Slocum) became members of the Society of Friends. Two of the sons of Giles Slocombe of Portsmouth became Quaker ministers: Ebenezer and Peleg. Ebenezer seems to have been rather a prominent minister and missionary in the Society and also held various governmental positions, such as deputy to and sometimes Speaker of the Rhode Island General Assembly (Legislature). Some of the information given in Slocum (1882) concerning the Slocums and the Friends Church might interest members of the church presently in our family.

The remaining sons of Giles Slocombe, although Quakers, seem to have been oriented more towards terrestrial than towards celestial estates. Eliezer moved to Dartmouth, MA, where "He dealt quite extensively in lands, and was very successful in the accumulation of property considering the newness of the country and the various unfavorable circumstances of his time."--(Slocum, 1882:56). Among these "unfavorable circumstances" was the attitude of the Massachusetts Puritans towards Baptists and Quakers. I trust that none of our own Metcalf Puritan ancestors were involved in anything of this nature. Slocum notes (1882:57) that the Slocums who settled at Dartmouth, MA, "were excluded from the rights of citizenship and the privilege of holding office," whereas those in nearby Rhode Island "were much sought in directing public affairs."

Two other sons of Giles Slocombe, John and Nathaniel, moved south to northeastern Monmouth Co., New Jersey, south across New York Bay from New York City. According to Slocum (1882:42,50), John "became possessed of extensive tracts of land in East New Jersey," and, in regard to Nathaniel: "These grants with his other acquisitions made him a large landed estate." Nathaniel is in our lineage. He lived in Shrewsbury Township and had a son named Samuel, born in the same area about 1718. This second Samuel had a son named Jesse, who was born in 1760. Jesse was the grandfather of Harriet Gould. He moved from New Jersey, first to Dutchess Co., NY, and then to the Town of Oppenheim in Fulton Co. His first wife probably was named Wooley and his

nolds; Mrs. Emma M. O'Brien; Mrs. Eva M. Tcft; and Lucia Slocum, reside in East Otto, Cattaraugus Co., N. Y. John Newton, Chesaning, Michigan; James A. Saginaw, Mich.; his mother is now (1881), living with him; Thomas S., a preacher, East Groveland, N. Y.; and Mrs. Helen K. Sims, Ellicottsville, N. Y.

vii. SARAH, married Michael P. Gould and removed to Iowa. Children: 1. Isaac, mar. and died in the West; 2. Louise, mar. George Clark and lived in Rochester, N. Y.; 3. Dudley; 4. Harriet, mar. Zephi Metcalf; 5. Laura Ann; 6. Philip, and 7. Joseph, are ministers in the M. E. Church; 8. Elizabeth, mar. Jerome Pell; 9. Roswell; 10. Abigail, mar. Dilworth Shepherd and died some years ago; 11. Alfred; 12. Sarepta. Jesse, died at the age of fifteen years.

ix. MATILDA, married Frederick Hale. They resided in Oramel, Allegany Co., N. Y., and there died some years ago; and there most of their children now live, viz.: 1. Sophronia, mar. Lorenzo Hall and died at the age of 23 years, leaving four children; 2. Mary Ann, mar. George E. Parker, formerly a merchant but now a farmer; they have no children; 3. Ezra, a blacksmith; mar. Frances Coulton (?) and has three sons; 4. Alonzo, died in Michigan leaving a family; 5. Roswell, resides at Tar Port, Pa.; 6. Harriet, mar. \_\_\_\_\_ and resides in Michigan; 7. Matilda, died some years ago; 8. Alfred, a farmer, mar. Aurelia Howell.

195. x. ELISHA, b. 7 Nov., 1804; m. 1st Rebecca Keeler; d. 1875.

196. xi. MONSON NATHANIEL, b. in 1806; m. Mary Mabie; d. 1857.

xii. SMITH, born A. D. 1808; mar. 1st Elizabeth Graham; 2d Almira Hartford, widow of Alanson Van Brunt, with five children. He is a farmer; postoffice Allegany, Cattaraugus Co., N. Y. Has had two children—both by 2d marriage, viz.: 1. Mariam, b. 15 Sept., 1858, mar. Delos Pierce in May, 1876; 2. Fred, b. in April, 1860.

xiii. ROSWELL, married Mary A. Cross. He is a farmer; postoffice Austin, Mower County, Minnesota. Children: Wesley, a farmer at East Paw Paw, Illinois, where he married and has a son Frank; Rosalia; and James Hall, an adopted son, son of his eldest sister.

197. xiv. COOK, b. A. D. 1812; m. Elizabeth Smith; d. 23 July, 1876.

xv. HENRY, married Maria Perkins. They removed in 1854 from Cattaraugus County, New York, to Illinois, and thence in 1857 to Minnesota where he now resides, a farmer and coal-dealer; postoffice, Austin, Minn. Children: 1. Orville, a photographer at Clear Lake, Iowa, where he married; 2. Alma Ann; 3. Newell M., has been a public-school teacher at Clear Lake, Iowa, where he married \_\_\_\_\_; 4. Melvin B., postoffice Rose Creek, Minn.; 5. Edward N., a coal-dealer at Austin, Minn.

xvi. JULIA, mar. William Hall, a farmer. Their postoffice is Fillmore, Allegany Co., N. Y. Children: 1. Mary Ann, mar.

Isaac Floodley, a hotel-keeper at Portage, N. Y.; 2. William, resides in Kentucky; 3. Walter, resides in Herkimer County, N. Y. (?); 4. Julia Alice, mar. Chauncey, son of Daniel Slocum (No. 194); 5. Winslow, mar. Amelia Butterfield; he is a farmer, without children; 6. Patience, mar. \_\_\_\_\_ and died a few years ago leaving one child; 7. Elizabeth

mar. Isaac Lefoy, an oil-dealer, and has two children; 1. Adeline, mar. George Hall, a farmer, and has three children; 9. Almanzo, mar. a sister of the above-named George Hall and has two children; 10. Ella, remains unmarried.

xvii. JESSE, died at the age of about fifteen years.

xviii. A son died in his infancy in Oppenheim Township, N. Y. 198. xix. WILLIAM, b. 10 March, 1820; m. Jane A. Curtis, 24 Feb., 1841.

In the second volume of his history of the Slocums (1908), Charles E. Slocum employed a simplified spelling system that was apparently receiving some attention at the time. An excerpt is provided below for the amusement of anyone who may enjoy deciphering.

Düring the last fü yêrz thâr hav bin revival and ekstenshon ov interest in öld rekôrds. This interest haz pervâded meni familiz, evri Stât, and aneni depozitoriz; and much ov valü regarding öld familiz, and the erli histori ov the Kolôniz and Stâts haz bin brôt to lit, and sum ov the datâ haz bin publisht. At the kapitol ov nêrli evri wun ov the ôlder Stâts trând fôrses är at werk repâring öld, wörn, törn and uthervâz mör ör les bedimd rekôrds, ör transkribing them az fuli az posibl. The rîter haz sât to kêp infôrmd regârding the progres ov this werk, bi rêding the publisht akounts, and viziting thöz engâjd in it—having, just prêvius to giving hiz manu-

\*It aptêrz tō the rîter that nō apolōji iz nesesâri fôr the speling üzd in the fêrst pârte ov this buk. Fôr meni yêrz hê haz fâvôrd such chänj and woz, thârfôr, redi tō sin the rekwest tō adopt the rekomentâshon ov the Simplifid Speling Bôrd ov Nû Yôrck, and tō dô mör; tō fâvor the rûlz rekomented bi thê Filôlojikal Sôsietî ov Lundun, Ingland, and thöz ov the Amerikan Filôlojikal Asôsiaschon. Thêz rûlz, however, hav not bin fuli, ör regûlari, obzêrvd in this buk; but it iz thât that enuf simplifikâshon iz üzd tō konvins thê averâj rêder ov the dêzirabiliti fôr mör; alsô that adhêrens to the sô-kâld "histôrikal ôrthografi iz ônli â konseshon tō the vêrknes ov prêjudis." In nō korekt sens kan the prezênt üzüal speling ov Inglish bê kâld ôrthografi. Ôrthografi iz nesesârii fônêtik; and but fü adishons ov sound-indikâtorz tō the alfabet är nesesâri fôr this dêzirabl rêzult, werk fôr the konsûmashon ov hwich haz bin wel-advanst bi the sôsietiz nämnd abuv.

second, Elizabeth Burch. Jesse had four children (Amaziah, Mary, Samuel, and Daniel) by his first wife. By Elizabeth Burch, his second wife, he had Elizabeth, John, Sarah (mother of Harriet), Jesse, Matilda, Elisha, Monson Nathaniel, Smith, Roswell, Cook Henry, Julia, William, and one or two children that died young! It appears that most or all the sons eventually left the area of Montgomery/Fulton/Herkimer Counties. The Daniel Slocum, who married Susan Gould (mentioned above), moved around and eventually settled, with his son, Philip Gould Slocum, out in Allegany County. Slocum (1882:180) notes "He was an honest, temperate, and industrious man; died in 1880 in Lyndon Tp., Cattaraugus Co., New York." It appears that Elisha Slocum also moved out to Cattaraugus County. Monson Nathaniel Slocum moved out to Lyndon Twp in Cattaraugus Co. and later lived in nearby Farmersville. He is buried in the Centerville Cemetery, Allegany County. Monson's family was living in Lyndon from about 1846 to 1849 and Zephi and Harriet were living there around 1847-1850. Monson's son, Almanzo B., whose name, it was suggested above, might be related to the "Aminzo" bestowed by Harriet and Zephi on their third-born, was two to five years old at that time. Aminzo Metcalf was born in 1851. Cook Slocum also moved out west to Cattaraugus County. William Slocum had a history of wandering that is worth noting. Slocum (1882:183) states that, after his marriage to Jane Adeline Curtis, the couple "resided in Stratford three years, Salisbury three years, Lyndon in Cattaraugus County, two years; Rushford in Allegany County, three years, Lyndon two years, Farmersville three years, Lyndon again two years, and since the year 1860 he has resided on a farm in Humphrey Township, Cattaraugus County...."

Growing up among all these Slocums, it is clear that young Harriet Gould was quite used to people with an itching heel before she ever married Zephi Metcalf. Another thing that she was apparently used to was the use of names that seem a bit strange to us. The Slocums had a real predilection for naming their sons after other persons, using the first and family name of the one so honored. For example, Elisha Slocum (m. Rebecca

Keeler) had sons named Silvanus Keeler, Richard Ketchum, Charles Burch, George Washington, Morley Erlingstine, and Marion Leroy. Daniel and Susan Gould Slocum had, in addition to Philip Gould Slocum, sons named William Harvey, Chauncey Bedell, Abner Peak (settled in Sumner Co., KS), Cyrus Daniel, and Joseph Cudworth. Elisha Sereptus Slocum, a cousin of Harriet, who grew up around Farmersville/Lyndon, named a son Adelbert Leroy. One wonders if this may bear some relationship to the name Adelbert, which one finds bestowed by Harriet and Zephi on their firstborn.

Daughters, on the other hand, were given more poetic names, such as Aurelia, Emeline Diantha, Amelia, and Adeline. It is noted that Densie Ann Slocum, a cousin of Harriet, belonging to the much-travelled William, "was graduated at Chili Seminary, Chili, Monroe Co., N.Y., class of 1875"--(Slocum: 1882:183). Between the stale genealogical lines, the Slocums of Cattaraugus County, in the 1800's, sound like rather an interesting, active lot--perhaps hyperactive. They may well have had quite an influence on the young newlyweds, Zephi and Harriet Metcalf. I'm sure that Harriet had more to do with Slocums than with Goulds, as there seem to have been no other Gould relatives around her in Allegany Co., except her (double?) aunt Susan Gould Slocum. It seems possible that Zephi and Harriet migrated west with some of the Slocums, or that they were, at least, incited by them. In any event, several of the Slocums landed in southern Minnesota and the Metcalfs also spent some time in Minnesota, early in their wanderings.

\* \* \* \* \*

I searched for the gravesite of Elizabeth Burch Slocum in Farmersville Cemetery in 1984, but to no avail, although I found the grave of her granddaughter, Julia Hall Slocum, daughter of Julia Slocum Hall. To explain this gibberish: Elizabeth's daughter, Julia, married a Hall and had a daughter, also named Julia, who married Chauncey Bedell Slocum, a stepson of Elizabeth, through Daniel and Susan Gould Slocum. Poor Julia

died at age 19, and Chauncey Bedell seems never to have remarried. There was considerable empty space around Julia's gravestone, so possibly my great-great-great grandmother, Elizabeth Burch Slocum, is buried there also.

In 1984 I located three descendants of Daniel and Susan Gould Slocum that were still living in the Franklinville/Lyndon area. They were all first cousins of each other and descended from Daniel's son, Joseph Cudworth. I talked to Lloyd and Daniel L. Slocum in Franklinville, but Edward Slocum, living in rural Lyndon Township, was not at home. They could trace their Slocum ancestry back to the Rhode Island origins, but knew nothing of the ancestors of Susan Gould, their great-great grandmother. I recall that when I walked up to Lloyd Slocum with my little black book in hand, his greeting was "Well, what have I done now?" However, he was quite genial and cooperative.

Important informants for materials that appear in more than one of the following chapters and the initials used in identifying them are as follows:

ACM - Artie Clifford Metcalf  
 CSM - Cecil Sylvester Metcalf  
 EDM - Edna Dungan Metcalf  
 EHM - Elizabeth Hawkins Metcalf  
 FMM - Franklin Monroe Metcalf  
 GMM - Grace Metcalf Muilenburg  
 MBM - Marie Buck Metcalf

## CHAPTER 8

### ZEPHI AND HARRIET MOVE WEST

Harriet and Zephi moved from New York via Wisconsin to Minnesota (Anon., 1905c:275), leaving New York around 1854. I do not know how long they remained in these states or exactly where they lived. However, according to Slocum (1882:109), two of Harriet's uncles, Roswell and Henry Slocum, lived in Austin, Mower Co., southeastern Minnesota, Henry moving there in 1857. We noted also, in the preceding chapter, that some of Harriet's siblings lived in north-central Iowa just south of Mower Co., so it seems very likely that Harriet and Zephi lived in that area too. According to legends passed down (ACM, FMM), they spent only one winter in Minnesota, finding the severe cold weather up there not to their liking (water, thrown into the air, freezing before reaching the ground; lifelines needed between house and outlying buildings). It is possible, also, that this was the winter when a son, Levi Philip, born in September 1855, may have died--in February 1856.

They moved down, then, to a milder clime, first to Missouri. Here their daughter, Dora, was born, in September 1857. In an account of Hartley Metcalf (Anon., 1905c:275) the following reference to his father, Zephi, appears: "In 1860 the father joined the Pike's Peak Stampede, but after a short time returned to his home in Missouri." According to FMM and ACM, Zephi drove

an ox team for persons heading for the Pikes Peak region. He related that bison tried to fight his oxen as he traversed the Great Plains. Whether he did any gold-seeking himself, in Colorado, is not known. According to FMM, he did ascend Pikes Peak while out there. FMM also recalls hearing that an ostensible reason for the trip was "for his health," but FMM wondered if there might not have been other motives. My own guess, based on indications of his restlessness, already well documented, would be that he just liked to travel and see new places. Seemingly he had a case of genuine wanderlust. We shall see some of his descendants (for example, Minnie Metcalf Hurt and Guy Metcalf), who seemed similarly inclined to travel about. Actually, I suppose that such a restless spirit is often indication of a curious, questing mind and probably of considerable intelligence. There is also evidence that routine farmwork did not much appeal to Zephi (Guy Metcalf via EDM). I have found no evidence that Zephi and Harriet ever owned any property in Missouri. Perhaps they didn't even farm then, which would have made it easier for Zephi to travel to Colorado.

I don't know where the Metcalfs lived in Missouri. When and if the 1860 federal census is indexed for that state it will probably be possible to locate them. It is likely that they lived in the extreme northeastern part of the state because, by late 1863, they were living just across the Mississippi River in Hancock Co., Illinois, where sons Wallace and Doc were born (December 1863 and October 1865). I have been unable to locate exactly where the Metcalfs lived in Hancock Co. There is no record of land transactions pertaining to them so I assume that they were renters there. However, we can ascertain the general area where they were living in March 1865, when Algeroy enlisted in the Union army. He listed his post office address as Fountain Green and his township of residence as Hancock. At that time there was no post office in Hancock Township, which lies directly south of Fountain Green Township (Gregg, 1880:673). The farmers in the north-central and northeastern part of Hancock Township had nearby Fountain Green (village) as their post

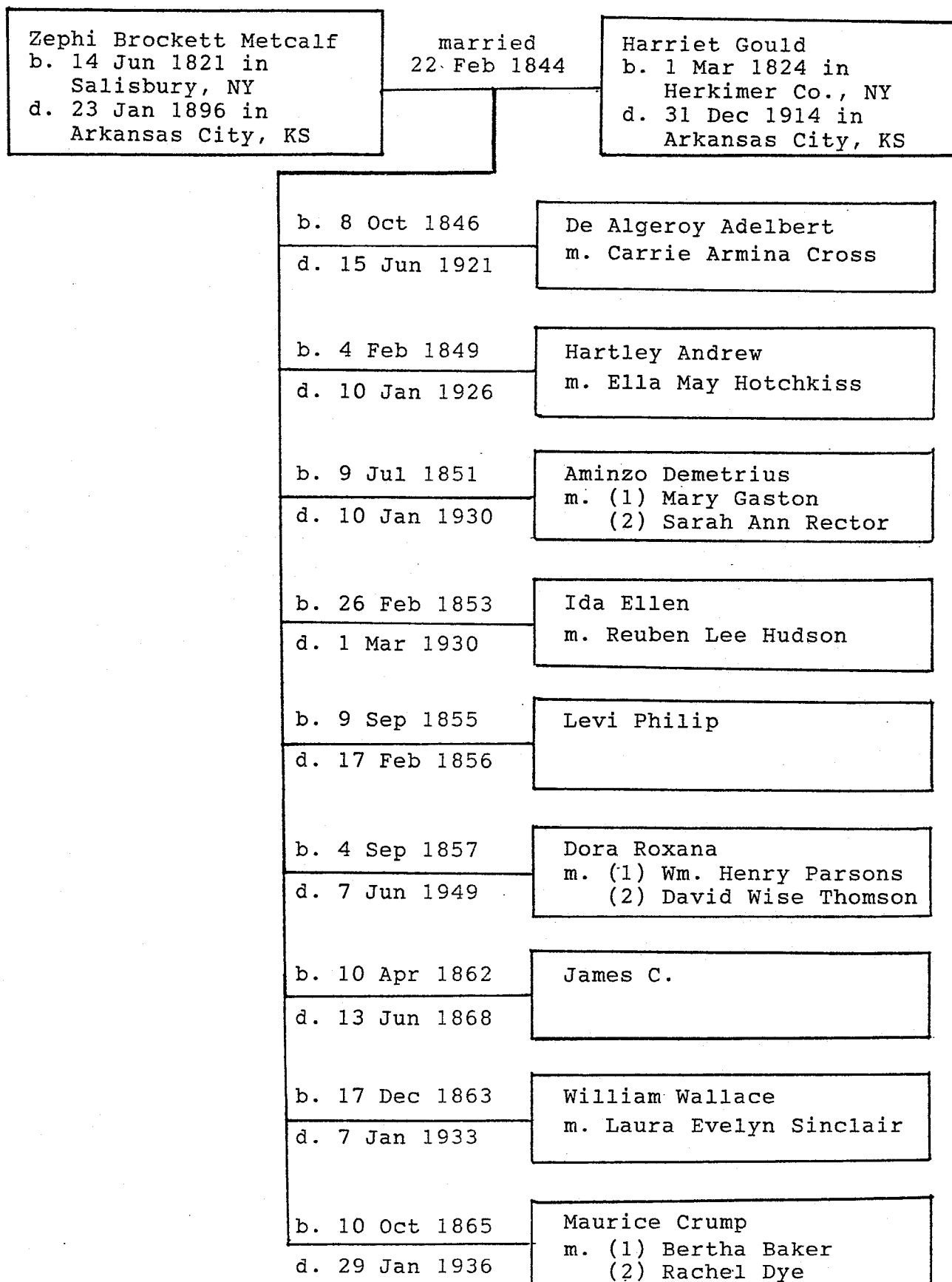


Fig. 18. Children of Zephi B. and Harriet Gould Metcalf.

office, so this area must be where the Metcalfs lived then. It seems that they were also living near Fountain Green in October 1865, when their youngest son was delivered, it would seem, by Dr. Morris Crump of Fountain Green and named for the doctor.

Hancock Township is largely broken and hilly--rather exceptional for Illinois. The greatest expanse of level ground would have been in the extreme northwest part of the township, where Mormons had settled--around Webster (however, if the Metcalfs had lived there, Webster would have been their post office). The Mormons had left some years before the Metcalfs arrived but I suppose people still discussed them. Hancock Co. played an important role in Mormon history. Their city of Nauvoo was in the western part of the county. I feel fairly sure that people also would have been discussing how the Lincoln family had a cousin named Abe, who had done very well indeed at the time the Metcalfs lived there. Abe's uncle, Mordecai Lincoln, had migrated out to Fountain Green and several of his descendants lived around the northern part of Hancock Township and surely must have been known to the Metcalfs.

When the Metcalfs went into Fountain Green, perhaps they noted the spring and the greenery around it, which gave the village its name. No doubt they saw the brand new Jackson house, begun in 1862, but not finished until after the war. The house was still standing in 1982 and Miss Ida Jackson, who still lived in it, told how her ancestors hid their silver, etc., because southern raiders came very close to Fountain Green. FMM mentioned that Zephi belonged to a kind of home guard during the Civil War years, there, precisely to discourage such raids I suppose.

After the war, in 1867, the family moved out to Kansas. I do not know what route they may have taken but I suppose that someone familiar with the history of pioneer trails across northern Missouri could suggest a likely route. In Kansas they first settled in the Four Mile Creek area, a few miles northeast of Erie, Neosho Co., in Walnut Grove Township.

In September 1865 the Osage Indians had signed a treaty

agreeing to a reduction of their lands in Kansas and they removed to Oklahoma in the following years. A settler, who arrived in March 1866, noted (Graves, 1949:293) that there were still Osage villages in Walnut Grove Township at that time and that the Osages abandoned these in the summer of 1867. Thus, the Metcalfs arrived just as the Osages were departing. Probably the availability of these Osage lands was advertised "back East" and enticed them westward.

Zephi and his oldest son, Algeroy, originally homesteaded adjoining quarter-sections, Zephi the SE 1/4, Sec. 10, and Algeroy the SW 1/4, Sec. 11, both in T. 28 S, R. 20 E (Fig. 19 ). They received title for these on 12 August 1870. I suppose they had spent the years 1867-1870 "proving-up" on these properties. On the same day they received title for their properties, records show that they sold them to a Narcissa Burris, Zephi's for \$1,600 and Algeroy's for \$1,000. (In the federal census for 1870, Zephi is still listed as having 160 acres, 70 improved and 90 unimproved) This matter of proving up and then selling the sacred old homestead seems to have been a common way of making a fast buck in those days. I doubt that this was exactly what the authors of the Homestead Act had in mind, however. According to FMM, some wealthier persons essentially employed the less affluent to homestead for them with well planned deals concerning selling the property after three years.

These quarter-sections were located in Four Mile Creek valley and are on level land that still seems to be agriculturally productive. The Metcalfs went fishing in Four Mile Creek. FMM mentions a "big slate pool" where they fished. Four Mile Creek was intermittent when I saw it in August 1978 and July 1980. I don't know why Zephi and Algeroy were so eager to sell their good valley land unless their need for cash was really compelling. (See Fig. 19 for map of properties).

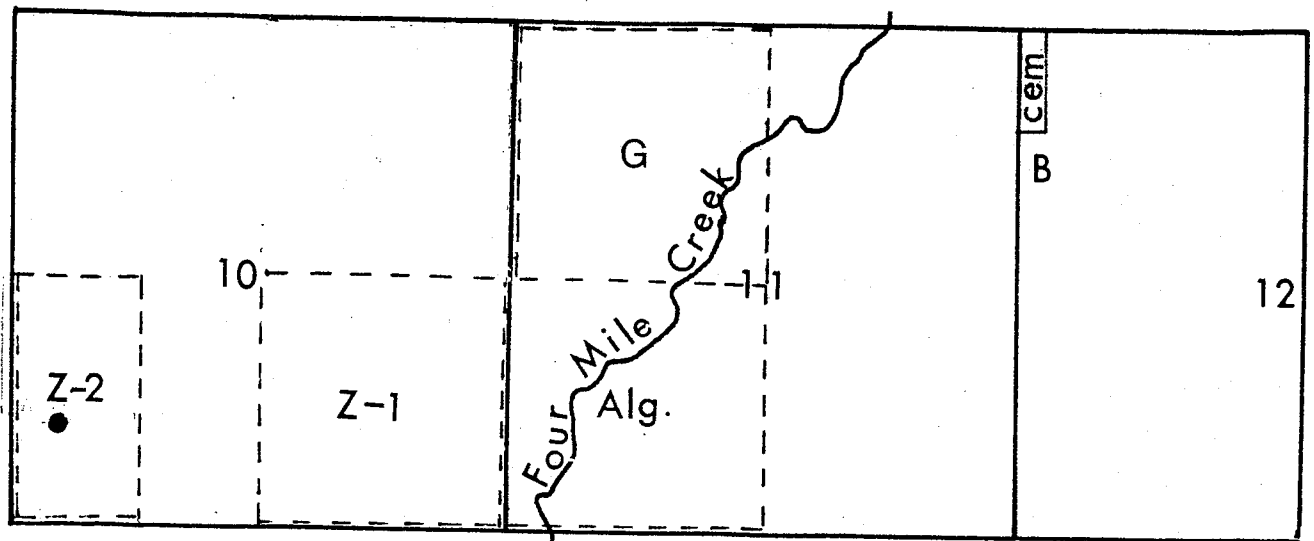
I don't know where the family lived from 1870 to 1879, but presumably in the same neighborhood. In the 1875 state census Zephi has 140 acres "not under fence" and 20 acres "under fence"

I don't know where this 160 was located or whether Zephi owned it or was renting it. He is listed as having 200 rods of rail fence. The farm is valued at \$680 and farm implements and machinery at \$40. Zephi had 40 acres in corn, 1 acre in sorghum, 1 acre in orchard, 98 acres in meadow and 20 in prairie pasture. He had 5 horses, 3 milch cows, 4 other cattle and 1 dog.

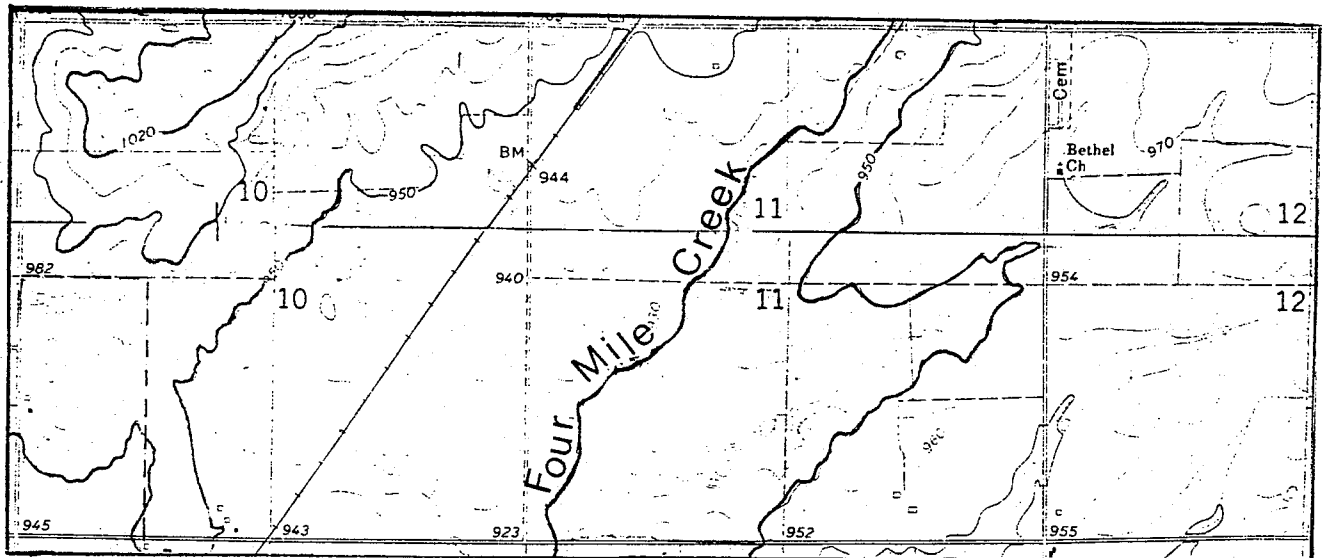
On 17 December 1879 we find Zephi completing payments and receiving title from the U.S.A. for the W 1/2, SW 1/4 of the same Sec. 10 in which he previously had homesteaded (Fig. 19 ). Probably he was living on this 80 acre tract during the years in question, since the deed implies that a number of payments had been made previously. This 80 acre farm that Zephi acquired was surely not so productive as the land along the valley had been. I'd judge that he could only till the south 1/3 of it, the northern 2/3 being too rocky and hilly. The present owner, Mr. Wilbur McDaniel, said that the north part "would make a good rock quarry." It is also badly grown up to Osage Orange trees (locally called "hedge") at this time. There is a recently abandoned house along the west boundary of this 80 but Zephi's family would not have lived there according to Mr. McDaniel. There was an older house and barn on the hill to the southeast of the present buildings (Fig. 19 ). He recalled the barn still being there in his time until demolished by a tornado. At the present time (1980) only a few foundations remain there. On 20 December 1879, three days after he received title for this 80, Zephi mortgaged it to a Cyrus Taylor for \$250. On 5 April 1881, Zephi and Harriet sold this 80-acre farm to John J. Powell of Walnut Grove Twp. for \$1,000, with Powell assuming the mortgage.

Also, on 5 April 1881, Zephi bought an 80-acre farm, located 3 1/2 miles ESE of Dexter, Cowley County, KS (W 1/2, NE 1/4, Sec. 22, T. 33 S, R. 7 E) for \$750 from the same John J. Powell, named above (Fig. 20 ). Thus, Zephi and Powell merely traded properties. I assume that John J. Powell had inherited the property in Cowley Co. from a Francis J. Powell, who had acquired it, as a homestead, from the Land Office on 15 July 1870. I wonder if John Powell had ever seen his Cowley Co.

Fig. 19



a



b

Fig. 19. Fig. a shows properties and features involving the Zephi Metcalf family in the late 1860's and 1870's in Walnut Grove Township, Neosho Co., Kansas. Numbered squares are "sections," one mile square, containing 640 acres, and located in T. 28 S, R. 20 E. Properties are located northeast of the town (village) of Erie. The quarter-sections indicated as "Z-1" and "Alg." were homesteaded by Zephi and his son, Algeroy, respectively. They sold these properties in 1870. Later, Zephi bought the 80-acre tract marked "Z-2," with the homesite indicated by the solid circle. The James Gaston family lived in the northwest quarter-section of Section 11, indicated by "G." Their daughter, Mary, married Aminzo Metcalf. The young Metcalfs apparently enjoyed swimming and fishing in Four Mile Creek. Zephi helped build the first Bethel Church (at "B"), which was demolished in a tornado, but later rebuilt. His son, James C., who died as a result of snakebite, may be buried in the Bethel Cemetery (cem). Fig. b shows topographic features of the same area as a

property or if Zephi saw it before he bought it. I assume that Zephi and Harriet and the unmarried children moved to Cowley Co. in the spring of 1881.

On 12 May 1883, Zephi and Harriet acquired an adjoining 80 acres for \$500 from Jacob H. and M.L. Davis, to give them 160 acres in the NE 1/4, Sec. 22, T. 33 S, R. 7 E. On 2 June 1884, for some reason, Harriet is recorded as buying the property from Zephi for \$1,000. On 23 November 1885, Zephi purchased 160 acres in the adjoining section to the north for \$150 from the U.S. Land Office (W 1/2 of SE 1/4 and N 1/2 of SW 1/4, Sec. 15, T. 33 S, R. 7 E). He mortgaged it for \$300 and then sold it for \$800 the following June 23. Anyway, for a brief 7 months, Zephi and Harriet reached their peak as landowners, with a whole 320 acres to their names! (These properties mapped in Fig. 20).

There are still (1980) foundations of buildings and other remains and a large grove of trees on the "West 80" where Zephi and Harriet lived. ACM and I once excavated a depression (well, cellar, privy?) there into which Metcalfs had thrown their trash. It was great fun to dig up things used by our ancestors and to try to reconstruct something of the history of each item, for example, a fine-toothed comb, a broken cream pitcher, a coffee mug, shoe last, medicine bottles, a brass finger-ring, dishes, crockery, a mussel shell probably used as a doorstep, pieces of button shoes, of harness, etc.

Zephi was devoutly religious, at least during his years in Kansas. Mr. Burt Nickleson of Dexter was high in his praise of these traits (EDM). Guy Metcalf, on the other hand, expressed the view that he neglected farm and family for these religious activities, apparently leaving farm duties for his children to carry out while he was away at meetings (EDM). Graves (1952:953) records that "Z. Metcalf" was among the early promoters of Bethel Methodist Church, northeast of Erie, and close to the Metcalf properties in Neosho Co. In the early 1870's there were revivals and meetings in a schoolhouse and a church was finally completed in 1878. Graves notes that "the members did the work of erecting the building, as they could spare the time." ACM

Fig. 20. Metcalf properties located southeast of Dexter, Cowley Co., Kansas, occupied from about 1880 to 1910. Numbered squares are "sections," one mile square (T. 33 S, R. 7 E). Fig. a indicates location of the village of Dexter and of the Dexter Cemetery, atop a hill southeast of the village, on what is being indicated here, informally, as Cemetery Road. Numerous Metcalf and allied family members are buried here. Highland Road (also being used informally) leads eastward from Dexter some 5 miles to the Highland Community, where a number of Metcalfs and Nellises lived at one time or another. In the 1800's Cemetery Road would have extended on east past the homes of Aminzo and Zephi (a and z in Fig. a). Figs. b and c show the location of these homes (solid circles) and of the properties involved. Zephi first acquired the "west-80" of the "original farm," soon bought the "east-80," and then proceeded to sell this quarter section to wife, Harriet. Zephi then homesteaded the 160-acre property to the northwest in Section 15. Aminzo Metcalf also homesteaded his quarter-section. Aminzo's first wife, Mary Gaston Metcalf, died while they lived here. Newlyweds, Wallace and Laura Metcalf, bought 60 acres from Harriet in the northeast part of her property and resided there around the turn of the century. Location of their home is indicated by x in Figs. b and c. It was just below and south of a hill (Fig. b) with a nice view to the south across Crab Creek valley to the Flint Hills beyond. Wallace farmed land between the house and Crab Creek. His son, Frank, mentioned enjoying exploration along Crab Creek as a youngster. Fig. b shows topographic features of the same area as in Fig. c

says that Zephi was also instrumental in founding the Methodist Church at Dexter. According to Myrtle Sinclair Metcalf (via CSM), Zephi's testimonials started out in a low voice and became progressively louder and higher pitched as he waxed enthusiastic.

Now, of the few things that various informants had told me about Zephi, no one had mentioned that he had ever returned to New York in later years to visit his family there. I was surprised, then, when, in 1984, Ruth Metcalf, of Bartlesville, OK, brought to light, from among many photos preserved by her family, a portrait (badly torn), which her sister, Margaret Metcalf, said was supposedly of Zephi and his siblings. There were no identifications on the photo, but it did seem to be of Lyman B., Roxana, Levi, Rachel, Zephi, and Elijah, Jr., and they were older people. Clearly the photo had not been taken before Zephi left New York in the 1850's. I puzzled over just when this photo might have been taken until 1987 when the mystery was solved. At that time, Ellen Harmon of Rochester, NY, kindly brought some diaries belonging to her grandfather, Charles Metcalf, to a small "reunion" that we enjoyed in Rochester. Among the entries in Charles's diaries, I discovered the following for 1888:

Sept. 12. Buffalo today. Came home. Uncle Zephi is here.

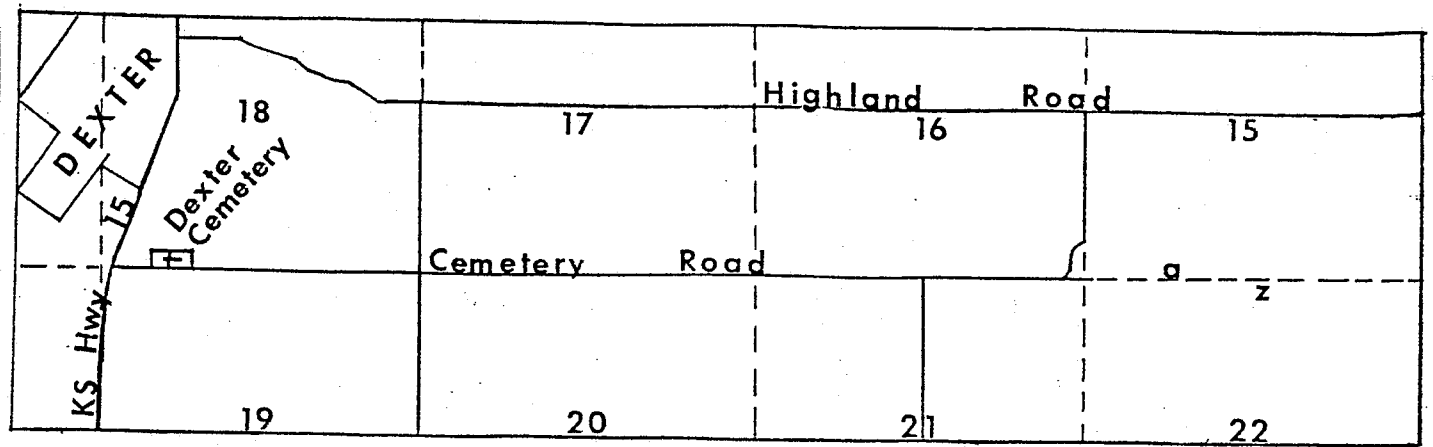
Sept. 20. Cut corn. Our folks went to Houghton with Uncle Zephi.

Oct. 13. Uncle Zephi started for home.

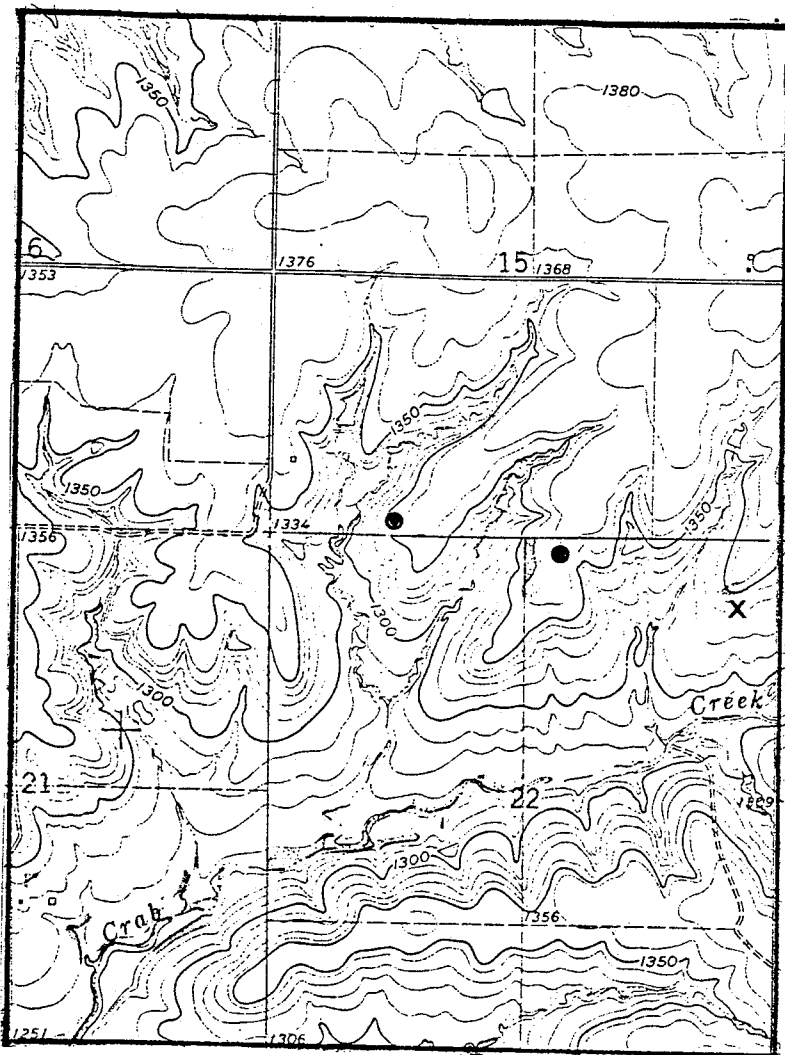
So, Zephi did, in his 67th year, spend a month with his family in New York, among the Allegany mountains and valleys of his youth. All his siblings were still living, and it was wise that he did not wait much longer, as Rachel and Roxana passed on less than two years later, and all had departed by 1896, Lyman B., the oldest, and the one who had suffered through the Civil War with his health problems, being, after all, the last one to give up.

In my imagination, I have sometimes tried to picture Zephi's return trip to New York. Obviously he went by train, but whether

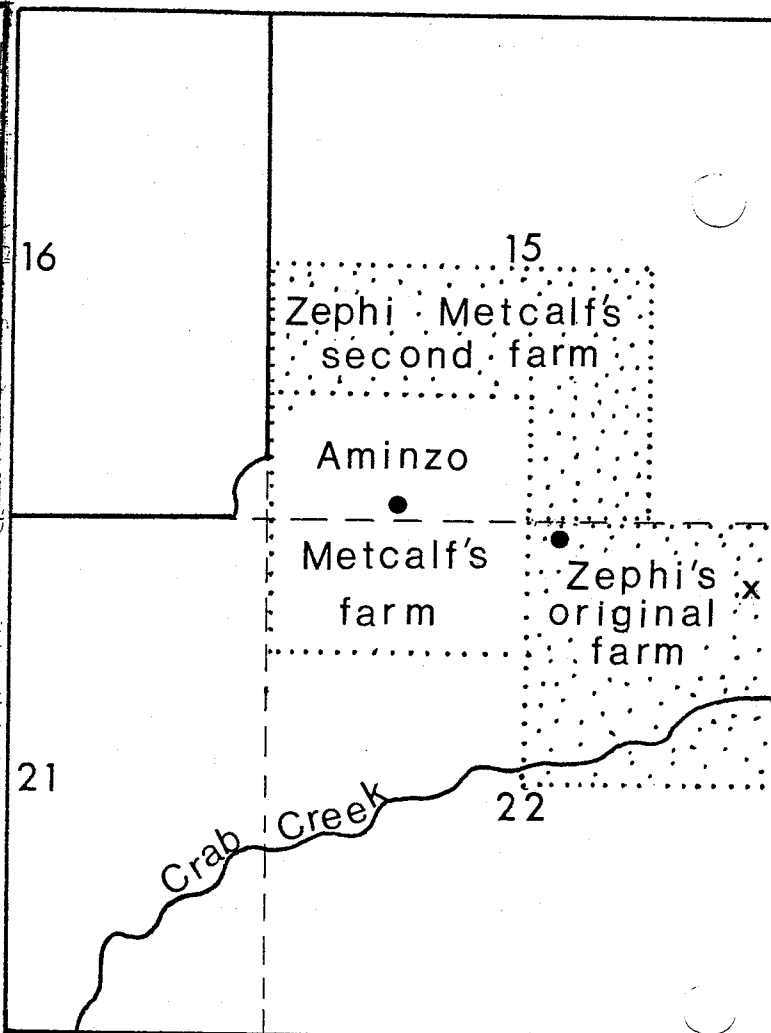
Fig. 20



a



b



c

from Arkansas City, via Kansas City and Chicago or from Dexter to Coffeyville, Joplin, and Saint Louis (or some other way) I do not know. I suppose the trains of 1888 would seem slow and primitive to us, but, to him, the pace of travel may have seemed quite rapid. I wonder what his emotions were, retracing, in relative speed and comfort, the long trek that the family had made westward in covered wagons. Among the events that he must have enjoyed during his stay in Rushford was the marriage of his niece, Nelia Metcalf, to Edward Dietrich on Oct. 11. According to the diary of Nelia's brother Charles, they had "a very good time."

I suspect that most pioneers of the farming class, who came west to Kansas never returned east for a visit, so, once again, Zephi, seems a bit of an exception and exhibits, once more, his persisting love of (or, at least, willingness for) travel.

Perhaps Zephi became interested in the Free Methodist Church on his trip to Rushford, given that his siblings were so active in it. At least, he was attending a meeting in a Free Methodist Church when he died. An account from the Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 24 January 1896 (courtesy of Lena Davison Metcalf) is as follows and is almost identical to accounts that I heard from ACM many times:

#### FELL DEAD IN CHURCH

Z.B. Metcalf of Dexter aged 75 years fell dead while attending church--His last words were "Praise the Lord!"

Last evening there were services at the Free Methodist Church in the Fourth Ward and there was considerable excitement created by Z.B. Metcalf falling over and dying from heart disease while the services were in progress of closing.

The usual evening meeting was held but it was a quiet one. There was no excitement or "shouting" indulged in during the services. The pastor had preached his sermon and at its close invited all who desired to give testimony of the love they bore their Savior. Several members gave their testimony and Mr. Metcalf who was the last to talk arose and gave his. He was calm

and deliberate in his talk and showed no sign of illness. His remarks ended with "If I should not live to see the rising of another sun I feel that I would go to Heaven. Praise the Lord!" Mr. Metcalf took his seat then and the congregation commenced singing the closing hymn. Miss Georgia Hill sat next to Mr. Metcalf and she noticed that he had fallen over in the seat and then the alarm was given. The singing stopped and members of the church went to Mr. Metcalf's assistance. They readily saw that he was in a bad condition and unconscious. He was heard to murmur "Praise the Lord!" They were the last words he uttered for he expired a few moments later. Friends went to the home of Mr. Metcalf's son-in-law R.L. Hudson and notified them and Mrs. Metcalf. Mr. Hudson hurried to the church and found his father-in-law gasping his last breath. Dr. Brecount was called but Mr. Metcalf was dead before he arrived. Death occurred at about 10 o'clock.

The deceased was the father of Mrs. R.L. Hudson. He and his wife came here about a week since from Dexter to make their home with their daughter. Mr. Metcalf owned a farm near Dexter. He was a highly respected citizen and a very religious man, being a member of the M.E. Church.

He leaves a wife and seven children to mourn his sudden demise. Two of his children live here, but the others reside in other states. They have all been notified and are expected here to attend the funeral. The hour of the funeral has not been set yet, and will not be until all the children have been heard from.

An item from the Arkansas City Daily Traveler of Saturday evening, 25 January 1896, notes: "The funeral of Z.B. Metcalf will occur from the residence of his daughter, Mrs. R.L. Hudson, 703 North 8th St. at 3 P.M. Sunday. Rev. Hoyt officiating."

Harriet Gould Metcalf lived 90 years, from 1824 until the last day of 1914. How nice if she could be the one to describe such a long life that found her traversing half the breadth of the United States by covered wagon and living through almost

half of its history to date. I assume that she was kept busy for much of her life with rearing nine children, with traveling about from one place to another, and with keeping the home together while Zephi was sometimes away. Although the account of Zephi's death, given above, indicates that he and Harriet were about to make their home with Ida and Reuben Hudson, I don't believe that Harriet stayed with Ida for any length of time, then. She sold part of her farm to son Wallace in 1896 and the remainder to son Doc in 1898 but she is listed in the 1900 federal census as residing on the farm with Doc and his wife, Bertha. Thus, I suspect that she had been on the farm most of the time after Zephi's death. On 31 May 1914, when Bertha Metcalf died, Harriet was also living with Doc's. They were living near Cherryvale, KS, then. It appears likely that she had spent much of the time from 1900 to 1914 with Doc's family. However, she apparently visited other offspring on occasion. An item from the Dexter Dispatch of 24 May 1906 notes: "Grandma Metcalf came from Arkansas City to spend some time with son Wallace near Hooser." The following news item (Dexter Advocate, 4 April 1907, courtesy of GMM) refers to Harriet's health: "H.A. Metcalf of Hotchkiss, Colorado, had an affectionate meeting yesterday with his brother, A.D. Metcalf. The men had not met for nearly 35 years. Mr. Metcalf came to Kansas to see his mother, who recently had a stroke of paralysis." After Bertha died, Wallace went to Cherryvale and brought his mother back on the train to his home in Cowley County. She stayed there for a short time and then was taken to the home of Ida and Reuben Hudson. Wallace had neighbors, the McIntyres, transport Harriet to Arkansas City in a 1912 Ford automobile and ACM thinks that this was her only ride in an auto. She spent the few remaining months of her life at Ida's.

Jean Strayer George has provided a postcard written by Ida to her sister, Dora (Jean's great-grandmother). The year when the card was written is missing, but it would have been in 1906 or later, as Dora moved to El Paso, TX, in 1906. I don't know whether the stroke referred to is the one of 1907, noted above,

Summary of census records pertaining to the family of Zephi B. and Harriet Gould Metcalf in Kansas. Much of the data was provided by Lena Metcalf. State censuses end in -5.

1870

The family is living in "Erie" Twp., Neosho Co., KS, in a part of the township, which probably later became Walnut Grove Twp. Zephi is a farmer, age 49. Harriet is 46 and "keeping house." Both were b. in NY. Children listed include Algeroy A. (23; a farmer), Hartley A. (21; a farm laborer), and Aminzo D. (19; a farm laborer), these sons all born in NY. The two youngest children, born in IL, are listed: "Wm. W" (6) and "Crump" (4). Ida and Dora are employed as domestic servants in nearby Erie, so they are not listed.

1875

The family is now listed as residing in Walnut Grove Twp. The census-taker's spelling is rather poor. The family name is spelled "Medcalf" and given names: Z.B., Herriett, Minzoe, Dora, Walter (=Wallace), and Crump. (Discussed on page 148).

1880

The family is still in Walnut Grove Twp. The older sons are gone and only Zephi (58), Harriet (55), Wallace (16) and Dora's daughter, Myrtle Parsons (age 2) are listed. Perhaps Doc had "hired out" and was counted in another household, although he was only 14.

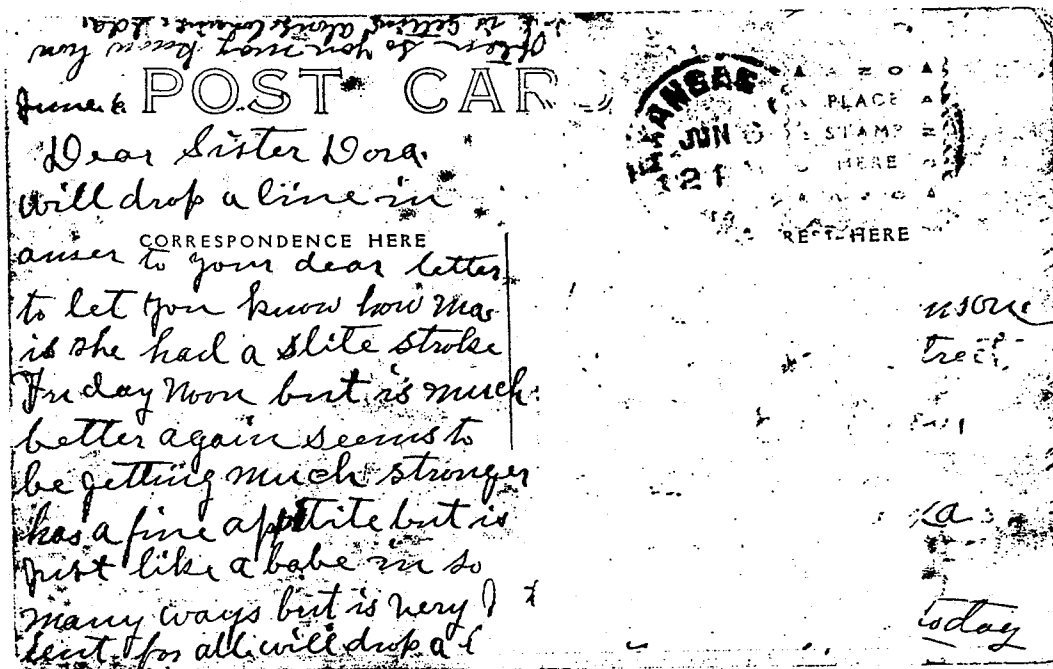
1885

The family has, by now, moved to Dexter Twp., Cowley Co., KS, and consists of Zephi (63), Harriet (61), W. Wallace (21), and Crump (18--probably should be 19).

1895

The census for 1890 is unavailable. In 1895 the family has the same members as in 1885, except that Aminzo's son, Guy Emmet (age 10) is also listed. Zephi was 73 and this was his last census. Harriet was 71. Wallace (32) and "Dock C." (30) were eligible bachelors, still living at their parents' home. Some details of this census are given in Table 2, following page 272.

or a later one (perhaps in 1914?). The card reads: "June 6. Dear Sister Dora. Will drop a line in anser to your dear letter to let you know how ma is she had a slite stroke Friday noon but is much better again seems to be getting much stronger has a fine appetite but is just like a babe in so many ways but is very... best for all. will drop a l...today...often so you may know how she is getting along, loveing, Ida."



While Harriet was at Wallace's home, ACM remembers her as a quiet, pathetic old lady, who had suffered a stroke and was partially paralyzed on one side. She spent most of her time in bed and was most appreciative of any small favor--like a flower. Each morning she took a bath in cold water, regardless of the temperature of the room. She smoked a clay pipe. I was told by the town historian, back in Centerville, NY, that it was rather a common practice around there in the period of time when Harriet was growing up for women to smoke clay pipes.

Marie Buck Metcalf recalls seeing Harriet a number of times after Marie joined the family in 1900. She describes her as "A sweet woman and a real Christian, who lived the old traditions." and as "An old-fashioned Bible-believer." MBM recalls her

Harriet Gould Metcalf's granddaughter and namesake, Harriett Elizabeth (Beth) Metcalf Ewry confirms (telephone conversation, 13 Dec 1987), that Harriet did, indeed, stay with Doc's family most of the time in her later years. Beth heard it said that Doc was her favorite of the younger sons and Wal' had been Zephi's favorite. Beth says that Harriet "just loved my mother," her daughter-in-law, Bertha Baker Metcalf. Bertha would place her where she could see buggies and wagons go by. Harriet did, however, visit Ida's and Wallace's homes on occasion and was at Ida's when she suffered her "first" stroke (1907?). Although partially paralyzed she could walk with the assistance of someone else and could also "walk" her rocking chair about. Harriet liked to show Beth some celluloid cards she kept in her trunk (the trunk later taken with her when she left Doc's). Beth would sit by her knee and they would go through the cards, as on one Fourth-of-July when she stayed home with Grandma, while the rest of the family went to a celebration.

Fernella Remmy Davison (pers. comm., 27 Dec 1987) says that she remembers seeing Harriet Gould Metcalf, her great-grandmother, only once. She was at Wallace's home, on this occasion, sitting under some shade trees and smoking her pipe. Young Fernella had never seen a woman smoking a pipe before and said she was "horrificed." That is all she remembers about her great-grandmother.

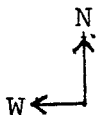
husband, Jack, relating that before breakfast in Harriet's household (Jack lived there on occasion) there was Bible-reading and people knelt before their chairs for prayer. CSM relates that Guy Metcalf was also high in praise of the Christian virtues of Harriet, his grandmother. He said he would wake up to her singing of hymns as she prepared breakfast (he, like Jack, lived with her at times). He mentioned, especially, her hospitality, a trait which her son, Hartley, also seems to have acquired (see below).

The following account from the Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 31 December 1914 (courtesy of Lena Davison Metcalf) reports the death of Harriet:

Mrs. Harriet Metcalf, mother of Mrs. R.L. Hudson, of 719 South D Street, passed away at the family home at 7:20 o'clock this morning. The cause of her death was paralysis and she had been an invalid for several years. A week ago last Tuesday she was stricken with paralysis and since that time had not regained consciousness. Mrs. Metcalf was aged 90 years and 10 months at the time of her death. She is a native of New York state. Besides Mrs. Hudson, the deceased leaves 6 children to mourn her death. One son W.W. Metcalf of Hooser, Kans. will be here to attend the funeral. The funeral service will be held tomorrow afternoon at 2 o'clock at the Hudson residence, conducted by Rev. C.D. Hestwood. Interment will be made in Riverview cemetery.

For many years the graves of Harriet and Zephi were unmarked in Riverview Cemetery. I am most happy to report that a stone was provided for them by Cecil S. Metcalf, their youngest grandson, in 1980. The graves are in the north-central part of the cemetery and the cemetery is in the northwestern part of Arkansas City. The graves are not side-by-side, but as below:

Esther Hudson 1826 8-4-1909	Lucy M. Metcalf 10-21-1884 1-26-1965
Harriet Metcalf 3-1-1824 12-31-1914	Guy Emmet Metcalf 2-2-1885 12-12-1964
	Z.B. Metcalf 1821 Jan 1896



Lot 19  
Block L North

## CHAPTER 9

## DE ALGEROY ADELBERT METCALF

Each of the children of Zephi and Harriet seems to me to have been very individualistic, rather unlike their parents and unlike each other. Such diversity among products of the same home intrigues me (see Chap. 17) and has been instrumental, to some degree, I suppose, in the decision to devote a chapter to each of them. Most divergent of all, it seems, was the oldest, Algeroy, born 8 October 1846 in the Town of Rushford, New York.

I am unable to ascertain the origin of his unusual first name. Zephi and Harriet's family Bible has "Algeroy A.," as does his gravestone. However, his own family Bible has "De Algeroy Adelbert" (see next page, courtesy of Duard Baldwin). Apparently this was what he considered the correct version of his name. From their appearance I judge that names of his generation in Zephi's Bible were not recorded at the times of birth but at one later time and by one person, perhaps Ida or Dora, and are thus less likely to be accurate. The name "Adelbert" was common enough around the area of Centerville, Rushford, and Lyndon where and when he was born. As noted previously, a Slocum cousin of Harriet named a son Adelbert Leroy. Gilbert (1910:328) lists Civil War soldiers with the names Adelbert Gould and Adelbert Hall, both born in 1845, the year before Algeroy. I noted a gravestone in Bates Cemetery, near Centerville, of an Adelbert Hatch, born in 1861. In my family, Algeroy was referred to as "Uncle Al."

Algeroy was the only one of his siblings to serve in the Civil War, and he barely made it, enlisting at age 18. Some information is available from his army and pension records (see Appendix). He served in the 118th Illinois (Mounted) Infantry, Company I. He enlisted at Quincy, Illinois, on 1 March 1865, and was discharged at Baton Rouge, LA, on 1 October 1865, just before his 19th birthday on 8 October. His time in the army was apparently neither pleasant nor heroic, as he seems to have been ill most of the time. In an affidavit of 15 August 1889 in his pension records, and signed by him, it is noted:

He further declares that he was sent from Camp Butler near Springfield, Ills, as a recruit to Baton Rouge Louisiana where said Company and Regiment were stationed, and soon after his arrival about the 1st of June he was taken with Swamp or billious fever and sore eyes--and was sent to the Regimental Camp for treatment, that his sickness broke down his constitution and caused him to have what was called bone fever or severe pains in his back and limbs That he was was confined at said Hospital all the time from the date of his admission to his discharge, not being able for duty, but he assisted a part of the time in cooking at the hospital. And said affadavit further says that he has never been restored to health since leaving the service, and has had the rheumatism more or less since he returned home until now of late years it is growing more severely upon him, preventing him from manual labour about half of the time.

Algeroy's father, Zephi, also attests (at age 71):

I am the Father of Algeroy Metcalf He lived withe me after the War of the Rebellion for 12 years and has lived a near neighbour to me ever since he left my House. And during all of the said time untill this date he has been afflicted as follows, With Desease of digestive organs Also Desease of eyes, Heart & Back. That he was a healthy man when he enlisted in the Army.

Zephi's affadavit must have been written in 1892 or 1893. It seems to have been penned by a notary but does have Zephi's signature: "Z.B. Metcalf." (Shown on insert after page 111).

Thus, Algeroy's career in the military is very reminiscent of that of his Uncle Lyman, discussed earlier, in Chap. 6. For whatever it is worth, I will mention a story told me by FMM, which might possibly put a different slant on Algeroy's back problems. According to this tale, while Algeroy was crossing a stream, the rear part of his wagon became detached. Having no better equipment available, and being strong, even though short of stature, he seized a tree branch and fashioned a crude hook from a crotch of the branch. Then, riding one of his horses, he managed to pull the wagon's rear parts free from the stream and, in the process, did some permanent damage to his back. FMM also recalls that Algeroy reported that once, when he was in the army, and was eating mince pie, he noticed something scratchy in it, which, upon inspection, proved to be a rat's foot.

# BIRTHS



De Algeroy A Albert Metcalf born  
October 8. 1846

Carrie A Metcalf born April 1. 1857

Flora A Metcalf born May 13. 1877

Ida O Metcalf born August 22. 1878

Ernest L Metcalf born September 22. 1880

Arthur C Metcalf born January 6. 1883

Amyes A Metcalf born April 6. 1885

Felix C Metcalf born October 25. 1887

Ida A Metcalf born April 28. 1890

Anna I Metcalf born April 28. 1890

Albert R Metcalf born January 28. 1896

Bertha E Metcalf born January 4. 1898

William McKinley Metcalf born Dec 21. 1899

Lancelot died August 19 1892

Algeroy's army records do affirm that he was short--5' 3" tall. It is stated in one place that he had auburn hair and in another that his hair was black. He is listed as having hazel eyes (hazel=light brown) and a fair complexion. His army rifle is said to be in the possession of the Sartin Family in Oregon.

When the Metcalfs moved on from Illinois to Kansas, in 1867, Algeroy would have been a 20-year old veteran. Perhaps he anticipated getting a good homestead out there and agitated to move on. However, Zephi's record up to that point indicates that he probably wouldn't have needed much urging to get up and move on, himself, and he had, of course, already traversed Kansas on his journey to and from Colorado. It may have appealed to him.

I noted above that Algeroy homesteaded a quarter-section, four miles NE of Erie, Neosho Co. (SW 1/4, Sec. 11, T. 28 S, R. 20 E) (Fig. 19) on 12 Aug 1870, and then turned around and sold it to a Narcissa Burris for \$1,000. I assume that this is the date when he "proved up" on the property so probably he had actually started homesteading 3 years before that date, when the Metcalfs first came to Kansas in the spring or summer of 1867.

Algeroy then acquired a quarter-section (NW 1/4, Sec. 34, T. 33 S, R. 8 E) about 2 miles NW of Cedar Vale, Chautauqua Co., KS, bordering, on the west, the county line road with Cowley County. I assume that Algeroy was reinvesting some of the money he had obtained from sale of his Neosho Co. homestead. He paid \$700 for the "county line farm." The deed is dated and notarized on 7 September 1872 but it was not registered at the courthouse until 21 April 1875. It appears that Algeroy just hadn't gotten around to registering it previously. However, two days after the deed was registered, he mortgaged the property for \$124, which probably explains why he needed to get the title straightened out then. I am puzzled by the timespan 1872-1876. Was Algeroy in Neosho or in Chautauqua Co. during this time or in both, on occasion? I suppose he was mainly still living at home because we have noted, above, Zephi's affidavit in connection with Algeroy's pension application in which he stated that Algeroy "lived with me after the War of the Rebellion for 12 years."

This 12 years would take him up to around 1877. However, he is not listed in the 1875 state census as living with Zephi's family. His address on his marriage license in August, 1876, is still given as Neosho Co., in any event.

Algeroy, then 29 years old, married Carrie Armina Cross on 2 August 1876. Carrie was born 1 April 1857 in Cook Co., Illinois. The marriage was performed by Justice of the Peace James M. Gaston, father of Mary Gaston, who married Algeroy's brother, Aminzo. The Gastons lived in the same section (NW 1/4) that Algeroy had previously homesteaded. Among Algeroy's pension papers is an affidavit attesting to the fact that he and Carrie were man and wife, written by Carrie's brother, E.J. Cross. It nicely shows what a boy's priorities (then and now) would likely be on a hot August day:

I know that Algeroy Metcalf, the soldier herein, and Carrie A. Metcalf the Claimant was married on the second day of August A.D. 1876. I did not see them married, but I started with them to the Justice of the Peace, whose name was James Gaston, but I took a notion and went swimming, before we got to the Justices place, but was always understood in the Neighborhood that they was married, and I know that they lived together as husband and wife from that date until the Death of the soldier, and that they was never Divorced.

It seems likely that E.J. went swimming in Four-Mile Creek, the closest creek to the Gaston and Metcalf farms. Perhaps some other youngsters were already gathered at a favorite swimming hole when the wedding party passed by and he just couldn't resist joining them.

There seems to have been continued interchange between Algeroy's and Zephi's families after Al moved west. Perhaps Al's presence out there was related to Zephi and his younger sons following him westward in 1881.

Algeroy and Carrie sold the south eighty of their county line farm to Louis Johnson for only \$100 on 9 April 1877 and paid off the \$124 mortgage, mentioned above, on the 16th.

Algeroy seems to have become well known in the Cedar Vale neighborhood and a few still remember him today (1977). He did

things that made his neighbors talk. For one thing, he wore his hair too long for their taste--shaggy and down on his shoulders--"like one of these hippies," Mr. Clarence Kaser said to me in 1977.

It seems impossible to characterize Algeroy as viewed by his contemporaries without acknowledging that he had a drinking problem. That, in itself, might have been forgotten except that he did things when under the influence that attracted considerable attention. According to Mr. Kaser he once chased off his entire, large family when inebriated. They sought refuge in the home of a Mr. Stocking. Mr. Stocking and Mr. Kaser's father then went to see after Algeroy and gave him some down-to-earth counseling. Mr. Kaser thought it might have had some effect on him as he didn't chase his family off any more. According to EHM, his exploits were passed on as legend in her (Hawkins) family, which also lived northwest of Cedar Vale. She said he would get drunk and discharge guns into the air on occasion. I was also told about Algeroy leading a bull to water and whenever it became obstinate he would "cuss it out" in a loud voice clearly audible to the neighbors. Well, just one more instance of our family getting mixed up with those bulls. I don't know if Algeroy's drinking problem was related to his physical ailments, mentioned above, or not, but perhaps they were.

All of Algeroy and Carrie's children seem to have been born while they lived on the county line farm. In 1902 Algeroy traded the remaining, north eighty acres of this farm (deed dated 26 April) to John O. Foudray of Dade Co., MO, for an eighty-acre Foudray property near Arcola, Dade Co. (deed dated 16 July). Prices of both properties are listed as \$1600. Another deed shows us that Algeroy also acquired a 160-acre farm, eight miles to the west of Cedar Vale, in Cowley Co., south of Hooser. He bought this farm from the firm of Baillet, Eaton and Spindler with deed dated 18 August 1902. Previously, a Mr. Stearman, who homesteaded the property and proved up on it in 1885, had lived there in a dugout. FMM recalls seeing Algeroy's family living in

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

No. Five

State of Kansas...

\$ 600 <sup>00</sup>

# First Mortgage Real Estate Note.

On the 1<sup>st</sup> day of September, Kansas, Sept 1<sup>st</sup>, 1902  
to pay to J. A. Greer, 1907, for value received, we promise  
J. A. Greer or order the sum of \_\_\_\_\_  
DOLLARS.

This Note is secured by first Mortgage on 160 acres in Decatur County, Kansas, and said mortgage is made a part hereof. Principal and interest payable at McCreary Decatur Kansas. The interest upon this note is shown by coupons bearing even date herewith, and if default be made in the payment of any interest coupon at maturity, then this principal note shall immediately become due and payable, and may be collected by suit at law at any time after such default.

Alfred B. Metcalf  
Carrie A. Metcalf

tents there while they were building a four-room house, 2 rooms down and 2 upstairs, about 100 yards south of the site of the old dugout. This must have been in the warm months of 1902, as FMM, born in June 1898, remembered this rather well. The oldest daughter, Flora, married Cleatus (Cleat) Remmy in this home in December 1902.

In March, 1903, Algeroy sold his Cowley Co. property to his brother, Wallace, and moved to his Missouri property, purchased the year before. FMM recalls being there as the exodus to Missouri got underway. A statement by Mrs. Agnes Metcalf Sartin notes: "On April 1, 1903, they started for Missouri, reaching Arcola on April 10. They came in covered wagon and horseback." Her sister, Anna, then about 13, who was walking along near the Kansas-Missouri border, always remembered that she found a nickel lying on the ground there--quite a sum of money!

The John Foudray property acquired by Algeroy was located about 2 miles northeast of Arcola (S 1/2, NE 1/4, Sec. 25, T. 33 N, R. 27 W). In 1903 he added another 75 acres, in the N 1/2 of the same section, to his holdings, paying \$615 for it. In 1905 he seems to have realized a nice profit by selling these properties for \$3,000 to J.R. Decker. (Properties shown in Fig. 21).

Algeroy then bought several tracts of land, mostly in Secs. 6 and 7, T. 32 N, R. 26 W, to total about 260 acres (Fig. 21). These parcels were located in hilly country about 3 miles southeast of Arcola and are partially covered by an arm of Stockton Reservoir at present. These were purchased in 1906-1908 and the Metcalfs lived there until 1918, in which year they sold these properties and purchased 40 acres, located 3 miles west and 1 mile south of Arcola (SW 1/4, SW 1/4, Sec. 5, T. 32 N, R. 27 W). This was on more level, upland terrain, unlike the properties east of Arcola, and referred to as "prairie." The property is presently (1982) occupied by the Grisham dairy farm. It is of interest to note that Algeroy got \$2,610 for his 261 hilly acres and paid \$2,125 for the 40 acres of prairie land! (Properties shown in Fig. 21).

Fig. 21. A part of northeastern Dade Co., MO, around Arcola. Township and range are indicated. One mile square sections are outlined with broken lines and pertinent section numbers are indicated. Roads are indicated with solid lines. Arms of Stockton Lake are shown in black to the right. Algeroy and Carrie Metcalf first bought, in 1902 and 1903, 154 acres in Sec. 25, about 2.5 mi. NE of Arcola (property "A" on map). They sold this property in 1905. They then purchased, in 1906 and 1908, four tracts of land in Secs. 6 and 7, ca. 2.5 mi. SW of Arcola (B). According to the legal records, this holding amounted to 261 acres. However (assuming 640 acre sections), I cannot account for so high an acreage from the descriptions given, and what I show at "B" does not amount to 261 acres. Finally, they purchased 40 acres in Sec. 5, about 3 mi. WSW of Arcola (C) in 1918 and 40 acres in Sec. 1, about 1.75 mi. SE of Arcola (D) in 1919. They lived on property "C" until Algeroy's death and Carrie remained there, for the most part, until her death.

Ernest Metcalf rented a farm in the SW part of Sec. 30, R. 26 W, from about 1905 to 1930. The house was located at "E," and its remains were still standing in 1987. It is, at this time, about a mile west of an arm of Stockton Lake. About 1930, Ernest's family moved to the farm indicated at "G," and Ernest died there in 1933. His wife, Susie, who lived another 20 years, resided, in her last years, just to the south, in the house indicated by "H".

In the early years of their marriage, George and Anna Metcalf Freund lived on a 40-acre farm indicated at "F," in Sec. 33. In 1918 they bought 160 acres in Sec. 6 (R. 27 W), also indicated by "F". The remains of their house still stand in the SE part of Sec. 6 (solid circle)

Algeroy, Carrie, Ernest, and Susie, together with a number of other family members, are buried in Arcola/Hickory Grove Cemetery, indicated by the cross, about 1.75 mi. S of Arcola, and just west of MO Highway 39.

Apparently Algeroy's behavior did not change much after he moved to Missouri. I pointedly asked informants there for some nice things to record about him but they didn't come up with much except to say that he did read his Bible. But then, I was told that his daughter, Bertha, had joked that he read his Bible with his jug within reach. His binges with the "jug" apparently continued and I was told of one incident in which son Ernest (then grown) was grazed by a knife that was wielded by Algeroy. Obviously, such episodes are more likely to be remembered than the less dramatic moments, and there is little to indicate what he was like, otherwise. One of the affidavits involved with his pension notes that he was "down in the back" and "half of the time has not been able to do a day's work." Maybe that was something of an exaggeration. Granddaughter Lea Metcalf Trent recalls Algeroy and Carrie each driving a wagon from their home west of Arcola to their son Ernest's farm, several miles to the east, to obtain wood. It seems clear that Carrie was no stranger to hard work.

I was surprised to learn that Algeroy had kept a diary. Unfortunately, it fell victim to mice, long ago. A photo that was taken by his son Ernest shows Algeroy with a big, drooping moustache, a broad-brimmed hat, coat and vest, and boots up to just below his knees. He was very fond of his white leather boots according to Evea Duncan Metcalf and Lester Freund and had both everyday boots and a pair for special occasions. According to Lester Freund, his daughter Anna said she saw him with shoes instead of boots on only one occasion. From the photo, I judge that Algeroy had a prominent nose and brows and that he had the deep-set eyes and darkish complexion of the Goulds as did some of his children and even later generations.

Algeroy died on 15 June 1921 as a result of renal impairment. FMM says the funeral was held in the yard of the family home, west of Arcola. The farm is some 3 to 4 miles from Arcola-Hickory Grove Cemetery. Lester Freund mentions that Algeroy's funeral was the first one in the Arcola community in which an automotive hearse was utilized. The horse-drawn members

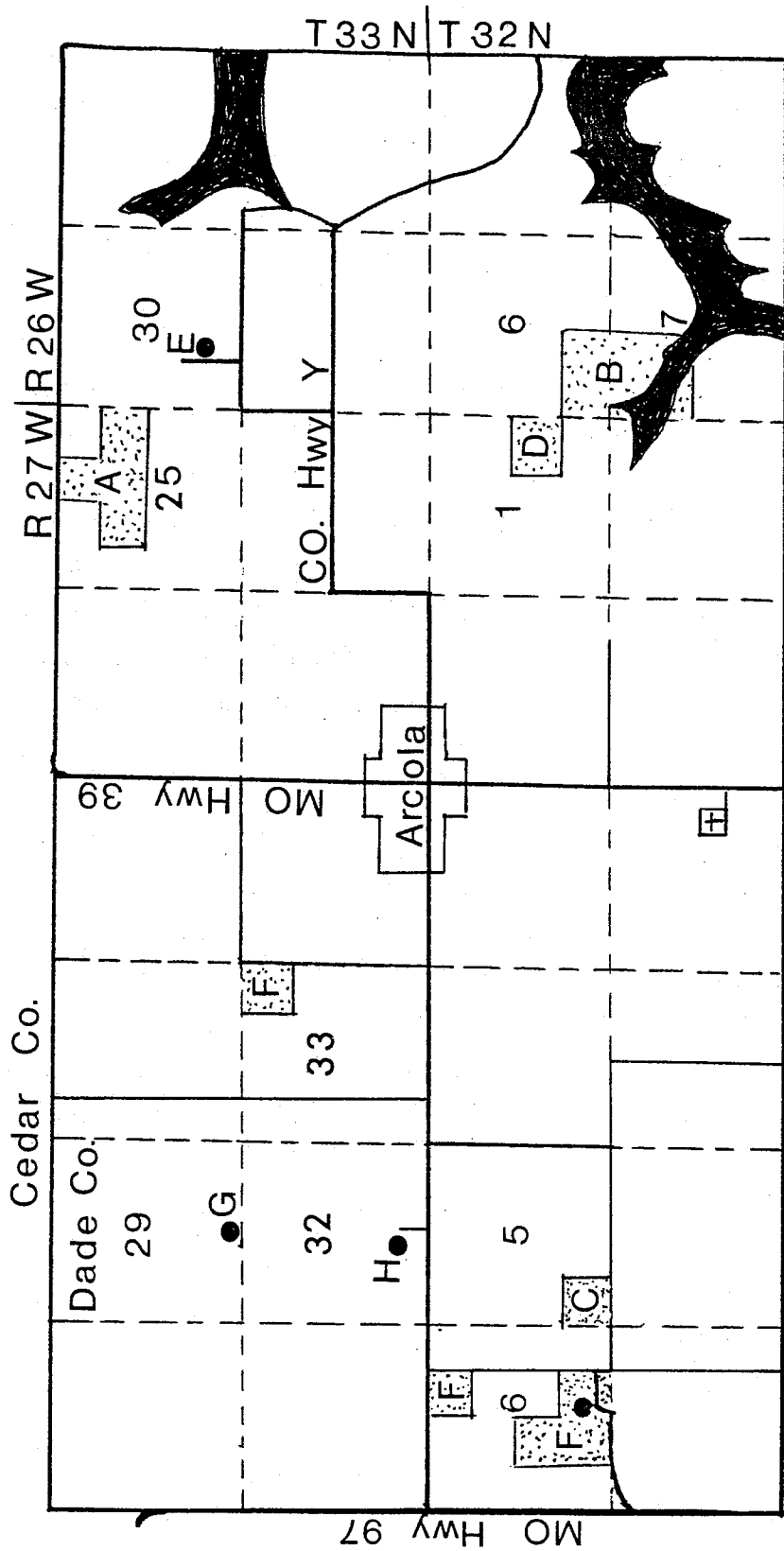


Fig. 21

of the funeral cortege reportedly complained about their inability to keep up with this new-fangled vehicle. Algeroy rests in the northwest corner of Arcola-Hickory Grove Cemetery, located 1 3/4 miles south of Arcola (Fig. 21.), along with wife Carrie and children Bertha, Ernest (spelled Earnest on the tombstone), Elbert and Felix.

When I was young I several times heard FMM tell of going to his Uncle Algeroy's funeral, perhaps his first trip so far from home. In a typical FMM story he said that there was a great outbreak of those tiny pestiferous insects called oat bugs that day and that he wondered whether all the red eyes were being caused by bereavement or oat bugs. On the way home, there were 8 people packed into Cleat Remmy's 1918 Dodge. Cleat careened off the road, at one point, badly mixing up the passengers. After that, FMM drove, but then the Dodge developed an electrical system problem and they could use the headlights only sparingly. As a result, they became badly lost and finally arrived belatedly back at Hooser by way of Moline and Cambridge, instead of by Cedar Vale, which they were aiming for.

Carrie was appointed administratrix of Algeroy's estate. A farm sale was held on 2 August 1922 with son-in-law George Freund as clerk. Farm implements sold from \$1.00 (a corn binder) to \$15.00 (a corn planter). Livestock sold better. One mare brought \$18.00 and another fetched \$39.00. The 4 cattle sold for about \$30.00 each. A stove brought only thirty cents and "junk" went for a dime. When all was settled up, Carrie had a balance of \$654.54. She had spent \$165.00 for a nice large memorial stone for the departed and for herself, although she didn't need it for another 16 years.

It is said that Carrie bore the vicissitudes of life with Algeroy with little outward show of protest. Evea Duncan Metcalf writes (in litt., 12 April 1982):

The only times I saw the Metcalfs were when they came to Arcola with her butter and eggs. I worked in a general store and they usually came every week--she bought their groceries with butter and eggs. I remember her telling

me...how she raised turkeys and when she sold them she bought Elbert and Kin new suits.... I think she always raised turkeys to sell to buy their clothes. Kin said he would follow the turkey hens to find their nests when he was little.

After the death of Algeroy it appears that Carrie blossomed forth somewhat. As she had available to her the pensions from both Algeroy and son Elbert (see below), she was relatively well off. She bought a carpet and some new furniture. She bought herself a suit and a hat and announced "I just feel more decent." She even bought cars (a 1929 model of some kind and, later, a new 1935 Ford), although she couldn't drive. Apparently she felt better about asking people to take her places if she could provide the car. Members of the family travelled out to Kansas in one of her cars to visit daughter Flora and other kin. Carrie retained her home west of Arcola. At some times various children lived with her there and at other times she lived with different children. She was with the Fesler's (daughter Ida's family) in her last years. She was an avid reader and wrote well. However, she developed cataracts late in life and became virtually blind. Thus, her will (Dade Co. Probate Office Document 3033, dated 12 April 1938) is signed with an X. In the will she requested that her estate be divided, share and share alike, among children and among grandchildren of deceased children. Carrie died 23 July 1938.

Carrie and Algeroy's oldest daughters, Flora, Ida and Agnes, all married men from the Hooser or Cedar Vale areas in Kansas. Flora and Cleatus Remmy, were, as noted above, married on the farm that Algeroy had bought southwest of Hooser, and which he soon sold to his brother, Wallace (Fig. 23 ). The Remmys continued to live around Hooser. In the late 'teens they lived on the "Wamsley farm," southeast of Hooser, on the road to Cedar Vale, and moved from there into Hooser, where they took over the Post Office and a small, adjoining store from Guy Metcalf. They sold out the store merchandise. Cleat continued to farm some and to work for ranchers and on the railroad until his death in 1927. Flora was postmistress in Hooser for 25 years, retiring

rather reluctantly in the early 1940's. Her daughter, Lela Remmy White, recalled that Flora liked to raise a garden and was a great one for remembering birthdays and providing birthday remembrances. A Missouri relative mentioned packages of children's outgrown clothing that she would send to them, and which were much appreciated during hard times. Lela recalled that she frequently read her Bible, a custom that seems to have been widespread in the Metcalf family in her time. I remember Flora as a kindly, soft-spoken woman. Her daughter, Lela, also has a renowned ability to remember birthdays and other dates. EHM recently showed me a page of the Dexter Tribune of 21 May 1926, indicating Lela as valedictorian of her graduating class at Dexter High School.

Ida and W. Jasper (Jap) Fesler lived near Hewins, KS, south of Cedar Vale, for a time. Later, they migrated, first to the Texas Panhandle, then to Missouri, and finally back to the Panhandle again. A letter written by Ida to her cousin, Dolie Metcalf, from Canadian, TX, in October, 1952, is provided in the Appendix. In it, she outlines the status of her family at that time. A cookbook, The Fesler Family Cook Book (Fesler Family, 1980), assembled by Alma Brown Fesler, contains a photo (wedding?) of Ida and Jasper and the following tributes to them:

Mom Fesler was a soft spoken, very gentle, timid, loving person. She loved her home, loved to read her Bible, and loved to sew and cook. Mom loved her children and helped raise her grandchildren. Each weekend there would be large gathering of the children and grandchildren. There would be lots to eat, and most all would take pictures. Mom loved pets--she had a large tom cat she called Tom and a little dog called Groch-O. She was a lovely housekeeper, loved to make quilts, did a lot of baking, but she always found time to hold the grandchildren and comb the girls' hair, and give the kind of love that a grandmother gives. Here is a few things that she loved to bake.

Pa Fesler was a large built man, and always happy. He loved to run races, play ball, play croquet, and was hard to beat pitching horseshoes, he loved all games. He was a good Christian worker, both in the Church, and Home. He enjoyed his family very much, and loved to help with the housework. At Christmastime he always made candy. In the kitchen you could hear him singing songs

LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT

of

Mrs. Carrie Metcalf

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN:

I, Carrie Metcalf, of the County of Dade and State of Missouri, being of sound mind do make and publish this my last Will and Testament as follows:

1st. At my death I request that my just debts and funeral expenses, including my last sickness, be fully paid.

2nd. I give, devise and bequeath all the residue and remainder of my estate, both real and personal, of whatsoever kind and wheresoever situated to my children, named as follows:

Flora Renny, Ida Fesler, Arthur Metcalf, Agnes Sartin  
Anna Friend, McKinley Metcalf, Bertna Baldwin, Ernest  
Metcalf and Adda Horton

to be equally divided among them share and share alike. The last two named children, Ernest Metcalf and Adda Horton, being now deceased, I request that their shares go to their children, share and share alike.

3rd. I appoint W. J. Fesler executor of this my last Will, revoking any former wills by me made.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, I have hereunto subscribed my name this the 12th day of April A.D. 1938.

Bertna Baldwin  
Jessie B. Collier  
Witnesses

Carrie <sup>her</sup> Metcalf  
muk

The foregoing instrument was at the date thereof signed and declared by the said Carrie Metcalf to be her last Will and Testament in the presence of us; who, at her request and in her presence, and in the presence of each other, have subscribed our names as witnesses thereto.

Ray E. Stapp  
E. O. Ball

Last will and testament of Carrie Cross Metcalf, wife of Algeroy Metcalf. She signed with an "X" because of failed eyesight caused by cataracts.

such as..."Turnip-Greens", "The Hunting Song", "Old Man Tucker", "The Great Speckled Bird". He was a great companion to Mom Fesler. We are going to give you some recipes of some of the candy Pa made.

Jap Fesler was, indeed, famed for his candy-making. His niece, Lela White, recalls that he sometimes sold it at fairs, etc. ACM remembers his delicious molasses taffy, and the cookbook contains his recipe for this and other candies. ACM once said "Oh, Jap could just do anything." He recalls that Jap loved to fish, his hometown of Hewins being on Big Caney River, and he was renowned as a horseshoe player. His granddaughter, Ida Christine, writes (in litt., 18 June 1986): "He was always full of fun and I'll never forget hearing him sing and play the French harp." In Dumas, TX, at lunchtime, one day, I found that Jap's son, Ralph, was also a good cook. Ralph worked for American Zinc Co. smelter, near Dumas, 1937-1972. He rose through the ranks to assistant superintendent of the smelter.

Agnes and Larry Sartin lived in a number of states, finally settling in Roseburg, Oregon, where Agnes lived until 1986, dying at age 101.

Ernest Metcalf married a Missouri girl, Susie Annie Green, and lived most of his married life in the hilly country, east of Arcola (see Fig. 21). They had 13 children and seem to deserve special mention as they left so many descendants named Metcalf. Family reunions of their descendants were held in Missouri in 1982 and 1984. The reunion of 1982 (91 in attendance) was reported in the Greenfield Vedette as follows: (See Appendix)

Sunday, June 13, was a very enjoyable day at the Jerico Springs Park when the family of the late Ernest and Susie Metcalf met for a get-together with their brothers, sisters, aunts, uncles, cousins, and friends. There were 13 children born to the Metcalfs. Ten are still living. Dora passed away 54 years ago from typhoid fever. Ivan passed away in infancy and Arnold passed away about one and a half years ago. This was the first time they had all been together for 29 years.

I was privileged to attend the 1984 reunion, held at Arcola. The ten living children were again able to attend. About half of Ernest and Susie's children migrated to the area around Manson,

AGNES METCALF SARTIN

A caption for a photo in The News-Review of Roseburg, Oregon, of 3 April 1954 reports:

Mr. and Mrs. Larry E. Sartin, above, observed their golden wedding anniversary March 20 at their country home. They were born in Cedarvale, Kans., and were married in Rodgers, Ark., March 20, 1904. They resided in Springfield, Mo., a year and then moved back to Kansas, their home state, in 1906. Their son, Otis, was born in Sedgwick, Kans. They moved to Wichita, Kans., and then to Oxford, where they made their home until they went to Idaho. After two years, they moved to California, where they resided 21 years. They moved to Roseburg in 1935. They have one grandson, Ronald Sartin. The beautiful cake was served with ice cream and coffee to relatives and friends calling to wish the honored guests many more happy years together.

Various relatives described Agnes to me, and they tended to emphasize the same qualities. Apparently she was a petite woman, spirited, stylish and the epitome of neatness.

Myrtle Gorton writes (in litt., 17 Dec 1942): "Cousin Agnes returned to Oregon last week....She is a very pretty dainty little woman and good Christian. I love her so much." Alice Mountain, who knew her in Roseburg, described her as small, vivacious, and colorful--"like a bantam rooster," (for when Alice knew her, in her 80's, Agnes, still sprightly as a bantam, kept her hair dyed red).

Fernella Remmy Davison remembers how shocked her mother, Flora, was when Agnes (Flora's sister) came from California for a visit in the early 1930's and got off the bus dressed in slacks, considered very daring in rural Kansas then.

From all this, one might suppose that Agnes spent most of her energy keeping herself pretty and fashionable. In fact, she was a working woman, exemplifying those numerous Metcalf women of an earlier generation, who already had careers outside the home. She worked at several places. Her niece, Lorraine Metcalf Taylor, worked with her, for a time, "on the line" in a battery assembly factory at Roseburg, OR. Alice Mountain notes that Agnes was always a "hard worker" and active up to her advanced years. This industriousness seems surely to have been shared by Agnes's sisters, as well.

Washington. Several others live in Arkansas and one in Oklahoma. Only son Woodrow still remains in Missouri, at Jerico (not Jericho) Springs. They seem to have done very well, suggesting that Ernest and Susie had given them the gifts of intelligence and industriousness. I noticed at the reunion that some of the daughters were busily cleaning up the tables, etc. while many of the rest of us were milling around snapping photos of each other. Ernest and Susie's daughter, Lea Metcalf Trent, told me something of the hard work in the apple orchards that confronted those who moved to Washington. Lea, herself, worked up to be a "crew leader," supervising a crew of apple orchard workers. Diligent work habits are also suggested in a letter from Ernest's daughter, Esther Cooper, who writes (30 July 1986): "I can't get outside & work, but I have made 23 quilts since the first of January."

Lea Metcalf Trent told me that Ernest liked to tell people, jokingly, that his potato field was so hilly that they could just put a sack at the bottom of the row and the potatoes would run down into the sack. Lea also mentioned that they might get mail only once a week. An important part of the mail was the weekly Kansas City Star, just as in my own younger years. The continued (serial) novel was avidly followed from week to week and Susie saved the weekly quilt pattern. A few years before Ernest's death, the family moved to the flatter "prairie" west of Arcola (Fig. 21). Ernest died at a relatively young age of 53, with two of his 13 children deceased, five married and six still at home. Like her mother-in-law, Carrie, Susie continued to live on a farm west of Arcola.

\* \* \* \* \*

Visiting the old Homesite of Ernest and Susie Metcalf with  
their son, Irvin

In June, 1987, I was happy to have Ernest's son, Irvin, take me down to the old homesite where he had spent his earlier boyhood. On that particular "day in June" I thought it was an

attractive place, indeed. People who had visited the farm a generation earlier spoke of how isolated it was, but today it is within a mile of a paved highway and scarcely over a mile to the east is an arm of Stockton Lake, a clear reservoir supporting many recreational activities. I saw several new homes in the area, built there, I suppose, by persons attracted by the lake and scenic hill country.

Clearly the farm had changed greatly. When Ernest came there around 1905 he had to clear the land in order to have ground for fields. This he did, but after he left, 20 years later, the process reversed itself so that a good part of the farm is in woods again. Irvin would say "we used to have a field there," pointing to a dense woods. Most of the west part of the farm (which Ernest rented from Mr. Decker) seemed to have reverted to woods, but the east part, north and south of the house, was still open and grassy pastureland or meadow. The old house still stood but was decaying. A well-house was nearby. This covered a drilled well, Irvin said, but Ernest had dug an earlier well by hand, which proved to be excellent source of water. The barn was gone. The site of Ernest's potato patch (mentioned by Lea Trent, above) was pointed out, on a slope between the house and a small creek below, to the east. On the opposite slope, beyond the creek, had been the Metcalf "truck garden."

I sampled a blackberry that had ripened alongside the road. It was sweet. No doubt, Ernest's family had utilized such wild berries and fruits--maybe even an occasional pawpaw. Irvin mentioned using the hazelnuts that grew there. Gouger Branch, now become an arm of Stockton Lake, probably yielded sunfish, bass, and catfish to young fisherpeople.

Yes, times have changed since Ernest cleared his land in the early part of the century. While we were looking the old homesite over, Irvin mentioned that his son, Steven, "L.D.", was in Austria, doing some work there in his capacity as a hydroelectric engineer. As a college student, L.D. had been the recipient of a governor's scholarship. His sister, Marsha, wrote (in litt., 20 May 1987) that L.D. "is assigned to oversee the

construction of a new hydroelectric facility being built on the Arkansas River at Ft. Smith." (L.D. is a mechanical engineer).

Marsha Metcalf Evans, herself, certainly deserves inclusion in my informal list of notable Metcalf-derived women, as one of the first women to become a locomotive engineer for the Missouri Pacific Railroad. She writes (in litt., 20 May 1987):

Being one of the first women to break in on the railroad was not a pleasant thing. I had to have a man's haircut before I could even start to work. I had been told so many times in my first few weeks that I couldn't possibly do a "man's job" that I think one of the main reasons that I stayed was just to show them!! I don't know about the rest of the Metcalf's, but all of us are stubborn.

Then, in a more humorous vein, she adds:

After all, what else would a girl raised on a farm in rural Missouri with five brothers and no sisters grow up to be? I think Diesel machinist and locomotive engineer sounds appropriate.

Another granddaughter of Susie and Ernest, Floretta Faubion Haggard, Ph.D., is a university professor in the field of chemistry.

And so it goes with the progeny of those dozen children, who once must have made the vale a much livelier place than when Irvin and I visited it that afternoon. This pattern of upward mobility is a recurrent one, encountered frequently in this and the following chapters. I suppose it is surely all for the good, but then it is interesting to note that it is probably just such affluent people, as many have become, who sometimes yearn for a more peaceful and rustic existence and who now come and build secluded homes around Ernest and Susie's old homesite.

\* \* \* \* \*

Like his sisters, Flora, Ida, and Agnes, it seems that Arthur Metcalf must have spent some time back around Hooser and Cedar Vale after the family moved to Missouri. At least, ACM mentions that he dug a well on his Uncle Wallace's farm (P. 276), and noted that the family gossip had it that Arthur, like his cousin, Guy Metcalf, was attracted to Wallace's pretty young

sister-in-law, Myrtle Sinclair. But Myrtle apparently only had eyes for Guy and Arthur sought out his bride back in Missouri. She was Lucy Duncan, from the Arcola area. Arthur and Lucy farmed in the Arcola area for several years and then around Garland, south of Fort Scott, KS. In later years they retired into Fort Scott. They left a good number of descendants, some of whom still live in the Fort Scott area and bear the Metcalf name.

Anna and Adda Metcalf were twins. Adda married William Horton. He was a widower, much older than she, and had daughters almost as old as she. They had one son, Virgil. Adda died when she was only 25. Anna married George Freund, originally from South Dakota. Anna and George lived west of Arcola on two farms (Fig. 21). Evea Metcalf mentions that the Freunds had timothy and clover pastures and raised fine black Galloway cattle. Both Evea and a grandson of Anna mention how dedicated she was to the farm and how hard she worked. It was noted that she loved company but hated to leave home herself. In her industriousness and dedication to the farm, she illustrates well some family traits that I suggest in Chap. 17.

Carrie and Algeroy's son, Oscar Felix, suffered a hunting accident in 1912 on the J.R. Decker farm, where he worked and where Algeroy's family had previously lived, northeast of Arcola (Fig. 21). Felix pulled his shotgun out of the boot of a buggy, barrel-first. It discharged into his abdomen and he died on the Decker farm, as a consequence of gangrene, several days later. He was engaged to a Rosa Baugh at the time. His brother, Elbert, died of influenza in the pandemic of 1918, while he was a soldier at Camp Funston, Fort Riley, KS. Felix had been interred in Arcola-Hickory Grove Cemetery (Fig. 21), south of Arcola, and a stone had been erected for him. Later, when Elbert also died, a double stone was provided for the two brothers. According to Evea Metcalf, the stone that had previously been at the grave of Felix was modified and transferred to the grave of Adda, who was mentioned above, and who was buried in Liberty Cemetery, to the northeast of Arcola. However, they retained the name Metcalf on the stone, because, I was told, the Metcalf family did not have a very high regard for Adda's husband. Today, the stone of "Adda

Metcalf" is the southwesternmost one in small Liberty Cemetery, now entered through a resort complex on the west side of Lake Stockton.

Bertha Etta Metcalf married Clarence Baldwin and they left numerous descendants, many of them still in the west central Missouri area. After the death of Baldwin, Bertha remarried, to John Boulware. Bertha and Clarence's son, Duard Baldwin is a minister in the Assembly of God Church.

McKinley (Kin), the youngest child of Algeroy and Carrie, married Evea Duncan, whose father was a bank clerk in Arcola. They remained in the general area of Arcola and Jerico Springs except for a few years in Kansas City. McKinley and Evea ran general stores at Newport and Cedarville, buying cream, poultry, etc. and selling a general line of merchandise.

Evea Duncan Metcalf presently resides (1987) on a farm southwest of Jerico Springs, together with members of the families of her children, Lorraine and Leland. They all exhibit the hospitality that still seems to linger on in southern Missouri. A genealogy of her own family (Metcalf, et al, 1972) compiled by Evea and some of her relatives, has served as an inspiration and model for a genealogical listing assembled in connection with this study of Metcalfs. Evea has also kept careful genealogical records of the descendants of Algeroy and Carrie, which were of invaluable help to me. She has also helped in updating them and in sharing much information with me, both verbally and in letters. She has, in fact, been a most faithful correspondent, recording in her letters the changing scene, human and otherwise, around "Jerico," whether it be spring:

Everyone else has been morel mushroom hunting for 2 wks. Have found more than usual. They all like to hunt them as well as or better than eat them. Lorraine took off 2 wks from work and went hunting almost every day. She has really enjoyed walking the woods and hills. (24 Apr 1986)

or autumn:

Everything is still green here. So very many yellow flowers everywhere--goldenrod and such. Sumac and persimmons have turned red and yellow. We have so many

I note with special interest that three of Algeroy Metcalf's grandsons became ministers: Willard Metcalf, Lester Freund, and Duard Baldwin.

Arthur and Lucy Metcalf's son, Willard, had a varied career during his earlier years, but he felt increasingly drawn into the religious work and ministry of his church, The Body of Christ Church. He helped in the founding of several churches. I visited with him when he was minister (Elder) of the Gospel of Peace Tabernacle in Chetopa, KS, in the mid-1980's, and more recently (1988) he wrote me that he was "starting a new work in Joplin, Mo," indicating that he is elder at House of Prayer, 108 N Joplin St. He has worked with his church in Israel on several occasions.

Lester Freund was the only child of Anna (Metcalf) and George Freund. He was ordained in the ministry of the Christian Church in the early 1950's. He was pastor at a number of churches in Missouri (including Arcola), from the 50's to the 80's, with a six year period spent in Alaska, where his family was involved in starting a church at Ketchikan.

Duard Baldwin is a son of Bertha (Metcalf) and Clarence Baldwin. He was in the South Pacific and in the Marine Corps in World War II, his unit being the first one into Guadalcanal and Bougainville. He was ordained as a minister in the Assembly of God Church in 1959. He was a pastor in various churches in Oklahoma, Indiana, Connecticut and in (Spanish) Honduras in Central America. Somewhat like his ancestor, Rev. Elijah Metcalf, he describes himself as being, at times, a "traveling evangelist." He was in Honduras "off and on" for some ten years and mentions preaching (in Spanish) in Chihuahua City in Mexico. When I contacted Duard in the summer of 1989 he was planning to travel to Europe, where he had been previously, to "work out of a Bible school." Clearly, these three cousins have spread their messages far and wide.

oaks and maples that are just beginning to change color. Looks like we will enjoy a very colorful fall. (27 Sep 1980)

In her letters, Evea frequently mentions large catches of fish (or catches of large fish) taken by members of her family. The area around "Jerico" seems to offer a good deal to the hunter and to fisherpeople. Back in the 1920's, Kansas cousins (ACM and FMM) came to visit and they always liked to talk about the fox hunt that their cousin, McKinley, took them on. The Kansas boys, not having been brought up in the fine art of fox hunting, Missouri-style, had trouble understanding what was going on. As I understand it, the hunters stayed in one place and listened to the hounds as they made their more or less circular chase after the fox. Considerable pleasure was derived from listening to the voices of the various hounds and ascertaining which hound was doing what. All in all, it sounds like a very humane sport. Perhaps even the fox enjoyed it, as Reynard seems to have been in little danger of being caught. On that trip, McKinley also took his Kansas cousins seining for fish. Probably it was on Gouger Branch, near Ernest's old home. Today, Ernest's son and daughter-in-law, Woodrow and Uthema, still enjoy fishing at this spot, except that now it is an arm of Stockton Lake. Woodrow hunts deer with both bow and with firearms and he knows where the turkeys run, come turkey season. It is interesting to note that much of this type of game and fish would have been quite unknown to Algeroy and Ernest's families in the early years of the century. Both deer and turkey had disappeared by then and were reintroduced and, of course, the large reservoirs, such as Stockton Lake, were not in existence then.

I have mentioned, above, that Algeroy and Carrie and many of their descendants are interred in Arcola-Hickory Grove Cemetery, south of Arcola (Fig. 21). However, Anna and George Freund and McKinley Metcalf lie at rest in Greenfield (rural) Cemetery, which is located about 3 miles south of Jerico Springs and not near the town of Greenfield.

\* \* \* \* \*

I once did a hasty count of the descendants of Algeroy and Carrie that I had a record of and counted 536. I am sure that the true total must come closer to 600 by now. Obviously, with such numbers, I cannot do justice to that branch in one short chapter. They need a book all their own. I am sorry that I had to leave so many richly deserving relatives out. I have just let my personal instincts run free and concentrated on people that I have had the good fortune to meet and talk with. I also tended to concentrate more on the older generation, as in all the chapters on the descendants of Zephi and Harriet. I have given more attention to families where the Metcalf name was retained so that some families, such as the large Baldwin family, for instance, are barely mentioned. I also tried to concentrate, to some extent, on the area around Arcola and Jerico Springs, which seemed a focal point for so much of the earlier history of this branch, and which is, to this day, I judge, considered something of an ancestral home for many. I suppose that many, now dispersed, remember the baying of the foxhounds and the taste of wild blackberries and hazelnuts, and sometimes they're drawn back to the "Jerico Picnic," a notable local festivity held annually for over a century.

## CHAPTER 10

## HARTLEY ANDREW METCALF

The following account of Hartley Metcalf (Anon., 1905:275) surely was drawn from his own statements. We are most fortunate to have such a document.

## HARTLEY A. METCALF.

H. A. Metcalf was born in 1849, in Cattaraugus county, New York, the son of Zephi and Harriet (Gould) Metcalf, who were natives of New York and came West early in their married life, living successfully in Wisconsin, Minnesota, Missouri, Illinois and Kansas, traveling to the last named state in 1867 by teams. In 1860 the father joined the Pike's Peak stampede, but after a short time returned to his home in Missouri. Their son Hartley accompanied them in their wanderings, and after securing a limited education in the public schools of the different localities in which they happened to live from time to time, became in his early manhood something of a wanderer himself on his own account, leaving home in 1872 for Colorado and arriving at Denver on October 11, 1873. He then drew a hand-cart from that city to Del Norte, accompanied by three companions, and in that neighborhood prospected for a time. In 1874 he helped to construct the toll road from Saguache to the forks of the Las Animas river, a distance of about one hundred and forty miles. The road passed through Lake City, which at that time

had not been laid out. Later he entered the employ of E. T. Hotchkiss in looking after his interests in the road and continued in that capacity several years. He also helped to build the first house on the present site of Lake City in 1874 and with his partner built and floated the first boats on Lake San Cristobol. In 1882 he came to Delta county and located at Hotchkiss, where he bought forty acres of unimproved land to which he has given his attention since, developing it into a fine little farm and making it rich and productive.

Mr. Metcalf was married September 20, 1880, to Ella May Hotchkiss, who was born near Denver, Colorado, and is a daughter of Enos T. and Hannah (Seele) Hotchkiss, natives of Pennsylvania, who were among the pioneers of Colorado. The father was one of the first settlers of the North Fork valley, while it was an Indian reservation and a part of Gunnison county. He took up the land on which the village of Hotchkiss is now located, in fact he laid out and started the town. He was for many years actively identified with the upbuilding of the place and died at his home in Hotchkiss in January, 1900. His widow survives him and resides here. Mr. and Mrs. Metcalf are the parents of six children, four of whom are living, as follows: Minnie L., Bennett A., Roy Z. and Monett G. Those deceased are Verne H. and Lawrence, the former dying at the age of eight years and the latter at five months. Mr. Metcalf is independent in politics.

Some amplifications and additions to the above statement follow.

Hartley Metcalf was born on 4 February 1849, during that short period of time when Zephi and Harriet had moved over to Lyndon in Cattaraugus Co., to the southwest of Rushford. His early years certainly must have been punctuated by the travels of the family. Zephi's trip to Colorado has already been discussed. Could his accounts of Colorado have had some effect on young Hartley, kindling a desire to see that mountainous land to the west, himself? However, according to Ellamae Burch and Marie Hurt, his granddaughters, Hartley left Kansas because of a respiratory ailment from which he was already hemorrhaging. He had been allotted only some six months to live by a physician. They say he medicated himself with the balsam of a tree available in Colorado and attributed the curing of his ailment to this medicinal sap. Carl Metcalf, a grandson, says the tree was one of the mountain conifers, but he doesn't know which one. The time mentioned for his travels from eastern Kansas to Denver seems very long. I wonder what transpired along the way?

The building of toll roads was an important aspect of the development of Colorado at that time, as this network of roads interconnected the various mining camps and towns, then flourishing. As noted, Enos T. Hotchkiss, an engineer, was instrumental in the building and maintaining of some of these roads. Marie Hurt (in litt., 7 September 1980) writes of Enos Hotchkiss, her great-grandfather: "He was a most able mining engineer and also a civil engineer, and his activities covered several states. For instance he built the very first flour mill in Nebraska--also did building in the Dakotas. Hartley worked for him on the toll roads in Colorado, and I imagine was a great help in handling the money involved because of his complete honesty--the money from the toll roads was silver and gold, of course." On at least one occasion, Hartley was robbed of the money he carried.

Enos Hotchkiss was born in Bradford, Pennsylvania, on 29 March 1832, not very far from Rushford, over the line in New

York, where the Metcalfs lived. In fact, one encounters the name Hotchkiss in the Rushford/Centerville area. Enos married Hannah Seele (or Jackson--the family used both names according to Marie Hurt) in Bradford in 1854. A son, Monett, was born to them in Pennsylvania in 1855. After this, the young family migrated west and in Colorado were born: Ida (1861), Ella (1863) and Charles (date unknown). Enos and Hannah Hotchkiss later parted, although most amicably. Enos seemingly received custody of Ida and Ella and they returned to Bradford, PA, about 1867, where they lived with their grandmother, Medosa Ackley Hotchkiss and an aunt and uncle, Mr. and Mrs. Bradford. Mrs. Bradford was the sister of Enos. They must have remained there some ten years because Mrs. Mary Hotchkiss Farmer (a Hotchkiss relative living in Hotchkiss, CO) has a letter from Enos, written 27 May 1877, to a young widow, Elizabeth McIntyre Cowan, to whom he had taken a liking and who, later, was to become his second wife. Enos writes to Elizabeth: "I intend to make you a visit before fall as I am going East about Sept. to see the folks....I received a letter from Ida and Ella.... They are getting a good education and my mother tells me they are good girls."

Hannah remarried, to a Mr. Hamilton, and they lived very well indeed in the Capitol Hill area in Denver. Enos remained on friendly terms with the Hamiltons and stayed with them on his trips to Denver (clearly these were people of advanced views, for their time).

Ida and Ella must have returned to Colorado around 1877. Perhaps they returned with Enos on the trip that he mentions in the letter, above. The obituary of Ida (from The Paonian, 9 March 1944--courtesy of Mrs. Marge Hanson of Hotchkiss) states that they returned in 1876. The obituary continues: "She taught school at Lake City for a time prior to her marriage, February 6, 1880 to John M. Smith of Gunnison. In 1882 they moved to Hotchkiss locating on a ranch immediately east of town." It is also noted that Ida was superintendent of the Baptist Sunday School in Hotchkiss for 20 years!

It is the impression of Marie Hurt that Ella had grown quite fond of her home and relatives in Pennsylvania and was reluctant to return to Colorado. Having returned to Lake City (Hinsdale County), it is, of course, natural that she would meet her father's employee, Hartley Metcalf. They were married in 1880, he 31 and she 17 or 18 years old. The couple continued to reside in Lake City for a time and their first child, Minnie, was born there on 1 August 1881. If my sources are correct, little Minnie's cousin, Ida Rae Thomson (daughter of Hartley's sister, Dora) was born in Lake City a few days later on 18 August.

An article in the Hotchkiss Herald of 7 April 1927, written by Mrs. Mattie Hotchkiss (and courtesy of her granddaughter, Mrs. Mary Hotchkiss Farmer) states:

The next year, 1882, many settlers came into the valley. Enos Hotchkiss and Samuel Wade brought their families. John Smith settled across the river from Hotchkiss, which place is now occupied by John W. Smith. H.A. Metcalf worked for Enos Hotchkiss as did Will and George Duke, and Ed Duke came in the fall, a boy of 16.

The arrival of Enos Hotchkiss and Hartley Metcalf in Hotchkiss, for the first time, is discussed in the account by Carl Metcalf in the next chapter.

Records of the County Clerk of Delta Co. reveal that Ella Metcalf had possession, in the early 1900's, of 40 acres in what is now the southeast part of Hotchkiss (NE 1/4, NE 1/4, Sec. 31). I did not search earlier records. Perhaps the property was originally in Hartley's name, as the above account (Anon., 1905:275) suggests. I suspected, however, that it might more likely have been deeded to Ella by her father, Enos Hotchkiss (I thought this because her sister, Ida, had a similar, adjoining property). The "40" occupies a most pleasant location on the North Fork Gunnison River, which flows, diagonally, across the property. The present bridge on CO Highway 92, over the North Fork, would have been on the property. The North Fork looks like

a great trout stream but Marie Hurt and Carl Metcalf both told me that Hartley was not a trout fisherman.

In 1902 Ella sold a part of the farm to a Wiley McMillan, who built a house, still standing, about a block west of the Metcalf home. The old Metcalf house itself is no longer in existence and its site is covered by corrals of a livestock auction barn (1980). (Seems like the family is always getting mixed up with those calves). Mrs. Freda McMillan Driscoll, now in her 80's, lived in the McMillan house as a girl, beginning in 1903, and the McMillans were, at that time, the closest neighbors of the Metcalfs. The Metcalf house she remembered as being a frame structure with three rooms downstairs, a small upper story and she thought they added on a room as Minnie, their daughter, grew older. Mrs. Driscoll was with the Metcalfs a good deal, as a young girl, and Ella sometimes cared for her. She recalled Ella as having a kindly nature and Hartley as being of about my height (5 ft., 7.5 in.) and a little heavier than my 140 lbs. She remembered him as being rather quiet: "Sittin' back, not sayin' much."\* Others have, since then, confirmed his proportions but his grandson, Carl Metcalf, remembers him as quite talkative, at least in his latest years, and Hartley, himself, in a letter quoted below, refers to himself as talkative. Mrs. Driscoll recalled the Metcalfs, like her own family at that time, as folks of modest means "not well off but well liked."

In the same vein, Marie Hurt notes (in litt., 7 September 1980): "I've always been told that Grandpa's and Grandma's neighborly concern were most generous" including "sitting up with the sick and rendering nursing service during the regular...epidemics of typhoid, etc. Since doctors were few and nurses non-existent in those days, the community had to take care of itself at these times."

The home of Hartley and Ella seems to have been an exceptionally hospitable one. According to Marie Hurt, the children would be sent uptown, in Hotchkiss, on holidays, with instructions to bring home for a meal any stranger with no place

---

\*Mrs. Driscoll may have confused Hartley and Ella with Ben and Susie.

to go. Oscar Hurt, from Kansas, was such a stranger and, as a result of such an invitation, he met Minnie Metcalf, whom he later married. I wonder if this practice of inviting in strangers was some legacy of Hartley's years of travel. Perhaps there had been times when he, too, had been a stranger in town. We noted in a previous chapter, of course, that his mother, Harriet, was also known for her hospitality.

Six children were born to Ella and Hartley: Minnie Laura (1881), Bennett Austin or Ben (1883), Roy Zephi (1885) and Monett Gould (1899). As the account at the beginning of this chapter indicated, there were also two children, Verne H. and Lawrence, who died young. Their dates of birth are not known.

Minnie married Oscar Hurt in the summer of 1905. Shortly thereafter, the newlyweds, accompanied by Hartley and Ella, Roy and Monett, travelled by covered wagon up to Parker, Idaho. Oscar hoped to set up a blacksmith business there but was not successful in this. Ella developed an illness and wanted to return to Colorado for treatment so the entire group returned to Hotchkiss in 1906. They seemed to remember this leisurely excursion to Idaho as an especially enjoyable one. After returning to Hotchkiss, they remained there for several years.

As mentioned in Chapter 8, Hartley made a trip back to Kansas in the spring of 1907 to visit his relatives there, whom he had not seen for some 35 years. At that time, Hartley gave Frank Metcalf (FMM) a quarter (which he still retains in 1980) and gave Art C. Metcalf (ACM) a dime (which he didn't retain). Perhaps Hartley also looked around in southeastern Colorado when he made this trip.

Some time between 1908 and 1910 the entire clan set out again--this time for southeastern Colorado. A deed in the Delta Co. records, dated 1911, shows "Ella Metcalf and H.A. Metcalf her husband of the County of Otero" selling the remainder of their property in Hotchkiss to D.M. Brock. Ella and Minnie seem never to have cared a great deal for Hotchkiss so I assume that the move away from there was not very traumatic for them. La Junta and Rocky Ford are in Otero Co., so perhaps the family

settled in that general area first. However, Hartley and Oscar homesteaded half-sections about 20 miles south of Lamar in Prowers Co.

#### A Visit to Hartley's Homestead

On 1 June 1987, I visited Hartley's homestead south of Lamar, courtesy of the Jack Bamber family, present owners of the property. From the Bamber's ranchhouse (Fig. 22-a,c), a ranch trail leads southwesterly to a windmill (w in Fig. 22-b), which is located near Hartley's homesite. From the area around the windmill, one sees the rock walls of his barn (b in Fig. 22-b) to the northwest at the foot of a low bluff and among some eroded pedestals of whitish sandstone. Closer inspection reveals that he incorporated these pedestals to form sections of the rock wall of the barn, ingeniously making the wall conform to contours of the pedestals. Northeast of the barn I could make out ruts of the old trail (Fig. 22-b) that led from the village of Two Buttes to the southeast to converge, to the northwest, with a trail from Springfield to Lamar. Mrs. Bamber and Mr. George Frank, a local rancher, informed me that there was still a stone marker along the trail, which originally had been placed there to indicate to travelers the presence of water near where Hartley built his home. The marker was incised with the brands of local ranches they said. There was a store, etc. to the northwest near where the trails from Two Buttes and Springfield joined. Lacking a railroad, Two Buttes would have relied heavily on wagons of the freighters as their transportation link with the greater world. After traversing the 20 some miles from Lamar, I suppose that freighters were happy enough to rest their teams and themselves at Hartley's place, overnight. This, then, was the reason for his large barn near the trail--to provide facilities for the freighter's horses or mules. No doubt this involved only a small number of freighters, whom Hartley must have gotten to know very well indeed.

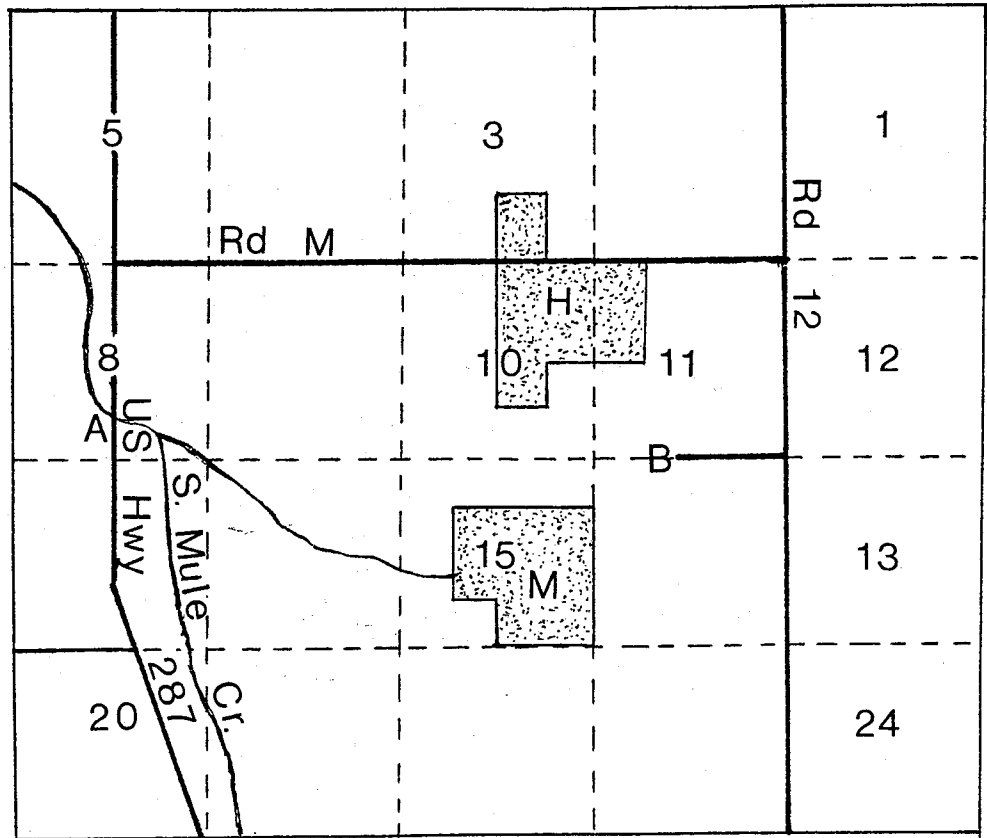
Somewhat secluded from view, if approaching from the barn, is Hartley's homesite (h in Fig. 22-b,c). It is nestled up against an ESE-facing sandstone bluff, which must have provided

Fig. 22 a. The area in Fig. a is some 22 miles south of Lamar, Colorado, in Prowers Co. The township is T. 26 S and the range R. 46 W., with key section numbers indicated. Sections (outlined with broken lines) are a mile square except for Nos. 1-5, which are oversized, N-S. Hartley and Ella Metcalf and H. Oscar and Minnie Hurt had homesteads here in the 'teens, acquiring title in 1917. Both homesteads were of approximately 320 acres. The Hurt homestead was to the north, in Secs. 3, 10, and 11 and is indicated by H. The Metcalf homestead was to the south, in Sec. 15, and is indicated by M. Access to the Metcalf homestead site is via the Jack Bamber ranch headquarters (B).

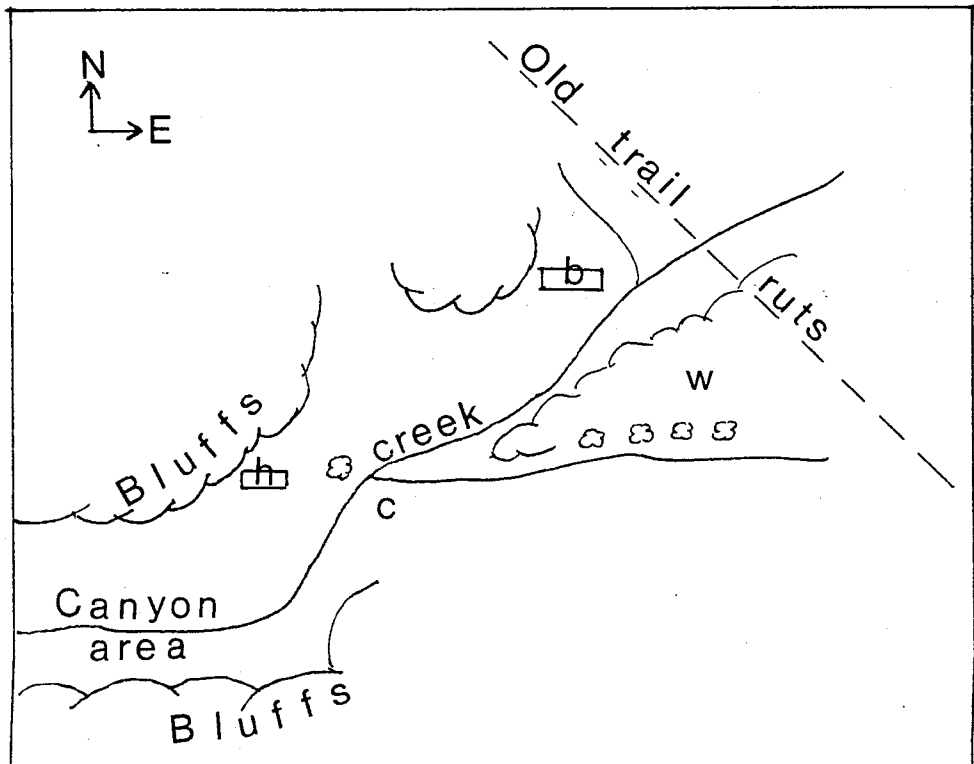
b. This map was sketched at the site on 1 June 1987 and includes an area in the extreme western part of the Metcalf homestead, located at the upper end of a southeastern branch of South Mule Creek. In 1987 some walls were still standing of both house and barn. The house (h) was built against some sandstone bluffs, to the west, and faced a small creek, to the east. A rusting Model-A Ford (c) reposed near the creek. SE of the creek, atop low bluffs, was a windmill (w) and several cottonwoods (good landmarks for locating the site). About 1/8 mi. up the creek from the house-site and near some lower bluffs and pedestals was the barn (b), and beyond it, to the northeast, were ruts of an old trail that connected Two Buttes, to the SE, with another trail from Springfield to Lamar. Hartley Metcalf provided some facilities for freighters on the Two Buttes Trail, as did another freighter and stagecoach stopover to the west on the Springfield trail and along present U.S. Hwy. 287/385 at A.

c. Details of Secs. 10, 11, 14, and 15 from a 7.5' U.S.G.S. topographic map. Hartley's property, in Sec. 15, is outlined with darker lines and his house-site is indicated by the arrow. Present trail by means of which access from the Bamber Ranchhouse (B) is attained, is shown (trail leads to windmill).

Fig. 22

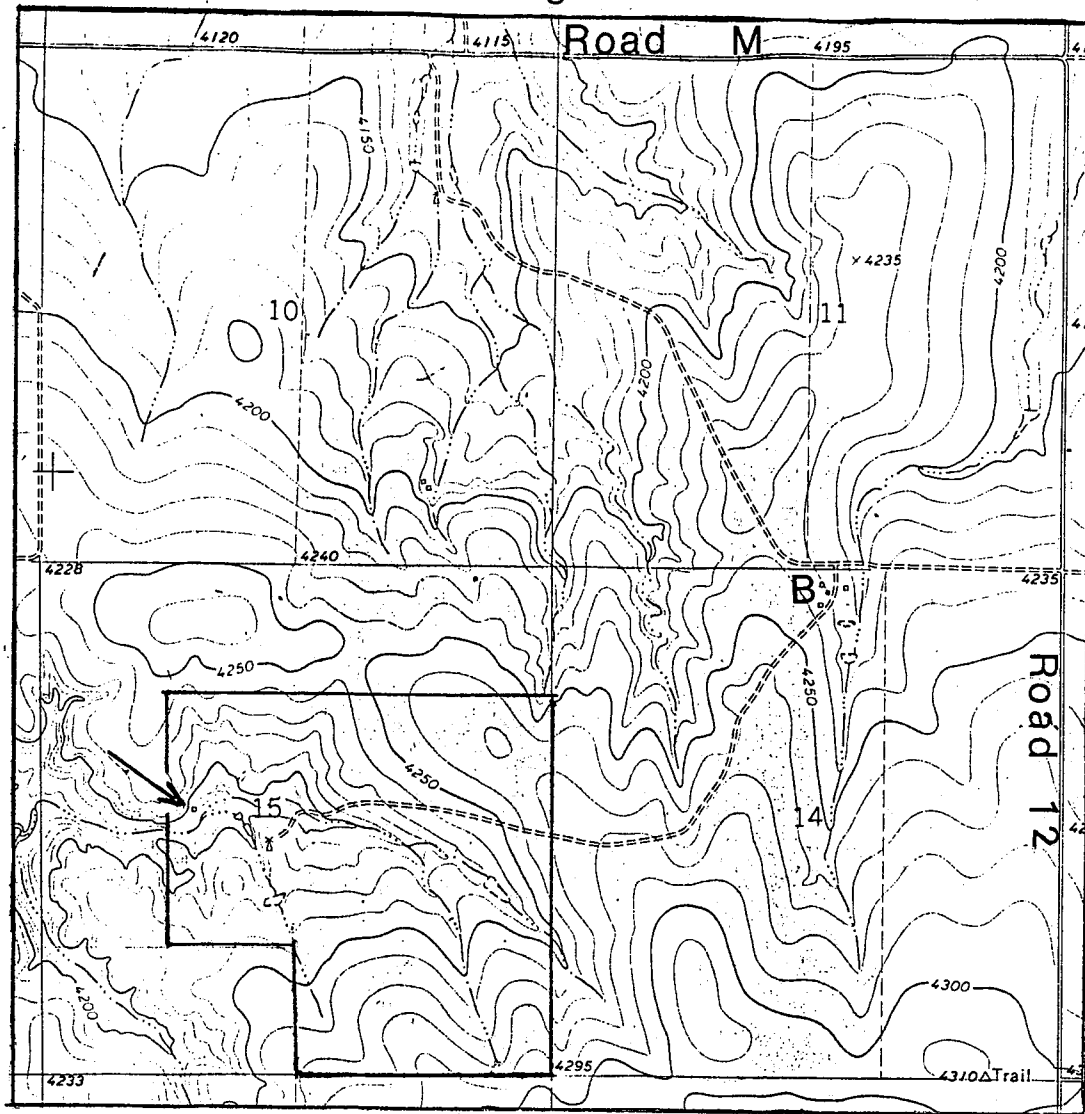


a



b

Fig. 22



C

some protection from the northwest winds of winter. As with the barn, some rock walls of the house are still standing, as well as a south-facing window, still with its frame. The walls still show very well their original structure, which was explained to me by Mr. Frank. He said that the local sandstone had fracture planes, which, when properly tapped, yielded straight-sided blocks. There were one or two skilled stone masons about, but whether Hartley employed one of these or not I don't know. Jerry Hurt thought that Hartley and Oscar probably worked together and did most of the work themselves in constructing their homes. There is a sandstone outcrop south of the barn, along the small creek (Fig. 22-b), which looks as though it might have been quarried for building blocks.

The walls of both house and barn consisted of a double row of stones, with mud mortar filling the spaces between the rows. I was fascinated to find some of the mortar still preserved, which I supposed that Hartley had placed there. Inside, the walls would have been plastered and then probably painted with calcimine of some color. Mr. Frank assured me that such homes were warm and snug in winter and cool in summer. According to him, in Hartley's day, it is likely that the roof was a complex affair. First, cottonwood limbs were laid to a ridgepole, and then willow boughs were laid at right angles to the cottonwood limbs. Then soapweed (yucca) stems were laid at right angles to the willows and atop all this was placed sod and a coating of clay, which was fairly (but not entirely) waterproof. However, this kind of roof was replaced by tin, when possible. Another possibility is that the roof was covered with tarpaper, as Marie Hurt has mentioned.

It appeared to me that the house had contained six small rooms. However, some of these could have been added after Hartley's day. A Mr. Jake Poe, employed by the Bamber Ranch, had lived there as a boy and up until the 1950's.

When I was there, it was a very appealing spot with newly greened prairie grasses as far as one could see. Yuccas and other spring wildflowers were blooming. Killdeers and Western

Kingbirds kept things from being too quiet. A three-fourths grown Rock Wren peeped out from under some stones. Perhaps its ancestors had known mine.

\* \* \* \* \*

Apparently Hartley didn't farm very much, if at all, and was mainly involved with the freighter trade. He and Oscar probably only did what was required to prove up on their properties. Hartley stayed out on the homestead most of the time, but Ella and Monett spent the school year in town so that Monett (some 11 to 18 years old during this period) could attend school. Hartley struggled to do his cooking, but was not much talented along this line. Once Marie Hurt came by one morning to find Hartley cleaning up his house with a mop and a bucket of soapy water--and he was angry and even swearing a bit--not his usual demeanor at all. It seems that his traditional hospitality had finally been abused, when he had allowed a group of gypsies to stay in his house overnight and they had left it in rather a sorry state. Carl Metcalf also mentioned that Hartley could use some salty language, on occasion, but that he hardly held a candle to his son, Ben, who could go straight from the table grace to language worthy of a muleskinner. (It is of interest, in any event, that the custom of saying table grace had been preserved).

#### Jerry Hurt Remembers the Homesteads South of Lamar

Later in June, 1987, with thoughts of my visit to Hartley's homestead still fresh in my mind I was happy to have Jerry Hurt provide some eyewitness information about life on Hartley's and Oscar's farms. Oscar and Minnie Hurt spent some time on their homestead, just 1.5 miles north of Hartley's (Fig. 22-a). Marie and Jerry, the two oldest Hurt children, enjoyed their childhood summers on the prairie. They spent one winter out there, as well, attending a rural school several miles distant.

At that time, there were still mounds of bison bones around, which freighters would collect and sell in Lamar at a fertilizer plant. Oscar's home, unlike Hartley's, was entirely a frame structure, poorly finished inside. It was heated only by a small

cookstove. Blizzards were fearsome and it took a lot of covers at night. Combustibles were scarce. Hartley and Oscar's family went out with a wagon to collect from the scant supply of juniper limbs, along the canyons, and supplemented these in large part with cowchips, picked up in the pastures. The juniper was used mainly to start fires. Hartley was an excellent woodchopper.

Hartley had a big cookstove with built-in reservoir, to keep water warm, plus a pot-bellied stove. Freighters liked to sit around this stove and tell stories until bedtime, when they retired to their wagons, or under them, to sleep. During very cold weather, they might sleep on Hartley's kitchen floor. At times freighters might come by when he was gone, use some facility and leave money on his table.

According to Jerry, one of Hartley's favorite stories, told around the pot-bellied stove, concerned his journey in a wagon train from Kansas to Colorado. The train had, as a member, a young man, hot-blooded to an extreme. He had a yearning "to kill an Indian." When, by chance, they came onto an Indian encampment, he brazenly shot and killed an Indian woman. Shortly thereafter, a large group of Indians surrounded the train and demanded custody of the murderer. He was turned over to the Indians, who removed strips of his skin, then let him run away--but he soon fell dead. Hartley avowed that he, himself, was on good terms with the Ute Indians around Lake City and Hotchkiss and sometimes made amicable visits to Ute camps.

Prairie fire was a threat to these exposed prairie farms. Both families plowed eight to ten foot strips around the periphery of their farms. Hartley had a windmill below his house, which supplied water to irrigate a garden along the creek. The Hurts had a "dry-land garden," and had to carry water from a well-pump to water it. Hartley also dammed a small spring that issued from the cliffs somewhere along the canyon, forming a pool some 10' x 15'. (I suppose that this was the spring indicated by the trail marker, noted above). In the spring pool lived frogs, which the young Hurts caught and the legs of which

Hartley would fry up for them. Less liked by the children were Hartley's frequent jackrabbit stews, which included whatever was available at the time. I gather from Jerry's recollections that an old jackrabbit can be tough even after considerable stewing.

Hartley had a few chickens and a milk goat so that he was relatively self-sufficient. The nannygoat could not resist butting the Hurt kids over if they happened to stoop, but she was, otherwise, a good pet and companion for them.

The Hurts were less self-sufficient on their exposed, upland location and had to rely more on supplies that freighters brought through--to Hartley's place or to the store to the west at the junction of the trails. Once they ran out of about everything and Marie was afraid they were going to starve to death. Jerry said that they put up a potato once as a joke "to remind us what a potato looked like."

The Hurts had a renowned shepherd dog named Towser--a fleet animal that could outrun jackrabbits. This was fortunate, since they were Towser's main source of food--table scraps being exceedingly scarce. Towser also ran down a coyote once. Oscar pursued them on a horse. When Towser overcame the coyote they were both so fatigued that neither could stand up. Poor Towser got caught once in a coyote trap that Hartley had set along the canyon. He was good at scouting for the rattlesnakes that were so abundant thereabouts, then and now. He was bitten on numerous occasions, but survived. Once Jerry came onto a rattlesnake without seeing it and had to jump over it. The children then surrounded it. This was about a quarter-mile from Hartley's place. He heard them and came and killed it with a walking stick that he carried.

Minnie once blew a rattler to smithereens with a shotgun. One night, in some sort of somnambulistic trance, she also blew a hole with the shotgun in a sheet hanging on the clothesline. It would seem that she would have found life on the endless prairie very different from that of the sheltering mountains that she had always known around Hotchkiss. However, she apparently rose to the challenge of being a pioneer woman. Jerry

mentions her riding across the prairie on a fine colt that Oscar's father had given to Jerry, his namesake. Her skirts billowed a bit, but she was a good horsewoman.

\* \* \* \* \*

Oscar seems mainly to have been employed in Lamar, La Junta and Rocky Ford, variously with the railroad and a sugar refinery. During this period, Roy met and married Nellie Whitaker, a schoolteacher from Two Buttes. Also, Ben married Susie Minder during these years, as recounted in the next chapter. Susie, Clara, and Sallie Minder all had half-section homesteads some miles northwest of the Hartley/Hurt holdings.

Hartley's brother and nephews, Wallace, Art C., and Frank, travelled through the area where Hartley had homesteaded on a trip to Colorado in 1925 and were shown the area where "Dad" Metcalf had lived, while they were visiting friends nearby.

In the summer of 1917, most of this close-knit family was off once again, this time from the Lamar area to Durango, CO. Ella drove her own horses, hitched to a covered wagon, with Monett also driving part of the time. Ella was very fond of horses and, as noted, she, as well as her mother, Hannah Hamilton, and daughter, Minnie, were all excellent horsewomen. The Hurts were not in complete agreement as to just which persons were in that covered wagon, although there seems to have been, in addition to Ella and Monett: Minnie, Marie, Jerry, Verne, Clair and Zorum Hurt and Nellie Whitaker Metcalf. Oscar Hurt followed later in a Model-T, probably accompanied by Hartley and Roy, and, of course, by Towser, who rode with his front paws up on a fender and his hindquarters on the running board. Ben, who was to marry Susie Minder in December, 1917, did not accompany the family. Marie Hurt vividly remembered the tortuous climb, by the covered wagon, up to Wolf Creek Pass, then higher than now, over the poor road of that time. Marie and Verne fell victim to altitude sickness atop the pass. A passing motorist noted their distress and offered to take them down to lower elevations. This he did and kindly waited there for the party in the covered wagon to catch up. A horse died near Pagosa

Springs, on down the road, and the entourage was stranded for some time there while a new horse was found and purchased.

The more or less extended family remained in Durango for about a year, then moved on to Aztec, New Mexico, not far to the south. Both Hartley's and Oscar's lived in Aztec, but in separate houses. Here, Oscar had his own business (general and auto repair), which long had been his goal. He acquired this business from proceeds of sale of the homestead in Prowers County. Roy and Nellie lived out of Aztec about four miles, close enough that the Hurt children could take occasional hikes out there. In Aztec, Monett met and married Zora Thompson. Ben and Susie came for a visit and their first child, Carl Bennett, appeared on the scene here, earlier than anticipated, on 17 September 1918.

Later, Roy and Nellie moved to Bayfield, CO, east of Durango. Ella spent some time as a housekeeper at Monte Vista to the east, around 1924. At about this time, also, Hartley made an extended visit to the family of Ben and Susie, then living at Del Norte, not far from Monte Vista. Hartley had been in that area years before (Anon., 1905:275). Carl Metcalf recounts some of his boyhood memories of the visit of his grandfather to their home in the next chapter. Hartley liked animals, according to Carl, and they reciprocated--even the most mongrel of dogs. Some photos show him with horses at an old settler's reunion at Pagosa Springs, between Del Norte and Bayfield. However, Carl Metcalf also noted that Hartley was a good hunter (if not a fisherman). He mentions his advice on bear hunting and he noted that Hartley brought down a flying crane with a rifle when he was 76 years old.

By the autumn of 1925, Hartley and Ella were living with Roy and Nellie in Bayfield, as indicated in a letter, which was the last notice of Hartley known to the Kansas Metcalfs. It was written to his niece, Myrtle Augusta Metcalf, a daughter of Wallace, in October 1925, and carefully preserved by her. The letter is as follows with some punctuation added for clarity.

Bayfield

Oct 20-25

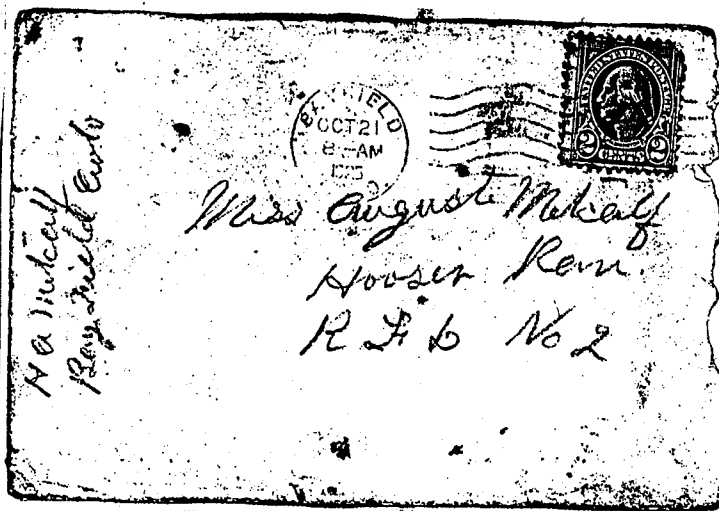
Dear Niece Agusta:

Your kind and welcome letter was duly recd and found me not quite as well as usual but I am feeling some better now. We have had a long rainy spell & I attribute that to my feeling poorly. I shure was surprized to get a letter from you & it was a happy one. How I wish when you were at Lamar that you could of come on over here. We used to live at Lamar Colo, 21 miles south. Last summer a year ago I was at Delnorte that is 107 miles east of this place. This is a pretty country here. The vegetation grows so rank. They raise all kinds of small grain here & also garden truck & a quite a lot of fruit a good many apples, raspberries & strawberries. It is a great potato country. Pine River is a great trout stream. Well I remember the Boys well I was there in 1907 & had a good visit but that is a long time you see. It harder for me to write if I run off the line you will have to excuse me. Oh how I would like to see all of you & have a good visit & I would like to see the rest of the folks but the last three years I haven't been myself but I thank God that I am able to do choirs & get around as well as I do. Well I guess that I have one good faculty left & that is talking. I can imagine those men Brothers of yours great large men that is the way that I can see them now. Your Aunt Ella & myself are at Roys that is where we make our home now. I will close for this time & hope that this will find all well & happy and God will bless you all and my love goes to all. Will the best to write your Papa and all & the next time you get near me get a little more gasoline & come on. Well goodbye for this time to all.

Uncle Hartley

Hartley seems to exhibit an interest in mileages between places. I suppose that this may have been a legacy of his years of walking across Colorado and working with the toll roads.

I visited Bayfield in August, 1980. A resident, Mrs. Eula Frahm, told me that Roy Metcalf had been employed by her father, George Taylor, as a freighter. She said he hauled such things as coal from the local mines, grain from the mill and supplies from the railhead at Ignacio, some miles south, up to Bayfield. He worked for her father 4 or 5 years and lived in three different houses: one in which Mrs. Frahm was living then at 301 Buck Highway, in another, now gone, near Pine River, and one on a ranch south of Bayfield. She said: "Everybody liked the Metcalfs but they didn't get out and mix with people." She recalled Ella and Hartley having stayed with Roy and Nellie.



This and the following page are copies of the envelope and of pages from the letter written by Hartley Metcalf to his niece, Augusta, given on page 187.

Bayfield  
Oct 20-25

Dear Miss Augusta  
your kind & welcome letter  
has truly read & found  
me not quite as well as usual  
but I am feeling some  
better now we have had  
a long rainy spell & I  
attribute that to my  
feeling poorly I should  
have been surprised to get a  
letter from you & it was  
a happy one how I wish  
when you were at Laramie  
that you could of come on  
over here we used to live at  
Laramie Colo. 21 miles south  
last summer a year ago  
I was at Belmont that is  
107 miles east of this place

I  
This is a pretty country  
here the vegetation grows  
so rank. they raise all  
kinds of small grain  
here & also garden truck  
& a quite a lot of fruit  
a good many Apples.  
raspberries & straw berries.  
it is a great potato country  
Pine River is a great trout  
stream well I remember the  
Boys well I was there in  
1862 & had a good visit but  
that is a long time you see  
it harder for me to write if  
I run off the line you will  
have to excuse me oh how  
I would like to see all of you  
& have a good visit & I should  
like to see the rest of the folks

Hartley died in Bayfield on 10 January 1926. He had been ailing for several years. As had his brother, Algeroy, he suffered from renal problems, in his case, kidney stones. Mrs. Frahm, who had formerly been on the cemetery board, told me where to find his grave and directed me to Mrs. Jewell Leplatt, who kept the cemetery records. In the record book we found only "R. Metcalf" (presumably for Roy), no date or other information. On the cemetery map we found written "Harlm. Metcalf," for the third grave to the west of the grave of William Patrick (with stone), in the southwest part of the cemetery (count three, after Patrick's grave). The grave itself had a small metal marker, but the plaque had been dislodged and lay, face downward, on the ground. It bore the words "Harem Metcalf." I got some tools and tried to fit the plaque back onto its post but it was futile. Then I remembered what at least one Metcalf, my Dad, would have done. I went to a nearby fence and found some good wire and I wired the plaque in place. I hope that some descendant in Hartley's branch provides him a better memorial some of these days. Still and all, Hartley does rest on a pleasant knoll, immediately overlooking the lush, green Pine River valley, which he described so admiringly in his letter and within earshot of the purling Pine River and its trout.

After the death of Hartley, Ella returned to Aztec. She obtained employment as a cook in a hotel there for a time. The Hurts left Aztec in February, 1927. I was told that Minnie had long wanted to live in California. She appears to have had a real "itching heel" like some of her relatives. They first settled in Huntington Beach. After a short time there, however, they moved up to Portland, Oregon. They remained in Portland about nine months. Oscar worked for the railroad and was injured there. The family then returned to northern California, living in Oakland for a time. Marie had employment in Oakland and remained there longer than the others, who returned to southern California.

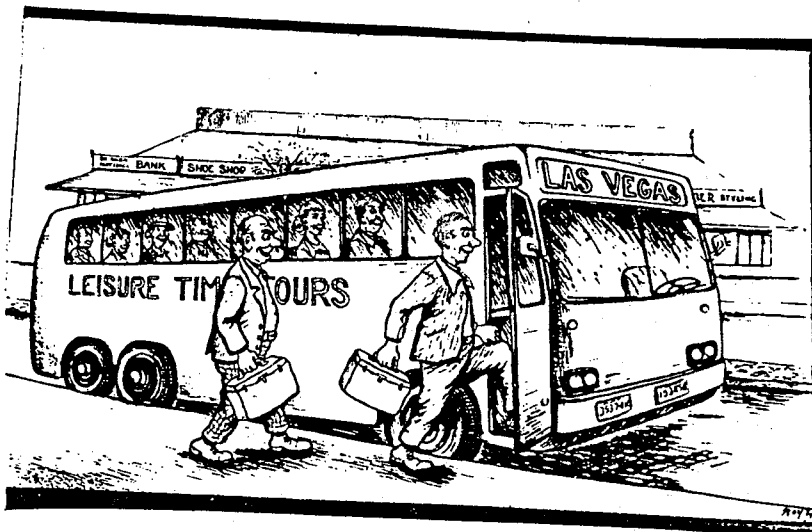
Ella and Roy and Nellie remained in the Aztec-Durango area for some time. Roy developed an encephalitis-like disease. At

the behest of Marie Hurt, who was associated with a hospital in Oakland, at the time, he sought medical help there. Ella and Nellie and Roy all came to Oakland and lived there for some years. Nellie was employed as a housekeeper for a prominent Oakland family (Davis). Roy was unable to work for the remainder of his life. After some years, Ella, Roy, and Nellie also moved to southern California and, still later, Marie Hurt joined the family there. Several members of the Hurt family set up a business, Hurt Enterprises, which was involved with installation of irrigation systems in the citrus groves. They were engaged in this thriving business for many years--in fraternal cooperation. Zorum was president of his own business, Mex-Cal Truckline, Bonita, CA. I should probably mention that the unusual names, Zorum and Zenus, borne by two of the Hurt sons, had been bestowed upon them by Minnie, who had known some Greek chaps with those names back in Hotchkiss and liked the sound of them. Zenus and Clair Hurt are both talented artists, excelling, especially, in cartoons. In looking at some papers belonging to Marie Hurt, I noted the following commendation pertaining to work done by her as a "Classification Analyst and Wage Administration Clerk" at the U.S. Naval Hospital at Corona, CA, during the wartime years, 1942-1944:

Her exceptional ability to interview employees and supervisors, outline pertinent allocating factors, write clear concise job descriptions, and set the correct pay for civilian personnel at this Camp has made her a valuable asset to this installation.

Minnie and Oscar Hurt eventually retired to Hollister, some 90 miles south of San Francisco, where they spent most of their last years. The move to Hollister was, again, at Minnie's urging but, once there, she was not satisfied with Hollister either. Oscar liked it, however.

Ella Hotchkiss Metcalf died on 1 August 1951, at age 88. Roy died in 1950 and Nellie in the early 1980's. Oscar Hurt died in 1967 and Minnie in 1968. Monett died in 1958 and Zora in 1980. Ella, Nellie and Roy are interred in Olivewood Cemetery,


A black and white cartoon illustration of three men in a field. One man is holding a large rock, and another is holding a long stick. They are standing in front of a small building with a cross on top.

**THANKSGIVING DAY BALL**  
**SAT. NOV. 24<sup>th</sup>**  
**IF YOU WANT YOUR**  
**FAVORITE TABLE MAKE**  
**YOUR RESERVATIONS NOW**  
**IN THE RECREATION**  
**OFFICE**  
**DONATION \$2.52**

A small illustration of a turkey.

A few of the many cartoons from the creative pen of Zenus Hurt, these produced in the 1980's.



**THANKSGIVING DAY BALL**

Riverside; Oscar and Minnie in Crestwood Cemetery, Riverside, and Monett and Zora in Irvine Cemetery, Orange County.

Further information about the families of Bennett and Susie Minder Metcalf and Monett and Zora Metcalf is given by some of their descendants in the next chapter.

\* \* \* \* \*

A pervasive theme in this chapter seems to be that of movement. This was, of course, a time of great east to west movement in the U.S. Thus, the Hotchkisses migrated from PA to CO, the Hurts from KY to IN to eastern and then to western KS, and Hartley, born in the Alleganys, died in the Rockies. This tendency to move about was exhibited in the progeny of Hartley and Ella, as well. Minnie and Oscar Hurt seem to have been prime examples of this.

There is a clear difference between the Colorado immigrant, Enos Hotchkiss, and his son-in-law, Hartley Metcalf. Clearly, Enos came to CO equipped with the necessary education, drive, and savoir-faire to succeed economically and to recreate a comfortable, bourgeois existence in the "wilderness," on the model of the one he had known in PA. Apparently, Hartley did not share these qualities, although one might think that he would have learned by observing and emulating his father-in-law. Surely Enos must have suggested to him opportunities and avenues that could have led to greater affluence. However, instead of increasing his herds and holdings in Hotchkiss, Hartley remained with only his 40-acre farm and eventually succumbed to the lure of moving on, once again, to the semi-arid plains of southeastern Colorado.

I am aware, of course, that someone will be thinking: "Well, money isn't everything." We have noted, of course, that the home of Hartley and Ella was noted for its hospitality and that they were ready to minister to the sick, when necessary. Marie Hurt noted that Hartley was a "gentle soul, kind and good." She, her brother, Jerry, and Carl Metcalf, my principal informants concerning Hartley, seemed genuinely fond of him, although Carl stressed rather different qualities: woodsmanship, love of the

outdoors and animals, an engrossing raconteur. Some of these qualities seem to show in the letter that Hartley wrote to his niece, Myrtle Augusta. I gather that Ella was of sterner stuff, although she is also affectionately remembered by her grandchildren. She was apparently more convinced of the benefits of disciplining children than was Hartley. I was told a story that she once administered a few licks with a horsewhip, which this horsewoman probably thought was fitting punishment, to a miscreant son, who had unnecessarily lathered a horse. Ella was extolled also, by descendants, as having been an especially good cook.

## CHAPTER 11

ACCOUNTS OF THE FAMILIES OF BENNETT AUSTIN AND MONETT GOULD  
METCALF

Descendants of Ben and Monett have collected, organized and written accounts of families of these sons of Hartley and kindly made them available for inclusion in this chapter. Authorships are indicated for each account.

A HARTLEY ANDREW AND BENNETT AUSTIN METCALF FAMILY ACCOUNT  
By Carl Bennett Metcalf

Hartley Andrew Metcalf and his sister-in-law Ida (Hotchkiss) Smith were both good story tellers, and could cause shivers to go up the spine of a youngster. They both gave similar accounts of crossing the plains and mountains to get to what was later known as Hotchkiss, Colorado.

When travelling by covered wagon through dry country, all available bedding and cloth items were laid out on the ground at night. In the morning all the dew on these pieces was wrung out into a barrel for water supply. After stopping the next night, the dirt in the water would settle enough by morning to skim off the clear water, to save in another barrel. Hartley also told of pushing a buggy wheeled hand cart through the mountains, to include going into the San Luis Valley in the 1870's.

While employed by his father-in-law, Enos T. Hotchkiss, a survey and road builder for Otto Mears, they built a road over Slumgullion Pass into what was later called Lake City. From Lake City a mining supply road was built over to Ouray. Apparently roads existed from there to Delta, and maybe on to Grand Junction, at least. In 1879, Enos Hotchkiss had scouted the North Fork Valley of the Gunnison River and decided on a homestead at the junction of what was later called Leroux Creek with the North Fork. The area was opened to settlers in 1881. Various conflicting accounts exist, but the story told by Hartley Metcalf was that the men laid on the bluff of present

Rogers Mesa (now the Hotchkiss graveyard) and observed the Ute Indian camp below. Possibly with Army troops (not mentioned by Hartley) the Indians were chased from the site. A papoose was left behind in the rushed camp, and was placed under a canvas shade in a wagon. No regrets were expressed about chasing the Indians out, but the settlers felt very sad about losing the baby, which died during the excitement.

Ida Smith and Ella May Metcalf had adjoining properties along the river bottom. Ida's daughter was the first white child born in the North Fork Valley. Bennett Austin Metcalf was born at Hotchkiss August 23, 1883. The remainder of this account is to clarify other writings (mainly by Art Metcalf) about Hartley's and especially focussing on Ben's famiy.

Events would place much of the Hartley Metcalf family in the La Junta, Colorado area around 1916 and 1917. At Lamar, Ben met and married Susie Minder who was an expert machinist in her father's foundry and machine shop. Mr. Minder had come to the area in 1910 to be a wheat farmer (but settled on the wrong side of the Arkansas River). The family of ten children carved the patterns, made sand molds (their claims were in the sand hills), and cast and machined the parts for a 30 foot long tractor with a 2-cylinder opposed, water cooled, gasoline engine, to pull 12 plow bottoms! When the crops didn't pay expenses, Mr. Minder distilled alcohol from them and burned it in his tractor and automobiles!

During one harvest, Susie was helping with the cooking and serving, and the women ate after the men were through. Ben sneaked up behind her chair and put his hands on her shoulders and made a smart remark. She threw her hands up and slid them down his sunburned arms and peeled off some of the skin. What a start for a romance! Ben and Susie were married December 20, 1917.

Sometime in 1918 most of Hartley's family had moved to Aztec, New Mexico, and Ben and Susie visited there where Carl Bennett was born (a month early) September 17, 1918. A month later Susie wrote her mother a letter from Denver.

Around sixty years of age, Carl (employed by Gates Rubber Company) went to Iola, Kansas, to start up some hydraulic hose manufacturing and testing processes. While there he found a portion of the old concrete wall of the Minder foundry and machine shop, in the Gas City suburb. Susie and two sisters kept the shop running and got national attention, after the remainder of the family had moved to Lamar. In 1911 the girls had carved the patterns, made the molds, cast the parts, and had done the machining on a "revolutionary four cylinder, water cooled, gasoline automobile engine." Coincidentally, this was a few miles from where Hartley and brothers settled and in an area where several Metcalf descendants still live.

Ben's family was in Lamar again until 1921, where Ellamae was born on September 6, 1920. A son was delivered there, stillborn, and was buried on a sandhill at McClintock's, which was Mrs. Minder's second marriage name. The family was in Blanca, Colorado, in 1922, Monte Vista in 1923, and Del Norte in 1924 where Carl started to school.

Hartley visited Del Norte in 1924, and then is when Carl heard so many of his stories of experiences that made chills go up and down the spine of a youngster. He could do many other fascinating things. His whistling was expert and he could imitate many bird calls, and get them to answer. He could whittle a chain out of about one inch square wood, and made, from willows, whistles that would make the ears ring, from their loudness. The dogs loved him, and he was very good with horses and mules--apparently from the highway building during the freighting days. Hartley was an expert shot, and brought down a whooping crane with the old Marlin 30-30 lever action rifle, at 76 years of age! Not so fascinating was his chewing tobacco and spitting into a coffee can, but it was interesting to see him aim at the can from several feet, or into the fireplace (no screens in those days).

Hartley also fascinated Carl trying to get him to chew his balsam tree sap (like pine pitch), and in his knowledge of home remedies. When Carl stubbed his toe in a school marble game hole

and flattened his nose, Hartley washed the nose off with peroxide, doused it with iodine, and taped it back into shape, with Carl screaming from pain, at six years old.

Hartley knew mountain survival tactics and taught Carl many things useful in later years in cow and sheep camps. He told of running so a charging bear would be heading downhill, then after being shot between the eyes a bear would do somersaults down the slope--"never get uphill from an enraged bear, or climb a tree, or you'll be a goner." In later years Carl shot many bears (not to kill, and be fined) to scare them away from the stock, and never had one charge. One night a bear chasing sheep skidded to a stop about five feet from running over Carl, but turned and ran back uphill when shot.

Hartley never failed to read his Bible for long periods every day (there was nothing else to read except the Farm Journal and Capper's Weekly), sometimes with the canary sitting on his shoulder. In the bedroom that Hartley shared with Carl in the adobe house with 18 to 24 inch walls, Hartley picked a spot for his bed where the sun would rise and come in through the narrow slit window to shine on his pillow. That was his alarm clock. He would whistle and the canary would fly to his pillow to get in the sun, and would seem about to burst, singing by his ear, while they "harmonized."

After brief jobs for Ben at Monte Vista, Blanca, and La Jara areas, the family settled a number of years at one place with a La Jara mailing address. His experiences as a tenant farmer got Ben the job of running a 160 acre place raising crops and feeding some cattle and pigs. Irrigation water came by request, and by allocation, from a canal from the headwaters of the Rio Grande river. Alfalfa hay, potatoes, and field peas were the main crops. Fresh meat came at butchering times, or from ducks or geese that came to the pea fields at night, and from jackrabbits shot while eating their way under the haystacks. All other meat was "liquid smoked" salted down pork. There were no ice boxes or refrigerators. Light came from kerosene lamps or gasoline Coleman lanterns, but there was a hand cranked wall

telephone, even if electricity and plumbing were unheard of.

While living on that Quincy Cornelius (owner of the Alamosa Packing Co. at that time) place, Ed Earnest was born on October 7, 1928, and Charlie Clyde came August 14, 1930, after the stock market crash that started the Great Depression. Ben's wages went from \$60 to \$45 per month, with a house to live in and a cow to milk. With plenty of cull potatoes (Ben's main winter job was sorting and sacking potatoes for market in the above ground adobe cellar that a truck could drive into), vegetables from the garden buried in straw underground, and with one or two butchered pigs, living wasn't too hard, for the 3 or 4 years there.

Ben got "itching feet" and moved to a Chromo, Colorado ranch to raise sheep. The school teacher lived in one room of the large 2-story house. With snow over the fence posts in the winter, the temperature at 32 degrees below zero, or lower, for a week and one morning at 52 below, the season became very long and confining and everyone got "cabin fever." Carl trapped for mink, muskrat, skunks, and weasels, plus repeating 8th grade at the one room school house, where the boss's son taught. Sawing and splitting logs for firewood finished filling Carl's schedule. Ben skinned and stretched the pelts (and kept the money to live on) and did cut some ice in the river and stored it in a log hut filled with sawdust.

Carl carved skis out of doorframe boards from a windowless, doorless log cabin. A butcher knife was his only tool, and the skis were complete with longitudinal grooves, and the bends were made in the thinned portion by soaking the ends in a wash boiler of boiling water and weighting and tying the tips until they dried out, set to shape. In his excitement to try out the skis one Saturday morning, Carl didn't finish cutting wood until the complete wall areas behind the high range was covered. Ben sat reading with his feet up on the open oven door and got "madder and madder" watching out the window and seeing Carl "waste his time in foolishness." When Carl was called in to finish his wood cutting first, Ben chopped his skis in pieces and burned them in

the stove! Even at 14, Carl cried because of lost months of spare time work, and no chance to learn skiing or snowshoeing which were common modes of foot travel there. Horseback or on foot were slow and laborious through several feet of snow, and bobsleds were used on the beaten-down road tracks.

By springtime, with the winter confinement, everyone was ready for the "loonie bin." Ben and Carl walked a few miles to Bob Henry's place and were hired for forty dollars a month, a converted double garage to live in, a range cow to rope, hobble, and milk, eggs, and kerosene for the lights. When the cistern and frozen pipes got repaired (a yearly chore), water no longer had to be carried from the river, and was from a faucet outside the door!

Before hiring the pair, Bob had Carl get bareback on a buckskin and go bunch some nearby cattle, and ride back again. When Ben learned Bob had really hired the "kid" and took the "old man" as a bonus, Ben left for hay and fruit harvests at Hotchkiss, back "home" again. This was after the spring roundup, fence repairing, and wild hay harvesting was over. Ben may have done some disk plowing before he left. Regardless, wages were cut to \$20 per month, but the family of five lived better than they ever did for those few months because Susie was handling the finances!

By the time the spring roundup was over, Carl was good enough at roping and tying calves that Bob wanted to enter him in the rodeo at Pagosa Springs, but time couldn't be spared. As wrangler boy, roping and saddling a horse at four o'clock in the morning and rounding up at least two horses each for the five or six Mexican and Indian cowboys, Carl really enjoyed his breakfasts, eaten before eight in the morning. When he got back on his horse (only one per day for him) he often got bucked off because the cowboys had put a cockleburr under the saddle blanket. After hours of dust, and smoke from burned hair and hide, during all the rounding up, cutting out, roping, tying, branding, and castrations, periodic breaks would be taken. While one man kept the herd punched, the others would dismount and

squat on their haunches, roll Bull Durham cigarettes, and blow smoke at "caved-in" Carl's face, trying to get him to join them in smoking. With all day spent that way (without a bite to eat), sometimes until eight a night, supper was heartily enjoyed.

When all the calves had been branded and castrated (to include some yearlings that had escaped previous roundups), attention turned to fence repair (even though Bob also had 50,000 acres of unfenced range--about 30 acres of mountain land per head), plowing of ground (with six "semi-wild" horses on a 12-disc plow) to sow a few oats, and harvesting of wild meadow hay. Three buckrakes on short runs, with an overshot stacker sometimes "buried" Carl and one other hand, sometimes Ben, or possibly the deaf normal ditch rider (irrigator). A refreshing noon hour "skinny dip" in the sparkling, rushing icy water (from springs and melting snow) of the river was a blessed relief, and helped prepare for more hours of sweating toil.

For a break from all the work, Bob and Carl took a hunting trip up to Navajo Peak. On the way they picked up Bob's son and he rode the extra horse brought along. They got several grouse (out of season, of course), and Carl got nothing shooting for the heads with a 22 gauge rifle. The grouse literally ducked the bullets! Going back to the ranch, Bob strapped on Carl his new cartridge/money belt, with two 38 caliber six shooters as a 15th birthday present, and sent him out to check the cattle on the "rocky forty" while Bob cut through to the house. When Carl came out to the highway, people driving by seeing two horses loaded with grouse, and an honest-to-goodness "kid" cowboy, fully armed, literally stopped their cars and gaped. When Susie saw all those grouse that had to be cleaned that night, and the guns, she got furious and made Carl take the six shooters back to the ranchhouse. The rifle was "standard" equipment, but the pistols were too much for Susie, because there had been three killings in the 150 person community in the last year or so, proving guns were not used only to protect stock from wild beasts!

Ellamae rode every horse she could get her hands on while at

the "Slash A" ranch, including some that Bob said had killed men by rearing and falling on them, or by bucking them off then stomping on them. Many would come running at Ellamae's call or whistle, and loved to run with her on their backs with nothing to hold to except their manes, being guided by pulling on the hair, knee pressure, or pats on the side of their necks! She was quite a sight with her long blonde hair streaming out behind. Carl was pestered every Sunday to go riding with her, after he had been doing it all week--she never tired of horsemanship, to include putting a seven-gaited stallion through his paces.

Within ten days of the birthday incident, Ben sent a truck for his family and belongings to move to Hotchkiss. From then on, Ben didn't run farms, but did odd jobs: pruning trees, spraying and picking fruit, haying, etc. Carl did some work with Ben haying and picking fruit. But most of the summers were spent in the mountains herding sheep, seeing a camp mover once per week, ten days, or two weeks. Only once did Carl leave his six shooter in the tent and leaned his rifle against a tree four or five feet away. A coyote came out of the timber less than 10 feet away and "grinned," and, of course, disappeared before the rifle could be picked up. Only tawny glimpses of lions were spotted. At night they screamed, but all that could be seen were eyes seemingly as big as saucers glowing in the dark. Shooting at those eyes never killed a lion, and seemed not to be too frightening to them. Many bears were shot, not to kill, but to keep them away from the sheep. It was easy to tell whether a kill was from a lion, bear or coyote.

Carl and Ellamae entered the four year high school at Hotchkiss three weeks late and were really "hicks from the sticks." Carl was in his first suit pants, cut down from some that were given him by a portly man. Ellamae was in a dress someone had given her, and she had one change, whereas Carl had none. His blue chambray shirt had to be washed, dried, and ironed overnight. As recalled by a friend some 45 years later, at midyear (even his senior year) Carl dyed his shiny-seated pants. They were cleaned in white gasoline. Carl also had his

first pair of oxford-cut shoes (given by Bob Henry), and pants legs up to his ankle bones. Shoe polish came from thrown away cans at the town dump.

Carl and Ellamae worked various places for their board and room during the school terms. In his senior year Carl took his \$6 per month from an NYA job at school to buy a clarinet; he was in the glee club, played football, and worked at a home two miles from school for his board and room. Sometimes he could hardly walk that far and then do chores after football practice. Proficiency in math and wonders opened up by vocational guidance studies, made Carl realize he wanted to be a mechanical engineer. Ellamae wanted to be teacher. They both were given scholarships at Grand Junction Junior College (later Mesa College). After one year there, Carl went to Denver to work, hoping to get money saved to go back to school--hopefully at the University of Colorado. Ellamae continued on at the junior college and taught a year in a one-room country school.

Carl and Ellamae were called home the last part of November, 1939, because Susie had a stroke. She was paralyzed on one side of her head and the opposite side of her body. Susie couldn't talk or chew, and within one week was gone--December 1, 1939. The Hotchkiss families donated a graveyard lot, and it was a struggle for Carl and Ellamae to pay for the funeral expenses, over several years.

Of course, on \$8 per week, up to \$12 in two years (and lucky to find any kind of work), Carl did little more than exist, but did buy a Model A for some \$65, plus \$1 per week tires. After a time he went back to Grand Junction Junior College to continue his interrupted education. The Model A was sold to help pay expenses and Carl invested in two 99 cent tires to put on an old bike from the basement of Uncle Adair Hotchkiss (he was Delta County judge for several terms). To support himself, Carl worked the four hour graveyard shift at the local newspaper office. Some studying could be done between answering phone calls to settle arguments on sports, etc., checking the lead pots on the Linotype machines, checking the furnace stoker, and other

watchman duties. From the newspaper office, Carl went to clean the offices of a heating and ventilating contractor, to eat breakfast at a home, then to his room at a teacher's house (where he also did some chores) before going on to classes. Afternoon chores had to be finished by 5:00 p.m. to get enough sleep before going to the newspaper office--a seven day per week job. That was the start of six to seven hours of sleep that became a pattern persisting even into retirement years, when he still required 3 "shifts" to get seven hours of sleep per twenty four.

In April, 1941, all classes, to include Civilian Pilot Training, were purposely dropped to enlist in the Army Air Corps. He was stationed in the U.S. for over two years, much of the time in the Denver area. He went to England as a draftsman at the reconnaissance and 3rd and 4th echelon maintenance base near Oxford. The men "padded" the maintenance records and some 200 engines started breaking down. Carl changed to supervisor of base maintenance and of utilities. He put two glider cases together for a shop, got a few "goldbrick" men nobody wanted and started maintaining and reworking those engines for auxiliary power units that were used to start planes, and to power generators and air compressors. When parts started failing on the 200 engines, he acquired a driver and they searched Engineer and Air Corps depots in the British Isles for parts. In this way, Carl saw much of England that most American airmen never saw.

Carl pedalled 16 to 17 miles round trip to Oxford three nights per week in a complete blackout (no lights anywhere) to attend the city College of Arts and Sciences. Sheepskin air crew outer clothing really was a necessity on some of those foggy, rainy, sleeting nights on a bicycle! (The purchase of which had consumed most of his first two monthly paychecks). Classes were in calculus, power sciences, and machine shop. Instructor in the latter class was a Mr. McMillan, superintendent of the machine shop at Morris Motors. After disclosure of playing golf with Mr. McMillan and of eating in the executive dining room of Morris

Motors, most of his previous civilian associates were alienated by a feeling of class distinction. A short Fall leave was spent taking courses at Balliol College of Oxford University under a "Yank at Oxford" program. In fact, there were uniformed men of all allied nations there, to include Polish officers. The wide-ranging discussions were VERY revealing and educational. Oxford dining hall etiquette was somewhat different from that in high-country sheep camps on the West Slope.

Because of length of service and other "points," Carl was rotated to the States after 18 months. He didn't want to leave, but had to go. After a brief stay at Denver, where he picked up a war surplus African campaign motorcycle, it was on to California, where he had many relatives to visit, and where he was assigned to Merced in the San Joaquin Valley. Here he was assigned as crew chief on 16 aircraft. Later, he was transferred to Bakersfield in the same capacity, but with a more willing crew of more professional mechanics than he had had at Merced. Carl had been a non-commissioned officer for several years but had turned down opportunities for officer training. However, while at Bakersfield, he finally accepted officer training and anticipated fulfillment of a long cherished aim of receiving aerial engineer training. The atomic bomb of August, 1945, ended prospects for that training even as Carl was on the train headed for Maxwell Field at Montgomery, Alabama.

After three months at Maxwell and Gunter Fields, Carl hitched a ride on a B-17 headed for March Field in California. Ben had passed away at Riverside at the home of Roy and Nellie Metcalf. He had taken a load of cattle from Debeque, Colorado for one of Ida Smith's daughters to market in California, and had eaten a big Sunday dinner. After the meal Ben excused himself to take a nap in the bunk house that his son, Charlie, was sleeping in at the time. He sat on the edge of the bed and unlaced his shoes after lighting a cigarette. It will never be known for sure whether he had a heart attack and fell back on the bed, or whether he just laid back, dead tired from all the night and day travel and playing cards with the train crews.

Anyway, the bed, bunkhouse, and most other contents were destroyed by the ensuing fire. Ben had to be cremated. His only estate was a tin suitcase with a few clothes, a fifth of whiskey he and the train crews (their "tip") hadn't consumed, and a deck of cards. His ashes were shipped to Hotchkiss for burial after services at the Arlington community church, which many relatives attended. Ben's death must have been November 8, 1945, even though at least Carl never recorded it where it could be found.

Carl rode his motorcycle back to Alabama to be discharged from the Air Corps on November 26, 1945. During his time in Alabama, Carl met his wife to be, Eula Lorene Howard. After his discharge there, he came back a year later, and they were married in West Point, Georgia.

Carl worked for the Bureau of Reclamation on the design of large gates and valves for the Big Thompson and Glen Canyon projects before being laid off during a reduction in force. Next came employment as an office engineer for Western Filter Company, troubleshooting by mail, using water analyses to pinpoint problems. Installation supervision trips were also made in Colorado and surrounding states. Besides, anion exchange equipment, pump packings, and tank lining materials were researched and developed. After a brief stint at Eaton Metal, a job was obtained as senior design engineer in power and utility fields at Gates Rubber Company and then as a project engineer in utility services, staff engineering, process equipment development, and manufacturing engineering on hose building and testing facilities.

At Gates Rubber Company regular assignments included specifications for complete manufacturing plants' equipment down to hand tools for maintenance cribs and management charts. Staff work was on yearly Denver facility engineering and maintenance budgets, five year plans for complete rubber division plants, evaluating diversifications from rubber and plastic operations, and overseeing designs, construction and maintenance on Gates family and some board member homes. Six months, being home every fifth week, was required to get the Galesburg, IL, hydraulic

hose plant operating. Similar stints at Brantford, Ontario, Toluca, Mexico, and Iola, Kansas, were of that type. Quick trips were also required. For instance, he was once dropped off at the Galesburg airport at night with the temperature 8 below zero, F. and with only a phone booth for protection until being picked up. That time supervision and management had to be shown how to operate the power plant boilers to keep the factory from freezing and to produce enough steam to finish out product runs that couldn't lay around while the plant was closed by a strike. Trips to Brantford and Toluca increased production on manufacturing equipment by 25 to 50 percent. Somehow, over a period of some 12 years, Carl was able to find time to accumulate the equivalent of four years of credits in mechanical engineering and management at the Denver branch of the University of Colorado.

Needless to say, most of the time at Gates was interesting and challenging. Thirty years were completed before retiring at 61 years of age. For Carl, retirement provided an opportunity for doing what he wanted to, when he wanted to. Neglected home repairs and improvement to include a solar system, helping the children, restoration of old cars, reading of accumulated books, and writing filled the years. Manuscripts were started on the solar system, on "Mommy G.," widow of the founder of Gates Rubber Company, and on various individuals that have lived from horse and wagon days to the age of reusable space shuttles.

Ellamae gave up full-time teaching for family and family rearing. She never lost her love for animals, though. All of her six children were "brains," and strictly individualistic, and they came by that naturally from both Mother and Dad. Her husband, Paul Burch, was a Riverside, CA, area cement contractor, and operator of a do-it-yourself building supply yard, plus owner of many rental properties. After Paul passed away, Ellamae sold out and moved to northern California, to an olive farm at Oroville.

At Riverside, Ellamae had kept teaching agriculture part time to students that would "get their milk from a carton and

their meat from the supermarket." Her departure from the Riverside school system brought tears to the eyes of faculty and students at her farewell party.

#### REMINISCENCES OF MONETT GOULD METCALF

(I) By Jean Metcalf Snider

Monett Gould Metcalf was born in Hotchkiss, Colorado, to Hartley and Ella Metcalf. He was the youngest of their four surviving children. As a schoolboy he lived in the communities of La Junta and Lamar in southeast Colorado. Monett told his children stories of the escapades of himself and his two chums: "Dusty" Hill and "Rusty" Carson, the latter a grandson of Kit Carson. He also fondly recalled his dog "Coalie," who was always fighting rattlesnakes and was often bitten. Monett went to work on the railroad in Lamar before he was 17 years of age. Here he received the nickname of "Dad." He was known by this name for many years.

After moving to Aztec, New Mexico, Monett met and married Zora Elizabeth Thompson. Zora was born in the town of Fort Garland in Colorado's San Luis Valley. Her father, a rancher in that area, was born in the fort, where his father was stationed in the 1860's and 70's. Three of Monett and Zora's children were born in Aztec: Bob, Jean and Doris. It was in Aztec that Monett learned the butcher trade. During this time he had an accident in which the tips of some fingers were ground off in a sausage grinder. While these were healing, he worked as a shepherd for a man named Tracy Hubbard.

In 1928, after living a short time in Bayfield, CO, Monett and Zora moved their family to northern California. Taking Roy and Nellie Metcalf with them, they went by way of Hotchkiss, CO, where they stopped at Aunt Ida Smith's. Jean, who was four years old at the time, remembers enjoying a delicious pigeon pie baked by her Aunt Ida. Another recollection was that brother Bob frightened her badly when he told her that the train, which ran just beyond the Smith property line, would

come across the field and get her. She was inclined to believe everything Bob told her and he loved to tease.

The family lived in Pittsburgh, CA, for a time, where their cousins, the Hurts, were located. They then moved to Tracy, where Monett worked for Safeway in the produce department of the store. He drove to Stockton at four o'clock some mornings to pick up produce for the store. The next move was to Richmond, where he managed a Safeway store. Here one of his duties was to drive to the warehouse in Alameda to pick up supplies to sell in the store. In 1932 the store was closed as a result of the depression and Monett decided to take his family back to Hotchkiss. They were preceded a short time by his mother, Ella. That winter was a hard one because of the cold and also because of financial problems. Relatives did what they could to help each other. Helen, the third daughter, was born in January in the home of Aunt Ida Smith's daughter, Medora (Donney).

In summer, 1933, Monett's brother Ben came from southeast Colorado to the western slope and in the fall moved his family to Hotchkiss. That fall Monett accepted a job with Piggly Wiggly (a grocery store) in Delta. After a few weeks he was sent to Safeway in Glenwood Springs. The next spring he was transferred to Delta and early the next fall to Paonia. In Paonia he ran the meat department in the store and often went out to the ranches and bought the beef on the hoof and butchered it himself with great skill and speed. Shirley, the youngest of the five children, was born in Paonia in October, 1935. Monett's son, Bob, and his cousin, Carl Metcalf, have collaborated below in describing Bob's summer activities at this time, when the family lived in the Paonia/Hotchkiss area:

In the summers Bob helped the Enos Hotchkiss grandsons (second cousins) restock and move cook tents for their sheepherders. A different bedding ground had to be picked out at least every third night by the sheepherders, since the herds of 1200 to 2000 sheep grazed over many square miles of range each day. The cook tent had to be moved after a week, ten days, or two weeks, and restocked with provisions at the new location. Of course, these locations were beside a potable source of water, often a spring.

Horses were ridden onto the range, leading other pack animals bearing supplies to be unloaded at the new tent site. Then the pack animals would be loaded with the cook tent, food boxes, sheet iron stove, and miscellaneous. At the new location, green sapling trunks or tree branches were cut, trimmed, and pounded (or dug) into the ground to set the stove on. The green wood seldom dried out enough to catch on fire before the stove was moved again. The drop-front (table) food boxes (cupboards) were metal lined to keep rodents and insects out. Even bears seldom got into the hasped fronts, secured with harness snaps. Cheesecloth covered the fresh meat hung in perpetual shade, out of reach of wild animals. At some 10,000 feet the cool weather kept the meat from spoiling, but in time it was almost like jerky that had to be soaked before frying.

The herder with his yellow slicker back pack (it rained almost every afternoon), his guns (rifle and six shooter), dog, canteen, and probably some reading material, was then located to get his list (added to every day) for the next supply trip, and to be shown where his cook tent had been reset. Any time, in case of emergency, the herder could build three fires close together, or keep firing three shots in rapid succession. Invariably some rancher or another herder or a forest ranger would show up. It took a certain type of person to endure (if not enjoy) that type of loneliness, and self-sufficiency.

Sometimes the sleeping tent was pitched upslope from the bedding ground, but the herder would have to take refuge under an evergreen tree, spreading his canvas-covered bedroll (no sleeping bags in those days) on a "mattress" of branches so the water could run underneath! Possibly the sheep would graze upslope on a moonlit night, and sleep would be interrupted by the bells ringing from the herd being driven back to the bedground by a bear, coyote, or lion. Pursuing and shooting at the glowing eyes of a lion bagged no game, but helped keep them away from the stock. Meals were prepared as soon as the sheep (out since daylight) bedded down around nine in the morning, and another meal had to be eaten by around three in the afternoon, before they started grazing again. Often a can of peas or tomatoes or juice, and maybe some leftover biscuits would be taken along for a later snack.

September 1939 found the family moving to Riverside, CA, where Ella, Roy and Nellie, and the Hurts now lived. Ben and his two youngest sons, Ed and Charlie, also moved to this area around December. Ellamae and Paul Burch came soon after. The main reason for making this move was that Monett, with five children in school, felt that educational opportunities were greater in California. He located in La Sierra community, buying a house with a good sized plot of land. He worked for

Safeway for a time and was then employed at feed mills in Arlington and Colton.

In 1948 Monett traded the home for some land in Washington but found life there unsatisfactory and the family soon returned to southern California. This time they settled in Santa Ana. Helen and Shirley were the only children living at home by this time.

During the next ten years Monett helped build the Southern California Bible College at Costa Mesa and became their maintenance man when the school opened. At the time of his death he was head of maintenance at Orange Coast College in Costa Mesa. He died March 18, 1958, of a cerebral thrombosis, after surgery on an aneurysm of the aorta. He was 58 years old. A letter written by the president of the college to Zora at the time of his death expresses how many people viewed Monett's character:

The lives of all of us at the college have been enriched and made more meaningful because of our association with your beloved husband. Every so often an individual comes into our circle of friends and associates who is someone we enjoy being with, appreciate as a person, and look forward to seeing each day. Such a person was "Met."

Across this campus there are a number of jobs done by "Met" and his crew that will long stand as monuments to his careful work and personal interest in the college. To me, the circular cut flower planting bed and bench will be a special memorial to his fine work. It was with many friendly exchanges of humor that this bit of improvement to the campus was accomplished by our dear friend.

Please know that we share with you and your children a loss that is real to all of us. Thank you for sharing him with us these few years.

Sincerely,  
William Kimes

(II) by Shirley Metcalf Patton

Dad was very tenderhearted, but tried not to let it show. He was artistic in whatever he did, and he was a great cook. He used to tell me to watch him and learn because he wouldn't

always be here to show me. One special memory is the trouble he went to when I asked him to help me with my first dinner for guests after I got married. I was in Virginia and he was in California. He wrote down every detail and drew pictures to show me what to buy and how to cook the best Swiss steak ever--MGM style.

(III) by James Snider

My memories of my Grandfather Metcalf are best described as seen through a kaleidoscope. Some are strong and some are weak and fuzzy. I was almost 11 years old when he died so my perception of the time is rather vague. The things that I remember are: calling him "Grandpop" or "Grandpa" and being told in no uncertain terms that he was my "Granddad;" the bar-b-qued ribs he cooked at the house in Santa Anna; the books that were in the back room of the house there. He must have loved to read because I remember that there were so many of them. I also remember not wanting to go to his funeral because I wanted to have memories of who he was.

\* \* \* \* \*

I (Art again) find the accounts in this chapter to provide examples of developmental stages in the history of the family, which were shared, to greater or lesser degree, by many members. Earlier, I mentioned that the family's history was a microcosmic reflection of what was taking place in the larger American society, and that seems well exemplified here, as we observe the last of Hartley, a frontiersman who had outlived the frontier. The situation with his two sons is an interesting contrast. Ben seems to have been trapped in a lower class rural environment and lacked the tools to escape it. Unlike Hartley, he never achieved the dignifying status of owning a plot of his own. Monett, a later bud on the tree, was able to make a transition to the urban economy. One suspects that he, himself, felt that he could have done better, however, if he had had a better education. At least it is noted that he wanted to move to

California in order to afford his children better educational opportunities and perhaps it was not entirely coincidental that he spent a number of his last years working on college campuses. His grandson notes that he had a good library, indicating that his horizons were being stretched. His father, Hartley, had, Carl notes, been content to have his Bible, The Farm Journal, and Capper's Weekly as his library.

A further step is shown in the case of Carl. There seems no doubt that he was endowed with superior qualities of intellect and ambition. However, in addition, he came to career maturity in decades, the 1940's and 1950's, during which there were, for many, opportunities for upward social movement. (In the preceding chapter, you may recall, emphasis was on geographical movement). If we subscribe to a nine-part partitioning of social classes, then we find ever so many families moving up one subclass over a ten to twenty year period. Thus, many Metcalf-derived families that were upper lower class in 1939 could have considered themselves lower middle class by 1959. Or maybe they climbed from lower middle to middle middle. Rather dramatically, we find Carl making a transition over about a ten year period from "kid cowboy" to taking a course at Oxford University. Truly it was a heady time, and a time when many of the descendants of Zephi and Harriet took advantage of the opportunities. Strangely, however, in those years, there seemed to be some reluctance to take on callings that demanded responsibilities of a political, managerial, or highly social nature. Perhaps this was a legacy from the likes of those old Salisbury Metcalfs, whose names were so rare in the public records. But now, I see descendants that are company presidents, and perhaps a brilliant lawyer or astute politician is budding from the tree.

## CHAPTER 12

## AMINZO DEMETRIUS METCALF

Aminzo Demetrius was born 9 July 1851 near Rushford, New York. I have no information concerning the derivation of his unusual name. In the family he had the nickname "Min." I always heard him referred to as "Uncle Min" in my branch of the family, and use the shorter form on occasion below.

On 8 March 1876, at age 24, Aminzo married Mary Catherine Gaston (age 18). The ceremony was performed in Erie, KS, by John Smith, J.P. A tintype of the couple, probably taken at about that time, is preserved by their granddaughters, Margaret and Ruth Metcalf. The James M. Gaston family lived immediately northeast of the Zephi Metcalf family in NW $\frac{1}{4}$ , Sec. 11, T. 28 S, R. 20 E. According to the 1870 federal census, James M. (age 47) and his wife, Laodice (age 39) were both born in Illinois. They had, at that time, the following children at home: Wesley J. (16), James C. (14), Mary C. (12), George C. (9), Thomas E. (5), Charles F. (3), and Nellie (9 mos.). In 1875, Charles F. was not listed (died?) and "Loyd," (age, 1 year) had been added. Places of birth of the children indicate that the Gastons lived in Illinois until about 1865-1867, then moving to Missouri, where Nellie was born, and finally on to Kansas, between September 1869 and July 1870. Mary's father was a Justice of the Peace, who officiated at the marriage of Algeroy Metcalf and Carrie Cross (p. 159).

In the census of 1880 (see next page), Aminzo and Mary are listed in Chautauqua Co., Jefferson Twp. Later they settled near Dexter, Cowley Co., where they acquired property adjoining that of Zephi. According to Land Office receipts of 7 August 1884, "Minzo D. Metcalf" made payment of \$200 for the N $\frac{1}{2}$  of NW $\frac{1}{4}$ , Sec. 22 and the S $\frac{1}{2}$  of SW $\frac{1}{4}$ , Sec. 15, T. 33 S, R. 7 E, his 160 acres thereby straddling the section line (Fig. 20c). Aminzo and Mary lived on the north-80 for several years, and in the 1880's there are still trees, stones, bits of glass, etc. to mark the homesite. At least their youngest child, Guy, was likely born there (1885), and on 14 September 1886 (date from

Summary of some census records pertaining to the family of Aminzo Metcalf, with much of the data provided by Lena Metcalf. The 1885 and 1895 censuses are state censuses.

1880

The family is listed as being in Jefferson Twp., Chautauqua Co., KS. This would be in the vicinity of Cedar Vale, near where Aminzo's brother Algeroy lived. The family consists of the following (ages are indicated as being "age prior to June 1"): Minzo (28, b. in NY); Mary C. (22, b. in IL); Dolie M (3, b. in KS) and John (age 1 mo., b. in KS).

1885

The family now lives in Dexter Twp., Cowley Co., KS. Aminzo is now 33 and Mary 24 (before June 1). In addition to the above children, there are now G.E. (=Grace Eleanor, age 2 yrs.) and G.E. (=Guy Emmet, age 2 mos.), both b. in KS.

1895

The 1890 census is not preserved. By 1895, Mary has died and Aminzo (43) is now married to Sarah Ann (Sadie), who is 28 and b. in IL. They lived in Creswell Twp., Cowley Co. in which Arkansas City is located. They are living on a 50 acre farm with 40 acres under cultivation, mostly planted to corn. They have two horses. Aminzo's children by his first marriage are listed, but it seems unlikely that they were living with him, as, in fact, Guy is also listed as being with his grandparents Metcalf in Dexter Twp. in the same census. The two oldest children of Aminzo and Sadie, Nellie D. (5) and Myrtle (3) are listed. In a city directory of Arkansas City for 1898, Aminzo is listed as a "clerk," residing on N. 13th St.

1900

Aminzo and Sadie are now residing at 610 N. Fifth St. in Arkansas City, and have 5 children: Nellie, Myrtle, Zephi, Lorena, and Dewey. There is some misspelling of names and the dates of birth of Zephi ("Zefa") and Lorena are in error.

Metcalf family Bible), Mary died there (according to FMM). Mary was buried in the nearby Dexter Cemetery.

Mary's story is a sad one. Married at 18, buried ten years and four children later, out in the Flint Hills, 100 miles from her own family, in a desultorily marked grave. Seemingly, like his father, Zephi, Aminzo was not much of a provider--not even of gravestones. A photo taken years later (courtesy of GMM), showing Aminzo and Mary's children at the gravesite, allows one to locate the grave with fair assurance. It seems to be just south of the elaborate, distinctive tombstone that bears the name LASEY in the north-central part of Dexter Cemetery. Marie Buck Metcalf writes (in litt., 10 Oct 1978): "Also my opinion Mary had a difficult life...no conveniences--very little money and not proper care when she became ill...years ago I heard some say she carried water from a well quite a way from the house."

On 12 August 1884, Aminzo and Mary had sold the south-80 of their farm to Harvey M. Kelly for \$212 and on 24 December 1885 they sold the north-80 to James D. Ward for \$425. Perhaps they had not yet vacated the premises or were staying on as renters in September, 1886, when Mary died there (if the Bible record is correct).

It appears that Aminzo moved to Arkansas City, KS, not long after Mary's death. In 1888 he remarried, to Sarah Ann Rector. Marie Buck Metcalf (MBM, hereafter) associates the early Rectors with Newkirk, OK, but some members of the family were in Arkansas City in later years and had a livestock feed, etc. business there. Sarah Ann was known as "Sadie" in the Metcalf family. According to the census of 1900 she was born in Illinois in February 1868. However, a document (probably more reliable) in the possession of her grandson, Mr. Robert Brakey, Jr., indicates her place of birth as St. Louis, MO. Sadie and Min had eight children. The 1900 census indicates that they lived at 610 N Fifth St. in Arkansas City. Their five oldest children had arrived by then. Min is listed as a "day laborer," who had been unemployed for three months of the preceding year. He owned his house but it was mortgaged. (I wonder what sort of relationship

## RECTOR RELATIVES OF SARAH ANN (SADIE) RECTOR

Sarah Ann (Sadie) Rector was the daughter of George and Minerva Rector. The 1900 federal census shows that George was born in TN and Minerva in IL. It appears that George moved to IL at some time, as the census shows four of his children born there between 1875 and 1881. In 1885 a child was born in MO, and in 1889 and 1891 two children were born in KS. In 1900 the family was residing in Kildare Twp, Kay Co., OK (southwest of Newkirk) and comprised the following members

<u>Name</u>	<u>Year of Birth</u>	<u>Age</u>
George	1842	58
Minerva	1844	55
John R.	1875	24
Samuel H.	1877	22
George C.	1879	21
Josephine	1881	19
Edward S.	1885	15
Rodney L.	1889	10
Frank H.	1891	8

George is listed as a farmer and all the sons, except Frank, were listed as farm laborers. In addition, there were at least two (quite possibly more) older children, Sarah Ann (b. 1868) and William Elbert, who was born in 1866 in IL and died in 1929 in Arkansas City, KS (int. Riverview Cem.). According to William's obituary, the Rectors had "come to Arkansas City 40 years ago." This would have them arrive in 1889, but since Aminzo and Sadie were married in 1888, it must have been a bit earlier--the census would suggest some time between 1885 and 1889 if they came immediately to Arkansas City upon moving to Kansas.

Sadie's brother Edward S. died 14 Oct 1905, and brother Samuel Heard (Hurd?), who was deaf, was killed by a Santa Fe train whose approach he did not hear when crossing the tracks at Newkirk on 14 Aug 1906. Father, George, purchased lot 93, Block B, in the Newkirk Cemetery, but only a stone for Edward is currently to be found there. It seems likely, however, that the parents and Samuel H. are also interred there.

Two sons of William Elbert, William H. and Harry E., were proprietors of the Rector Bros. Feed Stores in Arkansas City in the 1930's and 1940's. These stores were located on South Summit St. and on Madison Ave. Several of the family members were employed in the milling industry in early Arkansas City.

The above data were searched out and organized by Lena Davison Metcalf

Min had with his well-off sister, Ida, living nearby at that time?)

By the early 1900's, the sons in Min's first family were out on their own and one of them, Dolie, bought the west-80 of the old Zephi Metcalf farm, southeast of Dexter (Fig. 20c) on 30 August 1902 (W 1/2, NE 1/4, Sec. 22, T. 33 S, R. 7 E). Dolie bought this property from his uncle, Doc Metcalf, who had, in turn, purchased it from his mother, Harriet. Aminzo and family moved out and lived on Dolie's farm. ACM recalls visiting them there. I gather that Min did not do very well farming (again) because we find Dolie selling the property in 1908 (but, at least, he had made \$1,200 on the transaction). However, Min and Sadie seemingly spent some more years around Dexter, since the Dexter Dispatch of 3 February 1910 reports: "Mr. Metcalf will move near Arkansas City this week."

Back in Arkansas City, Min worked in the Dixon apple orchards. His brother Wallace's family sometimes visited Min's in apple time and brought back apples. ACM recalls battles with windfall apples, some a bit rotten, engaged in by the sons of Min and Wal. ACM also remembers that, in addition to apples, the country boys also picked up some new "cusswords" from their city cousins no doubt enriching their vocabularies.

Still later, Aminzo left Arkansas City and moved to Caney, Montgomery Co., KS, finding employment in the brickyards there. Ralph Nellis, a grandson, recalls that Min also worked as a glass-blower there. Ralph has a vivid memory of seeing his long-mustachioed grandfather blowing glass at his place of employment. This was around 1920 and he thought Min was doing rather well financially by then. However, this period of gainful employment came to a halt when he and Sadie parted.

Notes that I took from a telephone conversation with Sadie and Min's youngest daughter, Violet Metcalf Grayum, in September 1980 are as follows (Violet died not long thereafter): Min's sister, Dora Metcalf Thomson, living in El Paso, came to see her brother and persuaded him to go back to El Paso with her. According to Violet he departed and left Sadie and the three

youngest children with no means of support. Later he wanted to come back but Sadie refused and so Min settled in Bartlesville, OK, where sons Dolie and Jack lived. The older children of Sadie and Min helped her out at first and later she, herself, worked. Son Beryl had pneumonia once and Min was allowed to come up and see him but that was the only time that Sadie allowed him back in the house.

The above, then, was Violet's assessment of the period. Marie Buck Metcalf (MBM) recalled that Min's sister, Dora, did come up and seemed to have taken Min's side in things. Insofar as I can tell, Dora had been away from Kansas for some 40 years so she probably had a very poor grasp of what was going on with her relatives there. FMM confirms that Min did, indeed, go to El Paso but that he didn't stay long, returning with criticism of my city of residence, as have many others. Possibly on this same trip, Min spent some time with son Jack's family, then living at Mission, TX, in the lower Rio Grande Valley. The break-up between Min and Sadie must have taken place in the fall of 1921. Photos taken by FMM on 21 August 1921 show Min and Sadie still together, at Caney. Dora's long visit was later in the fall of that year. Another photo, taken in the autumn of 1923, shows Min and Sadie and parts of families I and II, all together. This photo was taken at a time when Min and three of his children from the first family stopped in Caney on their way to Winfield and is further discussed, below. (I should imagine that the atmosphere was a bit tense during this visit).

I have mentioned that Min seemed not to have been a very good "provider." MBM noted that "Min just didn't know how to use money." Surely he didn't need 12 children, with such limited financial resources as he had. MBM thought that he was quite self-centered. (But aren't we all?) The numerous photos available surely suggest that he liked to dress up and have his picture taken. He must have resembled his sister, Ida, in this respect. I see nice suits, a "hankie" in his suit coat pocket, a black bow tie, a sinister-looking Min in a trenchcoat. Altogether, in his photos, he strikes me as rather a dapper

fellow. GMM remembers him as "a proud-acting person," and said that she liked her grandfather.

After settling in Bartlesville, Min made a living operating a small restaurant, featuring hamburgers for a nickel each. His brother, Wallace, went in and ordered one, once, and Min served it up before he realized it was his brother--suggesting that they didn't see each other very often. Incidentally, Min's hamburgers are said to have been quite good. There is a photo in existence showing Min and some descendants outside his cafe. It was in this same restaurant that an explosion occurred from which he died--10 January 1930, when he was 78. A news item from the Bartlesville Morning Examiner of January 11 announces:

Funeral services for A.D. Metcalf, aged restaurateur and pioneer Bartlesville citizen who died of a heart attack soon after an explosion in his restaurant at 104 West Third Street,...

An anonymous note provided by GMM notes that he "Died from heart attack following gas explosion, probably aggravated by breathing gas." MBM states that Aminzo died from inhalation of gas, expiring after his son, Jack, arrived on the scene.

I was told that Aminzo became somewhat religious in his last years. Ruth Metcalf, a granddaughter, mentions him going to church (Virginia Ave. Baptist) in Bartlesville and I note that the "Men's Bible Class" of that church served as his pall bearers. In a "Memorial Record," kindly supplied by GMM, there is the following note concerning his funeral sermon: "Pastor stated that Daddy was the only businessman he knew of in the city who advertised God with his business. He had a sign up which read: 'God is Love.' The pastor stated that he was going to have that sign taken to the Church and kept there in Brother Metcalf's memory." It is also noted: "Bartlesville people paid wonderful tribute to 'Daddy' as he was affectionately known."

His "Memorial Record" also lists under "Fraternal Orders Attending," and "Floral Offerings," the Knights of Pythias and the Eagle Lodge, indicating that Aminzo had belonged to the two lodges. His widow, Sadie, also attended the funeral. Aminzo is

interred in the southwest part of Memorial Park Cemetery (Section 4, Lot 16) in Bartlesville.

Sarah Ann (Sadie) Rector Metcalf is described as a small woman with blue eyes and sandy or reddish hair, which retained this color to the end of her days. I gather that both she and Min were rather on the plain side in regard to "looks," yet they produced some very good-looking children, as photos indicate. It is clear that Sadie's children thought highly of her, but, as often happens, this feeling was not always shared by the stepchildren.

I found that MBM, although married to a member of the first family, had a most compassionate view of Sadie. She theorized that Sadie's own family, no doubt imbued with the customary thinking of those times, was probably eager to "marry her off." Clearly, a poor widower like Min Metcalf couldn't have been very much of a "catch." Sadie married, in Min, a person a decade older than she and one described by MBM as being domineering towards both his wives (although she said that Sadie would "speak up" on occasion). And then she had eight children but had little money to bring them up with. Well, it doesn't exactly sound like a storybook romance and marriage. MBM thought that Sadie was basically an intelligent person and that she tried very hard to be a good mother. She summarized by saying "I liked Sadie." Sarah Ann Rector Metcalf died on 15 October 1948 and is buried in Sunnyside Cemetery in Caney, KS.

#### Children of Mary Gaston Metcalf

You will see that I discuss Min's first family at greater length than the second. This is partly because of a double relationship that I have to the first family and partly because of the wealth of information provided by (1) Marie Buck Metcalf (MBM), who, at 100 years, plus, could still remember so many persons of times gone by; (2) Margaret and Ruth Metcalf and Dorothea Lott, daughters of Dolie and Alice Metcalf who provided photos, letters and one most interesting document, as we shall see, and (3) Grace Metcalf Muilenburg (GMM), who also had preserved photographs, letters, and other documents of interest.



Dear Grand Daughter  
 And Husband  
 I Wish you a Happy  
 Married Life  
 May you Ever be faithful  
 To one another Lovingly  
 Grand Daddy  
 Metcalf

Among the photos that had belonged to Aminzo Metcalf, was this one, with the message, below, written on the back. It appears that Aminzo never sent the photo to the granddaughter indicated. Above, are Aminzo, Sarah Ann (Sadie), and possibly their son, Beryl.

When Mary Gaston Metcalf died, her children were all still young: Dolie Monroe about 9; John (Jack) Edmer, 6; Grace Eleanor, 4; and Guy Emmet one to two years old. The three boys stayed with various relatives as they grew up. After Min's remarriage one or more of them stayed with Min and Sadie on occasion.\* According to EDM, Guy once mentioned that he did not much care for this arrangement, as it entailed caring for his younger half-siblings. One can easily see how Sadie and young Guy could have had different perspectives on this. Guy preferred to stay with his grandparents Metcalf. Perhaps they took him in immediately after Mary's death. He is listed (age 10) as living with them in the 1895 state census. His bachelor uncles, Wallace and Doc, were at home then and, no doubt, had much more time to give him attentions than his own father. He seems to have been especially close to Wallace and is listed as living with Wallace's family in the 1900 census (now age 15). Once, while Wallace was working in the fields, he saw smoke coming from the barn. He was unable to save it and the barn burned, along with a horse in it. It turned out that young Guy had been experimenting with matches or smoking in the barn. At one time, Guy worked for a jeweler in Arkansas City (some time between 1900 and 1906). Possibly he was staying with his Aunt Ida Hudson's family then. ACM recalls that Guy once rode his bicycle the 25 miles from Arkansas City to Wallace's farm, while he had that job.

In regard to all the above, Guy's daughter, Grace Metcalf Muilenburg (GMM), writes (in litt. 26 Feb 1981) "I am relatively certain...that for guidance and 'parental love' he looked to Grandmother Gould [Harriet Gould Metcalf] and to Uncle Wallace more than any others. I think for a time he lived in the home of Aunt Ida in Arkansas City; at least I used to hear a lot about the good times (really mischievous times) he and his cousin Earl Hudson had together."

Dolie and Jack seem to have spent more time with the Gastons than did Guy. MBM notes that "Jack was in Erie a good part of the time." Their uncle, Loyd Gaston, seems to have been especially fatherly towards these lads. Sometimes the boys hired

---

\*-The 1895 census listing of all first family children with Min is surely not true.

out to farmers. Jack worked for one farmer, whose frugal wife wouldn't provide him with any sugar so he took 25 cents from his first wages and bought his own sugar, which he set down by his plate at mealtimes.

All three sons of Mary and Min enlisted in the military when they were old enough. Dolie enlisted in the army in 1898 at Ft. Leavenworth in the 21st Kansas Infantry. The Spanish-American War was in progress and he was sent to the Philippine Islands. After the conclusion of the war he went into the Filipino Scouts (native army) as a 2nd Lieutenant (later he became 1st Lt.). Photos suggest that Dolie was quite the handsome, dashing young lieutenant. He must have been popular in the greater Metcalf family, as at least two children were named for him: Frank Monroe Metcalf and Dolie Fesler. He must have been on leave around 1902, when he bought the old Metcalf farm, southeast of Dexter, as mentioned above. While on another furlough, he married Alice Violet Colee at Hutchinson, KS, on 10 February 1904. According to their daughter, Margaret, they had been engaged for five years, having met before Dolie joined the army, apparently in connection with some church function when young Dolie was playing in a Salvation Army band. A month later, the newlyweds started a long journey westward, first to San Francisco and, then, via military ship, to Honolulu, Guam and the Philippines. How did this Kansas girl adapt to life halfway around the world in the early years of this century? Alice Colee Metcalf explains something of this in reminiscences written in the 1950's and addressed to her children. I wish it were possible to reproduce these in their entirety.

The table of contents lists the various posts where they were stationed--10 in all--giving an idea of the frequent changes of duty involved during their three year tour. Often they moved with little prior notice. They arrived at their first abode, in Infanta, in late May, 1904. An astonished Alice was transported from the dock to their new home via sedan chair. In Infanta she found:

I must have been something special and I was. No white woman had ever been there before. What a specimen to represent American woman.

The Spaniard across the street who ran the general store said his business had risen since I came. It seemed as tho the women came to get a glimpse of me. Imagine that!

Despite her modesty, Alice was apparently not of a retiring nature and seemed to take things in stride. They had arrived during the "month of flowers, big parades, big dances and feasts." Before long, the Metcalfs and a Spanish doctor decided to hold a feast of their own "for the 'High-Ups' and city officials.":

The house boy prepared most of the food except the chickens (22) which I stewed. I made a boiler almost full of gravy and oh! all the mashed potatoes we had to go along. The number of guests is forgotten but the amount of work made it seem quite a few.

At Infanta they had rather a nice home:

The three large rooms had hardwood floors which were kept very nice with coal oil. Rather smelly, but nice.

At their next post (Baler) things were more primitive and they were billeted the first night on cots in the courthouse. But they were young and light-hearted it seems. Alice was given a baby monkey whose antics provided much entertainment. Going to the post office they had to wade a small stream. One day, Dolie, determined to be gallant, carried Alice across--"even tho I was capable of wading"--but then he dropped her in the stream.

They moved on to Ragay on the east coast of Luzon where their first child, Maria Colee (Margaret), was born. She was only two months old when they were underway to another post and, after that, to a place on Cebu Island, in the southern Philippines. Alice relates:

We had been there hardly a month when along came the typhoon. What a time we had then. It was during the rainy season or time for gagogus (bugeoes). The rain beat everything accompanied with the wind and as I was used to it it didn't bother me much. It continued

getting worse and when your father came in for supper he said the company kitchen had blown down. Being the officer of the day he had to go out again to see that everything was fastened down. All the scouts were very busy. Around eight o'clock the Captain and your father brought Mrs. Fuller and Elizabeth over to our house as part of theirs had been blown down, and so far nothing had happened to ours. I was in the living room playing with the baby unconcerned about the storm. Mrs. Fuller hadn't been there very long when a huge gust of wind struck the house which woke me up to the fact that it was getting worse. She said she was very scared but seeing me so calm she would say nothing. Soon the scouts returned to take us back to the Fuller's house as there were details for them to attend to. We sat in the Fuller's living room as it seemed to stand the storm best but not for long, the house began to fall apart. The scouts caught the rafters as they fell but soon said we would have to get out of there. Where were we going? Out into a storm which was black as ink and was so deafening we couldn't hear anything? I had to jump from under the porch falling into the wind which I thought was going to strip my clothes off of me. As it was I had not put my rain coat on and it was soon "Gone with the Wind" and I had a thin dress on. I soon was drenched to the skin. The baby was wrapped in a wool cape of that time called a gold cape. We would probably have been blown into the river which was only a little ways but the scouts joined hands and caught us. The only place to go was back under the fallen porch in water waist deep and you try to sit on the ground. For a while I thought the baby was dead as I couldn't rouse her but in an hour or so she began to move and was I happy. In a few minutes the scouts came to help us to get out and to another corner of the porch which was drier where we sat until 5 a.m. After a bit we heard the doctor (Sanford) and a few scouts talking to the Fullers which were in another corner inquiring to our whereabouts. Your father called to them and came over telling us that our house was standing but the roof had slid down and a hole had been chopped so we could get in. We all went to the house and got out of the rain. It would have been better if we had stayed there. Even the clock, mirror or much else had been damaged. There was one bed and you can imagine what it was with six of us laying on it cross ways the rest of the night. When daylight came the men folk went out and built a bon fire so we could dry out. When we looked out oh what a sight. The baby looked like a mud baby.

Their next post was at a larger and more civilized place:

In Oras life was a lot different than what it had been in the "sticks." We enjoyed it too. There was a good

"commissary" where we could buy food. Ice was free and did it taste good. We could order milk in gallon cans from Australia through the commissary--another luxury.

Their second Christmas was spent in Oras. I like the description of high jinks by the American soldiers:

That Christmas the dinner was held at our house. Of course there was egg-nog (spiked). A Lt. De Court liked it pretty well and when he was feeling pretty high the men put him in the work cart drawn by the Burma Bull then gave him a drum from the Filipino band which had been serenading the post and he almost beat the head in. The rest of us followed on foot. Imagine that scene at midnight on the way to midnight mass.

From Oras, Dolie was temporarily sent to a post some distance away. Alice found out that a boat was going there but she had very little time to prepare to go. However, nothing was to deter her from joining her husband:

I went home and told my muschato (house boy) to get ready to go with me. He said "No can do" as he had washed that day and the clothes were wet. I said all right go wring them and put them in a tub and we'd dry them on the boat the next day. Did you ever go on a trip with a tub of wet clothes?

Despite youthful high spirits, by their third year in the Philippines (more for Dolie) it appears that the Metcalfs were wearing down. Bouts with malaria are mentioned from time to time. Alice was confronted with the death of an American friend in childbirth and needs must prepare mother and infant for burial. Dolie had an accident with a gun, which accidentally discharged. Then Margaret was poisoned from eating betel nuts. She suffered convulsions and was unconscious for 12 hours. She did not seem to respond and the local doctor advised the Metcalfs to take her to a hospital at Iloilo, which required another sea voyage:

That boat did everything but turn turtle. The bow would go up and I would have to hold on to keep from falling out. The stern would come up and I would have to hold hard to keep from falling on Margaret. It would roll on

one side and I would bump my head on the other side and I would bump my feet. Everything that was loose on the floor was rolling around in a circle.

After arriving at the hospital, Alice, too, became ill, suffered a miscarriage and had to undergo an operation. The attending physician advised that she return to the U.S. Dolie was able to leave also. They returned via Japan and Honolulu and docked at San Francisco. Here Alice recounts a moving experience, known to some of us:

As we came to the docks with whistles of all types blowing and the "Logan" answering we could see the docks were filled and jammed with people shouting and waving to their friends on board. Unless you experience it some day you'll never know how it was. This was the happiest day I ever knew. Home at last after being off my native soil for three years

Dolie did not have to return to the Philippines and was discharged later that spring of 1907. He settled in Bartlesville, OK, in that year. For a number of years he was a police officer and then a rural mail carrier. From 1918 until retirement he worked for a company that constructed oil tanks: Black, Sivalls and Bryson, in Bartlesville. He and Alice lived to celebrate, in 1954, the 50th anniversary of that long-ago marriage in Hutchinson. They are interred in White Rose Cemetery in Bartlesville. Their granddaughter, Kathy Metcalf, has kept the military tradition of this branch of the family alive by graduating, in 1978, in the first class of the U.S. Merchant Marine Academy to admit women.

Jack Metcalf enlisted in the army when he was 19. He was a cook in the hospital corps. He was sick a good deal of the time while in the service and once was even laid out for dead. However, someone noted some movement in his "corpse" and he was taken back to the hospital, recovered, and lived to be 89. In an article in the Oklahoma Orbit (12 June 1966), Jack is quoted as saying: "What I remember best from my army days was when I cooked for President William McKinley. When the president would meet with the officers at Camp Alger, Va., I was always called."

## CAREERS OF SOME FEMALE DESCENDANTS OF DOLIE & ALICE METCALF

When I first contacted Margaret Metcalf, in 1979, she wrote me "I think I wrote all the information I have." I was to learn that this was a real understatement after I had visited a number of times in the home of Margaret and her sisters, Dorothea Metcalf Lott and Ruth Metcalf in Bartlesville, Oklahoma. Each time I visited them they brought forth new wonders: various kinds of records, old letters, memorabilia, and photographs, including the only photo I have seen of Zephi Brockett Metcalf. Added to this was the warm hospitality of their home. One certainly never left their home bored, depressed--or hungry. When it comes to generosity I would rate Dorothea "the tops," her gifts including a contribution to this present volume. I remember the tricks that cousins Ruth and Cecil Metcalf would play on each other, such as the time Ruth gave Cecil a present of a nicely potted dandelion for his garden. Despite her earlier protestations, Margaret turned out to have many interesting stories to tell. I recall her telling about the time that a prankster hid some of the best Methodist silverware in the sleeves of her winter coat during a reception at the church. All of this came clattering out when the young schoolmistress started to put on her coat and leave. I assume that the prankster was quite sure that Margaret would take this with good humor. In fact, these sisters, like some other Metcalfs, had a definite talent for combining humor and dignity. A good deal of modesty is reflected in the following short sketches, which I asked them to write about their careers. Ruth, for example, carried out her successful career despite a life-long handicap of severe hearing impairment.

Margaret María Colee Metcalf

I graduated from high school in 1924. I went directly into teaching with only a temporary certificate earned my

senior year. I taught 13 years at Shidler, Okla., in the Burbank Oil Field--32 years in Bartlesville Public Schools (all the years in the first grade). I got my B.S. degree from Central State College in Edmond, Okla., in summer 1938. I got my M.A. from George Peabody College in Nashville, Tennessee, in 1943. All my college work was done in summers. No honors--no scholarships. Only the help of the First National Bank. I retired in 1970.

Dorothea Maebelle Metcalf Lott

My education in nursing was at the Southern Baptist Hospital in New Orleans, Louisiana. I entered August, 1937; graduated October, 1940. I worked in New Orleans for 4 years. Then my work took me to Tulsa, to Hugoton and Oberlin, KS, and, later, to Norton, Kansas, to the State Hospital for 15 years, where I was Director of Nursing. I retired from nursing administration in 1978--then moving to Bartlesville.

Ruth Myrl Metcalf

I graduated from Bartlesville High School in 1935, graduated from Bartlesville Business College in 1938, and my first employment was in 1939 with Bert Gaddis Ford. Later, I worked for Fred Schneider Pontiac and other Pontiac dealers until 1970, going to Phillips Petroleum Co. until my retirement in 1982. My work field was secretarial and accounting, a total of 43 years almost all in Bartlesville.

\* \* \* \* \*

One of the things that has impressed me is the large number of women encountered in this survey who already had successful careers before this became the general trend, as in the case of the sisters, discussed above, or who have actually been "out in front" in regard to female careers. Such a one is surely their niece, Kathy Metcalf, daughter of Charles Aminzo and Jeanne Evans Metcalf.

Kathy Metcalf

A dinner was given at the U.S. Merchant Marine Academy, Kings Point, New York, in May, 1988 as a "Tenth anniversary dinner honoring the first USMMA female graduates." The printed program provides the following explanatory summary:

On January 24, 1974, an item appearing in the Federal Register forever changed the character of the United States Merchant Marine Academy--and the lives of a small group of young American women. The published announcement gave notice that the Academy would accept female students effective with the class entering in July 1974, making the USMMA the first federal academy to enroll women.

When the fateful day in July arrived, 15 young women reported to the Academy as "plebes." History records that they were the center of media attention during their initial weeks--reporters everywhere looking for a good quote, photographers seeking the right photo. The media surge subsided only somewhat during the next four years, as virtually everything the Class of '78 women did constituted a "first."

There can be little doubt that the USMMA's first female midshipmen found themselves in a difficult situation. They faced not only the very real demands of the Academy's academic and regimental programs, but also the scrutiny of their male classmates, the Academy's faculty and staff, and the working press. Inevitably, the initial group of 15 women succumbed to attrition and numbered eight by graduation day in June 1978. The graduates were: Della Anholt; Ivy Barton; Rochon Greene; Kathy Metcalf; Meredith Neizer; Teresa Olsen; Nancy Wagner; and Frances Yates.

These women were "pioneers" in a very real sense. They blazed the path for 154 subsequent USMMA female graduates, and for the admission of women to the other federal academies. The USMMA is pleased to recognize the achievement of its Class of '78 women on the tenth anniversary of their graduation.

In addition, Kathy was one of two women among 20 students in the "first females" class to graduate "with high honors." Subsequently, she has undertaken a career in law, passing her bar examination, receiving her Doctor of Law degree from Delaware Law School of Widener University in May, 1988, and receiving an American Jurisprudence Award.

After being discharged from the army, Jack was visiting his uncle, Loyd Gaston, in Galena, KS, where he met Marie Buck from Illinois, who was also visiting there. They married on Christmas Day, 1900. Jack and Marie operated a bakery and a restaurant associated with it in Bartlesville for many years. In 1944 they retired and became part of a novel experiment. Spanish-American War veterans, who were finding subsistence difficult on government pensions and their savings, banded together and purchased 800 acres on Winding Stair Mountain, near Wilburton, OK. As MBM put it, "It was just like being a pioneer woman." There were cabins to build, wells to dig, but she enjoyed the place. It was scenic and close to a fishing stream. As noted in the article from Oklahoma Orbit cited above, purchase of a share in the veteran's colony entitled the veteran to a tax-free homesite and available hardwood timber, rock, gravel and sand to build a cabin. Originally the colony was open only to Spanish-American War veterans but later (for obvious reasons) it was opened to veterans of later vintage.

Marie and Jack were active in affairs of Spanish-American War veterans and Marie was secretary of the Oklahoma Auxiliary of the organization for many years. After the death of Jack, Marie eventually left the colony near Wilburton and moved to Escondido, CA. I visited her there in 1979, shortly after her 100th birthday and, again, when she was past 102. She lived alone in a mobile home, doing her own housekeeping and cooking. She was amazingly alert. She maintained a correspondence with some 40 persons, typing letters to them. I was amazed that she could remember street addresses of many of these correspondents, especially since that is something that I was usually unable to do at half her age (then).

Guy Metcalf enlisted in the army on 9 November 1906. In 1908 he was a trumpeter with the 11th U.S. Infantry, stationed at Fort Ethan Allen, Vermont. His daughter (GMM) writes (in litt., 26 Feb. 1981):

I remember how I liked to hear him play army calls and

other tunes on his bugle. I used to finger the two opals he received for his horsemanship and fencing feats while in the U.S. Cavalry. In 1909 or 1910, he was declared the champion fencer among all U.S. military personnel, I believe.

Guy's military career was cut short by a gunshot wound, which he received while stationed at Chattanooga, TN. He suffered loss of a lung and associated problems that plagued him the rest of his days. Still, he always retained a fine military bearing it seemed to me. He was discharged from the military on 19 July 1911 and married Myrtle Sinclair the following October. She was a sister of Laura Sinclair Metcalf, who had married Guy's uncle, Wm. Wallace Metcalf. Guy apparently retained his enthusiasm for the military since GMM notes (in litt., 26 Feb. 1981) in regard to World War I: "I think I remember Mother being relieved when Dad, who had volunteered to go, was turned down because of his disability."

The Guy Metcalf family moved about a great deal. I am reminded of a similar restlessness exhibited by Guy's cousins, the children of Hartley Metcalf, discussed in the preceding chapters. In the first 15 years of their marriage, Guy and Myrtle seem to have made approximately the same number of moves. They lived on the Sinclair farm of Myrtle's parents three different times and held two farm auctions there (29 February 1916 and 14 August 1923). Their first home had been a small house that Guy built near that of the elder Sinclairs. A tornado carried their house even closer and damaged it but they managed to repair it and live in it. However, ACM recalls that they soon moved off to Cherryvale, KS, in the winter of 1912-1913, where Guy's uncle, Doc Metcalf, lived. ACM remembers them departing, with Guy driving a wagon and Myrtle a buggy. Gould Metcalf, being interested in seed corn (see below), once told GMM that their father planted his corn in February, on the Cherryvale farm, against all the advice of his neighbors, who planted later. However, a mild winter and dry summer conspired to give him a better corn crop than the neighbors. Before GMM was born on 19 Sep 1913, Myrtle had returned from Cherryvale to her

parent's home, traveling by train. She did not return to Cherryvale. Guy joined her shortly.

The family next lived on a number of farms in the Prairie View-Glendale community and in the nearby village of Hooser (the latter on several occasions). They also lived in Winfield and Protection, KS (note postcard from Guy in the Appendix, written from Protection), and in and near Bartlesville, OK (again on several occasions), where Guy worked in the bakery of his brother, Jack. Guy once bought a farm in Arkansas, and, at another time, one in Missouri. After visiting these, however, he decided not to move to either of them. A photo taken by FMM of the dilapidated house (shack) on the Arkansas farm strongly suggests why Guy's reaction was negative. (As an aside: I also recall relatives and neighbors discussing cheap Ozark land advertised in the Weekly Kansas City Star in the 1930's--see p. 233, later in the chapter).

By some means, Guy had picked up a good knowledge of carpentry. On the farm of his uncle (and brother-in-law) Wallace, he built a barn with hay loft, a two-room addition to the house, and a double garage (one car could be parked behind the other, and it was open on both ends).

In 1927, Guy commenced employment with the L.C. Adam Mercantile Co. at Cedar Vale, KS, and settled down and remained there for the succeeding 23 years, retiring there in 1950 (see account of retirement in Appendix). After retirement, Guy and Myrtle lived in several different homes in Cedar Vale and Arkansas City--a bit of that old restlessness still there, perhaps. Both of them died in Arkansas City, and are interred in Riverview Cemetery, there, near Zephi and Harriet--Guy's cherished grandmother (see Appendix for items concerning Guy).

GMM (in litt., 26 Feb 1981) writes, concerning her father, Guy: "The fact that our father grew up without a home base surely influenced his outlook and his career." and "He seemed to lack self confidence, despite his certainly above-average innate ability. He could master what he resolved to master. He read a lot and he had a fund of knowledge that surprised me."

GMM has also supplied a statement written by Guy, himself:

I was born Feb. 2nd at Dexter, Kansas. Year 1884. Father-A.D. Metcalf. Mother, Mary Metcalf. Mother died when I was a baby. Was raised by grand-parents. Received my education in the county schools and at Arkansas City. Worked in stores and bakeries and on farms till I became of age, then joined U.S. Cavalry. Served one enlistment and re-enlisted and was later discharged for disabilities received in the line of duty. Was married to Lucy Myrtle Sinclair on October 21st 1911. Engaged in farming, baking and other kinds of work. Was Postmaster at Hooser, Ks. for a time. Later I was employed by the L.C. Adam Merc. Co. for 23 years.

The "GMM" referred to so frequently herein is Grace Metcalf Muilenburg, daughter of Myrtle and Guy. A journalist by profession, she was public information officer with the Geological Survey of the University of Kansas, and later worked as editor with the Agricultural Experiment Station of Kansas State University. She is author (with Ada Swineford) of Land of the Post Rock, its Origins, History, and People (see Appendix and page 358). She is currently writing a comprehensive history of the Flint Hills of Kansas, where some of us Metcalfs have lived. She has been active in historical societies, as an officer, etc.

Young Guy E. Metcalf, Jr., was, I am told, quite a prodigy in the mechanical sciences. He had a career in the U.S. Air Force and has a number of inventions, patented and unpatented, to his credit. After his retirement from the Air Force, he worked in civil service at Kelly AFB, TX. He wrote (in litt., 31 Oct 1982): "I am a production manager that procures life support kits for our jet aircraft and also for our allied countries."

The third child of Guy and Myrtle Metcalf had the fine old family name of Gould Metcalf. He had a very successful career in the field seed business, and was president-elect of the American Seed Trade Association when he, like his brother, Don, came to an untimely death. Some information concerning Gould is included in the Appendix, and I quote here an article by Spencer Dean in the 26 January 1977 issue of the journal Seed Trade News:

News of the death of Gould Metcalf reached us too late for insertion in the regular news columns of SEED TRADE NEWS. We thought it appropriate, though, to announce his

death here, where we could remember him more informally, as a friend. It is always a sad task to talk of someone's death. It is made more sad when the man, alive, had been so active and so much a part of our industry and our lives.

Gould Metcalf, 59, died Thursday, January 13, at his home in Decatur, Illinois.

Metcalf spent his entire career in the seed business. At the time of his death he had spent more than 25 years with FS Services, Bloomington, Illinois, and was most recently their field seeds marketing manager. In addition, Metcalf had been serving as first vice president of the American Seed Trade Association. He would have succeeded to the presidency in June.

Metcalf, a Kansas native, entered the seed business in 1936, and worked for more than one seed firm in Kansas and Mississippi, before joining Producers Seed Company, an affiliate of the Illinois Farm Bureau. He started as assistant director of Producer Seed's new field seed division in Decatur, Illinois. In 1952, he was named division manager, a position he held until the 1955 merger of the Illinois Farm Bureau with FS Services. At that time, Metcalf was appointed manager of the FS field seed department. Gould Metcalf was always active in seed trade organizations. He had been a member of ASTA since joining the FS System in 1950; was a past chairman of ASTA's Farm Seed Division; past president of the Illinois Seed Dealers Association; past president of the Western Seedmen's Association; and past president of the Field Seed Institute of North America.

I seem to remember a younger, high-spirited Gould, when he worked at the L.C. Adam Merc. Co.'s feed store at the beginning of his climb up achievement's ladder. This impression was recently reinforced when EHM told me of some capers that went on around the store then. She remembered once when Gould and his cohorts, finding a nest of baby mice in the feed store, put them in one of those miniature cable-car affairs, that were used to carry change on wires back and forth between cashier and clerk. These baby mice were conveyed up to the cashier, Miss Georgia Chapman, a genteel little lady, and with predictable results.

Guy and Myrtle's youngest child, Don Wallace, also followed the military tradition of this branch of the family, having a career in the U.S. Navy. After his retirement, he continued work

in a military environment, being employed at the U.S. Air Force Academy at Colorado Springs. GMM writes of her brother Don (in litt., 23 Oct 1987):

Of all of "us kids," he had the sunniest disposition, was the slowest to anger, and was a mediator.... During World War II when he was stationed in Hawaii--five years without leave--he seemingly kept many a soldier from going berserk, or so a buddy of his told my parents. This buddy made a special trip to Cedar Vale during the war...to tell the folks about it. He said that "they" (whoever they were) had hung a sign saying "Chaplain's Corner" over his station and that whenever anyone got to the place he seemingly "could take no more," he was sent to talk with Don. Almost always, said Don's buddy, the depressed one came away cheered and prepared to cope with his situation. I also remember Don's funeral--the First Methodist Church in Colorado Springs was packed. Everywhere I turned, one person after another said Don had friends, friends, friends. Friends and neighbors at the home after the funeral went out of their way to praise Don. One neighbor told me that "Don could do anything." He pointed out that he was ready and willing to help any neighbor with anything, and if the neighbor didn't know what to do in a situation, Don did know. ... By his own choice he is buried in an out-of-the-way cemetery: Pioneer Cemetery at the edge of the Black Forest (north of Colorado Springs) and the eastern Colorado plains. Before he died, he told me that was where he wanted to be buried because he loved both the forest and the plains.

The further life of Aminzo and Mary's daughter, Grace, has been admirably summarized by her daughter, Madeira Fernandez Garcia, in a letter of 28 June 1979:

After her mother died, she was adopted by Alexander and Martha Williams who owned a farm in Kansas. Mother was about five years old at the time. Later they sold the farm and moved to Clyde, New York. This is where she attended school. She loved to sing and had a beautiful voice and later studied music at Syracuse University. Yes, Mother did write to her family and returned to Kansas and Oklahoma to visit them. My father Juan Fernandez was Portuguese and was born in Funchal, Madeira Island, Portugal. His name in Portuguese was João or John in English. He was a Spanish War Veteran. He was a fine chef and worked in Syracuse where he met mother. They married in Clyde, N.Y.

My sister Juanita and I both agree that our mother was a beautiful woman and so talented as a singer and also a

teacher. There are so many wonderful things about her musical career that would fill a book. Just wish that I could remember more. You mention Uncle Guy. He came to visit us when we lived in Syracuse, N.Y. and I was a little girl at the time. It made mother very happy to see her brother again.

In fact, Grace wrote a song (words and music), For my Lover's a Cavalier, on which she wrote "By Grace Metcalf Fernandez. Dedicated to Guy E. Metcalf, Troop B, 11th U.S. Cavalry." (see next page).

Photos of Grace do show a beautiful woman. One photo is in the form of a postcard and shows her posed with her banjo. It is addressed to her brother, Jack, and bears the message (illegible in one corner): "Here is a miniature of my professional picture taken Feb. 9. Thought maybe you would\_\_\_\_\_ a glimpse of my 'Pal' old banjo, Lovingly, Gracie." The daughters of Dolie Metcalf, in Bartlesville, OK, have two small phonograph records, recorded by Grace. I do not know if the fiber stylus required to play the better preserved, metal record is presently available. It would be nice to hear Grace's voice. Madeira Fernandez Garcia writes that Grace was "Patriotic Instructor for Relief Corps, auxiliary to G.A.R. She held this position for ten years and presented flags to different organizations. Also member auxiliary to Spanish War Veterans." A clipping from The Syracuse Herald of 18 April 1908, supplied by GMM, relates the reunion between Grace and Guy that was mentioned by Madeira Fernandez Garcia, above:

Rome, April 18.--A few days ago The Herald told its readers of an instance where a brother and sister had not seen each other for twenty years, yet for a number of years they had kept up a correspondence. They are Trumpeter Guy E. Metcalf of Troop B, Eleventh United States Infantry, stationed at Fort Ethan Allen in Vermont, and Mrs. Juan Fernandez, who lives in the Reese block in West Dominick Street. Their parents died when they were 2 and 4 years old, and they were taken by different relatives and from that time till now they had not seen each other, when Soldier Metcalf got a furlough of ten days and came here to see his sister. Their parents lived in Dexter, Kans., Mr. and Mrs. A.D. Metcalf. Mr. and Mrs. Fernandez lived in Syracuse for some time, they coming here about a year ago, when he

# My Love's a Cavalier

© 1917

Dedicated to Guy D. Metcalf, <sup>made and music by</sup> Grace Metcalf Fernandez -  
Troop B, 11th U.S. Cavalry.

1 - Do you won-der that I am love-ly That I long for my  
2 - In his un-der-stand-ing true and mine is too

soldier on the field. Would not I fight as time passed by  
for me waiting. His love true and mine is too

If you had a heart like mine But it surely de-  
I know you'll think me nothing less

It can story just a bit we for love and glory  
serve my nation for it always demands attention

But come what may He'll love me the day for my  
a heart so kind you'll sel-dome find. For why

Love's a Car-a-lie Love's a Car-a-lie There's a  
Love's a Car-a-lie Love's a Car-a-lie In his

and I think I can do what I do  
voice yet He drew me near and whispered dear  
-ren-der my heart, my life, through joy or strife

gave for me Though you not here Think of  
promised him To be his wife That his

when the war is ended With my country and  
by I am ever yearning While I'm waiting for

you to be freed. His color and his color gay Nor my  
his re-turning Our long absent dream will be my theme for my

Love's a Cavalier Cavaliers! My Cavaliers!  
Love's a Cavalier Cavaliers! My Cavaliers!

When the war ends and gayly prancing While the music sounds  
I seem to hear as if there were the trumpet call as loud and clear

For times as before

(Tatto-o) Cavaliers! My Cavaliers! My Love's a Cavalier!  
[Go back to chorus] [Long before chorus]

took a position as chef at Stanwix Hall. He recently resigned that position to take a similar one in Syracuse, and Mrs. Fernandez will soon join her husband there. She is a member of the St. Cecilia club of this city and a musician of ability.

I have wondered if Grace ever crossed paths with her first cousin, once-removed, Nelia Metcalf Dietrich, when she lived in Syracuse. Could it be that Nelia heard her sing at some function without knowing they were relatives. The Fernandez family eventually settled in Detroit. MBM mentions visiting them there once. Grace visited her father and brothers in Kansas and Oklahoma in 1923 and returned to Oklahoma in 1930 for her father's funeral.

On Grace's 1923 trip west, an excellent photographic record seems to show that she first came to Bartlesville, OK. From there, at some point, she, her father, Aminzo, and brothers, Dolie and Jack, traveled to Caney, KS, where they stopped to visit members of the "second family." They then continued on to the Dexter Cemetery, where they visited Mary Gaston Metcalf's unmarked grave, and then on to Winfield, where the Guy Metcalfs then lived. That day certainly must have been one of high emotion, especially for Grace and Aminzo. Grace and Min seem to have stayed with Guys for a time. Photos show that Grace, Min, and Guy's family visited an oil well with a wooden derrick, being, perhaps, a local "tourist attraction." I suppose that Guy later took Grace and Min back to Bartlesville.

I think it exceptional that Grace maintained this connection with her natural family, from whom she was severed at such an early age and which lived so far away. The Fernandez daughters, Madeira and Juanita, also visited some of their western relatives on occasion. There are some photos extant that show Aminzo, in front of his little cafe in Bartlesville, with Madeira, her husband, Miguel Garcia, and their daughter, Rita, who has been of much help to me in this present project.

A letter written by Grace to Guy's family on 4 Apr 1939, informs us "...as for me, I never see an idle moment. Have a lovely class in music, and my job as organist for our Auxiliary

After the material in the clipping from The Syracuse Herald was incorporated in text (pages 229-230), I received the clipping, below, which preceded and is referred to in the clipping on page 229. This second clipping (also apparently originating in Rome, NY) had been preserved by Dorothy Metcalf Urban, who kindly made it available to me. It contains considerable information concerning the family of Aminzo and Mary Metcalf.

-----

REUNITED AFTER 20 YEARS

TRUMPETER GUY E. METCALF GUEST OF HIS SISTER

Family Separated in Infancy in Kansas by  
Death of the Mother--Three Brothers and Sister  
Parted--Sister Comes East--Brothers Enter Army

Trumpeter Guy E. Metcalf of Troop B 11th U.S. Cavalry, stationed at Fort Ethan Allen, Vt., is the guest of his sister Mrs. Juan Fernandez at her home in the Rees block on W. Dominick Street. Mr. Metcalf is on a ten day furlough and is enjoying a visit with his sister whom he had not seen in twenty years having become separated in infancy.

Mr. and Mrs. A.D. Metcalf, the parents of Mrs. Fernandez and her brother were residents of Dexter, Kansas, where Mrs. Metcalf died, leaving three sons and a daughter. Guy aged two years, Mrs. Fernandez, aged 4 years, and two other sons, D.M. and J.E. Metcalf, a little older than their sister. It was an impossibility for Mr. Metcalf to keep the little family together, and the oldest son was soon able to care for himself. The other sons were cared for by relatives while the little daughter was adopted by a Mr. and Mrs. A.B. Williams. The Williams family soon came east and located in Clyde, N.Y., where for many years they were counted among the most prosperous and respected residents of that community. Mr. Williams was a high degree mason and prominent in the Knights Templar rank. Both he and his wife died a number of years ago.

The adopted daughter married Mr. Fernandez and after residing in Syracuse for some time came to this city to live, the husband becoming chef at Stanwix Hall, a position that he has just resigned to accept a position at the Hof Brau, Clinton Street, Syracuse.

The brothers became reunited at Bartlesville, Oklahoma, and as they became old enough joined the army. The oldest one, D.M. Metcalf, enlisted in the 18th Infantry and was stationed for eight years in the Philippines where he became first lieutenant of the 46th Company Philippine Scouts. He resigned last August and returned to this country and is making his home in Bartlesville. J.E. Metcalf, the next older brother, enlisted in the 22d Regiment Volunteers, Kansas, for service in the Spanish-American War. Before his command was assigned to active duty he was stricken with ptomaine poisoning and the severity of it was such that he has never fully recovered, and he never re-enlisted after his regiment was mustered out. The member of the family who is now visiting in this city, Guy E., enlisted from Bartlesville a year ago last November and was assigned to Jefferson Barracks, Missouri. A little later he was transferred to Fort Des Moines, In., and last June was sent to his present location, Fort Ethan Allen. The 15th Cavalry is booked for service in the Philippines in 1909 and Trumpeter Metcalf is looking forward to the assignment as one which will give him an opportunity of seeing some service. It was there that his brother won an enviable reputation by bravery and good work, as well as in the struggle in China during the Boxer uprising. Mr. Metcalf expressed himself as much pleased with what he had seen of this city. On account of her husband having returned to Syracuse for employment Mrs. Fernandez expects soon to make that city her home, but will remain here for a short time. She is a member of St. Cecilia Club, and a vocalist and instrumentalist of excellent ability, having been graduated from the Syracuse Conservatory of Music.

and Relief Corps, Sunday programs, and occasional broadcasts, etc. Life is always so young and interesting to me." This from a woman to whom life, it would seem, had not been all that kind, beginning with the loss of her mother and adoption at an early age. Her marriage to Juan apparently caused problems with her adoptive family, according to MBM. Then there was the loss of her son, Juan, in 1921, when he was 12 years old. A photo sent to Dolie's family by Grace at this time shows her in a kind of kimono (?) and with a fan. I surmise that this was a costume she had put on to amuse young Juan as she writes on the back of the photo: "This was taken while the little boy was ill and shows my awful anxiety. He did not live to see it. G."

Grace's springtime, 1939, letter to Guy began: "Once again the beautiful time of the year is with us, and everything begins to show signs of resurrection." Only three years later, a wintry destiny inflicted another misfortune. Her granddaughter, Rita Garcia Currier, explains (in litt., 3 Oct 1983):

...she was singing at home and, evidently, when she hit a high note, she developed a cerebral hemorrhage. She was in a coma and never regained consciousness. She lived for 40 days and towards the last was sent home from the hospital. She passed away at home at the age of 59. I remember her as being poised, calm, level-headed, and advanced in her thinking for her day and age. She was a great influence in my life.

A letter from Alice Roberts (Mrs. Zephi) Metcalf of 4 July 1942 had the following to report after Alice and Zephi, who lived in Cleveland, had visited Grace's bedside in Detroit:

I have just returned from Detroit and I am very sorry to say Grace is no better. She cannot see, speak or hear. It is very pitiful to see her in her present condition. Grace was always so active. I am sure she has worked too hard. Juan, Juanita and Madiera are at the hospital all the time. They have 3 private nurses and a private room for her. I just feel she is not going to get well and the Dr. told me she could go on this way for many weeks. He himself holds out very little hope for her recovery. But we are hoping and praying for the best.

Later, on 25 July 1942, Alice and Zephi write Dolie's:

Just a few lines to let you know we are back home after attending Grace's funeral. It was a beautiful service.

The Aux. had a lovely service. Also the casket was carried out under an archway of flags. Juan, then Juanita and family, then Madeira and family, then Zephi and I. Her flowers were beautiful including the flowers you folks sent her. We took some to the cemetery and the rest to the hospital for those who could not otherwise enjoy flowers. That was the way Grace would have wanted it because it would bring happiness to some who could not buy flowers. The girls were very brave. I feel so sorry for Juan. He is really stunned and bewildered by her illness and death, but he also was very brave and calm. Each one of us took a rose to press, so I thought it would be nice if her brothers had one also. ... There were 8 pall bearers, Veterans of the Spanish-American War. ...you never seen so many friends. She was loved and admired by every one she came in contact with. But we are all glad her suffering is ended and she is happy at last with Jesus. I guess I have told you all. So I shall say bye-bye for this time and God Bless You.

When I was shown this letter by Ruth Metcalf in the summer of 1985, I opened the envelope to find that, after 43 years, the pressed rose, mentioned by Alice, was still intact.

#### Children of Sarah Ann (Sadie) Rector Metcalf

The two oldest children of Sadie and Aminzo, Nellie and Myrtle, married brothers, Oscar and Earl Nellis, respectively. They were sons of James McLanchton (Lang) and Mary Jane Nellis, pioneers in the Highland neighborhood, east of Dexter. The Metcalf properties, discussed previously, were located on the southwestern fringe of the Highland community. I suppose that the Metcalf girls got to know the Nellis boys when Min's family lived on the old Metcalf farm from around 1902 to 1908 or 1910.

Much in the following paragraph is drawn from an unpublished history of the Nellis family by Amy C. Tant. In Chapter 5, I mentioned that the Metcalfs who lived in the Town of Salisbury, Herkimer Co., NY, in the early 1800's, had, as neighbors in Fairfield Township, immediately to the west (and also, perhaps, at some time, in Manheim Township, to the south), the family of Peter Phillip (so-spelled by Tant) Nellis. Peter Phillip's son, Peter Spraker Nellis, attended Fairfield Academy (like Charles Nathan Metcalf) as well as other seminaries and became a minister in the Lutheran faith. Among the children of Peter

Spraker Nellis, was James McLanchthon (Lang), who was born in Pennsylvania, migrated, first to Missouri, where he married Mary Jane Martin, and then on to the Highland community. Eventually, Lang's father, the Rev. Peter, also came west and is buried in the Dexter Cemetery--where Metcalfs and Nellises have, once more, come together. James and Mary were the parents of Oscar and Earl. As a little shaver, my family also lived in Highland community, between the home of Lang and Mary and that of their son Ted (Theodore) and family. I was fond of "Grandma Nellis" and her cookie jar. My family also appreciated her services as a midwife, especially on an occasion when the stork was faster than "old Doc Moore," from Dexter. My first travel experience occurred when my parents and some members of the Ted Nellis family went to Missouri to look over some real estate for sale there (they didn't buy).

Early in their marriage, Nellie and Oscar Nellis were associated with the Dixon Orchard in Arkansas City, where, as we noted above, Aminzo also worked. Their oldest son, Ralph, was named for Ralph Dixon. Later, they moved back to the Highland community, living on several farms there. Oscar suffered from asthma and, in 1920, they moved to Roswell, New Mexico, where he received some relief from this affliction. Oscar died there in 1932, a victim of pneumonia contracted after a dental operation in which ether had been used as anaesthesia. Thus, Nellie was left a widow with several children to care for in the depths of the Depression. Her daughter-in-law, Bessie Cummins (Mrs. Gail) Nellis, spoke admiringly of her hard work, her independence and her kindness, noting that she maintained, despite her problems, an affable demeanor. She died while residing in her own mobile home on son Gail's property in Roswell in 1969 and is buried, with Oscar, in South Park Cemetery in Roswell.

In addition to visiting with Mrs. Bessie Nellis, I was also able to visit with Nellie's oldest son, Ralph Oscar, and his wife, Leona, in Grants, New Mexico. The name Nellis is well known there as Ralph was, for a quarter-century (1950-1975), owner of Nellis Supply Co., which has several branches in the

Grants area. Ralph has now sold the company and retired, but it still bears his name. The company sells mining, automotive, welding, etc. supplies. Ralph still lives in Grants, near the Nellis Company store, there, during the cool New Mexico summers, but has a winter home in Arizona. When I stopped by Grants one May evening in 1986, Ralph was looking forward to being on the links by 8:00 the next morning. The Nellis Fence Co. in Grants formerly belonged to Ralph's son, Ralph Patrick.

As newlyweds, Myrtle and Earl Nellis lived in the Highland community near Earl's parents, on the Fred Barger farm of later years. They then lived a few years (1914-1916) in Grand Summit community in the northeastern part of Cowley County, and then moved to Caney, KS, where Myrtle's parents then lived. I have photos of them on an August Sunday afternoon in 1921. In one, they are seated, smiling, in their open-topped Model-T Ford. Myrtle, who seems to favor her father in appearance, is, like him, clearly "all dressed up" for the occasion. The contrast between the dresses of Myrtle and her sister, Alice, and those of the older women, suggests that the revolution in female dress of the 1920's had made some inroads as far as Caney by then. Myrtle died when she was only 49, in 1941. Charles B. Stroup writes (6 Sep 1990): "She died at her house on North Wood in Caney. She and Earl lived directly across the street from our house at 115 N Wood. She died on my first day of school (first grade)." Myrtle is interred in Caney, along with Earl and his second wife, Clara Ann Hilderbrant, in Sunnyside Cemetery (on the north side of Caney, despite its name). Clara also preceded Earl in death, and he married a third time

Zephi Joy was the third child of Aminzo and Sarah Ann. His name was pronounced with an ee sound in the second syllable ('Zee-pee), whereas I have always heard the name of his grandfather, Zephi Brockett, pronounced with an i sound in the second syllable ('Zee-phi). However, the ee pronunciation may be the original one, since Aminzo was among the older children and more likely to have retained the original way of pronouncing his father's name. The source of the name "Joy" is

unknown; however, there was a family of that name, which lived around Dexter, then. Or maybe a parent just liked the name, as with his cousin, Joy Thomson, born a few years later.

Some information concerning Zephi has been provided by his daughter, Dorothy Metcalf Urban. She notes that Zephi was able only to complete the fourth grade, which she understood was attributable to Aminzo's taking him out of school for farm work. This would have been while the family lived on the old Metcalf farm, southeast of Dexter. The house there must have been small and Aminzo and Sarah's brood was large, so the boys slept in the barn to some extent, sometimes waking up to find snow on their covers. As a young man around Caney, Zephi worked at various jobs: in a bakery (Jack's ?), laying oil lines, freighting, and he probably worked in the same glass factory that Aminzo worked in. During World War I, he joined the army but had been in the service less than a month when it was discovered that he had a foot problem, which had seemingly been caused by prolonged work with a treadle in one of his earlier jobs (the glass factory, perhaps ?). This problem was serious enough that he was soon discharged. He was back in Caney a short time and then migrated to Cleveland, OH, where he obtained employment with General Electric Corp. at a wire-drawing plant on the east side of Cleveland. He made diamond dies through which electric light bulb filaments were drawn. His brother, Dewey, joined him in Cleveland for a short time, but returned to Kansas after less than a year. At first, Zephi boarded in Cleveland. His landlady had a younger sister, Alice Roberts, who became Mrs. Zephi Metcalf. Zephi and Alice bought a home in South Euclid, east of Cleveland, where Zephi lived the remainder of his life. He continued to work for General Electric, for 34 years, until his retirement.

Zephi and Alice acquired a small acreage a few miles from South Euclid, which they made into a productive orchard and truck garden, selling produce, in season. Alice writes to Dolie Metcalf's family on 4 July 1942:

Zephi is just fine working hard every day. I do wish you

could come and see our acre of ground. We have it all planted. 500 Strawberry plants, Raspberries, Asparagus, Grapes, Cabbage, Cucumbers, Corn, Beans, Rhubarb, and 85 fruit trees Plum, Peach, Apple sweet Cherry and sour. We sure put a lot of time in working there at nite.

Dorothy emphasizes that Zephi was especially happy when working in garden or orchard and that he "loved the earth." Although she characterizes him as a quiet person, not overly gregarious, he and Alice, it seems to me, maintained more social ties with members of Aminzo's far-flung family than did any of the other children. In interviewing members of their "branch" from New Mexico to Kansas, I consistently seemed to hear that Zephi and Alice had visited there, and they seemed to have left a most favorable impression wherever they went. Zephi also seems to have borne a major responsibility in caring for Sadie's needs in her declining years. He bought her a home in Caney. Her eyesight deteriorated badly and he purchased eyeglasses whenever she needed them. Alice and Zephi made annual trips back to Caney, to look after Sadie and her home, keeping it "spruced up," inside and out.

Grace Fernandez writes to her brother Guy (in litt., 9 Dec 1939):

"Did you see Zephi and his family while they were touring out West? I thought that they were going to stop here and see us on their way back but they did not. I understand they were to take Sadie back home with them. I like Alice very much, and they are a good Christian family."

Above, I have quoted from letters of Alice Roberts Metcalf, indicating the concern that she and Zephi felt for Grace, during her final illness, when they went to Detroit to visit her bedside and were the only family representatives in attendance at the funeral besides the immediate members.

Zephi died of a heart attack at age 67 and his son, Jack Roberts, at the still younger age of 51. Jack Roberts had two sons and, as of April 1987, a grandson, Benjamin, to carry on the Metcalf name in his branch of the family.

Dorothy Metcalf Urban, who has been a good correspondent and supplier of information for me, has also been, so far as I know,

the second member of Zephi Brockett's descendents to return to visit the old Metcalf holdings around Rushford (1986). Adding two more to the list of notable Metcalf women, I will mention Donna Urban Watts, daughter of Dorothy and Donald Urban, who has combined a career in the Air Force with the rearing of a family (three children), and who was a flight mechanic at one time. Her sister, Diana Urban Aldis, has been a nurse/missionary in Egypt and, later, in Haiti for a number of years. No doubt she could write an interesting book on her experiences in Haiti.

Continuing with the offspring of Aminzo and Sarah, we find that Lorena worked as a telephone operator in Caney as a young woman. Robert Brakey was the Wells Fargo agent there. They came to know each other and were married in August 1916. Robert was from a Kiowa, KS, farm family. After their marriage, the Brakeys moved to Drumright, OK, where Robert did very well, being engaged in a variety of business enterprises: Wells Fargo agent, hardware, lumber, mortician, oilfield supply, and trucking. After retirement, Lorena and Robert lived in Houston, TX, and, later, in California, moving there around 1960. Both Lorena and Robert passed away in Hobbs, NM, home, at that time, of their son, Robert Brakey, Jr. They are interred in El Camino Cemetery, Chula Vista, CA (near San Diego).

Robert Brakey, Jr., an engineer, with degree from Oklahoma State Univ., was vice president of Unichem International, Inc. (formerly United Chemical Corp.) in Hobbs and also had a trucking firm there. Unichem was involved in the petroleum industry. Robert, Jr., and his wife, Wilma, are now retired (1987) and live in a country club in south Texas where, like Bob's cousin, Ralph Nellis, mentioned above (and several other relatives), they have honed their skills at the game of golf.

Like his brother, Zephi, Dewey Metcalf worked in the southern Kansas area as a young man and then migrated to Cleveland, OH. However, he returned to Kansas after a few months, a fateful move, as it turned out. The following appears in the Arkansas City Traveler of 31 December 1924 (courtesy of Lena Davison Metcalf):

Dewey Metcalf, 26, of Caney, Kansas died last night as the result of injuries received Wednesday when a large timber fell on him while at work on the new County bridge at Silverdale, eight miles east of Arkansas City. He was in the employ of the Western Bridge Company of Harrisonville, Mo., contractors of the bridge. Mr. Metcalf suffered a fractured skull when the bridge timber loosened by the giving away of a guy wire fell on his head. He never regained consciousness. Metcalf was brought to the Arkansas City hospital, where he died at 7 o'clock last night. The body was taken to the Powell Mortuary. Metcalf was single. His mother resides at Caney. The body will be taken there tomorrow where the funeral will be held. Mr. Metcalf was well known in and about Arkansas City.

Alice Marie Metcalf was born on Leap Year Day, 1904. She married John Nunnold, a petroleum engineer, at Fredonia, KS, in 1924. In the 1930 obituary of her father, the Nunnolds are listed as living at Bristow, OK. However, they mainly seem to have lived in Sterling, KS, where John Nunnold died in 1954. In the early 1970's, Alice made her home in Falls City, Nebraska, near a daughter. She passed away there in 1979. On my first attempt to trace descendants of Alice, I happened into a retired person's center at Falls City. Some staff members there had known her and were high in her praise, saying that she had been helpful at the center, demonstrating and helping with quilting, crocheting, sewing, etc. They also said that she had served as a practical nurse with other retired persons even after she began to suffer poor health herself. Her obituary also mentions that she was a practical and private nurse. These qualities were confirmed by her granddaughter, Susan Mock Vonderschmidt. In 1984, I spent a pleasant hour with the Vonderschmidts on the shores of Big Lake, east of Falls City, in Missouri. It was especially pleasant because Alice's descendants had seemed the most elusive and last for me to locate among Aminzo's many descendants. The occasion was also graced by the 5-year old charms of Gena Vonderschmidt, Sadie and Min's great-great granddaughter and Alice's great-granddaughter.

ACM remembered the charms of a young Alice, herself, when she came to visit her Uncle Wallace's family in 1921. She must

The following is a letter written by Herbert E. Nellis, of rural Arkansas City, KS, to his brother, Earl, at Caney, shortly after the death of Dewey Metcalf (Earl was Dewey's brother-in-law).

Jan. 13 1926  
Arkansas City  
Rt # 6 Kansas

Mr. Earl Nellis  
Dear Brother and family,

Rodney and I were over where they were at work on the bridge where Dewey received his fatal blow but did not get to talk to the boy we wanted to see so I went over to Silverdale yesterday evening. The boy lives in Silverdale. He and Dewey were the only ones on that side of the creek when the gen pole fell.

The boys name is Orville Utt. I am sending you description that he wrote for me of the accident. He was close to Dewey when the pole fell. The boy said Dewey had a good sheeplined coat at the tool house.

Rodney and I arrived home about nine o'clock got our supper in Cedarvale. How are you. We are all able to be about this morning. Ivan was sick abed yesterday.

H.E. Nellis

This is the statement written by Mr. Utt:

Dewey Metcalf was killed by a gen pole. the pole was about eighteen feet long and was holding up one end of a 5/8 inch cable about 300 ft. long. The cable was fastened to the pole with a single steel block. The cable was on the roller. When the pole fell there was only two guy ropes on it, one on the east and one on the west. We were working on one on the south when the pole fell. Dewey was pulling on the guy on the south so we could fasten it when it fell hitting him on top of the head.

(The above courtesy of Charles B. Stroup, Jr.).

have been a vivacious and popular girl. There was a round of parties while she was there. ACM was, I suspect, rather smitten by his cousin. He seems to be next to her in the photos taken at the time, and he mentioned that she "looked like a movie star." She, in turn, gave him some advice concerning a certain young lady of the community. Perhaps he took it to heart. At least, the young lady didn't become my mother.

Beryl Edward Metcalf was the only one of the children of Aminzo and Sarah to retain lifelong roots in Caney, KS. He was a carpenter by trade. He died there in 1966 and is buried in Sunnyside Cemetery with his wife, Iva Cobb Metcalf. He had two sons, Earl and Ray, who still reside in Caney, as do some of their descendants. I enjoyed meeting some of these in August, 1986. Donna Metcalf, a daughter of Ray, was a knowledgeable informant about her branch of the family. Her brother, Edward N. Metcalf, was teaching, at that time, in the high school at Independence, KS. Since then he has joined the faculty of Coffeyville Community College, KS, where he teaches classes in the arts, including painting, sculpture, and print-making. He is also a grant-coordinator at the College. In addition, he is a lay minister in the United Methodist Church, which would, no doubt, please his ancestor, the Rev. Elijah.

Most of the younger male bearers of the Metcalf name, in Aminzo's line, are the descendants of Beryl Metcalf. I looked with satisfaction, then, at photogenic young Brandon Metcalf, 1½ years old, (grandson of Earl and son of Charles) who was romping on a green Caney lawn that August evening of 1986.

Violet Goldie, the youngest of the children of Sarah and Aminzo, was born in 1908. At that time her oldest brother, Dolie, was already 31 and had children of his own. She married Charles Brooks Stroup. They resided in Caney, where Charles was in the refrigeration business. Charles died there in a work-accident. Violet remarried, to Clarence Grayum, who preceded her in death also. Violet was the last of the children of Sadie

and Aminzo to pass on--7 January 1981, in Midwest City, Oklahoma.

Very late in this project (1989), I made the acquaintance of Violet's son, Charles Brooks Stroup, Jr., and his family at Midwest City. Charles is an accountant with Oklahoma Gas and Electric, and his wife, Barbara, works in the field of nursing administration. I have incorporated some information and ideas offered by Charles (CBS) in the summarizing remarks, below.

\* \* \* \* \*

It has been especially difficult to try to attain an objective assessment of Uncle Min and Aunt Sadie. Probably I have failed. Some interviewees had little use for Min and others were not favorably inclined towards Sadie.

Such a divergence of viewpoints has frustrated me. However, I think there just may be some pattern to it all. It seems that the informants, who knew them earlier on, tend to be more negative, and those, who knew them later, more affirmative. CBS recalls hearing that Sadie had scant chance for rest, even after childbirth, as she had little help, and there was so much to be done in the populous household. Nevertheless, all eight of her children lived to maturity. MBM and ACM, who knew them back in the period before 1910, were especially critical (MBM of Min and ACM of Sadie). ACM remembered visiting the family when they lived on the old Metcalf farm southeast of Dexter. This was the time when, as mentioned above, the crowded house overflowed with children and some had to sleep in the barn. It was the time when Min took his son, Zephi, out of school to do farm work. But the thing that "stuck" in ACM's mind with the greatest tenacity was the observation that his aunt Sadie chewed tobacco, and the fuss that his mother (Laura) made about this (not to Sadie, of course). Thus, we are remembered in the child's mind. In reference to this time, GMM writes, in regard to the relationship between Guy and Aminzo: "As I think about it, I believe my father may have been as critical of his father as of his step-mother. I say that because he let his children know he would never, never take a cent of any wages they earned; he said

his father took from him any money earned, and he resented it."

Perhaps things improved somewhat when the family left the Dexter farm and returned to the Arkansas City (and later Caney) area. However, Ralph Nellis, a grandson who visited the family around 1920, thought that both Min and Sadie were rather short on "warmth" and a bit too long on discipline. Daughter Violet's pejorative assessment of her father dates from this period. Among other shortcomings, she thought he had a tendency to nip the bottle a bit too much then. She recounted to CBS that on one occasion Min became so abusive that she had to flee for help to the home of Myrtle and Earl Nellis. The impression that CBS had acquired, and which seems to accord with such facts as I have, was that Min had swings of behavior, in those years, at least, which ranged from drinking bouts to periods of religious enthusiasm. In all this, I seem to detect some similarity to the behavior of his brother, Algeroy. Of course, all this had some sort of culmination in the eventual separation of Min and Sadie, leaving Sadie, of course, hard pressed to support her family.

Now, if we jump another ten years, we begin to hear grandchildren saying quite complimentary things about both grandparents. I hear no more about Min's drinking problem after he settled in Bartlesville (although Sadie still chewed a bit in her later years, to the dismay of daughter, Violet--CBS). I suppose that earlier pressures had let up and, in their more advanced years, they could afford to slip into the role of the mellowed grandma and grandpa. Ruth Metcalf, a daughter of Dolie, recalls that her Grandpa Aminzo took her, as a young girl, on a birthday shopping spree to the "5 and 10 cent store," and whatever she admired he would buy for her. She thought it was her most memorable birthday present, ever. Dorothy Metcalf Urban remembers her Grandma Sadie in the 1930's "as a darling."

Judging from the successes and the accomplishments displayed by so many of the descendants of Aminzo Metcalf and Mary Gaston and Sarah Ann Rector, I strongly suspect that all three of them must have been persons of intelligence, a quality that was passed on, it would appear, to their descendants.

## CHAPTER 13

## IDA ELLEN METCALF HUDSON

Helen Hudson Elkins (HHE) and Clarence H. McGuire (CHM), grandchildren of Ida Metcalf Hudson, and Medea Gordon Hudson (MGH), a daughter-in-law, are major informants for this section and are identified by the initials indicated.

Ida Ellen Metcalf was born 26 February 1853 in Rushford Township, Allegany Co., New York. While still an infant, her parents, Zephi and Harriet Metcalf, migrated west, spending time in several states before settling in Illinois, where Ida reached adolescence. When she was about 14 the family moved on to Kansas. All of this must have been quite a travel adventure for the youngsters of the family.

In the 1870 census of Neosho Co., KS (June 1), Ida (age 17) and her younger sister, Dora, are listed as "domestic servants" in the home of William and Harriet Morris in Erie. Mr. Morris was the county Register of Deeds. Mrs. Morris was only slightly older than Ida and I wonder if the girls might have been friends, previously. I suppose that by working in Erie Ida's horizons were expanded from what they had been when she was a "farm girl." No doubt being in Erie also allowed her to make the acquaintance of a certain young man of that town. Thus, when she was almost 18, we find Ida marrying Reuben L. Hudson, age 26, of Erie--on 1 January 1871. Generally his name appears as R.L.; however I see it spelled both as Reuben and Ruben and it is spelled Ruben on his gravestone. Reuben was born 8 April 1844 in Lawrenceburg, Indiana. His parents were James and Esther (sometimes spelled Hester) Dickerson Hudson. James was born in Virginia and Esther in Illinois. In the 1875 and 1880 censuses for the city of Parsons, Esther is listed as residing with Reuben's family, with occupation of school teacher. In Arkansas City, KS, at a later time, she lived at 715 N. 7th St. in a house still standing in the 1980's and decorated with scalloped trim on the upper part. The Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 4 August 1909 (courtesy of Lena Davison Metcalf) records:

Hester Hudson, 715 North 7th Street passed away at 6:30 A.M. due to congestion of the liver. She was 83 years 6 months of age. She leaves 3 children, R.L. Hudson of this city, G. Hudson, Twin Falls, Iowa, J.H. Hudson, Fredonia, Kans., former congressman of 3rd Dist., Kans.

Esther is interred in Riverview Cemetery, Arkansas City, near Zephi and Harriet Metcalf. Perhaps the "G. Hudson" noted above lived in Twin Falls, Idaho, rather than Iowa. MGH writes "Reuben had a bro. Guy who was a scout for caravans across the plains."

Reuben Hudson was a veteran of the Civil War. He was a scout for the Union forces, involved with acquisition of horses, etc. (CHM, FMM). CHM writes: "I am sure that he was a brave soldier and always left that impression with those who talked to him a little bit as I did about his war experiences." Reuben and Ida took a trip to the Southeast in 1913, on the 50th anniversary of Reuben's Civil War experiences. HHE has three photos of them, taken atop Lookout Mountain, near Chattanooga, Tennessee. They are perched, in all their late Victorian finery, upon some rocks of bizarre shape. Explanatory notes by Ida are written on the backs of the photos.

MGH writes that "Ida and Reuben Hudson went from Erie, KS, to Parsons as a young couple, just married...." All their eight children, except the youngest one, were born in Parsons. The 1880 census for the city of Parsons (Rosenstahl, p. 9) shows the Hudsons living in the north part of town with four children (Grace, Lena, Hattie and Effa), and with Esther Hudson and Dora and Myrtle Parsons. Dora was Ida's younger sister, recently widowed at that time. An infant son, Claude, had died at the age of 55 days in 1878. The winter of 1883-1884 must have been an especially bleak one for the Hudsons, as they lost two daughters within the space of five months: Hattie, almost 8 years old, and Ella, 13 months old.

The Hudsons moved to Arkansas City, Cowley Co., KS, about 1888. In 1894, they were living at 716 S. 5th St. and later they settled at 719 S. D St., but in a house much larger than the one presently at that address. MGH refers to it as "a large antique

home." and it is shown in a photo that Ida sent to her sister, Dora, and which was preserved by the Lindsey family in El Paso.

Reuben was a building contractor. CHM writes: "I think his main job was to build railroad stations and trackage for the Santa Fe Railroad in the west. He spent a lot of time in Colorado and the southwest part of the United States when he built the railroad stations and laid trackage for the Santa Fe Railroad." ACM says that Reuben was involved with this railway contracting in his earlier career and that Ida was alone quite a lot then. Later, he was more into housebuilding. He is said to have been the contractor for numerous buildings in Arkansas City, including the "Kress Building" at 315 South Summit Street.

Although a country girl by origin, Ida was clearly adept at learning what were apparently considered the more genteel urban manners of her day and place. Country nieces and nephews were, in their turn, somewhat awed by Aunt Ida and the Hudson home. GMM mentions her first experience with finger bowls was in Ida's dining room. Photographs show her and her daughters elegantly dressed in what must have been quite the epitome of fashion for small-town Kansas in the late 1800's. In one photo she and Reuben display the latest mode in travel attire. Reuben has a valise and Ida a large purse. Reuben wears a bow tie and a derby hat and Ida displays a long black coat, fur stole draped over an arm and an elegant chapeau, bearing long plumes. HHE says that they were probably dressed for a trip from Arkansas City to Kansas City when this photo was taken. Beverly Elkins Smith, a great-granddaughter of Ida, presently preserves her sideboard and a cedar chest in which she stored her furs.

In her photos, Ida appears to have had the deep-set, black eyes of her mother--eyes that still flash out at one from the old photos. CHM recounts: "Ida was a very fine looking woman, although she wasn't very big and she was always very nice to my brother and I when we visited her in Arkansas City, Kansas. I remember so well my grandfather, Reuben, was interested in horses and he had a horse named Queenie, which we used to drive hooked up to a buggy." According to HHE, Ida was once thrown

from a buggy being drawn by Queenie and dragged for some distance. This accident seems to have caused some hearing impairment; otherwise, she seemed to suffer no ill effects. She maintained a sprightly gait when walking, with head up and shoulders back. In an apt image, CHM compared his grandmother, because of her petite, pert appearance, to a Bobwhite quail walking about. (Quotes from CHM, in litt., 10 Nov. 1980).

Although the country Metcalfs seem to have thought of Ida as being rather prominent in Arkansas City society I don't know to what extent she actually was. HHE describes her and Reuben as strict Methodists. They had devotionals before breakfast, as had apparently been the custom in the household of Ida's parents (Chap. 8). Sunday was the Lord's day, with no Sunday newspapers allowed.

A double wedding was held at the Hudson home at 716 S. 5th St. on 28 February 1894 (Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 1 March 1894, courtesy of Lena Davison Metcalf), involving (1) Grace Hudson and Edmund Cornish and (2) Lena Hudson and Ross Merrick. Grace was 22, Edmund 23, Lena was 21 and Ross 45. Concerning this wedding the Traveler rhapsodized:

It is not often that the matrimonial affairs of even members of the same family come to the blissful crisis of the marriage ceremony at the same day and hour. This was, however, the pleasant occurrence which took place yesterday in this city. ...the occasion was very enjoyable. The ceremony was performed by Rev. E.A. Hoyt, who in a very neat and pleasant manner by one repetition of the marriage ritual joined both the couples in the holy bonds of wedlock.

The Cornish family into which Grace married was well known for many years in Arkansas City because of their photographic studio there. This period in the Hudson family was amply recorded photographically because of the Cornish connection. Many of the photographs, although very formal, seem to be fine examples of the craft of that time and surely show off the Hudson family wardrobe to advantage--elegant lacy gowns, Victorian hats, gloves, etc. HHE possesses tinted oval portraits of Ida and of Reuben, about 1 1/2 feet high, and a large

portrait in pastel pinks and blues of three little girls: Evelyn and Grace Cornish and Marjorie Merrick, grandchildren of Ida.

It appears that Edmund Cornish, himself, was not involved with the photographic profession. According to an article in The Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 27 February 1907: "He served the service of the Santa Fe Railroad at an early age and served that company well for 10 years. He was a clerk being promoted from time to time, until he was chief clerk at Guthrie, when he was forced to give up his duties." Suffering from some sort of spinal complication, Edmund was ill and often hospitalized for about four years before his death in 1907.

Grace later married Anthony Braun. A photo identifies him as "Anton (Toni) Braun." I have also encountered the spelling "Brawn" (CHM). He was also an employee of the Santa Fe Railroad. Mr. Braun seems to have been a trencherman of distinction. CHM recalls a Thanksgiving meal when "Brawn had a big turkey which he finished off in one sitting." As one might suppose, Braun was obese and perhaps this was related to the fact that Grace was left a widow for a second time. Grace and Edmund had had two daughters, Evelyn and Grace. Grace died as a young woman. Evelyn married Joseph Suor. She died in 1980, leaving several descendants. Her son, Edmund Suor, a West Point graduate, was a pilot in World War II. He was shot down near Okinawa.

As noted above, Lena Hudson married Ross Merrick, who was 24 years her senior. A Heston and Jane Merrick, the parents of Ross, are buried near Esther Hudson and Zephi and Harriet Metcalf in Riverview Cemetery in Arkansas City. Ross had a house built at 703 N. 8th St., which was occupied by the newlyweds. North 8th Street was apparently quite a fashionable (and paved) street, on the west side of Arkansas City, at that time. The house still stands, having been restored by the W.W. Bishop family, which acquired it in 1966. The tall house, with its mansard roof and peaked, square tower, is of brick, painted white except for red, cut-brick trim. The above description is drawn from an article describing the restored home, which appeared in The Arkansas City Traveler of 12 August 1978.

In Ross Merrick, Lena apparently married a quite wealthy husband. The Kansas census of 1895 indicates that he possessed a farm of 860 acres in Creswell Twp., with 500 acres under cultivation. The 1900 census lists his occupation as being "stockdealer." According to MGH, he "Dealt in buying and selling cattle. The bank failed to give him credit for one shipment of cattle so he simply gave up. Lena and he soon parted." The real estate and mortgage records of Ross are numerous. Records show that he sold all of his farm properties and, in 1904, he and Lena sold their fine city home to Reuben Hudson, who sold it, in turn, to the Arkansas City Hospital Association in 1905. Thus, it seems that Ross did, indeed, suffer financial adversities. In 1904 he and Lena were living in Ferry County, Washington. The Merricks had a daughter, Marjorie.

After her separation from Ross Merrick, Lena married a Mr. Jolly (spelled thus on Lena's tombstone but spelled "Jolley" on her death certificate). According to HHE, Mr. Jolly had extensive apple orchards along the Columbia River valley at Brewster, Washington, when Lena married him, and was quite prosperous. Lena died in 1955 in Bellingham, WA, where she was living with Marjorie, who did not marry. Lena is interred in the Hudson family plot in Parsons, KS, but Mr. Jolly is buried in Browning, MO, according to HHE.

Effa Hudson graduated from Arkansas City High School in 1899 (Maag, 1986:58). According to a deed involving Wallace Metcalf, in 1903, Effa was a notary public with her term expiring on 13 October 1904. Seemingly, then, she may have worked in some professional capacity before her marriage. Effa Hudson (23) and Clarence McGuire (25) were wed on 1 January 1904 at the Hudson home in Arkansas City. After the ceremony there was a "four course luncheon," reported by the Arkansas City Daily Traveler of that date. In the Kansas census of 1895, a C. McGuire, 16 years old, is listed as a son of T.H. McGuire, both born in Kentucky, and living in Creswell, Twp., Cowley Co.. CHM, who was a son of Effa and Clarence, wrote (in litt., 10 November 1980): "My dad was a clothing merchant in Leavenworth, Kansas, and worked for the Palace Clothing Company as a clothing salesman before he opened his own store in Leavenworth. He was quite successful

there when he opened his business and I worked in the store myself as did my brother, Hudson."

Clarence Hudson McGuire (CHM) played basketball at the University of Kansas for three years, where he was also a Phi Beta Kappa, and he later served as a national president of the KU alumni association. He was active in numerous other organizations as well. He was both a president and chairman of the board of Hoover Brothers, Inc., of Kansas City, MO, a school supply and equipment firm. He retired from the firm in 1982, after 53 years with it. He continued his interest in sports, noting, in his words, that he "was a scratch golfer for many years" and he once won the Missouri Senior Tournament after he was 55. Unfortunately, he did not have long to enjoy his retirement, passing on in May 1983.

Ida and Reuben's son, Harry, was a chiropractic physician, who practiced in Oklahoma. At the time of his death, in 1936, he was living at Wagoner, OK. He, also, is buried in the Hudson family plot at Parsons. Harry and Ruth Bell Hudson left no descendants.

The youngest son of Ida and Reuben, Earl, married Edith G. Holmes on 2 September 1908. The Arkansas City Daily Traveler of that date reports the wedding:

This morning at 8 o'clock at the home of the brides' parents, Mr. and Mrs. Ira Holmes of 625 N. 4th St., occurred the wedding of Miss Edith G. Holmes and Earl U. Hudson. The wedding was a quiet one and was witnessed by relatives of the two families only. Rev. J.C. Holmes, pastor of the Baptist church, performed the ceremony which was a simple but impressive one. For the occasion the bride was gowned in white and the groom wore the usual black. The house was decorated in elegant style for this event. The bride and groom received quite a number of beautiful and costly presents. The bride is a most accomplished young lady and will make an ideal wife. The groom is the son of Mr. and Mrs. R.L. Hudson. He is a fine young man. He is employed by the Santa Fe as a machinest's helper.

Edith Holmes Hudson died on 13 December 1918. Earl later married Medea Dosha Gordon (MGH). Earl is listed in the 1908-1909 Arkansas City Directory as "Appr. Santa Fe" (in reference to the railroad). He had a strong interest in

The following item is from the Lawrence Journal World  
of \_\_\_ May 1983:

CLARENCE MCGUIRE

KANSAS CITY, Mo.---Services were conducted at the Second Presbyterian Church here today for Clarence McGuire, 76, local business, civic and religious leader and former national president of the Kansas University Alumni Association. Mr. McGuire died Sunday at his home in Kansas City, Mo. Cremation was planned.

Mr. McGuire was born in Arkansas City, Kan., and had lived in the Kansas City area most of his life. He was a past chairman of the board and past president of Hoover Bros., Inc. and retired in 1982 after 53 years with the company.

He had been active as a lay leader in the Presbyterian Church, was a leader in the Heart of America United Way effort and served on the board of directors of Children's Mercy Hospital for 10 years. He also worked in the YMCA and Boy Scout programs and received a number of honors for those efforts. He was a member of the Kansas City Rotary Club and the University Club.

Mr. McGuire graduated from Kansas University in 1929. He was a member of Phi Beta Kappa honorary scholastic fraternity and the Phi Delta Theta social fraternity. He served as national president of the KU Alumni Association in 1965 and 1966.

Survivors include his wife, Mrs. Virginia Hoover McGuire, of the home; a son, Dr. Thomas Hoover McGuire, Mission Hills; a daughter, Mrs. Judith Drake, Fairway; a brother, Hudson McGuire, Los Angeles; 10 grandchildren and one great-grandchild.

mechanics and attended an automotive school. Then, according to MGH, he "Went to the Post Office as a mechanic, Nov. 1922, from which he retired after 30 yrs. service under civil service." He retired as a supervisor.

To return to the parents of the above brood: Reuben died on 6 May 1922 (see Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 6 and 8 May). In 1929 Ida went to live with her daughter, Grace Braun, in Kansas City, MO. She was very hard of hearing by that time. On a rainy day, 1 March 1930, while crossing a street with her umbrella somewhat pulled down over her head, she failed to notice an oncoming vehicle. CHM said that she was struck by a streetcar at 44th and Troost Streets, Kansas City, MO. However, the following account appears in the Arkansas City Daily Traveler of 3 March 1930:

Mrs. Ida Hudson, 77 years old, former resident of this city and the widow of the late R.L. Hudson, died in Kansas City Saturday afternoon after being struck by a motor car Friday night. Mrs. Hudson, whose husband was an early day building contractor here, went to Kansas City less than a year ago to make her home with a daughter, Mrs. Grace Braun. (There are more details concerning the accident, arrest of the driver, etc.).

It seems, then, that Ida, at age 77, was still active enough to be out walking on her own. She and Reuben, together with Lena, Hattie, Claude, Ella and Harry, are interred in Oakwood Cemetery (Lot 26, Block 14) at the east side of Parsons, KS, south of U.S. Highway 160.

\* \* \* \* \*

Aunt Ida (or possibly Dora) once explained to my mother (EDM) that when the Metcalfs moved from Illinois to Kansas, with covered wagons, the girls, Ida and Dora, were largely charged with looking after the youngest brothers, Wallace and Doc. I suppose this involved Wal' more than Doc, as Wal' was a lively 3 or 4 years old at that time.

It would appear that Ida maintained a certain affection, probably tempered with some despair, as well, for her little

brother, Wallace, my grandfather. I mean to say that the civilizing of younger brothers must bear mixed results in the view of older sisters. Also, as Wallace grew older, he retained a rural way of life, whereas Ida became an urbanite, so their life-styles must have diverged. Still, glimpses of an abiding affection steal through. EDM tells of Ida running up and warmly bussing Wal' on a visit to his farm. This was just after he had shaved off his customary moustache and after Ida had kissed him she drew back, somewhat abashed, thinking she might have kissed the wrong man.

Another incident, related by EDM, seems to give some insight into the divergent (but equally strong) personalities of Ida and Wal'. In the late 1920's, Ida once invited all of Wallace's family over for Sunday (noon) dinner. Part of those invited (including EDM and ACM) arrived as per invitation but brother Wallace decided he would not go until after dinner (without notifying Ida). However, when Wallace's party didn't arrive, Ida apparently easily figured out what he was up to. Not to be outdone by this upstart brother, she just kept the meal "on hold" until Wallace's straggled in around 2:00 p.m. and then she made everyone sit down at the dining table and eat regardless of whether they had already eaten or not!

\* \* \* \* \*

Lena Davison Metcalf has provided the following item from a "100 Years Ago" column in the Arkansas City Traveler of 20 September 1990. It seems likely, from the gist of this and other items in the column, that it was written in a humorous, tongue-in-cheek vein. It does indicate that at least one aspect of Ida's rural girlhood was still with her in 1890 in "urban" Arkansas City.

Sept. 17--R.L. Hudson was fined \$1 and costs yesterday for permitting his chickens to trespass upon Mrs. Al Robinson's yard.

## CHAPTER 14

## DORA ROXANA METCALF PARSONS THOMSON

Dora Roxana was born 4 September 1857 in Missouri, during those enigmatic years when the Metcalfs resided in that state. No doubt she was named for her Aunt Roxana Metcalf Damon back in Rushford, New York. When she was quite young the family moved to Illinois and when she was about 10, in the spring or summer of 1867, they moved to Kansas. She remembered well that trek by covered wagon. As mentioned above, she and Ida recounted to EDM how they were charged with caring for their two younger brothers. Joy Thomson Lindsey (Joy, hereafter), Dora's daughter, also remembered hearing her discuss the journey west.

From her photographs, I judge that Dora grew into an attractive girl. It appears that she had brown hair and eyes. Some who knew them both tell me that she and Ida looked a good deal alike, although the photos suggest to me that Ida resembled her mother more than Dora. Like Ida and some of her brothers, Dora was short of stature, reaching only 5 feet.

She resided with the family, northeast of Erie, Neosho County, after they moved to Kansas. However, in the 1870 census she and Ida are listed as "domestic servants" in the home of William and Harriet Morris in Erie. As Dora was only 12, then, I was surprised at seeing this. However, the Morris family only consisted of William and Harriet (age 18) and twin daughters, 3 months old, so the work must not have been excessive. This does allow us to establish, however, that, at this early age, Dora was already no stranger to work and that she was probably experiencing some early feelings of being "on her own." These qualities of being a hard worker and of an independent turn of mind are exhibited throughout her long life. She also probably got some early training in the care of infants in the Morris household, which would surely prove useful to her later on. In the 1875 census, she is listed as being with her own family again in Walnut Grove Township. It would be of interest to know what Dora was doing between 1870 and 1875. She may have helped

Ida part of the time. Ida and Reuben Hudson had settled in Parsons and had three children by November 1875. I have wondered if, during those years, Dora might have been able to secure some extra schooling in Erie or Parsons beyond what rudiments were presumably available in Walnut Grove community. I suggest this because Joy once mentioned that her mother was good at helping her children with their schoolwork and knew ever so many answers to things. Also, greeting cards from Dora (preserved by Myrtle Metcalf Johnson) show that she had excellent, firm handwriting, and she spelled words correctly, in contrast to the greeting cards sent by Ida.

According to Neosho Co. records, on 14 November 1875 Dora, now age 18, married William H. Parsons (age 24) of Labette Co., KS. They were married by Rev. Wm. Sibley at "the bride's father's." According to daughter Myrtle's death certificate, Parsons was born in Virginia, and seemingly went by the name of Henry. Great-granddaughter Jean Strayer George has preserved his powderhorn, on which is written "Henry Parsons. Parsons, Kansas" and a metal flask on which appears "H. Parsons." Probably Henry and Dora lived in Parsons as newlyweds. To them was born one daughter, Myrtle Iona, on 19 March 1878. Henry died a few years after their marriage, leaving Dora a young widow.

In my branch of the family it was commonly supposed that Henry Parsons belonged to the family from which the city of Parsons, KS, takes its name. However, I doubt this, because the town was named for Levi G. Parsons, a president of the M.K. & T. Railroad, which passed through Parsons. Levi Parsons never lived in Parsons and had no children (Crispino, 1971:21; Masterson, 1952:206). Thus, if Henry was related to Levi it probably was only distantly. I have been unable to find any information about the death of Henry. However, with Myrtle being born in March 1878 and allowing Dora the traditional year of mourning before she remarried, he would seem to have died between June 1877 and July 1879. According to Parsons cemetery records, there is a "Henry Parsons" buried in potter's field,

with date of death given as 1878. It seems probable that this is our Henry, as the date conforms to that suggested above. But why was he buried in potter's field? Perhaps Dora had little money, but it seems that relatives, such as the Reuben Hudsons, might have helped out, unless Dora refused help.

The U.S. Census for 1880 (Rosenstahl, undated, p. I,9) shows Dora and Myrtle living in the Reuben Hudson household in the north part of Parsons, with Myrtle listed as two years old. Dora's relationship to the head of the house is listed as "boarder" and her occupation as "housekeeper." As Ida then had four young children, she probably could have used some extra help from Dora.

In south Parsons, in 1880, there resided a clan of Thomsons (spelled Thompson in the census--Rosenstahl, pp. II, 5-7). These included David (age 30), J.L. (age 33), F.J. (age 40), and J.W. (age 47). All seem to have been brothers. They lived near each other, all had been born in Pennsylvania (David, at least, was born in Clearfield Co., PA, according to JTL), and all are indicated as having a father born in Scotland and a mother born in England. J.W. Thomson is listed as the mayor of Parsons with occupation of "R.R. Mat. Bridges." The occupation of J.L. is listed as "Bridge Carp." and that of F.J. and David as carpenter. From the birthplaces given for the children of these brothers, it appears that J.W. had come out to Kansas some 20 years previous to 1880, although he had also lived briefly in Iowa and Missouri after leaving Pennsylvania. J.L. had come to Kansas by way of Texas and F.J. and David had come to Kansas from Pennsylvania within the previous one or two years. Thus, there seems to have been a gradual exodus of the Thomson brothers from Pennsylvania, with J.W. leading the way. <sup>Kate</sup>~~Agnes~~, the wife of David Thomson, had died some time around March to May of 1880, at birth (according to Joy) of son, Ralph, listed as two months old on June 1, the census date.

On 10 July 1880, in Parsons, Dora married David Wise Thomson. In addition to the infant, Ralph, David had twin sons, John West and William Wise, who were 4 years old, and a

daughter, Lily May, listed as 1 year old in the 1880 census. noted that Lily May was close in age to Dora's daughter Myrtle, and the two were spoken of as comprising a "second set of twins."

I don't know how long Dora and David remained in Parsons but they seem to have moved on to Colorado fairly soon, as their first child, Ida, was born there, probably on 18 August 1881. Most or all of the Thomson brothers had been involved in railway bridge construction and at least two of them moved on to Colorado in this capacity. David was employed for a long time by the Denver and Rio Grande Railroad in Colorado. His brother, "Jerry," (probably the "J.L." of the census, discussed above) was Bridges and Building Superintendent for the Denver and Rio Grande in the state of Colorado. I was told by Gail Lindsey that he is credited in a railroad museum in Golden, CO. David's work required that he attend to a project, such as building a bridge, for some time and then move on to another project. His family followed along as best they could, especially if it was a big job that was going to last a year or more. According to information supplied by Mrs. Alice Mountain, by Joy, and by census records, they were in Lake City in 1881; Durango in 1886 and 1888; Red Mountain in 1890; Ouray in 1895; Delta in 1898; Dunton in 1899; Rico in 1900; and in Mancos in 1903. Durango seems to have been their home base and they returned there several times. They were also at Silverton at one time.

As the Thomsons moved around in southwestern Colorado, their family was growing, for Dora and David went on to have nine children of their own, or a combined total of 14. One must surely stand in awe and admiration of Dora, wondering how she possibly coped with such a large and mobile family. Apparently this little woman was a bundle of energy in those Colorado days. Joy mentioned that she worked long into the night after all the children were tucked away and that she seemed tireless.

Dora probably had a good "business head," in contrast to some of her brothers, as she managed at least two hotels. She managed the Mancos Hotel in Mancos around 1903. By that time the

older daughters were old enough to serve as waitresses and chambermaids so it was pretty much a family operation. The 1900 census also shows a Swedish girl, Amy Ellison, living with the family, and listed as a "servant." Daughters Muriel and Vida had a double wedding at the Mancos Hotel. A photo taken in late 1899 or early 1900 shows Dora and all her Thomson children outside a rambling, rustic log hotel at Dunton, Colorado. Apparently Dora was managing this small hotel at that time. Joy told me that Dora also managed the Strater Hotel on the main street of Durango but I find it difficult to think that she actually managed such a grand hotel. It is more likely that she only worked there. Still and all, her intelligence, industriousness and independent spirit surely do shine across the years from that long-ago time in Colorado.

At Delta, the family lived on a ranch where there was livestock and Dora churned and put up butter to sell. Here, they were only some 15 miles from Hotchkiss, where Dora's brother, Hartley Metcalf, lived. One of Dora's daughters (Dora Pearl) was married at the home of Hartley and Ella in Hotchkiss. The youngest of the Thomson children was born while they lived at Delta and was named Hartley Austin (for his uncle, Hartley, and, I suppose, for his cousin, Bennett Austin). The older children married while the family lived in Colorado. Apparently Dora must have liked children as she named the next to the last one "Joy," out of undiminished maternal enthusiasm it is said.

David fell victim to what was diagnosed as Bright's disease in the early 1900's and a physician advised him to move to a milder climate. David went off to the south, thinking to find a suitable home in northern Mexico, where he had some prospects in lumbering. He looked into that but decided, instead, to settle in El Paso. In the meantime, Dora and the younger children had pulled up their stakes in Durango, where they had been living, and had an extended visit with Muriel and Christopher Mountain at the village of Edith, south of Pagosa Springs. From there they took the Santa Fe Railroad to El Paso, a memorable trip for Joy.

Thus, the Thomsons (David, Dora, Cyril, Gail, Joy and Hartley Austin) came to settle in El Paso in August, 1906 (the month remembered by Joy). In the El Paso City Directory of 1908 David is listed as a carpenter. Joy said that he was more of a contractor, who contracted to build the first railway overpass in downtown El Paso (on Copia St.) and the first water tower, at nearby Ft. Bliss. Gail Lindsey says that David was also involved with building some mining railroads in Chihuahua at some time, and Gail remembers Dora (after David's death) attempting to recover some \$5,000 owed him by the Mexican government, but to no avail. The family rented houses at 2023 E. Canal Ave., 78 Eucalyptus, 2230 Bassett, and, then, bought a home at 1324 Wright Ave., where they lived from about 1912 to 1921. This house still stands, just below the Cliff Inn at Gold Hill Medical Center and opposite the east side of Lamar School. The Thomsons had to move out of the house on Eucalyptus St. quite unexpectedly. Son Gail, employed by a paint company, had left some paint-impregnated overalls on a porch awaiting laundering. The trousers underwent spontaneous combustion; the house caught fire. and was too much damaged for occupancy. It also ruined the bread that Dora was baking.

The years 1917-1921 were sad ones for the Thomsons. Daughter Vida Daisy died in Durango, CO, on 5 Feb 1917 and son Hartley Austin, who had a heart condition, died on 3 May 1917, just before he was to graduate from El Paso High School. Dora had to hurry back from Clifton, AZ, where she was with daughter Joy, who had just given birth to her second son, Gail. Joy tells of further trials. In 1918 the Lindseys were living in Bisbee, AZ. One of their sons had come down with the deadly influenza of that year, and before he had completely recovered Joy received a telegram advising that her brother, Gail, in El Paso was also gravely ill with the influenza. By the time Joy was able to reach El Paso, Gail had passed on (11 October) and Dora had come down with the 'flu'. Joy left her children with her mother-in-law, who lived in El Paso then, and she and her father managed to nurse Dora back to health.

The older son of the Lindseys, Dee Reynolds, died on 6 May 1919 in an accident across from the Thomson home where Lamar school is now located. A mound of dirt or sand had been dumped here, and was being worked by Howard Strayer. Jean Strayer George writes (in litt: 15 Sep 1987): "My dad was taking down a hill of dirt and Dee insisted on helping him. He sent him back to the house many times to get him out of the way. . . the last time for his hat. Apparently he got under the hill and the dirt caved in on him and he suffocated. My dad apparently carried this sorrow with him until he died." The death is reported, similarly, in the El Paso Herald (see next page).

Dora's husband, David Wise Thomson, died on 21 March 1921. After David's death, Dora sold the El Paso property on Wright Ave., and she then becomes rather difficult to trace. Joy says that she had a railway pass because of connections that the Thomsons had had with the railways. Gail Lindsey (Joy's second son--indicated as "Gail," hereafter) notes "If she'd take a notion to go somewhere she'd just get on the train and go." She was in Eastland, TX, for a few days, visiting the Lindseys in 1921 and, from there, went up to Kansas. According to the diary of Frank Metcalf (FMM), she was in Kansas almost all of October, at least. This was her first visit back to Kansas in 40 years, as nearly as I can establish. Dorothy Thomson Poe, a granddaughter, says that Dora was in California in early 1922, when Dorothy recalls meeting her at the train station. Apparently she was back in Texas later in 1922, however, because she travelled with the Lindseys to California in early 1923 (see account concerning Joy, below). A photo shows them getting ready to leave El Paso for the long trek.

Dora lived with various of her daughters (Myrtle, Muriel, Pearl) and with the Lindseys, in Arizona, around 1928, when she again travelled to Kansas. According to EDM and Joy she may have had some plans of making her home with her sister, Ida (a widow by then), but as Joy recalls "It just didn't seem to work out." Joy also remembers that her mother said, after one trip to Kansas, that "Kansas wasn't like it used to be." I should imagine that Ida and Dora were about equally independent so it

INFORMATION FROM EL PASO NEWSPAPERS CONCERNING MEMBERS  
OF DORA THOMSON'S FAMILY WHO DIED IN EL PASO

from El Paso Herald of Wednesday, 23 March 1921:

D.W. THOMSON, AGED 69, IS DEAD: LIVED HERE 15 YEARS. Funeral services for David W. Thomson, 69 years old, who died Monday at his residence, 1324 Wright avenue, will be held at 2 oclock Friday afternoon, at the family residence. Mr. Thomson has been a resident of El Paso for 15 years.

John W. Thomson and Mrs. Lillie Klahn, of Durango and Will W. Thomson, of Pueblo, Colo., his sons and daughter, are expected to arrive here tomorrow. In addition to these and his widow, Mrs. Dora Thomson, he is survived by the following children: Mrs. Pearl Hull, Mrs. Myrtle Gorton, Mrs. Muriel Mountain, Cyril C. Thomson, Mrs. Marjorie Lindsey and Mrs. Ida Haney.

from El Paso Herald of May 5-6, 1917, published on Saturday, May 5:

H.A. THOMSON, HIGH SCHOOL BOY, DIES OF HEART FAILURE. The funeral services for Hartley A. Thomson, a member of class 2B, of the El Paso high school, who died of heart failure at the home of his parents, Mr. and Mrs. D.W. Thomson, 1324 Wright avenue at 3 oclock Thursday afternoon, will be conducted by Rev. Ed. L. Millican at 3 oclock Sunday afternoon from the East El Paso Baptist church. The boy's parents and four brothers, John, William, Cyril C., and Gail L. Thomson, and six sisters, Mrs. Lilly K. Klahn, Mrs. A.T. Haney, Mrs. Pearl Hull, Mrs. Muriel Mountain, Mrs. Marjorie Lindsey and Mrs. Myrtle Gorton survive. Funeral arrangements will be completed this afternoon.

from El Paso Herald of Monday, October 14, 1918:

GAIL L. THOMPSON. The funeral of Gail L. Thompson, son of Mr. and Mrs. L.W. Thompson, 1324 Wright avenue, who died of influenza Saturday evening, will be held Monday afternoon from the chapel of J.J. Kaster Undertaking company. Interment will be in Concordia cemetery. Rev. E.L. Millican will conduct the services. Deceased was 27 years old, had lived here 12 years and was employed by the Tuttle Paint and Glass company.

from El Paso Herald of Wednesday, May 7, 1919:

While playing in a pile of sand Tuesday morning at 11 oclock in front of his home, Dee Reynolds Lindsey, the three and a half year old son of Mr. and Mrs. D.O. Lindsey, 1324 Wright street, was so badly crushed by the sand caving in that he died from the effects two hours later. Coroner A.J. Hall pronounced death caused by smothering. The funeral will be held at the chapel at 708 North Stanton. Rev. J. \_ Williams will conduct the services.

was probably wise that their merger failed to materialize. Dora had, by then, seen a great deal more of the world than Ida, which might have given them different points of view. So Dora maintained her own apartment most of the time, in California, seemingly preferring this. Dorothy and Lyle Poe stayed with her a short while. She had a new-fangled radio then, but she restricted its use to two of her favorite programs. In her very latest years, around age 90, Dora lived with Myrtle, who cared for her devotedly. I have been told that they did have some disagreements, though, when Myrtle needed to leave, and would obtain a "sitter" for Dora, who, independent as ever, thought that was quite unnecessary. Letters from Dora and Myrtle from this period are in the Appendix, pages 448-453.

Dora died at Myrtle's home on 7 June 1949 at age 91. Her favorite hymn had been Rock of Ages, which was sung at her funeral. She was interred in Inglewood Park Cemetery. By the time of her funeral, only four of her ten children were still living. A survey of her children follows. Major informants are identified by their first names: Jean Strayer George, Gail Lindsey, Joy Thomson Lindsey, Alice Atkin Mountain, Dorothy Thomson Poe, John H. Thomson, and Carrie Iona Thomson Thompson.

1. Myrtle. As noted already, Myrtle was the only child of Dora and William Henry Parsons. She must have shared her mother's winning personality, as anyone who knew either of them seems to have warmed to them. As well as liking people, Myrtle also liked animals--especially horses, as discussed below.

Myrtle married George Washington Strayer on Christmas day, 1894, when she was three months shy of 17. According to a Strayer family history, Myrtle was from Ouray, CO, and George came originally from Iowa, had been a cattle driver in Texas, worked silver claims in CO with his brother, Franklin, and became postmaster and a merchant at Red Mountain, CO. A letter from Franklin reports George's death and burial in "Aztec" in 1916. Cemetery records show a George Strayer buried in the Aztec, NM, cemetery. It appears, that Myrtle and George must have been divorced around 1900 when the youngest of their three children was born. According to Joy, Myrtle married an Ed Lindholm, whom she met while Dora's family was operating the hotel at Mancos, which would be around 1903. However, such a marriage is not indicated in Myrtle's Bible record (next page), nor was it recorded by the clerk's offices of Montezuma or La Plata Counties, CO. If there was a marriage to Lindholm it must

# Family Bible

This Certifies That

*Mrs. Myrtle Anna Thompson*  
of *Delaware* *County* *Delaware*

herein united in

Solely Matrimony

on the 22 day of Sept  
in the year of our Lord 1918  
at Delaware County Delaware

by *the Rev. Myrtle Anna Thompson*  
for publishing thereof  
Witness *Jessie Ann Hill*

# Family Bible

*Rev. Mr. Thomas Henry Gorton*  
*New Castle Delaware*

*October 2<sup>nd</sup> 1894*

*Delaware Hallace Thompson*

*June 27-1897*

*Chicago Paul Thompson*

*May 2-1900*

*Grand Olden Thompson*

*Delaware Dec 11-1925*

*28 avist Myrtle Thompson*

*Del-8-1928. Mrs. Myrtle Thompson*

*Thompson - March 16-1931*

*Paul and Myrtle Thompson*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

*1925*

# Family Bible

*Myrtle Anna Thompson*  
*1892 moved to New*

*Delaware December 25-*

*1894 three children.*

*Mrs. Myrtle Thompson*

*moved to October 7*

*Antony Sept 26 1915*

*of Linden Colorado*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

*no children*

Pages from a Bible of Myrtle  
Parsons Gorton, with a comment  
by her granddaughter, Jean  
George, at lower right.

*She does not mention  
her second marriage.  
This is her second  
Bible & she was  
44 in age when  
it was written.*

have been of short duration. (Myrtle labels one of her photos as showing her son, Howard, and a Lily Lindholm). Myrtle and George had three children: Dora Alice, born in 1895, died of diphtheria at age four. Howard Wallace was born in 1897, and Angus Paul, born in 1900, died in infancy. Joy noted that Myrtle worked as a cook on the railroad. A photo showing railway cars bears the legend: "Myrtle Strayer and Howard Strayer on the outfit cars. I was cooking." I judge by Howard's size that this may have been around 1905. Another photo shows Myrtle with a group of young people enjoying a swim in Great Salt Lake. At some point Myrtle established herself in Denver, where she married Harvey Gorton in 1911 (or 1910?--see Bible record, preceding page). Joy said that she worked as a waitress and in hospitals in Denver. She calls herself a "graduate nurse" in a letter (Appendix, p. 453). Joy says that Harve Gorton was a chef in a Denver hotel. It appears that he shared Myrtle's love of horses. Myrtle and Harve left Denver probably about 1919, and drove a covered wagon to California.

Later, in the early 1920's, Myrtle and Harve made at least one trip in the covered wagon from California to El Paso. On the back of a photo sent by Myrtle (showing horses, a covered wagon, and a pretty girl) is written: "This is where we live. Little Black Jennie and her colt. Mabel Sumner. The covered wagon that we came in and the one we will go to Texas in. I have my oil stove, bed, table and everything in it." Joy recalls how hungry Myrtle and Harve were when they finally arrived in El Paso. (No fast food places along the way then).

Myrtle and Harve acquired a farm near Norco in Riverside Co. They probably lived there during much or all of the 1920's. Gail Lindsey identifies a photo dated 1927 as taken at Norco. It would seem that Myrtle, whom Alice referred to as being a farmer at heart, would have enjoyed the rural environs of Norco. It seems that wherever she lived she managed to have animals around her. Once, when young Dorothy visited her Aunt Myrtle (probably at Norco), she was much attracted to some pet piglets. She sneaked one into bed with her, but the pig squealed and gave the plot away to Auntie, who, despite her love of animals, apparently didn't feel that piglets belonged between the percales. Dorothy also mentioned Myrtle taking her nieces and nephews fishing at times. Photos taken by Myrtle feature her horses with comments on the back such as: "Mary Jane. We refused \$200 for her." "Dee Reynolds, Juanita, and Mary Jane. Isn't she beautiful?" "Little Jennie, a new horse of ours." "Mary Jane & Kate, my horse." "Billican, Daisy's latest colt." (Some of these names "honor" family members). Perhaps the Gorton's horse-ranching peaked during their years in Norco.

The Gortons moved from Norco to Inglewood in the greater Los Angeles area around 1930 it would seem. According to John they lived on Centinela Ave. on the southwest side of the street near where it makes a bend about halfway between Florence and La Brea Avenues. It seems likely that it was while they lived on

Centinela that they rented out horses to movie studios, most likely in nearby Culver City I suppose.

Harve died in 1932, some time after early July, when Alice remembers seeing him. Myrtle kept his ashes in her living room for some 16 years. Records of Forest Lawn Memorial Park, Glendale, indicate that he died in 1932 and was interred in 1948, he being in Space 1 and Myrtle in Space 7 in "Lot 1513, Liberty." John notes that Myrtle left the Centinela Ave. home "soon after Uncle Harvey died for 121st St., which was just south of Imperial Hwy. about six blocks and north of El Segundo Blvd. between Western and Vermont. It is just out of Gardena." Myrtle's home, here, was at 1121 West 121st St. She lived here for the rest of her life.

In a letter of 1942 (Appendix, p. 453), Myrtle writes that she has been working at the Los Angeles General Hospital for some time. Jean remembers picking her up from work there at times. By around 1939, when Jean first remembers Myrtle, she had settled at the 121st St. location, which still in 1949 was referred to in Dora's death certificate as being in rural Inglewood. Jean remembers this home very well, as her family (i.e. Howard and Mabel Strayer's family) also lived there for a time. Myrtle's property extended from 121st St. to 120th St., and was ample enough for a garden, chicken and rabbit pens, and, of course, a barn for the horses. Various members of Myrtle's family lived in the "back part" of her home from time to time-- Howard's family, Dora, and Chris Mountain there for longer periods and Cyril Thomson for a few weeks according to Carrie.

Myrtle worked hard with her "farmwork," helping relatives, and as nurse at hospitals and, later, at a local school. Carrie recalls her growing corn on a rented plot and cutting and feeding cornstalks to her horses. She enjoyed this kind of activity more than housekeeping according to some informants. However, it was clearly hospitality, not housekeeping, which attracted to her home the many friends and relatives who loved Myrtle dearly. Jean refers to her grandmother as displaying a gentle, warm, and outgoing nature throughout life, and notes that she never knew Myrtle to raise her voice in anger or to punish a child. Alice describes her as "so sweet," but at the same time, ambitious and a hard worker. Alice's daughter, Patricia Mountain Wheeler, notes that Myrtle was "a wonderful woman with a heart of all-outdoors," recalling that "to go there to eat was like she expected an army." Gail says that Myrtle never had much money, but had lots of dignity and pride in the way she did things, doing the best with what she had. She apparently died, alone, in her home, perhaps as she would have wanted it. It surely seems as though she had had a full life. I wish that I had known her, as she is one of those persons in the family, who stands out like a landmark.

According to Joy, Myrtle's son, Howard Wallace Strayer, spent considerable time with his grandparents Thomson in El Paso so that she thought of him as like a younger brother. Howard

and Mabel Wilber Strayer had six children, one of whom died in infancy and another, Howard Thomas, died during World War II. He is mentioned by Myrtle in her letter in the Appendix (p. 453) as having worked in the Merchant Marine. He joined the U.S. Navy in 1944. He was on the destroyer Hoel in the Philippines on the morning of 25 October 1944, in the decisive "Battle off Samar." Although the battle was a great deterrent to the Japanese, several American ships were lost, including the Hoel. Although many of those who abandoned the sinking ships were rescued, Howard was not among them. Later, a fellow sailor visited Howard's mother and related that he had been on a raft that was connected to the one that Howard was on. The two rafts became separated, and he knew nothing of the fate of Howard's raft.

Howard Wallace Strayer, who seems to have worked hard and played hard, died while on a construction site near Bullhead City, AZ. After deciding, late in this project, that I would never be able to contact any of the descendants of Myrtle, I was elated to finally make the acquaintance of her granddaughter, Jean Strayer George, in 1987. In addition to many photos and memorabilia of the family that she shared with me, she noted that she also had passed on to her daughter an old oak table, made in Kansas, which Myrtle seems to have brought to California from El Paso. Perhaps it was Dora's table, kept through her many years of moving about, or possibly it was a table of Harriet Gould Metcalf, which Dora had obtained on one of her visits to Kansas.

2. Ida Ray (or Rae--both spellings are seen, but the death certificate has "Ray"), was born in Lake City, Colorado, on 18 August 1881. As mentioned in Chap. 10, Minnie, the first child of Hartley and Ella Metcalf, was also born in Lake City, on 1 August 1881. Perhaps Dora was living in Lake City because her brother Hartley's family was there. Ida married Herbert Haney, who, according to Joy, was from a well-to-do family of Grand Rapids, Michigan. Gail recalls that the family was in the furniture business there, and, indeed, there was a Haney Furniture firm there for many years. Ida and Herbert had two children, Elwood and Estelle.

I don't know if Herbert and Ida Haney moved directly from Colorado to California, but it seems likely, considering the general pattern of the time. Among the memorabilia preserved by Jean is a 1910 postcard (see p. 457) sent by Ida from Pt. Loma, CA (now part of San Diego), to her brother, Gail, in El Paso. She refers to the photo on the front of the card as "a picture of the back of the house." The attractive "modern-looking" house appears to be new and the eucalyptus trees in the back yard are young. Perhaps the Haney's had recently built it, which might explain why they had a postcard made of it. I should suppose that real estate on Point Loma must have been relatively expensive even in 1910, so it appears that the Haney's were doing well. The photo shows Herbert, Estelle (holding a cat), Elwood

(holding a dog), and Ida, who looks quite happy. Sadly, however, it must not have been long after this when Herbert died, and she had to forsake her California home and move to Michigan. According to Joy, Haney relatives there helped in providing an education for Estelle and Elwood. Estelle seems to have had musical inclinations. A photo shows her with a violin. She may have married a musician. However, she died as a young married woman. Elwood sought out a career in the U.S. Navy. Alice writes (in litt., 15 November 1990) "Elwood and Bertha were in Pearl Harbor but he had shore leave when his ship went down that fateful day of Dec. 7." Ida returned to CA, after 18 years in Michigan, according to Joy, perhaps soon after the death of Estelle. This would seem to have been around 1929. According to Alice, she lived in El Monte in the earliest 1930's, perhaps because her mother and sister, Pearl, were there then. However, she seems to have returned to the San Diego area and lived there most of the time, probably near or with Elwood's family.

Ida seems to have worked to support herself and the children while in Michigan, and probably she continued to work after returning to California. Alice thinks she likely worked in department stores.

According to Ida's death certificate she was living in her "own home" in San Diego at the time of her death on 26 October 1951 (age 70). She died of intestinal complications in Methodist Hospital in Los Angeles after a two-week period in the hospital. She was cremated and her ashes are in a niche in Greenwood Cemetery in San Diego. However, the cemetery has no record of her husband, Herbert, being there.

In contrast to Myrtle, who seems to have been rather informal in dress and manner, and rather heavy in her later years, Ida is remembered by Alice as "always very trim and stylish." Jean also recalls that Ida seemed to stress qualities like proper etiquette, neatness, and style.

Although different in some ways, both Myrtle and Ida, like many Metcalf family women, forged successful careers outside the home, being hard-working and self-supporting--qualities that are discussed further in Chapter 17. They seem to have maintained sisterly contacts, as Jean mentions Ida coming up from San Diego for visits of several days duration with Myrtle on 121st St.

3. Vida Daisy was born in August 1882 or 1883 in Lake City, CO. Thus, it seems that the Thomsons were located at this small mountain village at least one or two years, since Ida was also born there, in Aug 1881. Vida married Herbert L. Shackley, whom Joy referred to as a "mining man from Nebraska." Joy thought that Vida and Herbert lived in Nebraska at one time; however, her death certificate indicates that all her 33 years were spent in CO, the last 20 in Durango. She died on 5 Feb 1917 of peritonitis, associated with a tubal pregnancy. This seems a

sad irony, in view of the fact that the couple had had no children. Both Vida and Herbert are buried in Greenmont Cemetery in Durango in the NW $\frac{1}{4}$ , Lot 18, Block 27.

4. Dora Pearl (known as Pearl) was born 29 July 1884. She married Walter Hull, from Missouri. A photo supplied by Jean shows Walter and Pearl outside what looks to be a newly constructed home. The legend states "Walter and Pearl Hull, Denver, Colo." Pearl appears petite like her sisters. However, Walter matches the oral description given by Gail Lindsey: over six ft. in height, over 200 lbs. in weight, and bald. At some point the Hulls came to El Paso, as Walter is listed in the El Paso City Directory of 1920 as a painter employed by the Yelton Paint and Wallpaper Company and living at 1331 Wyoming. In 1922 he is listed as employed by Yelton-Tuttle Paint and Wallpaper Co. and is living at 901 N. Campbell. Presumably there is some connection here to the Tuttle Paint Co., with which Gail Thomson (see below) had been employed before his death in 1918. A photo shows Pearl, her parents, and Gail Lindsey, about two years old it seems, which would suggest that the Hulls were in El Paso by about 1919. They must have moved on to California around 1923 at about the same time that Dora settled there. Pearl's death certificate indicates she had lived in California for 8 years in 1932. Several informants remember visiting them in El Monte, where they lived in the early 1930's. According to Pearl's death certificate she entered Norwalk State Hospital, CA, on 4 May 1931, where she died on 5 Nov 1932. Cause of death is given as cerebral hemorrhage, with a "contributory cause of importance" listed as "Manic depressive Psychosis," with onset in 1931. Interrment was in San Gabriel Cemetery. The year 1932 seems also to have been a sad one for Dora's family with the death of Vida and of Myrtle's husband, Harvey Gorton.

5. Muriel Violet (born 9 April 1886) and her sister, Vida (above), had a double wedding on 20 May 1903 at the Mancos Hotel, which the family managed at that time. Muriel married Christopher Mountain, a Canadian. Alice, a daughter-in-law of Muriel and Christopher, notes (in litt., 28 February 1981) that an account of the wedding refers to "Mr. Mountain, late of Canada and son of Major General Mountain of the Fifty-fourth Light Artillery of the British Army. Mr. Mountain is well known having been foreman of the Jackson Carriage Works, Durango."

Alice informs me that Christopher Mountain migrated, as a young man, from Canada down to Leadville, CO, where his brother had a dairy business. Later he moved to Durango and worked as a wheelwright with the firm noted above. And, of course, it was thereabouts that he met and married Muriel in 1903. They seem to have lived in Durango a few years and, according to Joy, were in Edith, CO, in 1906. Shortly thereafter they moved to Vancouver, B.C.. There he was employed as an engineer of the city of Vancouver, involved in various road and bridge building activities, etc. Although he must have been doing well in Vancouver, he left and went to El Paso. According to Alice this was primarily because son Orville had a severe ear impairment,

Below is a letter written by Orville Mountain (son of Muriel and Christopher Mountain), who lived in Roseburg, Oregon, to Jean Strayer George in 1972.

Aug 29th

Dear Jean

I was so surprised to receive the pictures you sent. They brought back a lot of memories. I want to thank you ever so much.

Trish or Pat (her old name) is happily married and she has a baby boy born Dec 14 and is now quite a boy. At the time that photo was taken with Myrtle. . . we were experiencing an explosion in Roseburg that tore the town to pieces. We lived just 2 blocks from explosion.

The Sartin house is here in Roseburg. I see it's been snowing by the picture. Your Grandma's cousin Agnes still lives here with her son, Otis. Her grandson Ron has a piece of the property and a nice home.

The man with the baby girl and his wife is John, my oldest boy. He now has 4 girls--a youth director and myrtle wood crafter, also preaches. You also sent a picture of Gail and me on his lap. There is also like picture of Austin & me--same room--that I don't have.

How you sorted the pictures shows you remember quite a bit of what Grandma had to say. I've often thought about your mother Mabel & Harriet.

I hope you excuse my writing as I am a victim of Amyotrophic Lateral Sclerosis. Its a brother disease of Multiple Sclerosis that takes in ages 25 to 40. ALS is from 40 to 60, and no cure and no known cause (a spinal nerve affecting the nerves and muscles).

I and Alice were in Denver last Christmas. We flew to visit Trish & new baby. We were in L.A. and Barstow visiting Alice's sister and bro. who is a Dr. in Barstow. Trish and family are now in Portland, Ore.

Say hello to your folks and tell I think of them often.  
With family love and thanks  
Orville and Alice.

P.S. I loved your Grandmother Myrtle very much.

*Say hello to your folks and tell  
I think of them often  
With family love and Thanks  
Orville and Alice.  
P.S. I loved your Grandmother Myrtle very much.*

which it was thought might be alleviated by a dry climate--and indeed he did regain his hearing in El Paso. Alice thinks they stayed in El Paso about a year. In the 1921 El Paso City Directory Chris is listed as a woodworker with rooms at 1324 Wright Ave., which was the Thomson home. Alice notes that while in El Paso Christopher worked as a cabinet maker and carpenter with David Thomson, his father-in-law, who died about that time. Not long afterwards, the Mountains moved to California, and settled in Venice. Chris continued to do fine cabinet work, including work in the homes of some movie actors. He also worked for movie studios in building sets. Gail Lindsey remembers enjoyable times in the summer of 1923, when he was six, and when his older cousin, Orville Mountain, introduced him to the delights of the beach at Venice, and also took him to the bowling alley where Orville had a job setting up pins. Orville put Gail on a perch out of harm's way, but where he could see the bowling balls come down the alleys. It made a lasting impression on Gail.

Muriel was greatly attached to her mother; she died of a heart attack the day before Dora's funeral, in 1949. Alice writes (in litt., 11 Mar 1981) "Muriel and Chris were lovers until her death. He never got over it; everyday he wondered why he had to live without her. . . .Dad was a wonderful man and worshiped his wife (his Doll). She was 5 foot 2 and he 6 foot 2."

6. Cyril (Cy = "sigh") Clifford was born on 9 January 1888 in Durango, CO. After the family moved to El Paso, he worked variously as painter, lineman, and electrician. He was probably gone from El Paso for part of 1915 and 1916, as he is not listed in the City Directories covering those years. It was then that he met Jennie May Lentz, in New Mexico, and they were married in 1915 or early 1916. Jennie was born in May, 1898, in Alpine, TX, daughter of Adolph and Phillimina Catherine Stultz Lentz, both parents of German origin. Jennie and Cyril had a family of eleven surviving children. The four oldest children were born in El Paso. In 1918 the family lived at Old Fort Bliss (no longer a military post then), located between the Rio Grande and present-day University of Texas at El Paso. Here, their second daughter, Dorothy, was born. Cyril worked as an electrician for the ASARCO smelter, just up the river, in 1918 and 1919. In 1920-1921, he is listed as an electrician working for the "G.H. and S.A. Ry," and they lived at 2516 Wyoming and at 2320 Pittsburg. In late 1921, after the death of his father, Cyril moved to California. Jennie followed, but gave birth en route to their fifth child, Paul, at her aunt's home in Mountainair, NM. The family lived in Los Angeles at 5620 Geer St., five blocks east of the Culver City line. Cyril was employed as an electrician by the Firestone Rubber Company. He died in 1957 in Camarillo State Hospital after some years there, a situation similar to that of his sister, Dora Pearl.

7. Gail Lee was born on 23 October 1891. According to

## NOTES FROM SOME OF CYRIL THOMSON'S CHILDREN

I was interested in learning something of how it was to grow up in the large (11 children) family of Cyril and Jennie in an LA that was also growing up. Those to whom I talked seemed to think they had had a happy childhood. Carrie said "It was great growing up in such a large family." Geer St. terminated near their home, just as at present, and provided a playground for children of the neighborhood. Even Jennie might join in play on warm summer evenings. Inside, Carrie remembers that they liked to sit on the floor and play jacks or cover themselves with a blanket and tell "spooky stories." There was considerable music in the home. Jennie had sold a bottle collection that she had accumulated and bought a piano, which she played. Cyril could play violin, guitar, and mandolin, and some of the girls also played guitars and piano. Dorothy says that she liked to sing and dance. Carrie says that Dorothy was an excellent dancer, but didn't have the opportunity to develop her talent.

Carrie notes that they frequently visited the library and got to go to the movies once a week. They were much interested in things that were going on in the movie industry, which was active nearby. John notes "The actor we grew up with was Karl (Alfalfa) Switzer of the Our Gang comedies. I also spent some time with Roy Rogers on field trials with our hound dogs and also some hunting trips in the high Sierras out of Sequoia." Dorothy went to school with Fatty Arbuckle, and remembers the children climbing up to "57 Hill" (marked by a large "57" in concrete) to watch the filming of movies down below in studios in Culver City. She remembers a Gargantua being constructed. Carrie recalls that the children put together a device from an ironing board and other parts that they used in sliding down hills in the area. She liked to climb the hills and look out over the LA landscape, and was aware, even then, that the city was constantly growing.

John confirms that Myrtle and Harve Gorton did, indeed, rent horses and their covered wagon to movie studios--perhaps also in Culver City. He said the Gortons had 10 to 12 horses, these including two fine Morgan horses, Kate and Mary Lou. John recalls

when Myrtle and Harve lived on Centinela St. in Inglewood, where they sometimes hosted amateur rodeos on Sunday afternoons.

Once when the Thomsons were visiting Myrtle, she was in the house telling Cyril that Kate was with foal, that her behavior was unpredictable at such times, and that his children should stay away from her, as they might get kicked. As this was being discussed, the children were in the stable, playing around, under, and over Kate--and with no unfortunate results.

One Saturday, John and Floyd got up early, before the rest of the family arose, and tried to think of something interesting to do. They decided to walk the 12 miles from their home to Aunt Myrtle's home on 121st St.--and off they went, not bothering to leave a note. When Cyril and Jennie got up they were rather distraught about the missing boys, but figured out what had happened. However, John writes: "We beat our parents there by about an hour." Apparently they were fast walkers.

Similarly, Carrie tells about a time when she and some of her younger brothers ran off to visit Aunt Muriel in Venice. But when they got there, they couldn't find where she lived, and no one could tell them. They were sitting, disconsolately, under some date palms on Venice Boulevard, chewing on old dates when Jennie, who had enlisted the help of a neighbor with a car, espied them.

John and all of his brothers served in the military, but only Floyd made it a career. John was in the navy for eight years, during World War II and the Korean War, and Floyd served during these, plus the Vietnam War. Floyd is a versatile one. In regard to an inquiry that I made concerning his various accomplishments, he replied (in litt., 13 Sep 1982): "I did set a motorcycle record, but it was a Rosemont Dry Lake record which was broken later on that day. I was not a world champion shooter. I am a World Class Shooter. I am a Distinguished Master Shooter, National and International, indoor and outdoor. I held a few national individual records, and was on a national record winning team while with the U.S. Army Marksmanship Training Unit stationed at Fort Benning, Georgia, 1960 and 1964." He notes "I shot pistol competition for almost 14 years for the Army," and "I was the

Texas state pistol champion, 1970, and I was awarded a Gold Distinguished Shooting Badge by the U.S. Army in 1959."

I had several enjoyable visits with Dorothy and her husband, Lyle, in Lordsburg, NM. Lyle had numerous stories to tell of earlier times in New Mexico. Dorothy retained her early interest in music, and sometimes wrote songs and poems. A line from one of her songs, which might summarize this book is: "My family tree is large and full. The leaves have scattered and gone." One of her poems that she quoted to me, reflecting her own values, is: "What is past is best forgotten./ What is done cannot be changed./ What is done and past can be forgiven./ Only this will lessen pain."

As regards the father of this brood, I am told that Cyril was short, but quite muscular (as borne out in a photo I have seen). He had an interest in boxing. Jean recalls Cyril and her father, Howard Strayer, having spirited discussions about technological advances of their day. Cyril was a very able electrician. It is not quite clear what the nature of the illness was, which made it necessary for him to enter Camarillo State Hospital (of his own volition, according to Carrie). I gather that psychosis and other factors may have been involved. He was in the hospital several years, prior to his death. John mentions that Cyril was quite tolerant of and patient with his numerous progeny, even with the "rambunctious boys," who, on their bicycles or out in the hills with their dogs, seem to have gotten to know the western part of the greater Los Angeles of their day very well indeed.

It is interesting to compare the large families of Cyril and of his first cousin, Ernest Metcalf (pp. 166-169). Clearly, the environments in which these two families grew up were distinctly different, with Ernest's family being in the back-country of the Missouri Ozarks, and Cyril's in the burgeoning LA metroplex. It seems strange, but it is typically American, I suppose, for such close relatives to be so far apart in distance and way of life. Still, there were similarities. Members from both groups say they enjoyed growing up in a large family. And even in LA, as in Missouri, the family put in a garden and children went hunting.

Joy, Dora noticed the name on a Gail Borden milk can and liked it. In the El Paso City Directory he is sometimes listed as Gaillard. He did not marry. He worked for the Tuttle Paint and Glass Company in El Paso and had advanced to the position of foreman by 1918. Once, during the Mexican Revolution, he and others were stranded at a branch plant of Tuttle Glass in Ciudad Juárez. They were holed up in an old boiler for quite a long time while bullets were zinging about. Gail died in the influenza pandemic of 1918, as noted above.

8. James lived only a few days, 2 to 20 April 1892, according to family records. However, I think it must have been 1893, instead, as Gail was born on 23 Oct 1891, as substantiated by his gravestone. Probably he was named for Dora's brother, James, who died at age six, when Dora was 10 years old.

9. Joy Marjorie Metcalf (Dora gave her three names) was born in 1895 in Ouray, CO. She came to El Paso with the family when she was 11, on 8 Aug 1906. In 1913 and 1914 she was attending business college at night and working days at the Potter Confectionery Co. She was the company's candidate in a beauty contest for "Miss El Paso;" a photo taken at this time is still in existence. A fellow employee at Potters, originally from Abilene, TX, was David O'Keefe Lindsey. On 29 March 1915, Joy and David were married. David worked at a variety of jobs, and they lived at a number of places in the ensuing years. In April 1917 they were in Clifton, AZ. Shortly after that they were in Deming, NM, where David drove "service cars" (taxis) to and from Camp Cody, an army camp near Deming. In fall, 1918, they were at Bisbee, AZ. They next moved (probably with a sojourn in El Paso) to Eastland Co., TX, near where David had grown up. There was an oil boom on there and, again, he was driving service cars. They were there in 1921 when David Thomson died, and when Dora went up to Kansas via the Lindseys. They returned from Eastland Co. to El Paso for a few months, and, in the spring of 1923, they travelled via Model-T Ford to California from El Paso with Dora accompanying them. A photo shows Joy and son Gail alongside the car, loaded for departure with Dora inside. They went via Socorro, NM, and Winslow, AZ. They encountered high water in northern Arizona, and the Model-T was carried across a flooded stream, suspended on poles, by a crew of men. David shot rabbits, quail, doves, etc., as they travelled along, to replenish the larder. Beyond Blythe, CA, was a "board road" across the Mojave Desert, which all travelers at that time seem to have dreaded. However, they passed through without incident, and the entire trip lasted some five days, which seems like rapid time for such roads. The Lindseys found it very warm, crossing the Mojave, but Dora insisted on wearing her sweater throughout.

The Lindseys remained in CA for only a few months, moving back to Phoenix in September of the same year, of 1923 (Dora remained in CA). The Lindseys spent much of the next 10 years in Phoenix. However, David had always wanted to see the Pacific

Northwest and even go to Alaska. They started out for Seattle, but when they got up into northern Arizona David learned of some work thereabouts and they remained around there a year or more. He had various jobs, among them, selling sewing machines and playing in dance bands: violin, clarinet, and saxophone. They also spent some time at Reserve, NM, during the depression, and from there came back down to El Paso for a time. They were living in Las Cruces, NM, in 1939, when Gail married Susan Thompson. Gail and Susan remained in El Paso and Joy and David returned to Phoenix after a time. David died there in 1943 as the result of a spinal injury suffered while working. Joy remained in Phoenix until the late 1960's, when she returned, once more, to El Paso, and where she resided until her death on 10 December 1981--the last of Dora's children to pass on. She is interred in Restlawn Memorial Park in northeast El Paso.

The Gail Lindseys still live in El Paso (1991), Gail having retired from a position as refrigeration technician at Ft. Bliss in the mid-1980's. He is a talented artist, employing themes related to the Southwest. I especially like his wood carvings. The Lindsey home is embellished with his paintings and a mural. The Lindseys have three children: Gary, Dallas Ann, and Janet. In the 1960's I enjoyed listening to a young radio announcer on the El Paso public broadcasting station. She seemed unusually intelligent and well-informed. She was Dallas Ann Lindsey. However, at that time, I was unaware that I was listening to a relative. Later (1971-1975) she was on the faculty at the University of Texas at El Paso with me. Dallas married Louis Brown, who has been with Voice of America in Munich, Germany, for some years. Dallas writes informative letters concerning their life in Germany. Gary Lindsey is employed at White Sands Missile Range, NM, and has been involved in the space shuttle program. At the time of one flight, a news article in the El Paso Herald-Post noted: "Gary Lindsey, the WSMR shuttle project officer, too busy for press conferences, worked hard at a command console, wearing a headset and conferring constantly with the men on the other side." Janet Lindsey Mitchell is a personnel data supervisor with Electronic Data Services.

10. Hartley Austin, called "Austin" by the family, was born 8 May 1898 in Delta, CO. As noted above, he died as a young man, on 3 May 1917. Austin, his brother, Gail, and father, David, are all buried in Concordia Cemetery, El Paso.

As regards Dora's stepchildren, the children of David Thomson by his first wife, Joy recalled little, as they were much older than she. Lily May married a Henry Klahn, and they had a large family. Ralph, who was an infant when Dora and David married, was murdered, as a teen-ager, as he was walking between two towns, in southwestern Colorado, in search of employment. The Will Thomsons lived in the Pueblo, CO, area..

\* \* \* \* \*

Relatives, who knew Dora were highly complimentary. She had a way of putting people at ease. Brief quotes from letters from two nieces and a grand-niece show how she was regarded:

Jennie Metcalf Newton: (February 1981) "...she was always so sweet. . ." and (14 December 1981) "Oh yes, do you still see Joy? How is she doing? Her mother will always have a spot in my heart."

Myrtle Metcalf Johnson: (22 December 1980) "One time when she visited us she gave me a gold ring. I remember very well what it looked like, and I think she told me it came from Mexico." (Later the ring was stolen.)

Marie Hurt: (7 September 1980) "I knew Aunt Dora years ago, also Myrtle, and a little of Ida. I used to drive Grandmother Metcalf over to Los Angeles to visit with them. She loved them dearly."

\* \* \* \* \*

Whether by chance or by intent, it is clear that Dora and her progeny comprised a group that was inclined to be on the move. In this they resemble Zephi and Harriet and some other family members already discussed. Dora, herself, lived in seven different states: Missouri, Illinois, Kansas, Colorado, Texas, California, and Arizona. The longest time she spent in one community seems to be the ca. 15 years in El Paso (1906 to 1921 or 1922). She and her family might, perhaps, be regarded as early discoverers of the Sun Belt. A number of family members lived in the "Sun City," El Paso, for longer or shorter periods of time, and Joy's family lived in Phoenix. However, it was southern California that was the principal magnet for Dora's children, just as it had been for Hartley's. Ida's family seems already to have been in California in the early 1900's. Perhaps in the years after World War I, there was a national tendency to move about. It is in those years, at least, that we see the families of Myrtle, Muriel, Pearl and Cyril settling in southern California--in fact, all of Dora's living children except Joy. And, of course, Dora probably needed little urging to join with them. After so many and such full years, Dora experienced her own sunset on shores almost a continent away from where her parents had seen their first sunrise.

CHAPTER 16  
MAURICE CRUMP "DOC" METCALF

The youngest of the children of Zephi and Harriet was born 10 October 1865 in Illinois. I think that he surely must have been named for Dr. Morris Crump, a physician who practiced in Fountain Green, IL, at the time he was born, and who likely delivered him. Gregg (1880:827-828) discusses Dr. Morris Crump briefly and notes: "Though somewhat eccentric in manners, he does not allow any one who calls to escape his genial hospitality." Apparently the Metcalfs liked the "eccentric" Dr. Crump. (Could they have been a little eccentric themselves?). I don't know whether the original spelling given to the name was "Morris" or "Maurice," but the family had settled on the latter by the time I contacted them in the 1980's. In practice, however, he always seems to have been called "Doc." He is entered in the Zephi Metcalf family Bible as "D. Crump." In the Neosho County censuses of 1870 and 1875 he is listed simply as "Crump." In later real estate and census records I see him variously recorded as "D.C.," "Doc. C.," and "Dock C." His gravestone inscription is "Maurice C."

Doc would have been about two years old when the family came to Kansas and about 15½ when they moved from Neosho to Cowley County. Photos of young Doc show a good-looking lad. He was about 5 ft. 8 in. tall, fair of complexion, and blue-eyed (like his father, I assume).

Like Wallace, Doc continued to live on the Metcalf family farm southeast of Dexter, and he married rather late, in 1899, when he was about 34. He married Bertha Alice Baker. The Baker family lived a few miles northeast of Cherryvale, KS, but their daughter, Maude, had married Seymour Eastman, who lived near the Metcalfs. As noted in Chap. 15, Wallace and Doc had several joint enterprises with Seymour, so it seems most likely that Doc met Bertha when she came out to visit the Eastmans. In addition to Bertha and Maude, there were two additional Baker sisters: Cora, who married Frank Parrett (or Parret) and Mae, who married a Mr. Warner.

After they married, Doc and Bertha stayed on the Metcalf farm, where he had been living. The 1900 federal census shows them there, along with Harriet. Doc had bought the "west 80" plus the "southeast 20" of the farm from Harriet for \$400 in 1898 (Fig. 20). In 1902, Doc and Bertha sold the "west 80" to Dolie Metcalf, Aminzo's son, for \$1,000, and, in 1903, they sold the "southeast 20" to Wallace and Laura for \$200. Thus, they realized a profit of \$800 and it was "all in the family."

Doc and Bertha later moved to a farm near Arkansas City.\* Wallace went over to that farm once to help Doc shuck corn. The corn was so high that wagons couldn't be seen from row to row--and this before the days of hybrid corn. ACM recalls that Doc had a very large, powerful mastiff, which would pick up a burlap bag full of ear corn and carry it around.

Bertha and Doc's first child, Basil Whittingham, must have been born (1900) while they lived on the farm southeast of Dexter. Depending on just when they moved to Arkansas City, Milan Maurice, the second child, could have been born (1903) either at Dexter or Arkansas City, but the two younger children, Harriett Elizabeth (Beth) and Jennie Marie, surely were born at Arkansas City (1905 and 1907).

In 1908 or 1909, Doc and Bertha moved to the vicinity of Cherryvale, Montgomery Co., Bertha's childhood home. While en route to Cherryvale, some 100 miles distant, they stopped overnight with their wagons at Wallace's farm, probably their first night on the road, and about 25 miles out of Arkansas City. Doc continued to farm for a number of years, living on several farms near Cherryvale.

Doc's daughter Beth enumerated (telephone conversation, 13 Dec 1987): "We stayed with Uncle Frank and Aunt Cora until we found a place--Johnny Huffman's place--a little bitty place; from there we moved to Liebert's place, where we did real well." However, on Liebert's place, Beth says her father "got a stubborn spell and left because Mr. Liebert wanted him to mow his orchard and Dad didn't want to damage his mowing machine." They then lived on the Morgan and the Warner place, where there

\*-A 1905 atlas shows D.C. Metcalf having a farm NW of Arkansas City on the Arkansas River (Sec. 16, T. 34 S, R. 3 E).

were lots of scorpions. When a scorpion fell from the ceiling into her soup, Bertha said that was the last straw, and they moved to Corbin City, just south of Cherryvale, to the farm that was being vacated by Guy Metcalf (see p. 224). Doc bought Guy's horses and some other things from him. The move to Corbin City would have been in 1913 (Doc's daughter Jennie was 6 then, and GMM was born in September 1913, just after Guy and Myrtle returned from Cherryvale to the Hooser community). They next moved to Powell's Corner, which adjoins Fairview Cemetery (north of Cherryvale) on the north. I thought I would include all this to show that, on a small scale, Doc seemed to have some of those restless tendencies of some of his relatives, discussed previously.

Bertha died on 31 May 1914. According to her daughter, Jennie, she had "bronchitis," and died soon after receiving an injection by a physician. It was thought by the family (based on a physician's conversation that was overheard) that the injection had been too strong for the condition of her heart. She is buried in Harmony Grove Cemetery, several miles northeast of Cherryvale, near the old Baker home.

It is to the credit of Doc and Bertha that they provided a home for Harriet for 10 years or more, despite all their moving around, and even though they were surely not well off financially. As noted earlier, it seems that Harriet was especially fond of her youngest son and of Bertha, as well.

In 1918, Doc married Rachel Nelson Miller Dye, who had three daughters by two previous marriages. To the combined family were then added daughters Barbara and Shirley Jean. However, Basil, Beth, and Jennie had all married and left home before Shirley Jean was born in 1927. In the early 1920's the family was living on the Laughead farm, northeast of Cherryvale, which was later the home of Percy and Jennie Metcalf Newton. By 1925, Doc and Rachel had moved into Cherryvale. Doc had acquired broom-making equipment. He made brooms for a zinc-lead smelter, then in Cherryvale, and sold them elsewhere as well. Daughter Barbara mentions that broom-making was something of a

family enterprise and that she enjoyed driving their pickup truck when Doc sometimes went around selling brooms, door to door. Doc's nephews, Carl and Cecil Metcalf (Wallace's sons), grew broomcorn for him on occasion.

Doc also worked for an interurban railway that passed through Cherryvale. I might mention (with help from Dale Hoover) that the route of this interurban was from Nowata, Oklahoma, via Dearing, Independence, and Cherryvale, to Parsons, Kansas. It was a single electric "rural street car," with controls at both ends, so it didn't have to be turned around in Parsons or Nowata. While working on the interurban, Doc suffered a chest or back injury and complained of chest pains at times. According to his daughter, Jennie, and CSM, he weighed some 220 lbs. in his later years. However, a photo taken around 1927 seems to show him rather trim. In Cherryvale, on the cold morning of Kansas Day, 29 January 1936, Doc walked from daughter Jennie's home slightly over a mile to daughter Beth's home, where he suffered a heart attack. He passed away about 15 minutes after his arrival at Beth's. Doc is buried in Fairview Cemetery on the north side of Cherryvale, with Rachel, and with his son, Milan, and some of son Basil's children. (Graves may be located easily as they are near the statue of a little angel).

One informant told me that at the time of Doc's heart attack, he was holding a grandchild. This seems rather symbolic of the values of this family-oriented man. I am told that Doc treated his stepdaughters with the same kindness, tolerance and fairness as his own children and that was, I gather, very kindly indeed. His daughter, Barbara, tells about an occasion when, as a tot, she persisted in following Doc and Jim Ewry someplace where she shouldn't be, and Doc finally picked up a small branch and lightly switched her legs. However, the branch happened to be Osage Orange and had a thorn or two on it, and, when blood appeared, as many tears were shed by Doc as by Barbara. The picture of Doc that his descendants draw is one of affability and of kindly disposition. The picture, in fact, is

rather the opposite of that drawn of Doc's brother Algeroy by the latter's descendants. Apparently there was a profound difference between the first and the last-born brother.

Doc's family was fond of music. He liked, especially, the traditional Protestant church songs. Daughter Jennie and CSM mentioned that a great favorite of his was The Unclouded Day, as seems to befit his apparently sunny personality. Barbara describes Sunday afternoons when the family group would sing songs, accompanied by Rachel on piano, Doc on the mandolin, and Thelma (a stepdaughter) on guitar. Doc sang bass (Barbara says he also had a booming, jolly laugh). He liked to play and sing at the "literary meetings," then popular in rural Kansas.

Barbara notes that Doc was something of tease and that he had a fine sense of humor--a characteristic that I have met with in various Metcalfs--or do we just seem humorous to each other? She mentioned that he had a great trove of "stories," both humorous and otherwise. He must have told some of these stories to his nephews, FMM, ACM, and CSM. They recall his telling them about bringing back a fine stallion from somewhere "out west" to someone who had purchased it, around Dexter I assume. He had a pistol to protect himself and the horse. In regard to guns, he told ACM that he once had on a broad-brimmed, cowboy hat, when he was tamping down the shot in his muzzle-loading shotgun, indoors. The gun discharged, somehow, and the ramrod shot right up through the brim of his hat and on up to the ceiling. The noise was horrendous, but Doc considered himself lucky that the ramrod didn't hit him. Doc also told ACM about how he and Seymour Eastman once cut and shocked 40 acres of corn in the Grouse Creek bottoms near Dexter, using only corn knives. Doc said that he had a new pair of denim overalls when he started the job, but by the time they were finished the overalls were finished too. Grandson John Ewry mentions that Doc liked to tell about his first driving lesson, in an auto newly acquired by his son, Basil. He was doing fine until he encountered a cow or horse in the road. He swerved to miss the beast, the car got out of control, and Doc was shouting "Whoa!, Whoa!." (I shall

assume it was a cow he met, just to keep the "met-a-calf" legend going).

Bertha and Doc had four children. Basil, the oldest, married twice and has about 65 descendants, as I counted them in 1985. Only one male, however, Basil's son, Calvin Morris, presently carries on the Metcalf name among all the descendants of Doc. Basil lived in the Cherryvale-Independence area most of his life. He also worked for the interurban railway in Cherryvale, and, later, he drove city buses in Independence. He spent his later years in Harlingen, TX, where he died in 1976, and where he is interred (Mont Meta Memorial Park, San Benito).

The second child, Milan, was tall for a Metcalf--six feet. As a youth, he was working in the smelter in Cherryvale when some heavy zinc plates fell on his leg and broke it. Before he had fully recovered from the broken leg, he died of "pneumonia." This was in the autumn of 1918, so I think it is likely that he was a victim of the 1918 influenza pandemic, like his cousins, Gail Thomson and Elbert Metcalf. All three cousins died within a month of each other.

Harriett Elizabeth or "Beth," as she was always called, married Jim Ewry from Ohio. Jim was from Lima, Ohio, the son of Henry Freeman Ewry and Sarah Elizabeth Vance Ewry. The family had relatives in the Cherryvale area. According to John Ewry, the family drove from Ohio to Kansas once or twice in a covered wagon. This, of course, was long after the heyday of covered wagons and reminiscent of the travels of Myrtle and Harve Gorton around that time (pages 258-259). In connection with visits and work in the Cherryvale area, Jim met Beth. After their marriage, they lived in Kansas and Texas and then settled in Ohio in 1937. A letter from Beth to her aunt Laura (Mrs. Wallace) Metcalf in 1947 is in Appendix (p. 486). In it she indicates that they had previously lived in Dayton, but had moved to a farm near the small town of Bainbridge, OH, some 80 miles distant. However, Jim is still working in Dayton and commuting home on weekends. The farm was on Jester Hill, south of Bainbridge. I am told by Patty Adey that this is quite a

prominent hill, high enough to collect more snow than the adjacent valleys. Beth's letter demonstrates her extensive knowledge of farm life and terminology, which she, no doubt, had acquired when a girl on the farms around Cherryvale. According to John Ewry, Beth was able to live on her beloved farm from 1945 to 1974. John, himself, still lives on a part of it, and Beth made her home with his family much of the time from 1974 to 1987. According to her nieces, Alice and Patty, and son, John, she was commonly known as "Aunt Beth" around Bainbridge, and was noted for her maternal compassions, which extended far beyond her own brood of seven sons. They say that she was not infrequently called upon to take some young person with problems into her home, and apparently with very heartening results in many cases. John put it this way: "Anything that came along as a stray she took care of." Among other things, he mentions her making clothes for and cutting hair of children needing such things. Her nieces also mention her making dresses for them, which they thought might have been a diversion for someone with seven sons to sew for. It would appear that she was much like her father, Doc, in regard to wanting and promoting a warm family environment. I regret that I have not been able to meet and talk with Beth, except via telephone.

The daughters of Jennie tell me that she also would "take in strays" on occasion, when some young person needed help. Jennie was surely no stranger to hard work, being employed at several different factories in Kansas and in Ohio in her younger years, while also rearing four children. Later, she married Percy Newton. In Percy, we have again a stepfather in this family, who, like Doc at an earlier time, is greatly admired by stepchildren and other relatives. In the early 1980's, when I visited them several times, Jennie and Percy lived in a handsome old farm home, very well preserved, a few miles northeast of Cherryvale. The house, partly of stone, still retained some elaborate lacework along the eaves. This is the Laughead place, mentioned above, where Doc's also lived at one time. A photo shows Doc at this home with Jim Ewry. The Newtons were very

hospitable on my visits to them. They showed me some local sites of interest around Cherryvale: a new damsite on Big Hill Creek, various Metcalf and Baker former homes and gravesites, and the location of the home of the "bloody Benders." I was much interested in this latter place because there was a family legend that Algeroy and Wallace Metcalf had once stopped at the risky restaurant of the Benders. For those unacquainted with Kansas history, the Bender family had a habit of murdering and robbing guests, who stopped to dine at their little inn. As the Bender home was located on the main trail from Fort Scott to Independence, KS, it does seem likely that Algeroy, at least, would have travelled over this trail in going from Erie to Cedar Vale in the early 1870's, when the Benders were in operation. However, if any Metcalfs did stop there, I doubt that they appeared wealthy enough to get the Benders very excited.

As concerns Doc's second family, Barbara Metcalf Hoover lives near Coffeyville, KS, and Shirley Metcalf Salisbury lives in Idaho. Shirley, the youngest of Zephi and Harriet's grandchildren, was born in 1927, or 55 years after the birth of their first grandchild, Grace Hudson, in 1872! I count a total of 61 grandchildren and 152 great-grandchildren for Harriet and Zephi.

Barbara Metcalf Hoover is a professional woman and homemaker. She attended Coffeyville Business College and then took employment in the cost accounting department with Parmac, a petroleum equipment manufacturer in Coffeyville. After about four years in accounting, some problems developed in purchasing, so she moved into that department, and was a buyer for the company until her retirement, after 32 years employment, in 1987. She states that she was responsible for buying "everything from steel to stationery," and that in the early years of her career there were very few women that were buyers for such companies. Her husband, Dale, was a rural mail carrier, retiring after 33 years with the postal service, in 1976. The Hoovers also raised and raced racing quarter horses until recently.

Regarding Rachel's older children, Jennie Newton writes (22 July 1981): "Rachel's maiden name was Nelson. She married Bill Miller. To this union were born Frances Irene, b. 25 of Nov. [year not given], m. Lester Taylor, 5 Nov 1927, d. 22 of June 1965 and Thelma Vitura b. 7 of Sept. 1911, m. Roy Glissen. Rachel Nelson, Miller m. Floyd Dye. To this union was born Mildred Laura (Jackie)), b. 18 of June 1915, m. Dave Rowland."

\* \* \* \* \*

By 1936, then, with the death of Doc, all of Zephi and Harriet's children were gone except indomitable Dora. I remember that frigid late January day when ACM and his mother, Laura, and brother, Carl, went to Cherryvale at the time of Doc's death. I recall that my mother heated bricks for them to put under their laprobes in the unheated car. Yes, I do remember 1936: the winter, with the soil frozen deeply, a flirtation with pneumonia, a disjointing move to a new farm. In the spring, as a first grader walking home from school between the Osage Orange hedgerows, the sky sometimes had a leaden color, and the sun looked round and strange to me. The Dust Bowl was not far to the west and fine dust was settling out on us. The following summer was as searing hot as the winter had been cold, and it was dry, dry, dry. It was not the happiest time to grow up in, I suppose. However, it is likely that on Kansas Day, when Doc died, that people made note of the Kansas motto: Ad astra per aspera--To the stars through difficulties. Doc's people had come out to Kansas thinking, as it says in his hymn, The unclouded day: "O they tell me of a home far away." But they did not find their difficulties over when they got there, and the stars over the Kansas Flint Hills at night were scarcely inclined to give them either consolation or counsel. And difficulties abounded in Doc's greater family, as well: untimely deaths, divorces, disrupted families, poverty, hard work--all these and other problems were plentiful enough. But it was in the overcoming of these difficulties, especially by drawing on resources of human understanding and tolerance, that this family excelled, and they seem a fitting group with which to end this survey of seven sisters and brothers, whose paths diverged so greatly as they left the common parental nest.

## CHAPTER 17

## PATTERNS?

As I look back over the array of relatives who populate this sketch I am reminded of the words of Flora Metcalf Thomas (1910:172) in discussing her Metcalf ancestors: "As a family, their history is in some respects quite remarkable." Like numerous Metcalfs I've known, Flora is a bit restrained in her manner of expression and hedges a little with "in some respects" and "quite." Today, I can but echo her words, and perhaps I should leave it at that. However, I can't help musing about a few patterns that seem to emerge from the preceding pages as one character follows another in this continuing family theater.

Four characteristics that I seemed to observe many times might be called the "four I's": Independence, Individuality, Industriousness, and Involve<sup>m</sup>ent. I have no qualms about listing the first three of these, but have some reservations about "Involve<sup>m</sup>ent," as it often has the connotation of social involvement. However, I use it here in a broader sense. It could be involvement in almost anything. I have heard the word "obsession" used by some in describing an "involved" Metcalf, and it may not be far off the mark. Some are involved deeply with their careers, so that, for them, involvement and industriousness merge, and, for others, involvement encompasses an activity in which their individuality shines forth. Thus, all these "4 I's" are, in fact, interrelated.

If we look back at forefather Michael of Norwich and Dedham we can, I think, already discern something of this. There is ample documentation that Michael was industrious, a successful master weaver, who had seemingly achieved this distinction mainly by his own efforts. However, I have just read (long after writing Chapter 2) recent accounts by two scholars of New England history (Anderson, 1985; Cressy, 1987), who continue to cite Michael as an example of a Puritan, who clearly migrated to

New England because of his unyielding involvement with the Puritan religious philosophy. Quite clearly he was also a highly independent fellow--too much so in the view of some of the Anglican clergy. In fact, the writings that he penned in explaining and defending his contentions bristle with his individuality and independent spirit. We can see evidence, however, that Michael was also involved with other things. His taking on the schoolmastership in Dedham in his later years must reflect a concern for succeeding generations (are we worthy?). Also, we know that he was interested in carpentry and in woodworking, as evidenced by his bringing over the famed Nonsuch chest from England, being on the meetinghouse construction committee, having furniture made to his own specifications, and seemingly having a hobby of woodcarving.

Michael's involvement in the religious/social/political life of Dedham seems to have been passed on to his descendants who lived in Dedham and the daughter communities nearby. Thus, we see these descendants serving as selectmen and being involved in projects of community betterment. Their first century in America was still marked by the preeminence of village life and the covenants and the utopian vision of the original Dedham settlers. This combination of hard work and religious vision surely must have been involved in generating the so-called Protestant Ethic, which, in my dictionary is defined as an ethic that places stress on the virtue of hard work, thrift, and self-discipline--not a bad description of the ethos of many a Metcalf, I think. According to the dictionary, also, the term "Protestant ethic" was not coined until 1926, but it was surely being forged as an attitude in that first century of our family in America, the century of the New England village.

I think of the second American century, in our line, as being the century of the Yankee farmers, people who had surely inherited and who practiced the Protestant ethic, but who were less attuned to village life. This may have begun when Joseph and Deborah and other family members left the Dedham sphere of influence and forged northwestward to Barre, where they were so

isolated from village life that they petitioned to have a meetinghouse constructed closer to their farms. I think of this phase as continuing through the Chesterfield and into the Salisbury years. It almost goes without saying that the Metcalfs of this period, as representatives of the legendary Yankee farmer type, were hard-working, individualistic, and highly independent. I suspect that Nathan was one of those Yankee chaps, and less involved, sociopolitically, than his Metcalf and Adams ancestors had been. I also suspect that involvement with the Congregational Church, which had, by then, arisen from the old Puritan roots, may have diminished somewhat during this period, perhaps setting the stage for the next phase.

This third stage that seems identifiable to me covers most of the 19th century, was marked by a strong resurgence of religious involvement, and might be called the "Methodist century" in our line. This period commenced with Elijah's conversion to Methodism in Salisbury in the earliest 1800's and extended up through the lifetimes of his children, all of whom lived into the 1890's, and who were extolled for their piety by Thomas (1910) and others. In this period, the suggested "4 I's" seem very well exemplified. When it comes to industriousness, there is abundant evidence from diaries, etc. that Lyman B., Levi, and Elijah, Jr. must have toiled from early to late in keeping their dairy farms operating smoothly, and Roxana's industriousness and skill at cheese-making have been recorded. The diaries of Fred and Charles show that there was always something to be done on these farms. At the same time, all of Elijah's children seem to have been much involved in church affairs, and the three sons who remained in New York all had exhorter's licenses in the Free Methodist Church. The diaries show various family members attending meetings of several days in duration, and the same applied to brother Zephi in Kansas. Lyman B. exhibited a different, but possibly related, kind of involvement with his two enlistments in the Union forces during the Civil War, which I can fathom only on idealistic grounds,

given his age and background. As regards independence, I think of Rachel, who, though unmarried, managed to acquire and to retain her own property. In reading the account of Thomas (1910), it appears that each of Elijah's children was quite individualistic and different from each of the others, an assesment which has seemed to me as being applicable, also, to Zephi and Harriet's brood, as detailed in Chapters 9-16.

I suppose that the 20th century could comprise a fourth period. For many of Zephi's line this was a time of upward social and economic mobility--some sooner and some later. Carl's chapter (11) illustrates this trend very well. However, this "period" is too close to me to be viewed objectively, and, inevitably, the "family" has become dispersed, diluted, and amorphous--more conceptual than real. Still, I do not have much trouble in still finding good examples of industrious Metcalf descendants, although some of them might likely be called "workaholics" in our current jargon. A list of non-career involvements that express the individuality of "Metcalfs I have known" would be a long and varied one.

Of course, this independence and individuality could also have the effect, I fear, of leaving us hanging as separately and impregnable as the milky green fruits on the thorny Osage Orange trees that grew along my youthful roadways, and which I mentioned at the end of the preceding chapter. That seems rather a shame, for, in traveling about and meeting kinfolk new to me, I was often amazed at how quickly a certain rapport could be achieved, suggesting that we did, after all, have something more in common than mere lines drawn on a genealogical tree. Sometimes it seemed as though we had long known each other. I was sorry that we didn't have a mechanism for getting together, as some other families do, through their reunions, etc. But I do have, at least, a personal satisfaction in summoning up a consolidated view of the story of this particular family over a 350-year timespan, as well as across the several hundred living members that I came to know. It is an experience and a point of view that I never expected to have.

## ANCESTORS OF ZEPHI BROCKETT METCALF IN AMERICA

Michael Metcalf, b. around 1590 in Tatterford, County Norfolk, England; d. 27 Dec 1664; m. (1) Sarah Ellwyn on 13 Oct 1616 (she d. 30 Nov 1644) and (2) Mary Pidge on 13 Aug 1645.

## Children of Michael and Sarah Ellwyn Metcalf

All these children were born in England. The list below has been drawn from Harris (1852:173), Metcalf (1898:17) and McDonald (1937:353). These sources differ slightly from each other but to no great degree. All state erroneously that John Metcalf died on 27 November 1675. Tilden (1887:436) makes it quite clear, however, that John died in Medfield, MA, in 1690 and the vital records of Medfield indicate it was on 8 October 1690. The three basic sources, cited above, all indicate that Martha married Christopher Smith, as a second husband, and Harris (1852) and Metcalf (1898) indicate the date of marriage as 2 August 1654. However, Guild (1897) shows that Mary Fairbanks Metcalf (widow of Michael-2) married Christopher Smith on 2 August 1654. As the corroboration for this seems sound, I think that the record for Martha must be in error. Perhaps she married only two times. Harris (1852) and Metcalf (1898) show the second wife of Thomas to be Ann Paine but McDonald (1837) lists her as Ann Paige. In the following listings the state is not indicated for towns or villages located in Massachusetts.

1. Michael; b. 13 Nov 1617; d. young.
  2. Mary; b. 14 Feb 1619; d.\*12 Feb 1672; m. Henry Wilson on 24 Nov 1642.
  3. Michael; b. 29 Aug 1620; d. 24 Dec 1654; m. Mary Fairbanks on 2 Apr 1644.
  4. John; b. 5 or 15 Sep 1622; d. 8 Oct 1690; m. Mary Chickering on 22 Mar 1647.
  5. Sarah; b. 10 Sep 1624; d. 20 Feb 1689; m. Robert Onion.
- \*--Date of Mary's death from McDonald (1937); Edward G. Metcalf lists it as "24 Dec 1654?" or "5 Mar 1676."

6. Elizabeth; b. 4 Oct 1626; m. Thomas Bancroft on 15 Sep 1648.
7. Martha; b. 27 Mar 1628; m. (1) Wm. Brignall, (2) ?, (2) or (3) \_\_\_\_\_ Stow
8. Thomas; b. 27 Dec 1629; d. 16 Nov 1702; m. (1) Sarah Paige on 12 Sep 1655 and (2) Anne Paine (or Paige) on 2 Dec 1679.
9. Ann; b. 1 Mar 1631; d. young, in England.
10. Jane; b. 24 Mar 1632; m. Samuel Walker.
11. Rebeka; b. 5 Apr 1635; m. John Mackintosh on 5 Apr 1659.

#### Children of John and Mary Chickering Metcalf

This list is based on Tilden (1887:436, 437) and on the vital records of Dedham and Medfield.

1. John; b. 21 Mar 1648 in Dedham; d. 26 Sep 1738 in Medfield; m. (1) Mary Bowers on 21 Dec 1676 and (2) Sarah Plimpton (a widow) on 30 Dec 1708.
2. Michael; b. 20 Aug 1650 in Dedham; d. 9 Dec 1691 in Medfield; m. Elizabeth Bowers on 21 Dec 1676.
3. Mary; b. 2 Oct 1652 in Dedham (probably d. young as the name Mary was used, subsequently, for another daughter.)
4. Elizabeth; date of birth unknown but Tilden (1887:436) lists her between Michael and Joseph; m. Joseph Ellis.
5. Joseph; b. 22 Nov 1658 in Medfield; d. 18 Dec 1741 in Medfield; m. (1) Sarah Bowers on 21 Jan 1686 and (2) Hannah Fisher (a widow) on 12 Mar 1730.
6. Experience; b. 16 Oct 1661 in Medfield; d. in 1730; m. Isaac Wheeler.
7. Hannah; b. 13 Oct 1664; d. in 1719; m. Elisha Bullen on 31 May 1683.
8. Mary; b. 2 June 1668 in Medfield; d. in 1727; m. Eleazar Ellis on 16 Oct 1687.

### Children of Michael-3b and Elizabeth Bowers Metcalf

All children are listed in Tilden (1887:437) except the first, Thomas, who is listed in Dedham vital records. Given the date of marriage it seems likely that a child would have been born in 1678. Presumably this Thomas died young.

1. Thomas; b. 3 Jan 1678 in Dedham.
2. Michael; b. 10 Oct 1680 in Medfield; d. 5 Mar 1761 in Keene, NH; m. Lydia White on 21 Mar 1705 in Mendon.
3. Sarah; b. 22 Apr 1683 in Medfield; m. Daniel Sanders on 12 Sep 1715.
4. Samuel; b. 20 Jan 1685 in Medfield; d. 4 Mar 1740; m. Mehitabel (Mehettabel) Thurston on 17 Nov 1710.
5. Elizabeth; b. 31 July 1686 in Medfield.
6. Jonathan; b. 13 Aug 1690 in Medfield; d. 8 Apr 1758 in Medfield; m. (1) Elizabeth Plimpton (who d. 23 Apr 1725), (2) Hannah Plimpton (a widow, who d. in 1744), and Abigail Hinsdale (a widow, who d. 1777).

### Children of Michael-4b and Lydia White Metcalf

1. Michael; b. 12 Aug 1706 in Medfield; d. approx 1771; m. (1) Melatiah Hamant (variously spelled) and (2) Sarah Allen Wells.
2. John; b. 23 Aug 1709 in Medfield; d. 22 Feb 1791 (?) in Medway; m. Thamer Daniel on 14 Dec 1773.
3. Joseph; b. 16 Nov 1714 in Medway; d. 1758 or 1759 in Barre; m. Deborah Adams on 29 Nov 1739 in Medway.
4. Jonathan; b. 16 Jan 1716 in Medway; m. Mary Adams on 19 Oct 1742.
5. Elizabeth; b. 9 Nov 1718 in Medway.
6. Lydia; b. 27 May 1721 in Medway; m. (1) Hopestill Lovell on 12 Nov 1747 and (2) Jonathan Day of Dudley, MA.

### Children of Joseph and Deborah Adams Metcalf

This listing is based on vital records of Medway, Rutland, and Barre.

1. Asa; b. 16 Jan 1740 in Medway; m. Mehitable \_\_\_\_\_ about 1770.
2. Deborah; b. 13 Feb 1743 in Rutland; m. Moses Heaton.
3. Nathan; b. 8 July 1745 in Rutland; m. Mary \_\_\_\_\_; d. in Salisbury, NY
4. Elijah; b. 19 Oct 1747; d. 28 Nov 1747, as infant, in Rutland.
5. Tabitha; b. ca. 1752 in Barre; d. 15 May 1818 in Chesterfield, NH (at age 66 according to tombstone); m. Aaron Fisk.
6. Joseph; b. 22 Aug 1754 in Barre; d. 21 May 1782 in Barre; m. Sarah Cunningham on 1 June 1780 in Barre.
7. Silence; b. 24 Aug 1758 in Barre; m. Reuben Hawk (Hawke, Hawks).

### Children of Nathan and Mary \_\_\_\_\_ Metcalf

Documented in Vital Records, Chesterfield, New Hampshire.

1. Levi; b. 13 Dec 1767 in Chesterfield, NH. (died young?)
2. Joseph; b. 10 Feb 1770 in Chesterfield, NH.

Undocumented in vital records of Chesterfield, but deemed to be children of Nathan and Mary.

3. Elijah, b. 25 Dec 1777 in Chesterfield, NH; d. 1 Mar 1861 in Rushford, NY; m. Hannah Blakeslee on 13 Jan 1813 (she b. Mar or Apr 1780 and d. 26 Jan 1860).
4. Simeon; b. about 1784 in New Hampshire; d. 22 Apr 1852 in Salisbury, NY; m. (1) Mary \_\_\_\_\_ and (2) Jane Miles on 27 July 1848.
5. Luna; b. 5 May 1788 in New Hampshire; d. 30 July 1860 in Salisbury, NY; m. (1) Timothy Hildreth, 29 Nov 1806, in Chesterfield, NH, and (2) Stephen Shedd.

6-8. Probably a second Levi, b. in 1792, and possibly a Nathan or Nathaniel and a Phoebe (see text for further discussion)

According to Thomas (1910:166), Elijah had 9 siblings. Thus, some are unaccounted for.

## Children of Elijah and Hannah Blakeslee Metcalf

All of these children were probably born in the Town of Salisbury, Herkimer Co., NY, all except Zephi Brockett died in the Town of Rushford, Allegany Co., NY, and, of these, all except Lyman B. are interred in Lewellen St. cemetery in the village of Rushford.

1. Lyman B.; b. 13 Apr 1815; d. 5 Sep 1896; m. Eliza Porter on 7 Sep 1836.
2. Roxana; born 4 May 1816; d. 2 Jun 1890; m. Alonzo Damon in 1839.
3. Levi; b. 26 Sep 1817; d. 30 Sep 1892; m. Cornelia English on 18 Sep 1844.
4. Rachel; b. 26 Oct 1819; d. 24 May 1890.
5. Zephi Brockett; b. 14 June 1821; d. 23 Jan 1896 in Arkansas City, KS (interred in Riverview Cemetery); m. Harriet Gould on 22 Feb 1844 (she b. 1 Mar 1824 and d. 31 Dec 1914).
6. Elijah, Jr.; b. 17 Jan 1823; d. 6 Jul 1894; m. Salome Gordon on 20 Mar 1861.

## DESCENDANTS OF ELIJAH AND HANNAH BLAKESLEE METCALF

Descendants of Elijah and Hannah are carried to the fourth generation. Their children were all born in or near the Town of Salisbury, then in Montgomery Co., and now in Herkimer Co., New York.

In the following listing, b.=born, d.=died, dec.=deceased, int.=interred, m.=married and div.=divorced. In case of remarriage, spouses are indicated by (1), (2), etc., and this same number appears between the identifying number or letter for each child and the name of the child, to indicate its parentage, as: (a)(1) Mary Doe or 2(3) John Doe. In some cases, the place of residence (early 1980's) of living persons is indicated within parenthesis at the end of an entry. This entry in parenthesis does not refer to place of marriage.

Most of the information concerning the descendants of Lyman B. Metcalf is from the genealogy of Porter (1982). Most other information was supplied by descendants.

- I. Lyman B. Metcalf; b. 13 Apr 1815; d. 5 Sep 1896; m. Eliza Porter on 7 Sep 1836 (she b. 10 May 1814 & d. 27 Oct 1900); both int. \_\_\_\_\_ Cem., Rushford, NY.
  - A. Elijah ( Elyah on tombstone) E. Metcalf; b. 18 Jan 1839; d. 10 Oct 1876; int. Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford; m. Mary Emaline Ayers at Lyndon, NY in Nov 1869
    1. Mary Lovina Metcalf; b. 27 Apr 1870; m. Aaron Ingalls on 9 Nov 1887
      - a. Oren Ingalls; b. 2 Mar 1889 at Allentown, PA; m. Clara Withey on 16 Nov 1912
    2. Emeline (Emaline?) Metcalf; b. 16 Mar 1874; d. 20 Mar 1919; m. William Lafferty
      - a. Edmond Lafferty; b. 24 Jan 1892; d. 4 Aug 1933; m. Beatrice Morgan
      - b. Linford D. Lafferty; b. 28 Jun 1894; d. 9 Mar 1950; m. Florence Mae McFarlan on 12 Oct 1912; both int. in White Cemetery, Rushford, NY.
      - c. George Lafferty; b. 11 May 1895.

- d. Dennis Lafferty; b. 3 Jun 1898
- 3. Dennis Metcalf; b. 9 Dec 1876
- B. Hannah Juliette Metcalf; b. 2 Feb 1840; d. 7 Aug 1913;
  - m. William F. Stone on 2 Oct 1856 (he b. 6 Apr 1835 and d. 22 Apr 1905; both int. White Cem., Rushford, NY)
  - 1. Alfred Ward Stone; b. 15 Jun 1869; d. 21 Dec 1931;
    - m. (1) Helen May Alsworth on 1 Jul 1891 (she d. 3 Aug 1907) and (2) Kitty Belle Porter on 19 Aug 1909
    - a.(1). Clifford Alsworth Stone; b. 6 Sep 1896 in Independence, NY; m. (1) Freda Emma Bruehl on 25 Dec 1917 (she d. 29 Mar 1933) and (2) Ora Lucille Slingluff Rumbaugh on 14 Oct 1943
    - b.(1). Everett Stanley Stone; b. 11 Jul 1900 in Independence, NY; d. 25 Mar 1924; m. Mabel Linblad Johnson on 3 Sep 1922
    - c.(1). Lorna Helen Stone; b. 10 Dec 1901 in Independence, NY; d. 14 Mar 1932; m. Frank Eldor Spohn on 10 Dec 1925.
    - d.(1). Lawrence Herbert Stone; b. 29 Nov 1904 in Allegany, NY; d. 28 Dec 1956; m. Ethel Cecelia Smock on 27 Sep 1927
    - e.(1). William Ford Stone; b. 16 Jun 1906 in Belfast, NY; d. 26 Aug 1976; m. (1) Emma Elizabeth Brink on 21 Aug 1927 (div.) and (2) Isabelle Gehr on 21 Nov 1930
    - f.(2). Loren Stone; b. and d. in 1911
    - g.(2). Mary Inez Clarissa Stone; b. 7 Apr 1913
    - h.(2). Clarence LeeRoy Stone; b. 25 Feb 1915
  - 2. Lyman B. Stone; b. in Feb 1870; d. in Apr 1872
  - 3. Dewitt Clinton Stone; b. 20 Dec 1875; d. 29 Aug 1943;
    - m. Grace Delia Cole (she b. 26 Nov 1878; d. 26 Apr 1963) on 21 Jun 1899; both int. White Cem., Rushford, NY
    - a. Sarah Margaret Stone; b. 23 Mar 1900 in Rushford, NY; m. Victor Freemont Veness on 3 Jun 1925 (he b. 19 Dec 1898; d. 14 Feb 1969); (Waterloo, NY)
    - b. Eva Priscilla Stone; b. 17 Oct 1901 in Rushford, NY; m. (1) Edward Madden Davis on 6 Jul 1926 (he d. 10 Feb. 1968) and (2) Clifford Douglas Tullar on 21 Mar 1971

- c. Max Clinton Stone; b. 20 Jun 1912 in Rushford, NY;  
d. 18 Sep 1973; m. Ethel Vivian Rifenburg on 13  
Oct 1940
- C. Rachel L. Metcalf; b. in 1846. Apparently died young,  
but in or after 1850, as she is recorded as being age 4  
in the 1850 census
- D. Fred Lyman Metcalf; b. 12 Mar 1855; d. 14 Jan 1930;  
m. Maryette (Mariette) Elmer on 10 Sep 1875 (she b.  
17 Apr 1860 and d. 4 May 1935); both int. in White Cem.,  
Rushford, NY
- 1. Lyman B. Metcalf, II; b. 23 Sep 1878 at Rawson, NY;  
d. 15 May 1956 and int. at Batavia, NY; m. (1) Ruth Jane  
McVay on 30 May 1900 (she d. 12 Oct 1918 and int. White  
Cem., Rushford, NY, and (2) Lura Crooke Westland  
a.(1) Elmer Levi Metcalf; b. 23 Nov 1903 at Farmersville,  
NY; m. Luella Veazey on 22 Dec 1928 (she dau. of Lula  
Metcalf and Daniel Veazey and b. 8 Feb 1909 in  
Centerville, NY); (Rushford, NY)
- b.(1) Ethel Luella Metcalf; b. 27 May 1906 in Cuba, NY;  
m. Archie Harold Freeman on 30 June 1923; (Florida)
- c.(1) Eleanor Ruth Metcalf; b. 28 Jul 1908 in Buffalo,  
NY; d. 15 Sep 1968 and int. Siloam Cem., Fredonia,  
NY; m. Gerald Crosby on 28 Jul 1927 (he d. Dec 1986)
- d.(1) Claude Frederick Metcalf; b. 17 Mar 1912 in  
Buffalo, NY; d. 16 Sep 1968; Int. Batavia, NY;  
m. Mary Fuller on 5 Aug 1935
- e.(1) Max Ora Metcalf; b. 26 Oct 1913 in Buffalo, NY
- f.(2) Etta Chickoa Bell Metcalf; b. 22 Apr 1923 in  
Batavia, NY; m. (1) Eldred Lawrence Johnson on  
11 Jan 1942 (dec.) and (2) Milford Milo Austin on  
10 Jul 1976

- g.(2) Lura June Metcalf; b. 5 Aug 1925 in Batavia, NY;  
m. John Maniscalco on 29 Dec 1945
- h.(2) Lyman B. Metcalf, III; b. 11 Jan 1928 in Oakfield,  
NY; d. in Oct 1939
- i.(2) Lyma Cora Metcalf; b. 11 Jan 1928 at Oakfield, NY;  
m. Donald Stringham on 22 Mar 1947
- j.(2) Virginia Adele Metcalf; b. 13 Aug 1935; d. May 1939

- 2. Lula Belle Welleson Furdon Metcalf; b. 7 Jul 1882 in  
Elmira, NY (adopted); d. 1 Apr 1956; int. White Cem.,  
Rushford, NY; m. Seymour Strait
- 3. Ora Orlando Metcalf; b. 31 May 1889 in Rushford, NY;  
d. 16 May 1963; int. White Cem., Rushford, NY;  
m. (1) Ethel Josephine Brooke on 29 Sep 1912 (she d.  
16 Jul 1954) & (2) Margaret Flammger in 1957
- a. Mariette Louise Metcalf; b. 1 Jun 1929 in Franklin-  
ville, NY (adopted); m. Alfred H. Burton (1906-1960)

II. Roxana Metcalf; b. 4 May 1816; d. 2 Jun 1890; m. Alonzo H.  
Damon in 1839 (he b. in 1815 & d. 15 or 16 Aug 1871); both  
surely int. in Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford, although only  
Alonzo's tombstone was located in 1986

A. Rhoda Damon; b. 1840; d. 1899; int. Lewellen St. Cem.,  
Rushford, NY; m. \_\_\_\_\_ Baker.

B. Thomas Damon; b. ca. 1844; d. \_\_\_\_\_; m. Sarah  
J. Washbon

1. George L. Damon; b. ca. 1868

a. Robert Damon

b. Ralph Damon

2. Dora R. Damon; b. ca. 1871; d. \_\_\_\_\_;  
m. Fred Gayford

a. Frank Gayford

b. Helen Gayford

3. Harmon T. Damon; b. May 1875; d. 1935; m. Lena Mix

4. Herman S. Damon; b. May 1875; d. \_\_\_\_\_:

m. Cora Derry

a. Thomas Damon

b. Dora Damon

c. Mae Damon

d. Charles Damon

e. Bessie Damon

5. Bessie Damon; b. \_\_\_\_\_; d. \_\_\_\_\_;

m. Sherman Robinson

C. Riley Damon; b. ca. 1849; d. \_\_\_\_\_;

m. Alice \_\_\_\_\_

1. Herbert Damon; b. ca. 1879

III. Levi Metcalf; b. 26 Sep 1817; d. 30 Sep 1892; m. Cornelia English on 18 Sep 1844 (she b. 25 May 1828 & d. 9 Feb 1921); both int. in Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford, NY

A. Mary Metcalf; b. 18 Sep 1849 in Rushford, NY; d. 26 Oct 1895; m. Wilson G. Robbins (1841-1930) on 3 Jul 1867; both int. in Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford

1. Nellie C. Robbins; b. 31 Aug 1876; d. \_\_\_\_\_;

int. East Aurora (?), NY; m. Albert Schumann

a. Marion Schumann; b. 11 Jun 1897

b. Dorothy Schumann; b. 25 Jun 1901

c. Donald Schumann, b. 26 Apr 1903

B. Charles Levi Metcalf; b. 2 Dec 1855 in Rushford, NY;

d. 26\* May 1935; m. Nellie Laverne Persons on 14 or 15 Aug 1883; both int. in Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford, NY

1. Myrtie Mary Metcalf; b. 4 Jul 1884 in Rushford, NY;

d. 19 Jun 1961; m. on 12 Nov 1903 William Watson Bush (he b. 17 Apr 1882 & d. 17 Jan 1957); both int. White Cem., Rushford, NY

a. Arthur Bush; b. 11 or 12 Nov 1913 in Rushford, NY;

d. 1 May 1978 & int. White Haven Memorial Park,

Pittsford, NY; m. Janet Peirson

\*Charles died on "Memorial Day."

2. Millie Cornelia Metcalf; b. 31 Mar 1891 in Rushford, NY; d. 29 Mar 1981; m. Herbert H. Harmon (1887-1960) on 16 Jul 1913; both int. North Chili Cem., North Chili, NY
  - a. Elizabeth Cornelia Harmon; b. 4 Sep 1914 in Rochester, NY; m. Pritchard C. Douglass on 16 Jul 1938; (Rochester, NY)
  - b. Ellen Louise Harmon; b. 4 Jun 1916 in Rochester, NY; (Rochester, NY)
  - c. Marion Alberta Harmon; b. 4 Oct 1918 in Rochester, NY; m. (1) Victor S. Murphy & (2) Donald Mohnkern on 28 Oct 1972; (Rochester, NY)
  - d. Richard Herbert Harmon; b. 16 Jan 1924 in Rochester, NY; m. Mary Joyce Rutter on 11 May 1946; (Rochester, NY)

3. Mary Persons Metcalf; b. 18 Jun 1899 in Rushford, NY; m. Arthur E. Mowers (b. 31 Aug 1898 & d. 25 Jun 1979) on 28 Feb 1923; (Rochester, NY)
  - a. Robert Metcalf Mowers; b. 8 Aug 1924 in Rochester, NY; m. Patricia Morris on 26 Oct 1955; (Rochester, NY)
  - b. Mary Jane Mowers; b. 1 Feb 1929 in Rochester, NY; m. Donald Avery on 17 May 1952; (Rochester, NY)

- C. Nelia E. Metcalf; b. 12 Mar 1869 in Rushford, NY; m. Edward G. Dietrich on 11 Oct 1888; both int. in Syracuse, NY
  1. Mildred Dietrich; b. 3 Jul 1894; d. 31 Jul 1894
  2. Gertrude Dietrich; b. 28 Apr 1897; m. Lloyd Wheeler
  3. Sanford Dietrich; b. 17 Oct 1899; m. Mary Willett

- IV. Rachel Metcalf; b. 26 Oct 1819; d. 24 May 1890 in Rushford, NY; int. Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford, NY

V. Zephi Brockett Metcalf; b. 14 Jun 1821; d. 23 Jan 1896;  
m. Harriet Gould on 22 Feb 1844 (she b. 1 Mar 1824 and d.  
31 Dec 1914); both int. in Riverview Cem., Arkansas City, KS

(A.) De Algeroy Adelbert Metcalf; b. 8 Oct 1846 in Rushford,  
New York; d. 15 June 1921; m. Carrie Armina Cross on  
2 Aug 1876 (she b. 1 Apr 1857 in Cook Co., IL, and d.  
23 Jul 1938 in Dade Co., MO); both int. in  
Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., south of Arcola, MO

1. Flora Olivia Metcalf; b. 15 May 1877 nr. Cedar Vale,  
KS; d. 20 Mar 1967; m. Cleatus A. Remmy on 7 Dec 1902  
(he b. 27 Nov 1881 & d. 29 Sep 1927); both int. in  
Dexter Cem., KS

- a. Angel Remmy; b. and d. 30 Jul 1903
- b. Fernella Odessa Remmy; b. 28 Aug 1904 nr. Cedar  
Vale, KS; m. Albert Davidson on 29 Jan 1920  
(he d. 3 Jul 1976); (Warren, PA)
- c. Lela Clarice Remmy; b. 11 Oct 1906 nr. Cedar  
Vale, KS; m. Merritt White on 16 Jan 1929 in  
Hooser, KS (he d. 1 Feb 1986); (Cedar Vale, KS)
- d. Alvin Gerald Remmy; b. 23 Dec 1908; d. 13 Nov 1909;  
int. Round Mound Cem., rural Chautauqua Co., KS
- e. Elwyn Cleatus Remmy; b. 18 June 1912 nr. Hooser, KS
- f. Lovella Olivia Remmy; b. 24 Aug 1915 nr. Hooser, KS;  
m. Clarence Wilbert Richardson on 13 Apr 1941;  
(Wichita, KS)
- g. Ethel Leta Remmy; b. 17 Jan 1919 in Hooser, KS;  
d. 7 Feb 1924; int. Dexter Cem., KS

2. Ida Almira Metcalf; b. 22 Aug 1878 nr. Cedar Vale, KS;  
d. 31 Aug 1965; m. William Jasper Fesler on 7 Jan 1906  
(he b. 18 Aug 1880 and d. 11 Aug 1958); both int. Dumas,  
Texas

- a. Dolie Augustus Fesler; b. 19 Oct 1906 in Cedar Vale, KS; d. \_\_\_\_\_; int. Santa Maria, CA;
  - b. Jasper Ralph Fesler; b. 13 Aug 1909 in Cedar Vale, KS; m. Alma Brown on 13 Dec 1938 (she dec.); (Dumas, TX)
  - c. Fern Estelle Fesler; b. 4 Apr 1912; m. Roy Rozell on 25 Jun 1927; (Amarillo, TX)
  - d. Dorena Woodrow Fesler; b. 26 Dec 1914 nr. Hewins, KS; d. 6 Jun 1962; int. Midland, TX; m. Helen Hurt on 31 Mar 1934
  - e. Bryce Cardigan Fesler; b. 26 Oct 1920 in Moore Prairie community, Chautauqua Co., KS; d. 24 Aug 1979 in Amarillo, TX; int. Llano Cem., Amarillo, TX; m. Lois Polston on 11 May 1942
3. Ernest Lawson Metcalf; b. 25 Sep 1880 nr. Cedar Vale, KS; d. 22 Dec 1933 nr. Arcola, MO; m. Susan Anna Green on 10 Feb 1905 (she b. 6 Jan 1883 & d. in 1953); both int. in Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., south of Arcola, MO
- a. Dora Marion Metcalf; b. 12 Jan 1906 nr. Arcola, MO; d. 14 Aug 1928; int. Fullington Cem., Dade Co., MO; m. Dewey Cooper on 7 Oct 1922 (he b. 22 Feb 1900 & d. 19 Jul 1957)
  - b. Esther Carrie Metcalf; b. 6 Feb 1908 nr. Arcola, MO; m. Lee Cooper on 2 Apr 1927 (he b. 31 Oct 1904 & d. 18 Mar 1976); (Manson, WA)
  - c. Elsie Emma Metcalf; b. 3 Mar 1909 nr. Arcola, MO; d. 22 Aug 1988; int. in Chelan, WA; m. Cecil Call on 11 Jul 1929 (he b. 21 Jun 1907)
  - d. Harriet Anna Metcalf; b. 26 Jul 1910 nr. Arcola, MO; d. 11 Sep 1987; int. in Chelan, WA; m. Herbert Thomason on 12 Dec 1930 (he b. 11 Feb 1904 & d. 3 Mar 1977)
  - e. Arnold Leslie Metcalf; b. 12 Feb 1912 nr. Arcola, MO; d. 16 Dec 1980; int. in Chelan, WA; m. Rose Martha Trent on 11 Oct 1933 (she b. 9 Mar 1913)

- f. William Wallace Metcalf; b. 20 Dec 1913 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. Hattie Trent on 22 Mar 1934 (she b. 6 Nov 1917);  
(Poyen, AR)
  - g. Edith "Lea" Metcalf; b. 27 Mar 1915 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. James Perry Trent on 3 Feb 1933; he b. 10 Aug  
1910 & d. 25 Feb 1967); (Norfork, AR)
  - h. Woodrow Wilson Metcalf; b. 7 Dec 1916 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. Uthema Beatrice Cross; (Jerico Springs, MO)
  - i. Willa Marie Metcalf; b. 12 Jan 1919 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. (1) Louis Rual Dial on 2 Dec 1935 (div.) & (2)  
Joseph Jewel Prater on 5 Jan 1951; (Everton, AR)
  - j. Ivan Metcalf; b. 10 Jan 1921 nr. Arcola, MO; d. as  
infant; int. in Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., MO
  - k. Irvin Metcalf; b. 10 Jan 1921 nr. Arcola MO; m. Eilene  
Cross on 12 Oct 1946 (she b. 24 Mar 1925 in Jerico  
Springs, MO); (Benton, AR)
  - l. Flora Lorene Metcalf; b. 18 Aug 1922 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. Claude Henry Faubion on 17 Jul 1939 (Claremore, OK)
  - m. Edna Mae Metcalf; b. 2 Jul 1926 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. Milton Hunt on 15 Nov 1945 (he b. 30 Jun 1919);  
(Manson, WA)
4. Arthur Ellis Metcalf; b. 6 Jan 1883 nr. Cedar Vale, KS;  
d. 6 Jan 1964 (on his birthday); m. Lucy Duncan on 6 Dec  
1908
- a. Otis \_\_\_\_\_ Metcalf; b. 27 Aug 1909 nr. Arcola, MO;  
d. 14 Jul 1960; m. (1) Edith Lunquist & (2) Helen  
Elder
  - b. Homer Edmond Metcalf; b. 19 Nov 1912 nr. Arcola, MO;  
d. 17 Sep 1976; m. Stella Robinson Schubert
  - c. Howard Raymond Metcalf; b. 19 Nov 1912 nr. Arcola, MO;  
d. 2 Apr 1977; m. Dorothy Endicott
  - d. Veda Mae Metcalf; b. 4 Nov 1914 nr. Arcola, MO;  
d. 14 June 1988; m. Chris Yeoman
  - e. Williard Allen Metcalf; b. 6 Jun 1916 nr. Arcola, MO;

- m. Margaret Helen Jones (she b. 2 Nov 1918 & d. 7 Feb 1986)
- f. Wayne Calvin Metcalf; b. 22 Nov 1923 in Fort Scott, KS; d. 20 Oct 1981; m. (1) Ellen Garland & (2) Glenna Marie Schubert
5. Agnes Alberta Metcalf; b. 6 Apr 1885 nr. Cedar Vale, KS; d. 4 Feb 1987 in Roseburg, OR; m. Larry Sartin (he d. Feb 1964)
- a. Otis Sartin; b. 22 Jun 1906 in Cedar Vale, KS; d. 7 Sep 1985; m. Mary Betty Majors
6. Oscar Felix Metcalf; b. 25 Oct 1887 nr. Cedar Vale, KS; d. 18 Nov 1912 nr. Arcola, MO; int. Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., S of Arcola
7. Anna Isabel Metcalf; b. 28 Apr 1890 nr. Cedar Vale, KS; d. 14 Jul 1975; m. George A. Freund on 16 Feb 1910 (he d. 17 Sep 1964); both int. \_\_\_\_\_
- a. Lester Wilhelm Freund; b. 6 Mar 1911 nr. Arcola, MO; d. 27 Jul 1989; int. Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., MO; m. Denzel Divine on 16 Feb 1938
8. Adda Arabell Metcalf; b. 28 Apr 1890 nr. Cedar Vale, KS; d. 16 Oct 1915; int. Liberty Cem., S of Stockton, MO; m. William Horton
- a. Virgil Horton; m. Leola Glenn
9. Lancelot Metcalf; stillborn, 19 Aug 1892
10. Elbert Rupert Metcalf; b. 28 Jan 1896 nr. Cedar Vale, KS; d. 19 Oct 1918 at Camp Funston, Fort Riley, KS; int. Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., S of Arcola, MO

11. Bertha Etta Metcalf; b. 4 Jan 1898 nr. Cedar Vale, KS;  
d. 4 Dec 1972; m. (1) Clarence A. Baldwin (he d. 8 Feb  
1930) and (2) John Boulware; Bertha & Clarence int.  
Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., S of Arcola, MO

- a. Furba Mae Baldwin; b. 24 Feb 1915; d. 17 Jan 1933;  
int. Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., S of Arcola, MO
- b. Hazel Marguerite Baldwin; b. 29 Nov 1916; m. James  
Floyd Dewitt
- c. Leroy Alvin Baldwin; b. 28 Mar 1919 in Red Oak, Iowa;  
d. 25 Mar 1957; m. Leona Gertrude Mills on 18 Aug  
1940 (she b. 21 Dec 1920)
- d. Eva Irene Baldwin; b. 12 Jan 1920 & d. 14 Jan 1920
- e. Duard Oswald Baldwin; b. 7 Jul 1921 in Jerico Springs,  
m. Alice Caroline Doran on 24 Jun 1944; (Springfield,  
MO)
- f. Mansell Oren Baldwin; b. 16 Jan 1923 in Springfield,  
MO; m. Mary Elizabeth Brewer on 11 May 1941 (Joplin,  
MO)
- g. Loretta Francis Baldwin; b. 22 Feb 1925; d. 1 May 1933;  
int. Arcola-Hickory Grove Cem., S of Arcola, MO

12. William McKinley Metcalf; b. 21 Dec 1899 nr. Cedar Vale,  
KS; d. 11 Apr 1974 at Eldorado Springs, MO; int. Green-  
field Cem. (S of Jerico Springs, MO); m. Felice Eeva  
Duncan in 1922 (she b. 10 Nov 1904)

- a. Leland Edgar Metcalf; b. 21 Jul 1923 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. Melba Mae Loveall on 15 Jun 1946; d. 7 Aug 1988
- b. Hazel Lorraine Metcalf; b. 3 Sep 1925 nr. Arcola, MO;  
m. Russell Gordon Taylor on 29 Jun 1940 (he d. 20 Oct  
1977); (Jerico Springs, MO)
- c. Lois Louise Metcalf; b. 15 Nov 1931 nr. Jerico Springs,  
MO; m. Sammie Elton Harris on 23 Aug 1948; (div.)

B. Hartley Andrew Metcalf; b. 4 Feb 1849 in Town of Lyndon, Cattaraugus Co., NY; d. 10 Jan 1926 in Bayfield, CO, where int.; m. Ella May Hotchkiss on 20 Sep 1880 in Lake City, CO (she b. 14 Jul 1863, d. 1 Aug 1951, and int. in Olivewood Cem., Riverside, CA)

1. Minnie Laura Metcalf; b. 1 Aug 1881 in Lake City, CO; d. 15 Nov 1968 in Riverside, CA; m. Oscar Hurt on 4 Jun 1905 (he d. 25 Sep 1967); both int. in Crestwood Cem., Riverside, CA
  - a. Marie Hurt; b. 8 May 1906 in Parker, Idaho; (Mira Loma, CA)
  - b. Jerry Beryl Hurt; b. 1 Jul 1908; d. Aug 1987; int. Crestlawn Cem., Riverside, CA; m. (2) Doris Rendquist Fischlein
  - c. Verne Hotchkiss Hurt; b. 12 Oct 1910 in La Junta, CO; d. Sep 1990; int. National Cemetery, Riverside Co., CA; m. Maurine Melsha on 7 Apr 1939
  - d. Clair Leroux Hurt; b. 22 Aug 1912 in La Junta, CO; m. Rose Buchan; (NV)
  - e. Zorum H. Hurt; b. 12 Dec 1916 in Lamar, CO; m. (2) Thelma Cloud; (Hemet, CA)
  - f. Roy Zenus Hurt; b. 16 Apr 1919 in Aztec, NM; (Mira Loma, CA)
  - g. Daisy Louise Hurt; b. 11 Oct 1920 in Aztec, NM; m. John Price on 2 Sep 1939 (he b. 2 Sep 1912, d. 20 Sep 1986, and int. Crestlawn Cem., Riverside, CA); (Hemet, CA)
2. Bennett Austin Metcalf; b. 23 Aug 1883 in Hotchkiss, CO; d. 1945 in La Sierra, CA; m. Susie Minder on 25 Dec 1917 (she b. in 1887 & d. in 1939); both int. Hotchkiss, CO
  - a. Carl Bennett Metcalf; b. 17 Sep 1918 in Aztec, NM; d. 11 Feb 1988; m. Eula Lorene Howard
  - b. Ellamae Metcalf; b. 6 Sep 1920 in Lamar, CO; m. Paul Burch (dec.); (Oroville, CA)

- c. Ed Earnest Metcalf; b. 7 Oct 1928 in La Jara, CO;  
d. Feb 1988
  - d. Charlie Clyde Metcalf; b. 14 Aug 1930 in La Jara, CO
3. Roy Zephi Metcalf; b. 19 June 1885 in Hotchkiss, CO;  
d. 1950 in Riverside, CA; m. Nellie Whitaker (she d. in 1981); both int. Olivewood Cem., Riverside, CA
- 4 & 5. Lawrence & Verne Metcalf; Lawrence probably older (according to Zorum Hurt); Lawrence d. at age of 5 mos. and Verne at age of 8 years
6. Monett Gould Metcalf; b. 19 Jun 1899 in Hotchkiss, CO;  
d. 18 Mar 1958 in Santa Ana, CA; m. Zora Elizabeth Thompson in 1922 (she d. in 1980); both int. Irvine Cem., Orange Co., CA
- a. Robert Allen Metcalf; b. 1 Jun 1923 in Aztec, NM;  
m. Barbara Marron; (Prescott, AZ)
  - b. Dorothy Jean Metcalf; b. 21 Sep 1924 in Aztec, NM;  
m. Howard Snider; (Phoenix, AZ)
  - c. Doris Sylvie Metcalf; b. 3 Sep 1926 in Aztec, NM;  
m. Raymond Hunt on 30 Jun 1947; (Riverside, CA)
  - d. Helen June Metcalf; b. 30 Jan 1933 in Hotchkiss, CO;  
m. Robert Willeford; (Ukiah, CA)
  - e. Shirley Evelyn Metcalf; b. 4 Oct 1935 in Paonia, CO;  
m. Virgil Patton; (Vista, CA)

C. Aminzo Demetrius Metcalf; b. 9 Jul 1851 in Rushford Township, NY; d. 10 Jan 1930 in Bartlesville, OK, where int. in Memorial Cem.; m. (1) Mary Catherine Gaston on 8 Mar 1876 (she b. ca. 1858 and d. 14 Sep 1886 nr. Dexter. KS; int. Dexter Cem.) and (2) Sarah Ann (Sadie) Rector (she b. 24 Feb 1868 and d. 15 Oct 1948 in Caney, KS, where int. in Sunnyside Cemetery).

1.(1) Dolie Monroe Metcalf; b. 10 Feb 1877 nr. Erie, KS; d. 1 Jun 1959 in Bartlesville, OK; m. Alice Violette Colee on 10 Feb 1904 (she b. 26 Feb. 1879 and d. 28 Aug 1960); both int. White Rose Cem., Bartlesville, OK

- a. Maria Colee (Margaret) Metcalf; b. 17 Nov 1904 in Ragay, Philippine Islands; (Bartlesville, OK)
- b. Dolie Monroe Metcalf, Jr.; b. 6 Aug 1909 and d. 10 Jan 1910; int. White Rose Cem., Bartlesville, OK.
- c. Ardene Elizabeth Metcalf; b. 3 Aug 1911 in Bartlesville, OK; m. Daniel Walter Beltz on 4 Aug 1936 (he dec.); (Chickasha, OK)
- d. Dorothea Maebelle Metcalf; b. 17 Feb 1913 in Bartlesville, OK; m. John Lott (dec.); (Bartlesville, OK)
- e. Crystal Erma Metcalf; b. 8 Dec 1914 in Bartlesville, OK; d. 10 Dec 1935; int. White Rose Cem., Bartlesville, OK
- f. Ruth Myrl Metcalf; b. 25 Aug 1917 in Bartlesville, OK; (Bartlesville, OK)
- g. Charles Aminzo Metcalf; b. 31 Oct 1919 in Bartlesville, OK; m. Jeanne Evonne Evans on 10 May 1947; (Dover, Delaware)

2.(1) John Edmer (Jack) Metcalf; b. 12 May 1880 nr. Erie, KS; d. 13 Jun 1969; int. Ft. Gibson, OK, Military Cem.; m. Marie Buck on 25 Dec 1900 (she b. 1879 and d. 1983 in CA; ashes to the Pacific Ocean))

- a. Jessie Aileen Metcalf; b. 12 Oct 1901; d. 3 Jan 1903
- b. John Edmer (Jack) Metcalf, Jr.; b. 19 Sep 1907

- 3.(1) Grace Eleanor Metcalf; b. 8 Sep 1882; (adopted by Alexander & Martha Williams); d. 22 Jul 1942 in Detroit, Michigan; m. João (Juan) Fernandez on 15 Jan 1902; both int. Greenlawn Cem., Detroit, MI
- a. Madeira Williams Fernandez; b. 9 Oct 1902 in Clyde, NY; m. Miguel Garcia on 1 Sep 1920 (he d. in 1980); (Dunedin, FL)
  - b. Juanita Metcalf Fernandez; b. 20 Dec 1905 in Syracuse, NY; m. (1) Jesse Flynn (he d. in 1956) & (2) Peter Tomasco (he d. in 1974); (Largo, FL)
  - c. Juan Fernandez; b. 28 Jun 1909 in Syracuse, NY; d. 23 Jul 1921
- 4.(1) Guy Emmet Metcalf, Sr.; b. 2 Feb 1885; d. 12 Dec 1964; m. Lucy Myrtle Sinclair on 21 Oct 1911 (she b. 21 Oct 1884 & d. 26 Jan 1965); both int. in Dexter, KS, Cem.
- a. Grace Evelyn Metcalf; b. 19 Sep 1913 nr. Hooser, KS; m. Virgil Carl Muilenburg on 28 Dec 1936 (he d. 29 Sep 1939); (Manhattan, KS)
  - b. Guy Emmet Metcalf, Jr.; b. 23 Feb 1915 in Hooser, KS; m. Margaret Marie Williams on 18 Oct 1945 in Cedar Vale, KS; (San Antonio, TX)
  - c. Gould Emory Metcalf; b. 1 Mar 1917 in Hooser, KS; d. 13 Jan 1977; int. Cedar Vale, KS; m. Lucille Steward on 23 Jun 1938
  - d. Don Wallace Metcalf; b. 15 Dec 1919; d. 31 Oct 1978 in Colorado Springs, CO; int. Pioneer Cem., N of Colo. Spr.; m. Mary Elizabeth Stocking on 8 Jun 1944 in Sacramento, CA
- 5.(2) Nellie Dora Metcalf; b. 17 Mar 1890 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 23 Jul 1969 in Roswell, NM; m. Oscar Warren Nellis on 10 Oct 1910 (he b. 18 Feb 1887 & d. 20 Sep 1932); both int. South Park Cem., Roswell, NM

- a. Ralph Oscar Nellis; b. 19 Feb 1912 in Arkansas City, KS; m. Leona Evers on 17 Jun 1933; (Grants, NM)
  - b. Ava Lorena Nellis; b. 1 Dec 1913 in Dexter, KS; m. William C. Arrington on 17 Feb 1935 in Roswell, NM; (Granbury, TX)
  - c. Gail Metcalf Nellis; b. 29 Apr 1915 in Dexter, KS; d. 26 Feb 1980 in Roswell, NM, where int.; m. Bessie Cummins on 5 Jul 1937
  - d. Helen June Nellis; b. 3 Jun 1923 in Roswell, NM; m. Russell Donald Covey, Sr., on 31 May 1946 in Roswell, NM; (Reno, NV)
  - e. Warren Glen Nellis; b. 29 Mar 1925 in Clovis, NM; m. Johnnie Holland
- 6.(2) Myrtle Minnie Metcalf; b. 20 Feb 1892 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 3 Sep 1941 in Caney KS; m. Earl Nellis (he b. 17 Mar 1889 & d. 20 Feb 1974 ); both int. Sunnyside Cem., Caney, KS
- a. Charles Wayne Nellis; b. 10 Dec 1911 in Dexter, KS; d. 30 Jan 1975 in Winfield, KS; int. \_\_\_\_\_ m. Maxine Dunivant on 10 Mar 1946
  - b. Evelyn Earline Nellis; b. 3 Sep 1917 in Caney, KS; m. (1) Doyle Wayne Ferguson on 4 Jul 1935 (div.) & (2) John Sandoval on 7 May 1947; (Ontario, CA)
- 7.(2) Zephi Joy Metcalf; b. 11 Nov 1895 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 13 Dec 1962 in South Euclid, OH; m. Alice Roberts on 1 May 1923 in Cleveland, OH (she b. 25 Oct 1904 & d. in 1982); both int. Restlawn Cem., nr. South Euclid, OH
- a. Jack Roberts Metcalf; b. 12 Jun 1925 in Cleveland, OH; d. 29 Sep 1976; m. Barbara Cattell on 27 Dec 1947

b. Dorothy Ellen Metcalf; b. 10 Jul 1929 in Cleveland, OH; m. Donald Wayne Urban; (Madison, OH)

8.(2) Lorena Elsie Metcalf; b. 18 Jun 1897 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 23 Mar 1977; m. Robert James Brakey, Sr. on 5 Aug 1916 in Caney, KS (he d. 5 Jan 1980); both int. in El Camino Cem., Chula Vista, CA

a. Dorothy Yvonne Brakey; b. 15 Jul 1917 in Caney, KS; m. John Vincent Ary on 11 Mar 1937; (Yucaipa, CA)  
 b. Robert James Brakey, Jr.; b. 23 Jan 1923 in Drumright, OK; m. Wilma Primm on 24 Dec 1944; (Alamo, TX)

9(2) Dewey G. Metcalf; b. 20 Sep 1899 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 30 Dec 1925 nr. Silverdale, KS; int. Sunnyside Cem., Caney, KS

10(2) Alice Marie Metcalf; b. 29 Feb 1904; d. 4 Sep 1979 in Falls City, NE; m. John Nunnold on 16 Feb 1924 at Fredonia, KS (he d. 9 May 1954 at Sterling, KS)

Note: Order of birth of following 4 children not known:

a. John W. Nunnold  
 b. Joseph D. Nunnold  
 c. Jerry W. Nunnold  
 d. Cecilia Ann Nunnold; m. Herman Mock

11(2) Beryl Edward Metcalf; b. 20 Apr 1906 nr. Dexter, KS; d. 10 Oct 1966 in Caney, KS; m. Iva Della Cobb (she b. 16 Feb 1910 & d. 9 Jan 1976); both int. Sunnyside, Cem., Caney, KS

a. Earl Lawrence Metcalf; b. 30 Jan 1926 in Caney, KS; m. Margaret Haughn; (Caney, KS)  
 b. Deo Ray Metcalf; b. 13 Jun 1930 in Caney, KS; m. (1) Patsy Robison (dec.) & (2) Marjorie Nicholson; (Caney, KS)

12(2) Violet Goldie Metcalf; b. 8 Apr 1908 nr. Dexter, KS;  
d. 7 Jan 1981 in Midwest City, OK; int. Sunnyside Cem.,  
Caney, KS; m. (1) Charles Brooks Stroup, Sr. (dec.) &  
(2) Clarence F. Grayum

a.(1) Charles Brooks Stroup, Jr., b. 5 May 1935 in Caney,  
KS; m. Barbara Ann Diehm; (Midwest City, OK)

b.(2) Bruce David Grayum; b. 8 Mar 1944 in Caney, KS

c.(2) Brenda Rose Grayum; b. 28 Jun 1945 in Caney, KS;  
m. Jon Wesley Tiehm, Jr.; (Oroville, CA)

D. Ida Ellen Metcalf; b. 26 Feb 1853 in Rushford Township, NY; d. 1 Mar 1930 in Kansas City, MO; m. Reuben (or Ruben) Lee Hudson on 1 Jan 1871 at Erie, KS (he b. 8 Apr 1844 and d. 6 May 1922); both int. Oakwood Cemetery, Parsons, KS

First 7 children born in Parsons, Kansas

1. Grace Lee Hudson; b. in 1872; d. \_\_\_\_\_; m. (1) J. Edmund Cornish on 28 Feb 1894 (he d. in 1907) and (2) Anthony Braun (or Brawn?)
  - a.(1) Evelyn Cornish; b. 24 Mar 1895 in Indian Territory; d. June 1980 in Kansas City, MO; m. Joseph Suor
  - b.(1) Grace Lee Cornish, Jr., b. 21 Dec 1898 in Indian Territory; d. in her 20's
2. Lena Daisy Hudson; b. 18 Aug 1873; d. 16 Apr 1955 in Bellingham, Washington; int. Oakwood Cemetery, Parsons, KS; m. (1) Ross Merrick on 28 Feb 1894 (div.) and (2) \_\_\_\_\_ Jolly (or Jolley)
  - a.(1) Marjorie Merrick; b. 16 Jun 1899 in Arkansas City, KS; probably d. in Bellingham, WA, about 1972
3. Hattie E. Hudson; b. 24 Nov 1875; d. 3 or 8 Oct 1883 in Parsons, KS, where int. in Oakwood Cemetery
4. Claude M. Hudson; b. 6 Jul 1878; d. 30 Aug 1878 in Parsons, KS, where int. in Oakwood Cemetery
5. Effa A. Hudson; b. Mar 1880; d. \_\_\_\_ Aug 1953 in Leavenworth, KS; m. Clarence McGuire on 1 Jan 1904
  - a. Clarence Hudson McGuire; b. 15 Aug 1906; d. \_\_\_\_ May 1983 in Kansas City, MO; m. Virginia Hoover
  - b. Hudson Lee McGuire; b. 19 Oct 1909 in Leavenworth, KS

6. Ella R. Hudson; b. 12 Jan 1883; d. Feb 1884 in Parsons, KS, where int. in Oakwood Cem.
  7. Harry Russel Hudson; b. 30 Apr 1885; d. 27 Aug 1936; int. Oakwood Cem., Parsons, KS; m. Ruth Bell
  8. Earl Ulrich Hudson; b. 24 Aug 1889 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 11 May 1970 in \_\_\_\_\_; int. \_\_\_\_\_;  
m. (1) Edith Gertrude Holmes on 2 Sep 1908 (she b. 18 Jul 1888 & d. 13 Dec 1918) & (2) Medea Dosha Gordon on 24 May 1919
    - a.(1) Helen Hudson; b. 2 Nov 1911 in Kansas City, MO;  
m. William Elkins on 31 Dec 1934; (Lawrence, KS)
    - b.(1) Ruth Irene Hudson; b. 8 Sep 1915 in Arkansas City, KS; m. Robert Louis Hardaway on 27 Feb 1937 in Kansas City, KS (Pomona, CA)
    - c.(1) Russell Lee Hudson; b. 25 Feb 1917 in Kansas City, MO; m. Josephine E. Stock on 28 Mar 1943
- E. Levi Philip Metcalf; b. 9 Sep 1855; d. 17 Feb 1856

F. Dora Roxana Metcalf; b. 4 Sep 1857 in Missouri; d. 7 Jun 1949 in Los Angeles, CA; int. Inglewood Park Cem., Los Angeles; m. (1) William Henry Parsons on 14 Nov 1875 and (2) David Wise Thomson on 10 Jul 1880 (he b. 6 May 1851, d. 21 Mar 1921. David and sons, Gail & Hartley A., are int. in Concordia Cem., El Paso, TX, at west edge of main cem., along fence separating main cem. from "Mason's strip," and midway (north to south) along this fence).

Note: For Dora's children I have generally used dates of births, marriages and deaths prior to 1950 that are given in a listing apparently compiled by Myrtle Gorton in 1964 and sent to her sister, Joy Lindsey (courtesy of Gail Lindsey).

1.(1) Myrtle Iona Parsons; b. 19 Mar 1878 in Parsons, KS; d. 24 Nov 1966 in Los Angeles, CA; m. (1) George Washington Strayer, 25 Dec 1894 (div) & (2) Harvey N. Gorton, 26 Sep 1911 in Golden, CO; Harvey d. 1932--he and Myrtle both int. in Forest Lawn Cem., Glendale, CA; (See also page 258)

a.(1) Dora Alice Strayer; b. 2 Oct 1895; d. about 1900 in Delta, CO

b.(1) Howard Wallace Strayer; b. 27 Jun 1897; d. Feb 1972; m. Mabel Wilber (she d. Jun 1987)

c.(1) Angus Paul Strayer; b. 2 May 1900; died young

2.(2) Ida Rae (or Ray) Thomson; b. 18 Aug 1881 in Lake City, CO; d. 26 Oct 1951 in Los Angeles, CA; ashes at Greenwood Cem., San Diego, CA; m. Herbert E. Haney on 21 Dec 1899 in Silverton, CO (Herbert probably died ca.1910)

a. Estelle Haney; b. \_\_\_\_\_; d. \_\_\_\_\_;  
m. \_\_\_\_\_ Grosvenor

b. Elwood Thomson Haney; b. \_\_\_\_\_; d. in 1969 in San Diego, CA; cremated; m. Bertha \_\_\_\_\_;  
lived in San Diego in later years

3.(2) Vida Daisy Thomson; b. 31 Aug 1882 in Lake City, CO  
(death certificate has 2 Aug 1883 and 1900 census 3 Aug

1882); d. 5 Feb 1917 in Durango, CO; m. Herbert L. Shackley on 20 May 1903 in Mancos, CO; both int. in Greenmont Cem., Durango, CO

- 4.(2) Dora Pearl Thomson; b. 29 Jul 1884 in Durango, CO (her death certificate has 14 June 1883 and 1900 census 29 Jan 1884); d. 7 Nov 1932 in Norwalk, CA; int. San Gabriel Cem. San Gabriel, CA; m. Walter D. Hull in Hotchkiss, CO, on 20 Mar 1903 (wedding date possibly in error)
- 5.(2) Muriel Violet Thomson; b. 9 Apr 1886 in Durango, CO; d. 10 or 11 Jun 1949 in Venice, CA; m. Christopher Henry Mountain on 20 May 1903 in Mancos, CO (he b. 5 Feb 1875 & d. 20 Apr 1960); both int. Woodlawn Cem., Venice, CA
  - a. Orville Norris Mountain; b. 27 Sep 1905 in Durango, CO; d. 2 Jan 1973 in Roseburg, OR; m. Alice Atkin on 5 Jul 1932 in Venice, CA
- 6.(2) Cyril Clifford Thomson; b. 9 Jan 1888 in Durango, CO; d. 7 Jun 1957 in Camarillo, CA; ; m. Jennie May Lentz (she b. 29 May 1898 and d. 6 Feb 1970); both int. Inglewood Park Cem., Los Angeles, CA
  - a. Dora Catherine ("Kay") Thomson; b. 23 Aug 1916 in El Paso, TX; m. Richard A. Gamble in Jun 1939
  - b. Dorothy May Thomson; b. 7 Jun 1918 in El Paso, TX; m. Lyle C. Poe on 12 Jan 1937 in Silver City, NM; (he b. 22 Sep 1912; d. 31 May 1983; int. Lordsburg, NM)
  - c. Rosalena Violet Thomson; b. 1 Oct 1919 in El Paso, TX
  - d. Carrie Iona Thomson; b. 30 Dec 1920 in El Paso, TX
  - e. Paul B. Thomson; b. 3 Jan 1922 in Mountainair, NM; d. 8 Aug 1980; int. Deming, NM; m. Flora Jean Burns

- f. Frank William Thomson; b. 3 Apr 1923 in Los Angeles, CA;  
d. 2 Nov 1978
- g. John Henry Thomson; b. 10 Sep 1924 in Los Angeles, CA
- h. Floyd Daniel Thomson; b. 18 Nov 1926 in Los Angeles,  
CA; m. Kinko Wada
- i. Florence Alvina Thomson; b. 15 Sep 1929 in Los  
Angeles, CA; m. Harold H. Porter on 24 Apr 1947
- j. James Robert Thomson; b. 16 Jul 1935 in Los Angeles, CA
- k. David Wise Thomson; b. 24 May 1940 in Los Angeles, CA
- 7.(2) Gail Lee Thomson; b. 23 Oct 1891 in Red Mountain, CO;  
d. 11 Oct 1918 in El Paso, TX; int. Concordia Cem., El  
Paso, TX
- 8.(2) James Thomson; b. 2 Apr 1892; d. 20 Apr 1892 (These  
dates from Myrtle's list are not possible, given Gail's  
date of birth, substantiated by his gravestone. It seems  
likely that James was born and died in 1893 or 1894)
- 9.(2) Joy Marjorie Metcalf Thomson; b. 2 Apr 1895 in Ouray,  
CO; d. 10 Dec 1981 in El Paso, TX; int. Restlawn Memorial  
Park, El Paso, TX; m. David O'Keefe Lindsey on 29 Mar 1915;  
(he int. Phoenix, AZ, probably in Greenwood Memorial Park)
  - a. Dee Reynolds Lindsey; b. winter 1915/16 in El Paso, TX;  
d. 6 May 1919; int. in Evergreen Cem., El Paso, TX
  - b. Gail Elwood Lindsey; b. 27 Apr 1917 in Clifton, AZ;  
m. Susan Thompson on 31 Dec 1939; (El Paso, TX)
- 10.(2) Hartley Austin Thomson; b. 6 May 1898 in Delta, CO;  
d. 3 May 1917 in El Paso, TX; int. Concordia Cem., El Paso, TX

G. James C. Metcalf; b. 10 Apr 1862 in Illinois (or possibly in Missouri); d. 13 Jun 1868 nr. Erie, KS; likely int. in Bethel Cem., NE of Erie, but no stone located

H. William Wallace Metcalf; b. 17 Dec 1863 in Hancock Co., IL (probably nr. Fountain Green); d. 7 Jan 1933 nr. Hooser, KS; m. Laura Evelyn (or Evaline) Sinclair on 31 Jan 1897 (she b. 17 Sep 1874 & d. 11 Dec 1959); both int. Dexter, KS

1. Frank Monroe Metcalf; b. 16 Jun 1898 nr. Hooser, KS; d. 21 Sep 1986; int. Grenola, KS; m. Mary Elizabeth (Betty) Hawkins on 19 Sep 1930

a. Chester Frank Metcalf, Sr.; b. 22 Feb 1932, nr. Dexter, KS; m. (1) Carol Jean McHenry on 21 Dec 1958 (div.) & (2) Jean Weaver; (McAllister, OK)

b. Delbert Carl Metcalf; b. 9 Feb 1943 in Cedar Vale, KS; m. Phyliss Dee Marion on 17 Dec 1966; (Grenola, KS)

2. Artie Clifford Metcalf; b. 23 Nov 1900 nr. Hooser, KS; d. 9 May 1990; m. Edna Lucile Dungan on 6 Feb 1926 (she b. 9 Mar 1904 nr. Leeds, KS & d. 22 Mar 1988); both int. Dexter, KS

a. Artie Lou Metcalf; b. 5 Jul 1929 nr. Dexter, KS; (El Paso, TX)

b. Forrest Wayne Metcalf; b. 26 Mar 1932 nr. Dexter, KS; d. 31 Aug 1989; int. Dexter, KS; m. Ruth Maxine Coil on 23 Sep 1956

3. Theodore Roosevelt (Ted) Metcalf; b. 5 Mar 1905 nr. Hooser, KS; d. 9 Feb 1975; m. Ella May Richardson on 17 Sep 1937 (she b. 15 May 1911 & d. 17 May 1985); both int. in Hope Cem., W of Arkansas City, KS

a. James Wallace Metcalf; b. 17 Apr 1939 in Arkansas City, KS; m. (1) Lois Maxine Hempsmyer on 31 Aug

- 1958 (div.) and Susan Elizabeth Aaberg on 6 Sep 1980
- b. Morris William Metcalf; b. 5 Aug 1944 in Wichita, KS
4. Myrtle Augusta Metcalf; b. 6 Jan 1909 nr. Hooser, KS;  
m. Andrew Jackson (Dutch) Johnson on 10 Nov 1932;  
(Montezuma, IN)
- a. Franklin Duane Johnson; b. 5 Jan 1934 in Carbon,  
Vigo Co., IN; d. 7 Nov 1959 nr. Montezuma, IN; int.  
Clinton, IN
- b. Betty Marie Johneon; b. 19 Sep 1936 in Brazil, Clay  
Co., IN; m. James J. Fortune on 16 Aug 1958;  
(Clinton, IN)
4. Mary Evelyn Metcalf; b. 2 Oct 1912 nr. Hooser, KS;  
d. 29 Nov 1912; int. Dexter, KS
5. William Carl Metcalf; b. 18 Nov 1913 nr. Hooser, KS;  
d. 13 Jul 1941 nr. Hooser, KS; int. Dexter, KS
6. Cecil Sylvester Metcalf; b. 25 Apr 1916 nr. Hooser, KS;  
m. Lena Marie Davison on 10 Oct 1935; (Arkansas City,  
KS)
- a. Cecilia Marie Metcalf; b. 23 Sep 1936 in Winfield,  
KS; m. Donald LeRoy Nelson on 21 Apr 1957; (Arkansas  
City, KS)
- b. William Gary Metcalf; b. 10 Sep 1938 in Winfield, KS;  
m. Nancy Ann Hankins on 1 Jun 1958; (Salinas, CA)
- c. Patricia Ann Metcalf; b. 22 Jan 1941 in Winfield, KS;  
m. Tommy Harrell Estes on 25 Aug 1961; (Rockwall, TX)
- d. Darrell Leon Metcalf; b. 10 Aug 1945 in Winfield, KS;  
d. 9 Apr 1952; int. Dexter, KS
- I. Maurice Crump (Doc) Metcalf; b. 10 Oct 1865 in Hancock Co.,  
IL (probably nr. Fountain Green); d. 29 Jan 1936 in Cherry-

vale, KS; m. (1) Bertha Alice Baker (she b. 1871, d. 31 May 1914, and int. Harmony Grove Cem., NE of Cherryvale); (2) Rachel E. Dye (she b. in 1882 and d. in 1942); Maurice and Rachel both int. Fairview Cem., Cherryvale, KS

1.(1) Basil Whittingham Metcalf; b. 17 Sep 1900 in rural Dexter, KS; d. 1 May 1976 in Harlingen, TX; m. (1) Nettie Boots (div.) and (2) Ruby Vanada--she d. 1980 and int. with Basil in Mont Meta Memorial Park, San Benito, TX; (The Park office confirms year of Basil's death as 1976)..

a.(1) Hermie Bertha Metcalf; b. 21 Dec 1924 in Arizona; m. (1) Jack Conrad and (2) Jack L. Hillyard; (Cherryvale, KS)

b.(1) Decima Rutheen Metcalf; b. 10 Nov 1926 in Cherryvale, KS; m. M. Allan Hammack on 13 Dec 1941 (he d. 18 Feb 1983); (Parsons, KS)

Note: Children c-f all born and died in Cherryvale, KS, where interred in Fairview Cemetery:

c.(1) Wymona (Wynona on tombstone) Metcalf; b. & d. in 1928

d.(1) Basil Metcalf; b. & d. in 1929

e.(1) Douglas (Dugles on tombstone) Metcalf; b. & d. in 1930

f.(1) Laura Metcalf; b. & d. in 1931

g.(1) Ruby Rosella Metcalf; b. 1 May 1933 in Cherryvale, KS; m. (1) Ralph Edsel York and (2) Donald Nelson (dec.); (Wichita, KS)

h.(1) Londa Mae Metcalf; b. 5 Dec 1935 in Cherryvale, KS;

i.(1) Spencer Metcalf; b. & d. in 1940; int. in Fairview Cem., Cherryvale, KS

j.(1) Janet Kay Metcalf; b. 22 Aug 1945 in Independence, KS

k.(2) Calvin Morris Metcalf; b. 17 Oct 1951 in Independence, KS

2.(1) Milan Maurice Metcalf; b. 9 Mar 1903 in Arkansas City,

KS; d. 2 Nov 1918 in Cherryvale, KS; int. Fairview Cem., Cherryvale

- 3.(1) Harriett Elizabeth (Beth) Metcalf; b. 15 Apr 1905 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 14 May 1989; m. James Emil Ewry on 8 Oct 1922 in Cherryvale, KS (he b. 7 Jul 1893 & d. 7 May 1967); both int. in Bainbridge Cem., OH
  - a. James Emil Ewry, Jr.; b. 15 Jul 1924 in Mound Valley, KS; m. Betty Zech (Springboro, OH)
  - b. Dwight Charles Ewry; b. 1 Mar 1926 in Weslaco, TX; d. 7 (?) May 1990; m. (1) Doris Windhorst & (2) Flossie Penwell
  - c. Don L. Ewry; b. 14 Feb 1928 in Cherryvale, KS; d. about 1985; m. (1) Lottie Estle (d. in Jan 1968) and (2) Bonita Davis
  - d. William Wallace Ewry; b. 11 Oct 1930 in Cherryvale, KS; m. Mary Lowery
  - e. John Franklin Ewry; b. 28 Dec 1932 in Cherryvale, KS; m. Geneva Smith; (Bainbridge, OH)
  - f. Walter Eugene Ewry, Sr.; b. 16 Jan 1938 in Dayton, OH; m. Patricia Anderson
  - g. Basil Whittingham Ewry, Sr.; b. 17 Dec 1942 in Dayton, OH; m. Mary Southers
- 4.(1) Jennie Marie Metcalf; b. 31 May 1907 in Arkansas City, KS; d. 20 May 1984; int. Harmony Grove Cem., NE of Erie, KS; m. (1) Virgil C. Nelson (div.); & (2) Percy N. Newton
  - a.(1) Robert Milan Nelson, Sr.; b. 25 Jan 1926 in Holly, CO; m. Laura Oberg on 6 Sep 1946 in Superior, Montana
  - b.(1) Richard Wayne Nelson, Sr.; b. 15 Jul 1930 in Cherryvale, KS; m. Jean Anthony on 28 Oct 1950
  - c.(1) Alice Lavon Nelson; b. 16 Feb 1932 in Cherryvale, KS; m. (1) Al Kublnick & (2) Willie L. Jones
  - d.(1) Patty Colleen Nelson; b. 17 Mar 1937 in

Cherryvale, KS; m. David Adey on 20 Aug 1954 in  
Cherryvale, KS; (Independence, KS)

- 5.(2) Barbara Metcalf; b. 2 Nov 1919 in Cherryvale, KS;  
m. William Dale Hoover on 1 Jan 1940; (Coffeyville, KS)  
a. Judy Kay Hoover; b. 25 Apr 1944; m. Larry Noble in  
1962 in Coffeyville, KS

- 6.(2) Shirley Jean Metcalf; b. 14 Jan 1927 in Cherryvale,  
KS; m. Warren Maxwell Salisbury on 6 Dec 1950;  
(Pinehurst, Idaho)

- a. Nickie Dawn Salisbury; b. 11 Jun 1960 in Idaho;  
m. David Wayne Bohannon on 20 Nov 1975

- VI. Elijah Metcalf, Jr.; b. 17 Jan 1823; d. 6 Jul 1894;  
m. Salome Gordon on 20 Mar 1861 (she b. 1823 and d. 8 Jul 1893);  
both int. Lewellen St. Cem., Rushford, NY  
A. Flora M. Metcalf; b. 1863; d. 1933; m. Luther J. Thomas  
(he b. 1860 and d. 1934); both int. Lewellen St. Cem.,  
Rushford, NY

## LITERATURE CITED

Adams, William (Ed.)

1893. Historical Gazetteer and Biographical Memorial of Cattaraugus County, N.Y. Syracuse, NY: Lyman, Horton & Co., Limited, i-vi + 1,164 p.

Anderson, Virginia DeJohn

1985. "Migrants and Motives: Religion and the Settlement of New England, 1630-1640." The New England Quarterly. 58(3):339-383.

Anonymous (The following 10 entries under this heading)

1850. Vital Records of Weymouth, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850: Vol. 1--Births (359 p.) and Vol. 2--Marriages and Deaths (376 p.). Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society.
- 1892.. "Freedom of the City of Norwich, England,--Granted to Michael Metcalf." The Dedham Historical Register. 3(3):142-143.
1895. "Hannah Adams." The Dedham Historical Register. 6(3):99-100.
- 1903a. Vital Records of Medfield, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. Boston: New-England Historic Genealogical Society, 243 p.
- 1903b, Vital Records of Barre, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849. Worcester, MA: "Published by Franklin P. Rice," Trustee of the Systematic History Fund, 276 p.
- 1905a. Vital Records of Medway, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. Boston: New-England Historic Genealogical Society, 345 p.
- 1905b. Vital Records of Rutland, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849. Worcester, MA: "Published by Franklin P. Rice," Trustee of the Systematic History Fund, 255 p.
- 1905c. Progressive Men of Western Colorado. Chicago: A.W. Bowen & Co. 876 p.

1908. Vital Records of Holliston, Massachusetts to the Year 1850.  
Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 358 p.
1970. List of Pensioners on the Roll, January 1, 1883. (Reprint  
of 1883 Edition). Baltimore: Genealogical Publ. Co., 5 vols.
- Baldwin, Thomas W.
1910. Vital Records of Wrentham Massachusetts to the Year 1850.  
Vol. II--Marriages and Deaths. Boston: New England Historic  
Genealogical Society, 518 p.
1920. Vital Records of Mendon, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850.  
Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 516 p.
- Banks, Charles Edward
1926. "Metcalf" in "Genealogical Research in England." New  
England Hist. and Genealog. Register. 80:312-313
- "Beers, F.W." (in fact, anonymous)
- 1879 History of Herkimer County, New York.... New York: F.W.  
Beers & Co., 289 p.
- Beetle, David H.
1946. West Canada Creek. Utica, NY: Utica Observer-Dispatch, 159 p.
- Benjamin, J.G.
1908. "Rushford M.E. Church Semi-Centennial," pp. 215-223 in  
Rushford Centennial Committee: The Rushford Centennial,  
August 16-21, 1908, with Other Data and Reminiscences.  
Rushford, NY: Published by the Committee, 547 p.
- Benton, Nathaniel S.
1856. A History of Herkimer County, Including the Upper Mohawk  
Valley. Albany, NY: J. Munsell, 497 p.
- Breen, T.H.
1980. Puritans and Adventurers, Change and Persistence in Early  
America. New York: Oxford University Press, i-xviii + 270 p.
- Bremer, Francis J.
1976. The Puritan Experiment, New England Society from Bradford  
to Edwards. New York: St. Martin's Press, i-xv + 255 p.
- Cary, Julia Metcalf
1937. William Henry Metcalf, a Biography by His Daughter, Julia  
Metcalf Cary, Together with Sundry Interesting Facts and  
Some Genealogical Records of the Metcalf Family. New  
York: Press of the Woolly Whale, 71 p.

Chamberlain, George Walter

1923. History of Weymouth, Massachusetts, Vol. 4: Genealogy of Weymouth Families. Weymouth, MA: Weymouth Historical Society, pp. 421-846.

Child, Hamilton

1885. Gazetteer of Cheshire County, N.H. 1736-1885. Syracuse, NY: Publ. by the author.

Cook, Louis A. (Ed.)

1918. History of Norfolk County, Massachusetts, 1622-1918. New York: The S.J. Clarke Publ. Co., i-xiii + 485 p.

Crawford, Mary Caroline

1941. Social Life in Old New England. New York: Grosset & Dunlap, i-xii + 515 p.

Cressy, David

1987. Coming Over Migration and Communication between England and New England in the Seventeenth Century. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, i-xiii + 324 p.

Crispino, Tommie J.

1971. The Centennial Story of Parsons, Kansas. Publisher not indicated. 112 p.

Damon, Charles M.

1908. "A Rushford Quarterly Meeting of Fifty Years Ago," pp. 244-247 in Rushford Centennial Committee: The Rushford Centennial, August 16-21, 1908, with Other Data and Reminiscences. Rushford, NY: Publ. by the Committee, 547 p.
1910. "A.W.E. Damon" and "Reminiscences of Rushford" pp. 153-156 and 399-413 in Gilbert, H.J.W.: Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Publ. by Author, 572 p.

Deetz, James

1977. In Small Things Forgotten The Archeology of Early American Life. Garden City, NY: Anchor Press/Doubleday, 184 p.

Donovan, Francis D.

1976. The New Grant: A History of Medway. Medway, MA: Medway Bicentennial Commission, 179 p.

Dow, George Francis

1972. Domestic Life in New England in the Seventeenth Century. New York: Benjamin Blom Inc., 48 p.

Eldridge, Esther Woods

1910. "Reminiscences by Esther Woods Eldridge," pp. 220-221 in Gilbert, H.J.W.: Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Publ. by author, 572 p.

Ellis, Franklin

1879. History of Cattaraugus County, New York. Philadelphia: L.H. Everts, 512 p.

Fellows, Stephen N.

1907. History of the Upper Iowa Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, 1856-1906. Publisher not indicated, 260 p.

Fesler Family, The

1980. The Fesler Family Cookbook. Lenexa, KS: Cookbook Publishers, Inc., 65 p.

Forbes, Allyn B. (Ed.)

1933. Records of the Suffolk County Court, 1671-1680, Parts 1 and 2. Boston: Colonial Society of Massachusetts, i-xciv + 1,233 p.

Gilbert, Helen Josephine White

1910. Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Published by author, 572 p.

Gold, Pleasant Daniel

1946. Gold Generations in England and America. Silver Springs, Maryland: Published by author, 126 p.

Gordon, Victoria English

1910. "Robert English," pp. 177-180 in Gilbert, H.J.W.: Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Publ. by author; 572 p.

Graves, W.W.

1949. History of Neosho County, Vol. 1. St. Paul, KS: Journal Press, 7 unnumbered + 544 p.
1952. History of Neosho County, Vol. 2. St. Paul, KS: Journal Press, pp. 545-1,142.

Gregg, Th.

1880. History of Hancock County, Illinois.... Chicago: Chas. C. Chapman & Co., 1,036 p.

Guild, Howard Redwood

1897. "Mary Fairbanks of Dedham." The Dedham Historical Register. 8:104-105.

Hanson, Robert B.

1976. Dedham, Massachusetts 1635-1890. Dedham, MA: Dedham Historical Society, i-xiii + 250 p.

Hardin, George A. and Frank H. Willard

1893. History of Herkimer County, New York, Illustrated with Portraits of Many of its Citizens. Syracuse, NY: D. Mason & Co., 376 p.

Harris, Luther Metcalf

1852. "Metcalf Family." The New England Historical and Genealogical Register. 6:171-178.

Herrick, John P.

1949. Empire Oil The Story of Oil in New York State. New York: Dodd, Mead & Co., i-xx + 474 p.

Hill, Don Gleason (Ed.)

1886. The Record of Births, Marriages and Deaths, and Intentions of Marriage, in the Town of Dedham. Dedham, MA: The Dedham Transcript, 286 p.
1888. The Record of Baptisms, Marriages and Deaths, and Admissions to the Church and Dismissals Therefrom, Transcribed from the Church Records in the Town of Dedham, Massachusetts. 1638-1845. Dedham, MA: "Published by Vote of the Town," i-xii + 347 p
1892. The Early Records of the Town of Dedham...1636-1659. Dedham, MA.

Hixon, Herbert N.

1900. "Epitaphs from the Old Burying Ground, West Medway." The Dedham Historical Register. 11:90-92.

Hotten, John Camden

1962. The Original Lists of Persons of Quality; Emigrants; Religious Exiles...Who Went from Great Britain to the American Plantations 1600-1700. (Reprint of 1874 Ed.) Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., i-xxxii + 580 p.

Hurd, D. Hamilton (Ed.)

1884. History of Norfolk County .... Philadelphia: J.W. Lewis & Co., i-xii + 1,000 p.
1886. History of Cheshire and Sullivan Counties, New Hampshire. Philadelphia: J.W. Lewis & Co., i-ix + 400 p.

1889. History of Worcester County, Massachusetts, with Biographical Sketches of Many of its Pioneers and Prominent Men, Vol. I. Philadelphia: J.W. Lewis & Co., i-lxxxiii + 884 p.  
Jameson, E.O.
1886. The History of Medway, Mass., 1713 to 1885. Medway, MA: "Published by the Town," 534 p.  
Lockridge, Kenneth A.
1970. A New England Town, the First Hundred Years, Dedham, Massachusetts, 1636-1736. New York: W.W. Norton & Co., Inc., i-xv + 208 p.  
Lupo, Ruth V.
1978. Waymarks in Nelliston, New York 1878-1878. Nelliston, NY: Nelliston Community Group, 163 p.  
Maag, Allan E.
1986. In This We Glory A History of the Arkansas City High School 1874-1984. Arkansas City, KS: Arkansas City Historical Society, 124 p.  
Masterson, V.V.
1952. The Katy Railroad and the Last Frontier. Norman, OK: University of Oklahoma Press, i-xvi + 312 p.  
McDonald, J.J.
1937. Metcalf and Allied Families. New York: American Historical Co., pp. 349-390.
- Medfield 325th Anniversary & Special Bicentennial Committee
1976. Medfield Reflections, a Pictorial Commemorative Book, 1651-1976. Medfield, MA: Town of Medfield, i-viii + 87 p.
- Metcalf, Clayton G.
1979. A Study of Metcalfs Andrews and Smith. Enterprise, Alabama: Published by author, 647 p.
- Metcalf, Cornelia English
1908. "Recollections of my Younger Days," pp. 241-244 in Rushford Centennial Comm.: Rushford Centennial, August 16-21, 1908, with Other Data and Reminiscences. Rushford, NY: Published by the Committee, 547 p.
- Metcalf, Evea, Evelyn Hagins, and Leo Cross
1972. Genealogy and History of Some of the Descendants of Linville Higgins and Juda Kirby of Alleghany County,

North Carolina (3rd Edition). Published by authors; 75 p.

Metcalf, Isaac Stevens

1898. Metcalf Genealogy. Cleveland, OH: The Imperial Press, 62 p.

19\_\_\_. "Because your Name is Metcalf...We Might as Well Start There!" This manuscript was duplicated and circulated by Clayton G. Metcalf in the 1980's.

Metcalf, John G.

1862. "Michael Metcalf." The New England Historical and Genealogical Register. 16:279-284.

1880. Annals of the Town of Mendon, from 1659 to 1880. Providence, RI: E.L. Freeman & Co., 723 p.

Metcalf, Martin

1894. "Sara (Ellwyn) Metcalf." The Dedham Historical Register. 5(2):94-95.

Metcalf, Millie C.

1908. "History of the Free Methodist Church," pp. 211-213 in Rushford Centennial Comm.: The Rushford Centennial, August 16-21, 1908, with Other Data and Reminiscences. Rushford, NY: Published by the Committee, 547 p.

Minard, John S.

1896. Allegany County and its People. A Centennial Memorial History of Allegany County, New York. Alfred, NY: W.A. Fergusson & Co., 941 p.

Moriarty, G. Andrews, Jr.

1924. "Metcalf," in "Genealogical Gleanings in England." New England Historical and Genealogical Register. 78:63-65.

1932. "Metcalf: Additional Records." New England Historical and Genealogical Register. 86:252-257.

Muilenburg, Grace and Ada Swineford

1975. Land of the Post Rock Its Origins, History, and People. Lawrence, KS: University Press of Kansas, i-xiii + 207 p.

Nora Springs Historical Committee

1975. Historical Souvenir of Nora Springs, Iowa. Nora Springs, IA: Published by the Committee, 93 p.

Porter, Merle A.

1982. The Descendants of Cyrus and Cynthia Straight Porter. Published by the author.

Randall, Oran E.

1977. History of Chesterfield, Cheshire County, N.H., from the Incorporation of "Township Number One," by Massachusetts, in 1736, to the Year 1881, Together with Family Histories and Genealogies. (Reprint of 1882 Edition). Chesterfield, NH: Chesterfield Historical Society, i-iv + 525 p

Reed, Jonas

1836. A History of Rutland; Worcester County, Massachusetts, from its Earliest Settlement, with a Biography of its First Settlers. Worcester, MA: Mirick & Bartlett, Printers, i-vii + 194 p.

Rosenstahl, Harriet Doughman

- Undated. Population Schedule of the United States Census for 1880 for the City of Parsons, Kansas. Published by author, 132 p.

Rushford Centennial Committee

1908. The Rushford Centennial, August 16-21, 1908, with Other Data and Reminiscences. Rushford, NY: Publ. by the Committee, 547 p.

Rushford Sesquicentennial Committee

1958. The Spirit of Rushford. Rushford, NY: Publ. by the Committee, 180 p.

Savage, James

1965. A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England. Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Co., Vol. III, 664 p.

Shedd, Frank E.

1921. Daniel Shed Genealogy. Ancestry and Descendants of Daniel Shed of Braintree, Massachusetts, 1327-1920. Boston: The Shedd Family Association, i-xv + 796 p.

Slafter, Carlos

1890. "The Schools and Teachers of Dedham." The Dedham Historical Register. 1(3):86-93; 121-129.

Slocum, Charles Elihu

1882. A Short History of the Slocums, Slocumbs and Slocombs of America, Genealogical and Biographical; Embracing

Eleven Generations of the First-named Family from 1637 to 1881...., Vol. I. Syracuse, NY: Publ. by author, 643 p.

Smith, Martha Abby

1894. "Robert Record's Arithmetic, 1630." The Dedham Historical Register. 5(3):101-109.

Smith, Ruth and John Smith

1978. The Fun of Sugaring. Cassadaga, NY: Published by the authors, 81 p.

Straight, Julia Williams

1910. "Daniel Ely." pp. 89-90 in Gilbert, H.J.W.: Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Publ. by author, 572 p.

Sullivan, James E.

1974. American Town, Barre, Massachusetts, 1774-1974. Barre, MA: Barre Historical Society, 56 p.

Tant, Amy C.

Undated. History of the Nellis Family. Mimeographed by author for family circulation.

Tepper, Michael (Ed.)

1977. Passengers to America. A Consolidation of Ship Passenger Lists from the New England Historical and Genealogical Register. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., i-xii + 554 p.

Thomas, Flora Metcalf

1910. "The Rev. Elijah Metcalf," pp. 166-172 in Gilbert, H.J.W.: Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Published by the author, 572 p.

Thompson, James W.

1875. "Historical Discourse by Rev. James W. Thompson, D.D.," in Town of Barre: A Memorial of the One Hundredth Anniversary of the Incorporation of the Town of Barre, June 17, 1874. Barre, MA: "Published by the Town," 281 p.

Tilden, William S.

1887. History of the Town of Medfield, Massachusetts, 1650-1886.... Boston: Geo. H. Ellis, Publisher, 556 p.

Topsfield Historical Society

1913. Vital Records of Amesbury, Massachusetts, to the End

of the Year 1849. Topsfield, MA: Published by the Society, 600 p.

Town of Barre

1875. A Memorial of the One Hundredth Anniversary of the Incorporation of the Town of Barre, June 17, 1874.

Barre, MA: "Published by the Town," 281 p.

Trask, William B. (Ed.)

1880. Suffolk Deeds. Boston: Rockwell and Churchill.

Weymouth, Town of

1910. Weymouth Vital Records. Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, pp. 341-342.

Whitcomb, Frank H.

1905. Vital Statistics of the Town of Keene, New Hampshire. Keene, NH: City of Keene, 268 p.

Whittemore, Henry

1967. Genealogical Guide to the Early Settlers of America with a Brief History of Those of the First Generation....  
Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 438 p.

Wilson, Harrison L.

1910. "Rushford Reminiscences," pp. 366-376 in Gilbert, H.J.W.: Rushford and Rushford People. Rushford, NY: Published by author, 572 p.

Winthrop, John W. (Edited by James Kendall Hosmer)

1908. Winthrop's Journal "History of New England" 1630-1649. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, Vol. 1, i-xi + 335 p.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS OF APPENDIX

The Appendix, appearing in the following pages, contains materials of various kinds that pertain to the foregoing text. I must admit that it is rather a hodgepodge, consisting of things that had gradually accumulated in my files rather than being the result of a systematic search. Thus, it is heavily biased towards my own branch of the family (Chap. 15).

Items in the Appendix are arranged according to the chapter sequence employed in the text. The Table of Contents, below, lists and elaborates on the items included, and indicates pages where they occur. Pages in the Appendix are numbered in the upper center margin. The Appendix is not indexed.

## CHAPTER 1

The essay "Whence Came You" was written at an undetermined date by Isaac Stevens Metcalf and printed for circulation by Clayton Metcalf, to whom I am indebted for permission to include it here. The essay might not survive intensive historical scrutiny very well, but some parts are possibly accurate enough and the tongue-in-cheek style seems to me quite "Metcalfian." Apparently it did not occur to Isaac that the black gentleman mentioned in his first paragraph could very well have had English as well as African ancestors. . . . . 367-372

## CHAPTER 2

Article concerning Sara Ellwyn Metcalf, wife of Michael-1 Metcalf, from the Dedham Historical Register, 1894 (see pages 5 and 6 in text) . . . . . 373

Michael Metcalf's Freedom of the City of Norwich, England, from the Dedham Historical Register, 1892. . . . . 374-375

Letter of Michael Metcalf, written in 1636 from Plymouth, England "To all the True Professors of Christ's Gospel Within the City of Norwich." Published in The New England Hist. and Genealog. Register, 1862. . . . . 376-380

First three pages of an article "Metcalf Family" by Dr. Luther Metcalf Harris, published in The New England Hist. and Genealog. Register, 1852. . . . . 381-383

Parts of two articles "The Schools and Teachers of Dedham," written by Carlos Slafter and published in The Dedham Hist. Register in 1890. These pages pertain to the schoolmastership of Michael-1 Metcalf in Dedham, MA, and include his signature on page 387. . . . . 384-390

## CHAPTER 3

Information concerning the homestead of the John Metcalf family in Medfield, MA. Page 391 was obtained from the Medfield Historical Society and remaining pages are from The Boston Evening Transcript of 17 Sep 1938 and The Boston Traveler of 9 Oct 1962. . . . . 391-393

## CHAPTERS 5/6

Article entitled "The Rev. Elijah Metcalf," by Flora Metcalf Thomas, published in the book Rushford and Rushford People in 1910. Short sketches of Elijah and Hannah and of their children are given. . . . . 394-397

References to the Rev. Elijah Metcalf in connection with the Fredonia Methodist church, Chautauqua Co., NY. . . 398-399

## CHAPTER 6

Some pages selected from the military and pension records of Lyman B. Metcalf, Civil War veteran, including (1) a statement by a J.P., which includes Lyman's signature; (2) a "Supplementary Affidavit" by Lyman, which also bears his signature; (3) an affidavit by J.E. Lundigan; and (4) Lyman's death certificate. . . . . 400-403

Items pertaining to aviatrix Margaret Stone Veness, a great-granddaughter of Lyman B. Metcalf. . . . . 404-405

Items pertaining to Cornelia English Metcalf: (1) articles about Cornelia and family and (2) her article "Recollections of my Younger Days," in The Rushford Centennial, August 16-21, 1908. . . . . 406-408

Articles and items concerning Millie Metcalf Harmon of Rochester, NY, a granddaughter of Levi and Cornelia English Metcalf: (1) young Millie's article "History of the Free Methodist Church" in The Rushford Centennial and (2) news articles concerning Millie in her later years. . . . 409-412

## CHAPTERS 7/8

Vital records from the Family Bible of Zephi and Harriet Gould Metcalf: marriages, births, and deaths. . . . 413-416

## CHAPTER 9

Some military pension records of De Algeroy Adelbert Metcalf, a soldier in the Civil War. The signature of Zephi B. Metcalf appears on page 417, the signature of Algeroy on succeeding pages, and of his wife, Carrie, and children, Agnes Sartin and McKinley Metcalf, on page 421. . . . 417-421

Letter written in 1952 from Ida Metcalf Fesler to her  
cousin Dolie Metcalf. . . . . 422-424

Newspaper accounts of reunions consisting mainly of the  
descendant families of Ernest and Susie Metcalf at Jerico  
Springs and Arcola, MO, in 1982 and 1984. . . . . 425

VFW essay written by Jeanette Metcalf, great-granddaughter  
of Ernest and Susie Metcalf. . . . . 426

#### CHAPTER 10

A newspaper article from Silver World (19 Sep 1980) of  
Lake City, Colorado, concerning Enos Hotchkiss and his  
relatives, including Hartley A. Metcalf. . . . . 427

#### CHAPTER 12

Letters from and items concerning Marie Buck Metcalf, wife  
of John Edmer (Jack) Metcalf: Letters to Myrtle Parsons  
Gorton (pp. 428-429); to Artie L. Metcalf (pp. 429-430); and  
a memorial by her son, Jack, Jr., on page 431 . . . . 428-431

Letters written in 1939 by Grace Metcalf Fernandez to her  
brother, Guy E. Metcalf. . . . . 432-433

Items pertaining to Guy E. & Lucy Myrtle Metcalf. . 434-437

Article in Kansas Farmer magazine (16 Aug 1975) and a  
museum brochure concerning Grace Metcalf Muilenburg, daughter  
of Guy E. and Lucy Myrtle Sinclair Metcalf. . . . . 438-440

Items pertaining to Gould Emory Metcalf, son of Guy E. and  
Lucy Myrtle Sinclair Metcalf . . . . . 441-444

Items pertaining to Violet Metcalf Stroup Grayum and Alice  
Metcalf Nunnold. . . . . 445

#### CHAPTER 13

Death certificate information for two children of Reuben  
and Ida Metcalf Hudson: Lena Daisy and Harry Russel. . . 446

#### CHAPTER 14

Letters from Dora Metcalf Thomson and her daughter, Myrtle  
Parsons Gorton, to Dolie M. Metcalf. . . . . 447-452

Funeral memorial and death certificate information con-  
cerning Dora Metcalf Parsons Thomson. . . . . 453

Death certificate information for some daughters of Dora  
Metcalf Parsons Thomson. . . . . 454-455

Story by young Cyril C. Thomson, son of David and Dora  
Metcalf Thomson, and postcard from Ida Thomson Haney . 456-457

Items pertaining to Joy Thomson Lindsey, daughter of David and Dora Metcalf Thomson, including letters to her sister, Myrtle Parsons Strayer Gorton. . . . .458-459

## CHAPTER 15

Signatures of William Wallace Metcalf and of his wife, Laura Sinclair Metcalf, on personal checks . . . . .460

Obituaries of William Wallace and Laura Metcalf. . . . 461

Letter from Frank Monroe Metcalf to his brother, Artie Clifford Metcalf, written in 1920. . . . .462-463

Letters from Frank Metcalf to his nephews, 1953. . 464-465

Items concerning the death of Frank M. Metcalf. . . . .466

Items concerning Delbert Carl Metcalf, son of Frank M. Metcalf. . . . .467

Letter from Artie Clifford Metcalf to Artie L. Metcalf (first and last pages of letter--see also pp. 303-304). . 468

Items concerning Edna Lucile Dungan Metcalf. . . . 469-470

Funeral memorials of Artie Clifford and Edna Lucile Dungan Metcalf . . . . .471

Newspaper article concerning Forrest Wayne Metcalf, son of Artie C. and Lucile Dungan Metcalf, 1985. . . . . 472

Items concerning death of Forrest Wayne Metcalf. . . . 473

Letter from Theodore (Ted) R. Metcalf to Andrew and Myrtle Augusta Metcalf Johnson. . . . .474

Items concerning Theodore (Ted) Roosevelt and Ella May Richardson Metcalf. . . . . 475

Letter from Myrtle Metcalf Johnson to a nephew. . . . .476

A letter from William Carl Metcalf to Myrtle Augusta Metcalf Johnson and her son, Duane Johnson. . . . . 477

Items concerning William Carl Metcalf. . . . . 478

Items concerning the death of William Carl Metcalf. . .479

Postcards written by Theodore (Ted) R. and Cecil S. Metcalf to their brother, Artie Clifford Metcalf. . . . . 480

Illustration of Hicks Chapel Church, rural Cowley Co., KS, attended by some members of the Wallace Metcalf branch of the family in the 1930's to 1980's. A list of marriages that were performed in the church is given, with the first being that of Lena Davison and Cecil Metcalf. . . . . 481

Newspaper articles concerning the 50th wedding anniversary of Cecil and Lena Davison Metcalf. . . . . 482

Newspaper articles pertaining to Cecil S. Metcalf. 483-484

Letters from two young cousins, Darrell Leon and Delbert Carl Metcalf, to Artie L. Metcalf. Darrell died not long after this letter was written. . . . . 485

## CHAPTER 16

Letter from Elizabeth (Beth) Metcalf Ewry, daughter of Maurice Crump (Doc) and Bertha Baker Metcalf, to her aunt, Laura Sinclair Metcalf. . . . . 486-488

Letter from Jennie Metcalf Newton, daughter of Doc and Bertha Baker Metcalf, to Artie L. Metcalf. . . . . 489-490

Items concerning the death of Jennie Metcalf Newton. . 491

Items concerning Golden Wedding of Dale and Barbara Metcalf Hoover (and Barbara's professional card). . . . . 492

Items concerning descendants of Maurice Crump (Doc) Metcalf and a document bearing Doc's signature. . . . . 493

# W H E N C E C A M E Y O U ?

The following article was written by Isaac Stevens Metcalf, a descendant of Michael Metcalf, the "Dornix Weaver" and settler in Massachusetts in the early 1600s. The exact date of this being written is not known, but he was, at the time, the editor of the Cleveland Plain Dealer, a newspaper in Cleveland, Ohio. This article shows a great deal of research having been made into the origin of the Metcalf family. I shall copy this as exactly as I can.

## "BECAUSE YOUR NAME IS METCALF...we might as well start there!

All of the Metcalfs that I ever heard of (except a black boy who used to run sprints for Marquette University) traced back to a breed that made some little noise in the North Riding of York Shire (Yorkshire). The English Metcalfs and Metcalfes, who ought to know, trace their descent from a Danish sea thief who went by the name of Arkefrith.

This Arkefrith, whom we have a right to claim, seems to have been the husband of the sister of one of King Canute's girl friends....Anyhow, he prospered.

Whether because he enjoyed this wrong-side-of-the-blanket connection with royalty, or because he was a first class fighting man, or for both of these reasons, he grabbed off a lot of land. Canute made him Lord of Dent, Askrigg, and Sedburg, all at the west end of North Riding, and his son, Arkell or Archill, succeeded him.

Arkell's acquisitive instincts were more highly developed than those of some among his posterity. No one tells how he worked it, but by the time he had reached middle life, he was one of the great landholders of England. His fiefs ran all the way from Northumberland to Warwickshire, but his principal strength was among the Danes who had settled Yorkshire in great numbers.

The family of Godwin of Sussex wasn't too enthusiastic about the obvious potentialities of the rising family of Arkefrith. The unruly Tostig, second of the great Earl's sons, fell afoul of Arkell, when Edward the Confessor sent him to rule Northumbria in 1055. Tostig was inclined to be an authoritarian, and the Danes of the North Country ran him out.

When Arkell sent his son, Gospatrick, down to London to explain things, Tostig got even. His sister, Edith, was the albino Edward's virgin (?) wife, and Tostig was her favorite brother. She had Gospatrick killed in the royal palace and almost in the royal presence. That was in 1064.

Gospatrick left an infant son, Dolfin, and Arkell tried to live up to his responsibilities. He clung to his lands, even at the sacrifice of his principles, if any. He made peace with the Conqueror at first; then broke with him to follow the greater Gospatrick, who had succeeded to the Northumbrian Earldom, in the revolt against William which led to that ruthless ravaging of Yorkshire which made the land a desert.

Then Arkell made peace, for a time, and revolted again, and submitted again. The bulk of his lands were given to Norman and Breton and Flemish adventurers. We don't know when or how, or where he disappeared, only that Dolfin, the grandson, succeeded to the ruined fragments.

(Should the reader be interested, you might spend a lot of time with John Richard Green and Freeman's Norman Conquest. My own feeling is that you'd profit!)

Dolfin walked softly in the days of the Williams and the first Henry. He made some little noise in his own shire where the remnants of his grandsire's holdings gave him standing. His possessions in the North Riding are listed in Doomesday, but his holdings were mostly moorland and we have no record that he rode to battle or otherwise distinguished himself in his day. Men of Danish blood weren't taking chances under England's Norman Kings. They sat tight on their bleak hillsides and kept off Scots cattle thieves. That was job in itself!

There is no hint in the chronicles that our Dolfín joined with that other Dolfín, the son of the great Gospatrick whom William the Bastard drove from York in his last Norman campaign of 1092. Indeed, we may shrewdly suspect that he played the Norman's game, for his son, born in 1099, was christened William, doubtless after Rufus. One would hardly look for that in a Yorkshire Dane unless that Dane was obligated to, or much afraid of, the Conqueror's son.

This William, son of Dolfín, son of the ill-fated Gospatrick, son of Arkell, son of Arkefrith, had numerous progeny but we are concerned only with Richard, born in 1143. Of Richard, as of his father, we know practically nothing save that one of his sons was named Adam and that this first Adam named his son...Adam!

The second Adam, who appears to have been born in 1220, deserves especial attention, for he is the first in all our line to have called himself Metcalf...or something like that.

The Danes, like the Saxon before the Conquest, hardly knew the meaning of a family name. There seems, indeed a direct relationship between the stability of a community's civilization and the permanence of the surnames of its people. Gibbon, in the "Decline and Fall" had a particular illuminating discussion of this phenomenon. (I wish you would read Gibbon through...once. Then you'd be sure to read him again even with greater profit!)

The Normans had place-names, Belesme, Tancarville, Valogne, Saint Lo, Mortain, Isigny, Domfront, Montgomise, Coutances, etc. So had certain of the Bastard's Flemish mercenaries, one of whom, John de Huse, we shall deal with later. Because most of them held fiefs in Normandy they kept their Norman place-names, but as they carved out baronies in England, they took English place names, too, and thus set a fashion which the older people of the land were presently to follow.

Adam, the son of Adam, the son of Richard, had a house....we won't call it a castle, though it was naturally fortified, on the slope of the big Pen-y-ghent Hill, fourth highest of the district's peaks-2373 feet, to be exact. There are three knobs, as a Kentuckian would say, on the top of Pen-y-ghent and they have been known since time immemorial as the Three Calves. Because Adam built on the middle knob he came to be known as Adam of the Middle Calf-Midcalf, Medecalf...and naturally assumed the Norman "de."

About the first thing the chroniclers did, however, was to report a quarrel-over land, of course...between Adam de Medecalf and a Richard de Steynbrigge-Stonebridge we'd call it now. Adam must have been aging when the dispute came to a head in 1278, and trial by battle became the only possible solution to the vexing question.

They met in tourney and Steynbrigge shoved Adam off over the cropper and killed him. The victor was awarded the land in dispute and proceeded to help himself to the rest of Medecalf's holdings. Adam's heir...another Adam, who was only eighteen, hid out. If there had been timber in the North Riding, I suppose they'd have said that the disinherited Adam took to the wildwood. Anyhow, he did take to the hills and the moorland. And for a dozen years or more, he lived by his wits and the weight of his hand. He was outlawed, enjoyed the distinction of having a price on his head, was suspected, at least, of collusion with the Scots borderers who were becoming increasingly fond of English beef and mutton.

A man who did not spare his horse could find safety in Scotland overnight, and we must fear that Adam did, more than once. But he thrived, none the less, for all that Longshanks, who may well have been the greatest English King since Alfred, was a stickler for keeping the peace.

In 1296, when Edward was busy in Scotland, Adam de Medecalf surpassed himself. He attacked the manor house on the Middle Calf by night, fired the roof, broke down the great barred door, and slew the Steynbrigge in the great hall which for eighteen years he had called his own. Then Adam pulled his master stroke. Edward was having trouble with John Bailol, and he needed soldiers. Steynbrigge hadn't bothered to lead his retainers over the border. Adam de Medcalf did. His hard-bitten dalesmen served well in the brief campaign which cost Scotland its King, and...at the psychological moment, the outlaw sued for a royal pardon and got both it...and his lands.

But he did not settle again in the house on Middle Calf. The roof was gone, and the stout stone walls, breached. Adam married the heiress of nearby Baynbridge and reared his family there. His son, a third Adam, was born in 1285 and called himself Adam Metcalf of Thornton, but the next in line, Richard...born thirty years later, was again Metcalf of Baynbridge.

We have only dates and places of residences for these two generations. Richard's son, Thomas, born at Baynbridge in 1344, went far afield and followed the Black Prince to Navaretta or Najers, as you may prefer. He seems to have been esquire to the Black Prince, and must have profited by the journey, for he added enough to his North Riding holdings to enable him to marry his son, John-born 1372, to Alice of Ireby. The Irebys were out of Yorkshire's top drawer in those days. John's son, James, born in 1398, went early to the wars. Although only seventeen, his family connections made him a Captain at Agincourt where he performed so doughtily as to win knighthood in the field. We must conclude that he captured some French nobleman, and did not find it necessary to cut his throat when the threat of a second attack led to the massacre of prisoners. He came home fifteen years later, a rich man, and married his cousin, Gelsone of Ireby. It would be satisfaction to know that he had been at Orleans or Patay, and had seen the "Maid." It is certainly a satisfaction to be sure that he was not in the Rouen market place on May 30, 1431. It is, alas, only too safe to assume that he would have approved the proceedings.

James had an eye to the main chance. He had looted successfully in France, and his acquisitive instincts held when he returned to his native moors. He helped himself to the lands of the widow and the orphan--there are records of his long controversy with Lady Margaret Scrope, widow of Lord Richard Scrope of Masham, who (being herself an Ireby) claimed the Nappa manor as a part of her dowry. The Scropes had been none too strong since Henry, Lord Scrope, Treasurer to Henry V, lost his head in Shakespeare with a stirring scene. Henry VI had restored the title and the family lands in 1455, in the effort to attract support in the North, but the new Landcastrian connection proved a handicap rather than a source of strength to the widow. In 1472, when York rode high, Margaret gave up. It is not, indeed, unfair to assume that James had something on his conscience when he founded and endowed the Chantry of Saint Anne at Askrigg: requiring "daily masses said and prayers offered for the good estate of the King and Queen, of himself and for their souls when from this life they pass away, and for the souls of all his benefactors and all the faithful departed."

The Metcalfs were on top of the world in those days....

Thomas, the oldest son of James, had already been a privy counsellor in 1460 and Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. Leland's "Itinerary" calls him a great officer and steward, survier and receyver of landes whereby he waxed riche and did build and purchase. He made additions to Nappay Hall in which two toures be very fair, besides other logginges."

This Thomas Metcalf, the Lord Wensleydale of Stevenson's Black Arrow, appears to have raised the family fortunes to their greatest height. In his day, according to Leland, "Knoppy and other places thereabout be able to make a three hundred men of my known consanquinities of the Metcalfes."

We should note, however, that if the Metcalfs of the late fifteenth century were prosperous as well as prolific, they did not have the best land in the world. Leland says, elsewhere, that "Wensleydale and the soile about is very hilly, and berith little corne but norisith many bestes." We may suspect that there were few vegetarians in those days.

James' second son, Myles, shared in the family's good fortune. He was in Parliament from Yorkshire in 1478 and served as Recorder under Richard III. The Yorkist connection brought both Myles and Thomas near to disaster when the Tudors came in. Both brothers were expressly excepted from the general pardons granted by Henry VII in 1485. Presently, however, they disgorged some portion of their gains, ill-gotten or otherwise, and were permitted to hold their inherited properties.

James' other children: Reginald, who married a Thornton of Thornton; Marmaduke, later a Constable of Cliff; Cicely, Prioress of Marrich Abbey in Iredale; and Brian, with whom we are more directly concerned, seem to have eschewed high politics. Brian married Johanna of Boughton or Baughton, and had his seat at Beare Parke. He is the ancestor of our own New England Metcalfs, but he was not without other claims to fame.

Unlike Thomas, Myles, and Thomas's son, James, he was not too closely identified with the Yorkist interest. He appears to have distinguished himself in Gloucester's Scottish campaigns of 1482, and at Bosworth, too, but he came within the scope of Henry Tudor's amnesty and returned unharmed to his home.

Thirty odd years later, when he must have been in his seventies, he is mentioned as a principal advisor of the friars of Richmond when they had trouble with what may well have been the most famous sow-pig of all time. In 1522, one Thomas Rokeby of Rokeby, wearied of the complaints of the friars of Richmond, gave them an enormous sow "to mend their fare." We have no information on how the unwieldy brute was transported to the abbey, but once there it turned on its new owners, knocked some of them down, chewed up others, and left the premises in haste. The friars moved still faster and....as the old rhyme runs:

"Fled away by Watling Street  
They had no succor but their feet  
It was the more pitty."

The sow took to the woods and her ferocity no less than her size, terrorized the countryside. Brian of Beare was called in counsel, as the most famous fighting man of those parts, and presently the great beast was tracked down and slain by the son of one Gilbert Griffin and by a "bastard of Spain" who was one of Brian's retainers. Doubtless there's a story here, but we don't know it. The friars brought the pork to Richmond with a chorus that chanted innumerable "Te Deums!"

Brian went to his long home and his eldest son, Roger, succeeded him as holder of the Beare Parke lands, and to a royal annuity of "X" marks from the revenues of the Lordship of Middleton. Leonard, the second son, followed him, but didn't get the annuity. The Metcalfs were good Catholics and it is reasonable to assume that they were not enthusiastic about the anti-Romish policies of Henry VIII. For generations thereafter the family's religious inclinations were to make trouble.

Leonard, the son of Leonard, was the most conspicuous sufferer, but a nephew, John, and a grand nephew, Roger, were listed as Catholic recusants as late as 1604. Leonard, the son of Leonard, was the one who became the real cropper. He went "all out" for Mary, Queen of Scots, and had a conspicuous, and expensive part in what the historians call "The Rising in the Earls." When Mary crossed the border after her escape from Lochleven and fell into the hands of Elizabeth, the strongly Catholic North of England rose in her behalf. The Percies of Northumberland, the Nevilles in Westmoreland, and the Yorkshire Dacres called out their tenants and called on their friends and neighbors. They appealed also to the Catholic gentry beyond the border, and marched on Durham without waiting for the Scots to come.

The Scots did not come! Mary's bastard brother was in the saddle and he hoped for a kingdom. With his fellow conspirators, Moray closed the border and the unspeakable Morton stamped out the remnants of Mary's following. Disappointed and desperate, the followers of the Northern Earls, marching under a banner which bore the five wounds of Christ, advanced to Durham, captured the city, tore up the Bible and the Prayerbook before the high altar of the cathedral, and heard Mass there. When they issued from the city to move southward, a single skirmish ended the revolt. Ambrose Dudley, fresh from service in the Low Countries, scattered the ill-armed peasantry.... and the nobles and gentry fled.

Elizabeth had been badly scared and she revenged herself, not on the great lords, but on the feudal tenantry, more than eight hundred of whom were butchered in the succeeding weeks. Their betters, most of whom were attainted...hid out. Among them were Leonard Metcalf, and his nearest neighbors, gentlemen by the names of Claxton and Conyers. They happened to be the principal land owners in the North Riding and the Queen, for reasons of her own, meant to make particular examples of them. She never caught Leonard Metcalf. He fled the continent. She saw to it, however, that his broad lands in Wensleydale were confiscated, and she gave them to Ambrose Dudley. He had stopped in Beare Parke in the course of his repressive campaign and liked the manor house. Elizabeth found it cheaper to pay him with Leonard Metcalf's property than with her own.

No one seems sure what happened afterward. There is evidence that Leonard came back from France to reappear in Yorkshire after some years. However, nineteen years after the "Rising" (in 1588), a Leonard Metcalf is listed among the English renegades known to be in Spain where the Armada was being made ready. Whether he died in the sea fights or drowned at sea, or had his throat cut by some wild Irishman, we do not know.

His widow, a Norfolk heiress, removed to her native county and took her son, another Leonard, with her. That lad grew up a poor relative of his mother's people, took orders in the Church of England, and became Rector of Saint Margaret's, a little old church in Tatterford, Norfolk, four miles from the little village of Frakenham, and not far from Sandringham, the favored country seat of the late Edward VII.

Leonard's sons, Michael and Nicholas, were more ambitious. Perhaps the Astley blood of their mother's forebears, or the tough Yorkshire strain, made them unwilling to be pensioners of the great. Anyhow, they went to Norwich, the big city of those parts, served as apprentices to a weaver, and became master craftsmen and manufacturers in their own right.

When Charles I came to the throne in 1625, they were well established in business, substantial citizens and prodigious Congregationalists, controversialists by instinct. That they should quarrel with Bishop Wren of Norwich, was inevitable. When Archbishop Laud selected Matthew Wren as Bishop of Norwich, he made plain to him that the diocese was "much out of order!" The Congregationalists, Independents and other dissenters of Northern Norfolk had thought the retiring bishop, Richard Corbet, was tough enough. Wren really meant business! In the three years-1635, 1636, and 1637...he brought the dissenters to the brink of rebellion. The pamphleteer, William Prynne, advertised their wrongs and the two Metcalfs (Nicholas and Michael) were conspicuous by reason of the boldness with which they talked back. You will find in your copy of your grandfather's genealogy how Michael justified his intransigence. It is worth reading for the light it throws into the recesses of his mind. You will also learn what it was to cost him.

Brother Nicholas sat tight and rode out the storm to sit in the Long Parliament as a member for Norwich. He must have been quite a man and we can only wish we had access to the notable speech which he made in favor of a Bill to outlaw "mince pie" at Christmastime because it "added to the pleasures of living!" That, too, gives us a look into his soul.

Michael lit out, first to Holland, then to the New Massachusetts Bay Colony. he had to get official permission to emigrate to the new world, however, and on April 8, 1637 he was in Ipswich to ask to sail on the JOHN and DOROTHY. William Andrews was the Master. He was OK'd. The authorities were evidently glad to be rid of him. The passenger list of the John and Dorothy carries the names, thus of Michill (Michael) Metcalf of Norwich, Dornix Weaver, aged 45 years; of Sarah, his wife, aged 39; also eight children: Michill, Thomas, Marey (Mary), Sarrah, Elizabeth, Martha, Joane, Rebecca, and his servant...Thomas Comberback, age 16. They are all set down as desirous to pass to Boston in New England.

The names of their fellow-passengers are also interesting. So, for luck I set them down: Repaer, Paine, Meane, Dixson, Cooper, Thomas, Thurston, Poyette (a spinster), Borowe, Gault, Ames, Augustin, Darrell, Dedney, Burgess, Mires, Yonges, Grinseld, Joanes, Olliuer, Cockram, Baker, Busbie, Ludkin, Jones, Nicherson, Dix, Skerry, Moulton, Caruer, Page, Dowe, Robinson, Raby, Leeds, and Smith.

You'll also find that the clerk who set them down used "u" where we could use a "v". You'll also note that these be good English names which are common in New England to this very day, readily recognizable despite certain spellings which have become archaic.

We don't know when these forty families, plus the Poyette girl sailed, and we cannot guess what hardships they must have known, packed in the little "John and Dorothy." Crossing the ocean must have been pretty terrible three hundred years ago. We only know that Michael and his family came safely to port in Boston and then presently he took up land in the town of Dedham, fifteen miles inland .....which was then..... truly on the frontier."

=====

From years of research on the Metcalf family, it is positive that the family of Michael Metcalf...the Dornix Weaver....who brought his family to the New World in the early 1600s... has the most descendants of any other family in the United States.

There were a few other Metcalf families who propagated their progeny in the United States very effectively over the past 400 years. This is what makes it rather difficult to locate more of them. The surname of METCALF is lost through the female siblings, making it even more difficult.

If indeed there were 300 male Metcalfs serving with Captain James Metcalf in the Battle of Agincourt so many years ago....it is no wonder that there are so many of us today, scattered throughout the world.

Clayton G. Metcalf  
408 North Rawls Street  
Enterprise, Ala-36330-USA  
Phone: 205-347-8390

p. 94

## SARA (ELLWYN) METCALF.

BY MARTIN METCALF,  
of Battle Creek, Michigan.

As is well known to genealogists of New England, persistent efforts have been made without avail these many years to find the family record and birth place of "Sara," first wife of Michael Metcalf, 1636-7, and mother of all his children. During the past few years the writer has been on a "still hunt" for the hiding place of the obstinate *Sara*, resulting in success, as the following extracts from old Parish Register books will show. The reason why record searchers have hitherto failed appears from the mis-reading of Michael's old letters and records, wherein *Heigham*, a suburb of Norwich, has been confounded with Raynham or Waynham. The records as now found on the Parish Record of Heigham, St. Bartholomew, are as follows:—

1894.]

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

95

Michaell Medcalfe, & Sara Ellwyn married y<sup>t</sup> 13 day of October 1616.

1593. Sara Ellwin, ye Daughter of Thomas Ellwin and Elizabeth, his wife, was Baptized y<sup>t</sup> xvii day of June.

Other records still extant in Norfolk County, of the Ellwyns and Ellwins, as well as Michael's, "license to go beyond the sea to inhabitt," seem to prove that the figure 3 of transcript of birth, or *baptism* rather, should be 8; and that Sara was baptized 17 June 1598, instead of 1593. The Ellwyns are still living in that vicinity, and are earlier close connections of the line of Nappa Metcalfe's, in at least two family intermarriages. Calling one William Ellwyn, of Heigham, first, we find as follows:—

WILLIAM ELLWYN<sup>1</sup>; wife not given; had son Thomas.

THOMAS<sup>2</sup>, b. 1566; m. Elizabeth [ ]; d. 1648.

Children:—

MARTHA<sup>3</sup>, b. June, 1593; m. Lawrence Marsh; d. 1667.

WILLIAM<sup>3</sup>, b. 1595; m. Elizabeth [ ] (b. 1600, d. 1666, aged 66); d. 1755, aged 60. Children:—

Augustine<sup>4</sup>, b. 1631; d. 1666, aged 35.

Alice<sup>4</sup>, b. [ ]; m. Edward Carver; d. 1679.

Mary<sup>4</sup>, b. [ ]; m. Daniel Reeve; d. 1668.

William<sup>4</sup>, b. 1640; m. Elizabeth [ ]; d. 1686.

Children:—Thomas<sup>5</sup>, b. 1674, d. 1676; Elizabeth, b. 1678, d. 1679.

SARA<sup>5</sup>, b. 17 June, 1598; m. Oct. 13, 1616, MICHAEL METCALFE.

From The Dedham Historical Register, Vol. 5, No. 2, April, 1894, pages 94-95.



FREEDOM OF THE CITY OF NORWICH, ENGLAND,—  
GRANTED TO MICHAEL METCALF.

[LATIN TRANSLATION.]

Universis et singulis ad quorum noticiam litterae presentes pervenerint Maior vicecomes Cives et Communitas Civitatis Norwici Salutem in domino sempiternam Sciatis quod Michael Medcalfe Dornix weaver Lator presencium noster Concivis ob et de libertate Civitatis predictae in eademque comorans atque ratione libertatum nostrarum adversis nuper Regibus Anglie nobis concessarum et confirmatarum idem Michael liber est et esse debet ab omni genere Theolonii pontagii passagii muragii pannagii bastagii pnagii Caiagii Rivagii vinagii fossagii Cariagii at ab omnibus aliis consuetudinibus per omnes portus maris per totam Angliam et per omnem domini Regis potestatem Quapropter vos omnes et singulos omni affectione qua possumus rogamus et tenore presencium requirimus quatenus cum predictus Michael Medcalfe sen servientes simul cum bonis aut merchandisiis penes vos accaserint sen accesserit ipsum aut ipsos absque aliqua Custuma supradicta libere et quiete transire permittatis juxta tenorem libertatumstrarum In cujus rei testimonio has litteras concivi nostro prenominate fieri fecimus patentes sub Sigillo Camerarii dicte Civitatis octavo die Jannarii Anno Regni domini Jacobi Regis Anglie etc. Sextodecimo. 1618.

Per me JOHANNEM BASSHAM, *Camberlanum*.

[Endorsed.]

The Coppy of my fredome of the Citty of Norwich in ye County of Norfolk in ould England Made freman in ye month September: 1618

MICHAEL METCALFE *Senor*.

The Coppy of my fredom 1618

1892.]

ISAAC COLBURN.

143

[ENGLISH TRANSLATION.]

To each and all to whose notice these presents may come, lasting health in the Lord from the Vicount Major, Citizens, and community of the City of Norwich :

Know ye that Michael Metcalfe, Dornix weaver, bearer of these presents, our fellow citizen, in and because of the freedom of the city aforesaid, and dwelling in the same, and by reason of our liberties lately granted and conformed to us by various Kings of England, the same Michael is and ought to be free from every kind of Theolonium, pontagium, passagium, muragium, pannagium, bastagium, pnagium, Caiagium, Rivagium, vinagium, fossagium, Cariagium, and from all other usages throughout all the seaports and all England and the whole jurisdiction of our sovereign the King. Wherefore we ask you each and all with our utmost desire for his good, and by the tenor of these presents, require that since the aforesaid Michael Metcalfe or his servants, with goods and merchandisc have come or has come among you, you will permit him or them to go and come freely and peaceably according to the course of our liberties In proof of this thing we have caused this open letter to be written for our above named fellow citizen under the seal of the government of the city named, this eighth day of January and sixteenth year of the reign of our sovereign James, King of England, etc. 1618.

By me JOHN BASSHAM, *Chamberlain*.

THE

## NEW ENGLAND

## Historical and Genealogical Register,

5 B

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY, UNDER THE PATRONAGE OF THE

New England Historic-Genealogical Society,

FOR THE YEAR 1862.

VOLUME XVI.



ALBANY:

J. MUNSELL, 78 STATE STREET.

1862.

Elizabeth Williams, wid. of George Williams and dau. of Nicholas Meader. He had moved to Easton, N. Y., before the revolution, where he d. at his farm, Nov. 17, 1819, a. 82. His dau. Abigail m. Thomas Folger, from England, as before mentioned. (149) *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> b. 27 2 mo., 1739; d. young, a. about 3 weeks. Daniel Folger, Sen., was lost in the Vineyard sound, 30 10, 1744. Abigail his wid., m. 12 mo., 1748, Daniel Pinkham, son of Richard. She d. Nov. 21, 1787, aged 84 years; her 2d husband had d. 2 6 mo., 1770.

45. ZACCHEUS<sup>3</sup> FOLGER, m. Nov. 20, 1728, Abigail Coffin, dau. of John, Esq. Ch.: (150) *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> b. June 3, 1730; d. single, Feb., 1805. (151) *James*,<sup>4</sup> b. June 13, 1731; m. Mary Aldrich. She d. Feb. 15, 1802. (152) *John*,<sup>4</sup> b. July 30, 1733; m. Love Gabriel, dau. of Manuel. She d. 3 of 9 mo., 1768. He m. Lydia Gardner, dau. of Robert. She d. Jan. 1, 1811, a. 78; no ch. John,<sup>4</sup> d. July 13, 1815; he was a cooper by trade; he had 5 ch. by his 1st wife, 3 of whom married. (153) *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> m. 1759, Mary Weyer, dau. of Timothy. He d. in W. Indies in Feb., 1777. They had 8 ch.; 7 of whom married. His wid. m. Tristram Folger, son of Jethro. She d. March 8, 1801. (154) *Anna*,<sup>4</sup> b. 4 of 7 mo., 1744; m. Christopher Swain, son of Richard. She d. Feb. 15, 1819, a. 74 yrs. 7 mos. (155) *Abigail*,<sup>4</sup> m. Elijah Coffin, son of Hezekiah. (156) *Andrew*,<sup>4</sup> d. single. (157) *Reuben*,<sup>4</sup> (158) *Zaccheus*,<sup>4</sup> Zaccheus<sup>3</sup> Folger, d. July 20, 1779. Abigail his wife, d. Aug., 1770. He was a captain of a whaling vessel.

[Mr. Folger's manuscript carries this family several generations further—in some lines to the seventh generation. Our limits will not allow us to publish it in full; but the manuscript will be placed in the library of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, where it can be consulted by those interested.]

### FLY LEAF RECORD.

[The following was copied from the fly leaf of the Sermon Book of Jonas Douw of Wolvehook, on the east bank of the Hudson, near Albany. The property is still in the possession of his posterity, and is now occupied by Volkert P. Douw, Esq.]

1683, Sept. 21, m. Magdalen Pieterz; 1684, Oct. 19, Maerytye b.; 1686, Nov. 14, Volkert b.; d. Ap. 17 1711; 1689, June 22, Dooraltje b.; 1692, March 24, Pietrus b. A Dutch folio Bible in possession of Dr. Thomas Hun of Albany, has this entry: "1736, Oct. 7, Jonas Douw in den Heere ontslaepen op een Donderdag ontrent te 3 ure namiddag, en's Maendags begraven, na dat hy vier weken siek geweest is." That is, he fell asleep in the Lord on Thursday, about 3 o'clock, after a sickness of four weeks, and was buried on Monday. (See p. 268.)

### INFORMATION WANTED.

\* Who were the parents of Abigail Plasted (or Plaisted), who was married in Boston, March 10th, 1725, to Andrew Nichols. Any information to be sent to C. M. Thurston, New Rochelle, N. Y.

### NICHAEEL METCALFE.

[Communicated by Hon. JOHN GEORGE METCALFE of Mendon, Mass.]

Michael Metcalfe was, undoubtedly, the progenitor of the Metcalfe families, in New England. He was born in Tatterford, county of Norfolk, England, 1586, but, for some years, before his voluntary expatriation, he resided in the city of Norwich, Eng. Being a zealous non-conformist, and to escape the persecutions of the notorious Matthew Wren, then Bishop of Norwich, he made up his mind to emigrate to America. In his first attempt he did not take his family; and, after being "tossed up and down" from the 17th of September, 1636, till the Christmas following, came to Plymouth in old England. In this attempt he sailed from London. In the second trial he took ship at Yarmouth, in the county of Norfolk, April 15, 1637, and arrived at Boston, in New-England, three days before mid-summer, of the same year, with my wife nine children and a servant."

By the date of the following letter it will be seen that it was written before he made his first attempt to come to America. At the time of his writing he speaks of himself as an *exile* from his wife and children, "with whom he would gladly have continued, *if with liberty*." It seems a reasonable presumption from this, that he was staying at Plymouth, to escape the persecution of the Bishop of Norwich; and that he could no longer occupy his own house with safety. I am indebted to Dr. Luther Metcalf Harris, of Jamaica Plain, West Roxbury, for the ancient manuscript from which the letter is transcribed.

### THE LETTER.

"To all the true professors of Christs gospel within the city of Norwich:

"The peace of God in Jesus Christ; the help, comfort and assistance of his eternal spirit be with you, my dear and loving wife, and all the rest of our loving friends, professors of Christ's Gospel and pure religion, most purely taught and powerfully preached amongst you not long since, who now mourn for the miseries of God's people, and loss of your faithful ministers, to your everlasting consolation in him.—Amen.

"Our adversary the devil as a mighty Nimrod and cunning hunter doth continually compass the earth to and fro like a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour, ruling in the hearts of children of disobedience, stirring them up against the people of God: you know there ever hath been enmity between the seed of the woman and the seed of the serpent; for as he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the spirit (Gal. 4, 29,) even so it is now; for are there not beasts among you, after the manner of men, such as Paul fought with at Ephesus? yes, surely, I would they were cut off which trouble you. Persecutors they are of you, my friends, in the apostles phrase alluding to Gen. 21, 9 there you shall find Ishmael mocking and tempting of Isaac for his religion called perse

cution by the apostle Paul, and are there not such a scoffing generation of Ishmaelites among you, who hate you because you love the thing that is good and will not run with them into all excess and riot with their tongues do shoot at them that are true of heart (as the prophet saith) he saith further, in the person of the church that they that sit in the gates spake against me, and I was a song of the drunkard, for the just man is laughed to scorn, Job 12, 4. The wicked watcheth the righteous and seeketh to slay him Ps. 37. I could wish this viperous generation did not so multiply in your city as they do; among them are some scoffing ishmaelites, prophane Esaus, flattering Doegs, subtle Ahitophels, children of this world wiser in their generation than the children of light; but in the end will prove to be Solomon's fools.

"When I was among them I tasted of their burning charity when some of them conspired against my life, as you know, accusing me with treason most unjustly; some of my adversaries were at difference, one with another, yet like Pilate and Herod, they became friends and joined malice and madness against me, but God, who hated their conspiracy, so mollified the heart of one of the witnesses that, with tears, she confessed I never spake any such words. Their malice being manifest to the world, their project was laid in the dust; yet herewith not satisfied, they sent out their blood hounds abroad to smell out some new matter against me; but my God, bounded their madness and by death took away one of my chiefest enemies: Who ever perished being innocent? or when were the righteous cut off? I have seen them that plough iniquity and sow wickedness, reap the same (Job 4, 7). My cause may well allude to the prophet David's complaint against his enemies; (saith he) my enemies spake against me and they that lay wait for my life take counsel together, but the Lord hath delivered me out of the wicked, out of the unrighteous and evil man: To God I have referred my cause to whom I leave it and them.

"You are not ignorant (I suppose) of the great trouble I sustained, in the Arch-Deacon's and Bishop's court at the hands of my enemies concerning the matter of *Bowing* as well as for other matters of like consequence. I alledged against them the scripture, the canons and the book of common prayers; but the chancellor replied he cared for none of them I further alledged against them the authority of Arch-Bishops and Bishops, as also their great patrons of ceremonies the learned Hooker (so called by them) together with a book called the Regiment of the church allowed by authority, which hath these words; that the decrees and constitutions of the Church of England must not be made a part of God's worship, neither holden necessary to our salvation, as some have vainly in some of your hearings; for our Saviour saith, "in vain do they worship me who teach for doctrines the precepts of man." The apostle condemneth all voluntary worship devised by man, Hooker after saith, "our church doth not enforce bowing at the name of Jesus upon any man against his conscience." Notwithstanding these and more than these reasons alledged against them, their learned and invincible arguments to refute my assertions were these, "Blockhead—Old heretick,—the Devil made you—I will send you to the Devil," with such other trim

stuff, unfitting terms, to be used by a judge in a court of judicature: but of these no more, for these words were not spoken in a corner but in a Consistory.

"My loving friends be not discouraged too much at innovations now forced upon you, but never heretofore urged upon any man's conscience, by any Bishop of the see of Norwich since the Reformation; but as the proverb says, "new Lords—new laws." Such doings make sad the hearts of God's people: let your faith and patience have their perfect work in these perilous times, now come upon you, by the sufferance of God. Be you chearly, God is on your side and his truth is your cause, and against you be none but the enemies of the cross of Christ. The serpent and his seed the Ishmaelites and prophane Isaacs of this wicked world children of the malignant church, such as the Lord hath always abhorred and in all ages, resisted and overthrown; God (from whom nothing is hid) knoweth what they are; he hath found out your enemies to be profane, malicious, proud disdainful filthy shameless persecutors of and despiteful against his people and truth: The spirit of God doth describe them in the Scripture by the names of serpents, lions, bulls, bears, wolves, dogs, swine, beasts &c. teaching us to understand that their natural inclination is, as much as in them lyeth, to bring into trouble and bonds, all those that live godly in Christ: but the Lord with his right arm, will defend his little distressed flock against his and your enemies which do conspire against your precious faith and liberty. In the meantime, my friends, have patience while they rage, let them curse, ban, rage and become mad against you, casting the dirt of aspersion at your faces, and had hating you for your virtues but for your virtues. Gain like, and had they power with their will, surely they would cast fire and faggots at your faces; These Jehus, I do hope, march too furious to hold out long. They may haply prove but summer birds. The Lord hath bounded their madness that they shall not do more to you than he will suffer them to do.

"God is about to try his people in the furnace of affliction, and he that suffereth patiently, for his christian profession, is hereby known to be of Christ; even so are the persecutors and opposers of God's people known to be enemies of the cross of Christ. Besides, their injustice may be a means the sooner to provoke the Lord to take pity on you and to punish them that so despitely use you; for though God suffer them for a time, in their pride, yet shall they, not always escape his avenging hand. They are his rods and, when he hath worn them to the stumps, then will he cast them into the fire:—This shall be their final reward. Your duty is, in the meanwhile, patiently to abide the will of God, who worketh all things for the best for you. O Norwich! the beauty of my native county—what shall I say unto thee. Thou art little inferior to any of thy sister cities, within this Kingdom. Famous hast thou been for religion throughout this island, the Gospel of Christ Jesus hath been purely and powerfully taught to thy great honor, y<sup>e</sup> joy and rejoicing of thy religious inhabitants:—thy God hath adorned thee with such a succession of Godly and able preachers, within some of thy churches, that few congregations (I suppose) have had the like, who so faithfully have taught their people, both by life and doctrine, to your

everlasting fame; carefully preaching and defending the doctrine of the free justification by faith in Christ, with other truths of the true Protestant faith, against the defenders of the stinking tenets of Arminius, that enemy of God, so called by King James, i. e. y<sup>e</sup>. 1st. Alas my friends, what comfort is it now to you to hear what your city hath formerly been, for Christ's true religion taught in her? The question is what is she now? Surely much relapsed and fallen from her first love and purity of life and doctrine. Would to God thy spiritual fathers had not tasted the sour grapes whereby most of thy children's teeth are set on edge. For many strange things are now preached in thine ears, by your new teachers, which your old preachers would never have endured. But the religion of these *novelists* consisteth in formalities, they striving to use the *desk* above the *pulpit*, teaching the people less preaching may now serve were it not but to preach down schism and faction as at Winsor visitation. Another, he makes it arbitrary whether or not the Pope be antichrist, as Burgess, in my hearing, at the Cathedral, in Norwich. My friends beware of them that preach to you with the enticing words of man's wisdom, and do chalk out a nearer way to Heaven, than they shall find (I fear) that walk in it.

"Follow the apostles counsel and take heed how you hear; be not led away with the error of the wicked, beware of them which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves, for the apostle saith y<sup>e</sup> wolves will enter into the fold of Christ, not sparing the flock. My friends, imitate the wise Bereans, and search the scripture whether you become such proficient as to try the doctrines of your preachers, whether they be consonant to the scripture or not, beware you keep your judgments sound in the truth, rectifying your zeal and affections by the spirit of truth, making God the object of your faith and love:—If your judgments be lost then will follow that you will soon make shipwreck of faith and a good conscience. Remember therefore what you have received and heard and hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take away thy crown, Rev. 3. 3—11. And if you do persevere and keep the word of his patience, He hath promised he will also keep you from the hour of temptation which shall come upon all the world to try them that dwell upon the earth.

"My loving christians, in taking this my last farewell of you, I do earnestly exhort you in the bowels of the Lord Jesus and as you tender the eternal welfare of your poor souls, purchased by the blood of Christ that you carefully beware of Arminianism; do not nibble too long at the bait until you are caught with the hook; rather banish from your ears and hearts those stinking fogs and infectious vapours, into the Netherlands, from whence they were spawned, as a bastard brood of Popery; for these tenets were arraigned and condemned at the council of Dort, by a synod of learned Prelates. I do marvel how your novelists dare be so audacious, as to meddle with, and teach those dangerous and pernicious errors, prohibited by proclamation. Would to God this spirit which is seen frequently to walk among you, in the likeness of men, were conjured out of your nation *by authority*:

"My brethren I cannot but much bemoan your great loss of late:

I mean those godly and learned divines, your most loving, faithful and powerful preachers now forced from amongst you, to your no little sorrow thus to be deprived of them that so faithfully have taught you and so fatherly cared for you and so godly have governed you by the scriptures of truth:—They were given to you and sent of God as a great blessing to your city; by the power of whose ministry many have been converted and won to the truth of the Gospel, who have begotten them to a godly life and conversation. Surely for your sins the Lord hath deprived you of them as not worthy of so great a mercy as the enjoying them, since whose departure a famine of the word is come upon you, most of your lights being put out. Therefore, seeing what the Lord hath done unto thee O Norwich! prepare to meet thy God: O Norwich! by repentance and deep humiliation, lest the Lord come against thee to avenge the quarrel of his covenant which thou hast broken:—Humiliation is a sanctified means whereby the Lord will be intreated of you:—If you do humble yourselves by fasting and prayer in your several families, then it may be, the Lord will work for you:—Therefore cry mightily to God and turn, every one from his evil ways, who can tell if God will turn and repent and turn away from his fierce anger to you (John 3, 8) and send you such preachers again as may divide the word of God aright among you; you did not duly prize them when you enjoyed them, therefore the Lord hath deprived you of them as not worthy of them:—I may warn you of your danger as the Lord did Jerusalem by the Prophet, "Be thou instructed O Jerusalem lest my soul depart from thee;" so may I say to sinful Norwich, which hath polluted the Lord's sabbaths and profaned his holy things by superstitions and foolish ceremonies which the Lord commanded not, together with the corruption of doctrine and manners too much connived at among you, by siding with the times, and yielding too much through slavish fear, to the wasting of your graces and quenching that spiritual vigour, zeal and affection that formerly you had in shew before these times of trial came on to try you, for the Lord is about to purge his floor and to thrash his church with the flail of affliction:—You may easily see that wrath is gone out from the Lord, and judgment is begun at the house of God; and his hand is stretched out still, but who taketh it to heart,—custom hath taken away the sense of misery, and security is the sin of Churches in all places—the consideration whereof might cause you to fear and tremble by the example of Germany, Bohemia and the Palatinate and many other reformed churches over whom the wrath of God hath been to the uttermost, to the great depopulating and wasting of cities and countries:—When your neighbours houses are on fire, it is time to look to your own, let others examples teach you to beware,—A wise man foreseeeth the storm and shunneth it," saith Solomon Look about you,—quit yourselves like men, for the hour of temptation is at hand, which shall come upon the world to try them that dwell upon the earth; These are like to be trying times indeed, therefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. God is able to separate the wheat from the chaff, and to put a difference between them that fear him and those that fear him not; but he that is found to be faithful unto death Christ hath promised unto him a crown of

life. Be not secure, but fear for such times may soon come upon you as may shake your faith, if it be not founded on the rock Christ. Draw nigh unto God and he will draw nigh to you (James 4, 8) and he will comfort you after the time he hath afflicted you.—The Lord shorten these sorrowful and sinful days for his great name's sake, and give you of his saving grace, that, as you have a little strength so you may keep his word and not deny his name, Rev. 3, 8.

"Now farewell my beloved christians and dear friends, the Lord defend, keep and preserve you and me from the malice and power of the serpent and his seed; and send us a joyful meeting here or elsewhere as it shall please our Good God to appoint:—In the meanwhile I most earnestly desire you to pray for me, for I never had more need in my life, in regard of my excited condition from my wife and children, with whom I would gladly have continued, if with liberty—but all things came to pass with the good will of God. Doubtless you shall never want my poor prayers, if it shall please God to accept the prayers of so sinful a wretch as I am.

"The Lord impute not my sin unto me for Jesus Christ's sake, unto whose merciful defence I do most heartily commit you. The blessing of God be with you, my dear wife and children and all you my christian friends; and fill you all with his holy and blessed spirit, that you may always rejoice in the comforts of the same now and evermore, Amen.

"Your loving brother in exile persecuted for Christ's verity,

MICHAEL MEROALFE.

"Plymouth (Eng.) the 13th of January 1636."

#### NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC-GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY.

##### MONTHLY MEETINGS—1862.

*Boston, April 2.*—The regular monthly meeting was held at their rooms, 13 Bromfield street, this afternoon at 3 o'clock P. M.

In the absence of the president and recording secretary, Rev. Washington Gilbert was chosen chairman, and Rev. Abner Morse, secretary.

John H. Sheppard, Esq., the librarian, reported that since the previous meeting there had been donated to the society fifteen bound volumes, forty-six pamphlets, consisting of essays, reports and sermons, and one manuscript.

Rev. Caleb D. Bradlee, the corresponding secretary, reported that letters had been received from Rev. Edward Warren Clark, Auburn, Mass., and Edward M. Endicott of Boston, as resident members; from Rev. George Grout Hapgood of Delta, N. Y., as corresponding member. Accompanying Mr. Hapgood's letter was a paper on the Samaritan Alphabet.

W. B. Trask, Esq., the historiographer, read a memoir of Pynson Blake of Boston, a resident member of the society; also, of Rt. Rev. William Meade, D. D., Bishop of Virginia, a corresponding member, both of whom recently deceased.

A paper entitled the History of Roanoke Island, was read by Frederic Kidder, Esq., beginning in 1584 and ending with the battle fought there the present year. It gave the details of the experience of the three colonies sent there by Sir Walter Raleigh, and tracing it down to its explorations from Virginia in 1653, and its grant to a Boston merchant in 1676, where its title was retained till subsequent to the revolution. From this spot the English obtained tobacco, the potato and some other plants.

Rev. Abner Morse gave what he considered farther evidence of the emigration of the Northmen to the valley of the Mississippi, and of their adoption of Indian manners and customs.

Rev. F. W. Holland read an amusing paper on the derivation of surnames.

The thanks of the society were passed to the gentlemen who read the papers of the afternoon, and copies were requested for the archives.

*May 7.*—The regular monthly meeting was held this afternoon, President Winslow Lewis, M. D., in the chair.

The corresponding secretary reported that he had received letters from the following gentlemen since the previous meeting, accepting the membership to which they had been elected: As resident—Rev. Stillman Pratt of Middleboro', Mass.; as corresponding—Thomas Hughes, F. S. A., of London, England.

The librarian reported that there had been donated to the society, since the previous meeting, 29 bound volumes and 124 pamphlets.

Wm. B. Towne, Esq., the treasurer, announced that John Barstow, Esq., of Providence, R. I., had very liberally donated three hundred dollars to the society, in addition to his previous donation, for which a vote of thanks was passed, and, in accordance with the donor's request, trustees, viz: W. B. Towne, A. D. Hodges, and J. Tisdale Bradlee, Esqs., were appointed to take charge of the fund.

Rev. Samuel Sewall read a very interesting account of the old meeting-houses of New England, as illustrated by the second house built in Woburn, with a very full description of a Sunday in the olden time.

John H. Sheppard, Esq., read a carefully prepared paper on the history of the society, its objects and wants. Thanks were voted and a copy of the paper requested. It will be found entire in the present number of the *Register*.

Mr. Dearborn read a short but very clear account of a shot fromunker Hill, found in 1845 or 1846.

Col. Swett showed three photographs which he had recently received from Florence, Italy. One, a likeness of Franklin, copied from the statue by Powers, destined for our national capitol; another, of Powers himself; and the third, of Garibaldi, all of which were pronounced excellent.

*June 4.*—The regular monthly meeting was held this afternoon, President Winslow Lewis, M. D., in the chair.

The librarian reported that eight bound volumes and forty-eight pamphlets had been donated to the society since the previous meeting. The historiographer read brief memoirs of members recently de-

## METCALF FAMILY.

[Communicated by DR. LUTHER METCALF HARRIS, Jamaica Plain, Roxbury, Mass.]

Michael Metcalf, the emigrant ancestor of this family, was born in Tatterford, county of Norfolk, Eng., 1586. He followed the occupation of a Dornix\* weaver, in the city of Norwich, in the same county, where he was made freeman, June 21, 1618. His wife, Sarah, was born in the adjoining town of Waynham, (?) June 17, 1593, where they were married Oct. 13, 1616. Their seven eldest children were born in St. Benedict's, Norwich, and four, afterward, at St. Edmondsbury. "I was persecuted," he writes, "in the land of my father's sepulchres, for not bowing at the name of Jesus, and observing other ceremonies in religion, forced upon me, at the instance of Bishop Wren of Norwich and his chancellor Dr. Corbet, whose violent measures troubled me in the Bishop's Court, and returned me into the High Commissioners' Court. Suffering many times for the cause of religion, I was forced, for the sake of the liberty of my conscience, to flee from my wife and children, to go into New-England; taking ship for the voyage at London the 17<sup>th</sup> of Sept. 1636; being by tempests tossed up and down the seas till the Christmas following; then veering about to Plymouth in Old England; in which time I met with many sore afflictions.

Leaving the ship, I went down to Yarmouth, in Norfolk county, whence I shipped myself and family, to come to New England; sailed 15<sup>th</sup> April, 1637, and arrived three days before midsummer, with my wife, nine children, and a servant." The name of this servant, appears to have been Thomas Comberbach, aged 16. (Manuscript of Hon. James Savage.)

The above extracts, we take from a copy of his letter, written in Plymouth, Eng., Jan. 13, 1636, on his voyage hither; directed, "To all the true professors of Christ's Gospel within the city of Norwich." In the postscript, he remarks, "my enemies conspired against me to take away my life, and, sometimes, to avoid their hands, my wife did hide me in the roof of the house, covering me over with straw."

History informs us, that one of the charges, brought against Bishop Wren, by a Committee of Parliament, was, that during the term of 2 years and 4 months, while he held the See of Norwich, "3000 of his Majesty's subjects, many of whom used trades, spinning, weaving, knitting, making cloth, stuff, stockings, and other manufactures of wool; some of them setting a hundred poor people at work;" "transported themselves into Holland," and "other parts, beyond the seas," in consequence of his "superstition and tyranny." [See Appendix to Dr. Lamson's Hist. Discourses.]

Michael Metcalf was admitted a townsman at Dedham, July 14, 1637; joined the church in 1639; and was Selectman in 1641. His name stands first, on the Committee, chosen to "contrive the fabricke of a meeting house." His wife, Sarah, died Nov. 30, 1644; m. 2<sup>d</sup> widow Mary Pidge, of Roxbury, Aug 13, 1645.

In 1661, Robert Ware, exchanged land, near the brick kiln; bricks being manufactured here at an early period. "One of the principal clay pits, was on land of Michael Metcalf, on Dedham Island."

\* Or, "Dornick, a kind of Stuff used for Curtains, Carpets and Hangings, so called from *Dornick*, or *Tournay*, a City in Flanders, where it was first made."—[Phillips' Dic. London, 1706.]

Michael Metcalf, died, Dec. 27, 1664. Will proved, and an Inventory of his Estate taken, Feb. 1, 1664-5. £364. 18. 05.

Inventory of the Estate of Michael Metcalfe, Junr, made, 31, 1. 1654. Power of Administration, granted, 26 April 1654, to Mary, his widow, "in behalf of her selfe and five children."

The following is an Abstract of the Will of Michael<sup>1</sup> Metcalfe. 15. 9. 1664.

*Michael Metcalfe senior*, of Dedham, being aged, Doe make this my Last will. Whereas, there is a Couenant Between my selfe and *Mary* my Wife, made before our marriage, bearing Date the 13<sup>th</sup> of August 1645, wherein it may appear that she reserved to her selfe, and to her dispose, her Lands, and Estate, so that I received no Estate with her; yet, neuerthelesse, I giue unto her for the terme of her widowhood, in household stuffe, and other goods, as shce thinkes meete to Chuse, for her use, not exceeding the value of sixteene pounds, and being not such as I shall particularly otherwise Dispose of, in this my Last will; which household stuffe, so Chosen by her, shall Bee to furnishe the Roome, which my Executor shall prepare for her, at his house, to Receiue her into, after my Decease. All which household stuffe and goods, I giue to my Executor, to haue, after the Decease of my wife. Unto my wife, six pounds, to be paid to her, within one moneth after my Decease, in Current pay. Unto Sonne *John Metcalfe*, of Medfeild, one feather bed & Bolster, my second Book of Martyrs, *Mr Perkins second Book, Luther on the gala*; one siluer spoone, one pair of sheets, one Long Chest, in the upper Chamber, one Diaper Boardcloth. Unto my Executor & his Heires, all that my Land in Naponset plaine, and three Acres Laying in y<sup>e</sup> Low plaine, next *Peter Woodward*s. Also, halfe my Diuident in y<sup>e</sup> Cedar swampe, neer the Saw mill, & 3 Commons & y<sup>e</sup> odde. Unto my Grandchild, *Michael Metcalfe*, the Elder, all that my Land and Improvements within the Lott I Dwell in, my three acres in y<sup>e</sup> wigwaom plaine, my swompe next my house, provided he giue my Executor that Little parcell of his swampe west end of his house, otherwise my gifte to be noyd. Also I give him my Naticke Diuidend of twenty three acres, more or Lesse; four Cow Commons; halfe my Cedar swampe, at the Saw mill; my wood Land, at the West end of the Towne; all the particulars I haue belonging to husbandry, in one Kind or another; all the Remainder of my Household stuffe not Disposed of in this my Will. Also my first Book of Martyrs, *Mr Perkins first Booke*, one siluer spoone. To my Daughter *Wilson*, ffortye shillings. To my Daughter *Elizabeth Bancrafte*, ffine pounds. To my Daughter, *Martha Stow*, twenty shillings. To my Daughter, *Joane Waker*, forty shillings. To my Daughter *Rebecca Mackentosh*, ffine pounds. To my wife's Daughter, *Martha Bullerd*, twenty shillings. To my Daughter, *Sarah Onion*, three pounds. All which six Legacyes, Last named, shall bee paid at, in, or Before, the second March next after my Decease, in Current payment.

To my Daughter *Stowes* Eldest sonne, which she had by her first husband, *W<sup>m</sup> Brignall*, ffour pounds, to bee paid him, when he shall attayne to Lawful age. To my Grandchild, abovesaid, *Jno. Mackintosh & Robert Onyon*, all my wearing apparell, to bee equally diuided by my Execut<sup>r</sup>, in order as their names bee heer set Downe; my Grandchild to choose ffirst:—To my Grandchild, abovesaid, all the Lumber in my House. Moreover, if any of y<sup>e</sup> p sons that are Legatees in y<sup>e</sup> present will, shall by themselves, or by any others, make, or Cause to be made, any Disturbance, or Contortion, in word or Deed, in Reference to

gala =  
Galatians

any thing given, in this my will; then, all that Legacye. to that p son. shall be utterly uoyde. *Thomas Metcalfe*, of Dedham, my sonne, to be my executor, to whom I giue all the Rest of my Lands and Goods, not formerly Disposed of.

MICHAEL METCALFE.

Before the witnessing hereof, I giue to my Grandchild abovesaid, my single acre of Meddow, also my Largest gray Horsmans Coate, also two oxen, one Cow, to bee Deliucred to him at Lawfull age. All the Books, aforesaid, giuen to my sonne *John*, after his Death, I giue them to his sonne *Michael*, my Grand childe.

Signed and sealed in the presence of us,

*Peter Woodward,*  
His Marke.  
*Jonathan Fairbanke.*

*Edward Rawson*, Recorder.

Children of MICHAEL,<sup>1</sup> and SARAH<sup>1</sup> Metcalf, all born in England, were,

- (2.) I. MICHAEL,<sup>2</sup> b. Nov. 13, 1617, died young, in England.
- (3.) II. MARY,<sup>2</sup> b. Feb. 14, 1618, m. Henry Wilson, Nov. 24<sup>th</sup>, 1642.
- (4.) III. MICHAEL,<sup>2</sup> (13.) b. Aug. 29, 1620, m. Mary, dau. of John Fairbanks, sen<sup>r</sup>. April 2<sup>d</sup>, 1644, d. in Dedham, Dec. 24, 1654.
- (5.) IV. JOHN,<sup>2</sup> (18.) b. Sep. 5, 1622, m. Mary, dau. of Francis Chickering, March 22, 1647, d. Nov. 27, 1675.
- (6.) V. SARAH,<sup>2</sup> b. Sep. 10, 1624, m. Robert Onion, of Dedham.
- (7.) VI. ELIZABETH,<sup>2</sup> b. Oct. 4, 1626, m. Thomas Bancroft, of Reading, Sep. 15, 1648.
- (8.) VII. MARTHA,<sup>2</sup> b. March 27, 1628, m. 1<sup>st</sup>. Wm. Brignall, 2<sup>d</sup>. Christopher Smith, Aug. 2, 1654, 3<sup>d</sup>. Stow.
- (9.) VIII. THOMAS,<sup>2</sup> (22.) b. Dec. 27, 1629, m. 1<sup>st</sup> Sarah Paige, Sep. 12, 1655 or 6, 2<sup>d</sup> Anne Paine, Dec. 2, 1679. He was Deac. \* at Dedham; d. Nov. 16, 1702.
- (10.) IX. ANN,<sup>2</sup> b. March, 1, 1631, died young, in England.
- (11.) X. JANE,<sup>2</sup> b. March 24, 1632, m. Samuel Walker, of Rehoboth.
- (12.) XI. REBEKA,<sup>2</sup> b. April 5, 1635, m. John Mackintosh, of Dedham, April 5, 1659.

MICHAEL,<sup>2</sup> (4.) and MARY,<sup>2</sup> had,

- (13.) I. MICHAEL,<sup>3</sup> (28.) b. Jan. 21, 1645, m. Elizabeth, dau. of John Kingsbury, Sep. 17, 1672, d. Sep. 1<sup>st</sup> or 2<sup>d</sup>, 1693. She d. Oct. 24, 1732.
- (14.) II. MARY,<sup>3</sup> b. Aug. 15, 1646, m. John Ware; Dec. 10, 1668 had 9 sons and 2 daughters.
- (15.) III. SARAH,<sup>3</sup> b. Dec. 7, 1648, m. Robert Ware of Wrentham, June 4, 1677.
- (16.) IV. JONATHAN,<sup>3</sup> (35.) b. Sep. 21, 1650, m. Hannah, dau. of John Kenric, April 10, 1674, d. May 27, 1727. She d. Dec. 23, 1731.
- (17.) V. ELEAZER,<sup>3</sup> (45.) b. March 20, 1653; was Deac. at Wrentham, m. April 9, 1684.
- JOHN,<sup>3</sup> (5.) and MARY,<sup>3</sup> had,
- (18.) I. JOHN,<sup>4</sup> b. March 21, 1648. (19.) II. MICHAEL,<sup>4</sup> b. Aug. 20, 1650.
- (20.) III. MARY,<sup>4</sup> b. Oct. 2, 1652. (21.) IV. JOSEPH,<sup>4</sup> b. in 1658, at Medfield. John,<sup>2</sup> removed to Medfield, where he had other children born.

THOMAS,<sup>3</sup> (9.) and SARAH had,

- (22.) I. SARAH,<sup>4</sup> b. March 3, 1658, m. Samuel Whiting, Nov. 23, 1676. She d. 1702.

*Thomas Metcalfe*

*m. Elizabeth Bowers*

# THE SCHOOLS AND TEACHERS OF DEDHAM.

BY CARLOS SLAFTER.

THE founders of Dedham evinced in many ways their capacity for wise forethought. They evidently regarded themselves as the builders of a town, for whose future character they would be held responsible. While they made many good regulations for securing private and individual rights, they never forgot to plan for the benefit of coming generations. Accordingly, as soon as they had established homes of a very primitive style, with few comforts and no luxuries, they turned their thoughts to the subject of education; and there is no doubt that the presence in the little settlement of several men who had been trained in the universities of the mother country had a most favorable influence in shaping the measures which they adopted.

On the second day of January, 1642-3, fifty-one persons were present at a general meeting of the Town, in which the allotment of land was considered; and in the record of its proceedings is the following statement:

It was with an unanimous consent concluded that some portion of land in this extended division should be set apart for publique use: viz for the Towne, the Church and a fre Schoole; viz. 40 acres at the leaste or 60 acres at the most.

This "unanimous consent" indicates a truly commendable liberality and public spirit, and that there were in the town wise counsellors to control its plans for public improvements. It also leads us to expect further steps in the same direction;

and we are not surprised at the memorable action of a town meeting two years later. This is so fitly described in the Records that we give it here without abridgement, and also include the names of those who were present and participated in the good work.

1644. At a meeting the first day of the Eleventh Month, Assembled those whose names are under written with other the Inhabitants of this Town: Mr Jn<sup>n</sup> Allen past<sup>r</sup> John Hunting Eld<sup>r</sup>, Hen. Chickering, Tho. Wight, Jn<sup>n</sup>. Thurston], Anthony Fisher, Jos. Fisher, Dan Fisher, Jno Lusson, Mr. Ralph Wheelocke, Jno Gaye, William Bullard, Jno Bullard, Robt. Crossman, Hen Wilson, Jno Newton], Edw. Colver, Hen. Smith, Nath Colborne, Nath. Aldus, Hen Phillips, Sam<sup>l</sup> Morse, Dan Morse Jno. Morse, Jos. Kingsbury, Jno. Dwife, Lamb. Gfenery], Edw Kemp. Edw. Richards, Tho. Leader, Geo. Bearstowe, Jonath. Fairbanks, Mich. Powell, Mich Metcalfe jun<sup>r</sup>, Jno Metcalfe, Jno Frarey, Eli. Lusher, R[ob]t Hinsdell, Pet. Woodward, Jno Guyle, Rich. Evered, Robt. Gowinge, &c.

The said Inhabitants, taking into Consideration the great necessitie of providing some means for the Education of the youth in o<sup>r</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Towne, did with an unanimous consent declare by voate their willingness to promote that worke, promising to put too their hands, to provide maintenance for a Free Schoole in our said Towne. And farther did resolve and consent, testifying it by voate, to rayse the summe of Twenty pounds p annu. towards the maintaining of a Schoole Mr to keep a free schoole in our s<sup>d</sup> Town.

And also did resolve and consent to trust the s<sup>d</sup> 20 £ p annu & certain lands in o<sup>r</sup> Towne, formerly set apart for publique use, into the hand of Feoffees to be presently chosen by themselves, to employ the s<sup>d</sup> 20£, and the land afores<sup>d</sup>, to be improved for the use of the said Schoole: that as the profits shall arise from the said land, every man may be proportionably abated of his some of the s<sup>d</sup> 20£ aforesaid, freely to be given to the use aforesaid. And y<sup>e</sup> said Feoffees shall have power to make a Rate for the necessary charge of improving the s<sup>d</sup> land: they giving account thereof to the Towne, or to those whom they should depute. John Hunting, Eld<sup>r</sup>, Eliazer Lusher, Francis Chickering, John Dwight & Michael Powell, are chosen Feoffees and entrusted in the behalfe of the school as afore said.

The school thus established, to be managed by Feoffees, seems to have been designed to continue seven years, as will appear in the following record relating to the training ground:

<sup>1</sup> Feoffees is the old word for trustees.

1644. 4<sup>d</sup> 12<sup>mo</sup>. Granted to the Feoffees for the free schoole in Dedham for the use of the s<sup>d</sup> schoole a parcel of the 'Training ground' so much as shall be set out to them by the Towne, which said p<sup>ce</sup>l is granted from this present day unto the last day of the eight month which shall be in the year 1650. Hen. Chickering, Eli. Lusher & Hen. Phillips deputed to set out the s<sup>d</sup> parcell of Land above said.

The records of the Feoffees have not been preserved, so that we are not able to give the names of the teachers under their administration. There is a tradition that Ralph Wheelock, the ancestor of the first and second presidents of Dartmouth College, taught during that time; this is rendered the more probable from the fact that after removing to Medfield he was a teacher there for several years. John Brock, son of Henry Brock of Dedham, a graduate of Harvard College in 1646, is supposed to have taught in Dedham for a year or two after his graduation.

But there is no doubt that the school went into operation and received the regular support of the town, and soon required a building for its accommodation. The following record shows the action of the town:

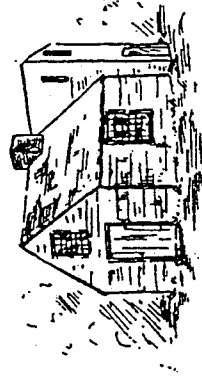
Jan. 1648-9 At a General meeting of the Town. . . A schoole house & a Watch house is resolved to be built this next yeare the care whereof is left to the select men.

Fortunately we have the specifications for this first school-house and the watch-house combined with it. In the records of the selectmen the neat handwriting of Capt. Lusher has preserved for us the following account of this early temple of Learning:

11mo 15. 1648. Assemb: Hen Chickering, Joh Kingsbury, Joh. Dwight, Tho. Wight, Fra Chickering, Joshu. Fisher, & Elea: Lusher A school house to be built as followeth. together w<sup>th</sup> a watch house. the length 18 foote, being 14 foote beside the chimney, the wideness 15 foote, the studd 9 foote betwixt joynts, one floore of joyce: 2 convenient windowes in the lower roome & one in the chamber, the plancher layed, the floor plankd, the stayers made, the sides boarded, feathered & rabbited, the doors made & hanged. the watch house to be a leanto set at the back of the chimney sixe foote wide, the length thereof 2 foote & one half mor than the house

<sup>1</sup> The Common near the Dexter School is a part of the old Training Ground.

is wide, so placed that the end thereof may extend past the corner of the house, so that the watch may have an aspect 4 severall wayes. & open windowes therein suitable to a watch house: & covered w<sup>th</sup> board up to those windowes & upon the rooffe, & a mandle tree hewen & fitted for the Chimney."



*School House & Watch House 1648,*

It is supposed that this building stood very near, if not on, the spot where the Unitarian Vestrynowstands; and we have only to imagine the busy hum of school work filling the east room by day, and the faithful watching of the sentinel from the windows of the west-end leanto during the long and lonely nights, to understand how child and man in those old days performed their several parts in laying the foundation of a free school and a free state.

The preceding account covers the first seven years of the school; and for continuing the history we find but meagre assistance in the town records. Still there is enough to show that the spirit of the people had not changed, and that their purpose was still to be carried out. Thus the record runs:

At a general town meeting 1651. . . It is resolved that a school for the education of youth in our town shall be continued and maintayned the whole term of seven yeares next, and that the settled mayntenance or wages of the Schoole Mr shall be 20£ p ann at y<sup>e</sup> leaste: A Towne Stocke shall be raysted to the summe of 20£ at y<sup>e</sup> leaste.

This shows that the first seven years had been so satisfactory that no change was desired in the management. No new election of feoffees was recorded; and we may presume that the same men continued to hold the office. But the next year a change was made in the care of the school whereby it passed into the hands of the selectmen. The following record of a general meeting indicates this:

3<sup>d</sup> of 11mo 1652. The question concerning the Schoole being kept only in winter being proposed for Resolution, the answer is: That the selectmen that shall be this daye chosen shall attend to procure a fitt schoole M<sup>r</sup> at the beginning of the summer; and if it p<sup>ro</sup>ve difficult, or not to be attayned, they may p<sup>ro</sup>pose the case to the Towne for further resolution.

The selectmen now being authorized to find a schoolmaster, seem to have acted promptly, and from the records which their clerk made we are able to give the name of the first teacher which they employed.

18 of ye 1 mo. Assemb. Joh. Kingsbery, Fra. Chickering, Lieft. Fisher, Joh. Dwight, Sergt Fisher & Elea. Lusher, Pet. Woodward Agreed w<sup>th</sup> Jacob Farrow to keep the Schoole to begin 28 of 1 mo 1653 to have 20£ pr an. to be payed in town paye being merchantible at the end of each halfe yeare the one halfe of the saide sune. he undertakes to teach to read English and the Accidence & to write & the knowledg & art of Arithmetick & the rules & practice therof: this to be p<sup>o</sup>posed to the towne.

The record is completed the same day as follows:

The above written agreem<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup> a schoole M<sup>r</sup> was this day p<sup>o</sup>posed to the towne after Lecture & consented unto

*Jacob Farrow*

seems to have entered upon his duties according to the contract. Six months later this contract is modified

as shown by the record, as follows:

Upon the Request and motion of Jacob Farrow its consented unto that himselfe or his Brother shall attend the keeping the Schoole according to the Coven<sup>t</sup> formerly made w<sup>th</sup> the said Jacob & the Coven<sup>t</sup> to remaine in force as it is.

How long these brothers, John and Jacob Farrer, had charge of the school it is not possible to determine. They were emigrants from Lancashire, Eng., John being the older, and both went to Lancaster in 1653 or 4. Two of Jacob's sons were killed by the Indians about 1675. He died in Woburn August 14, 1677, whither he had fled, and where John had lived since 1656. The latter died the 11th of July, 1690, "very aged." Jacob Farrer was a surveyor and was much occupied in laying out the allotments of land in the town of Lancaster. The descendants of John and Jacob Farrer are numerous, and several of the name have been eminent as scholars.

The next schoolmaster was Lieut. who appears to have consented to keep the school a short time when it was difficult to obtain a teacher. His appointment is thus recorded:

*Joshua Fisher*

1890.]

OF DEDHAM.

91

11 of ye 10 mo '54. Agreed with Lieut. Fisher to keepe schoole in our Towne for the same allowance that the former schoole Mr had proportionable to the time he shall attend the same, which at present is but for this winter time; who afterwards shall be discharged therof at any time after he have given one weeks notice.

The Lieutenant did not on account of his school duties cease to be a selectman or to receive pay for "dyeting" the selectmen. A curious entry in the records about the close of his term, reads thus:

Lieut Fisher is requested and undertakes to repayer the broken panes of glasse in the meeting house so farre as he may finde glass spare for that use.

Was his school too near the meeting house?

The following record was made:

3 of 10 mo. 1655. The Rate made for the payment of Lieft, Fisher for the time he kept the school being 4 months, and one week. and for wood he expended upon that occasion the sum being 7£ 13<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>

It seems to have been the custom to make a rate for the teacher's pay once in six months. In the last instance sixty-six persons were taxed to pay the Schoolmaster.

The scarcity of teachers at this time became troublesome.

28 of ye 1 mo 1656 Lieft Fisher and Ensign Chickering are deputed to treat with Willy Woodward<sup>1</sup> about the keeping schoole & and to receive & return to the select men his direct answer.

There is no record of his "direct answer" and probably there was a long vacation in 1656. But in December of that year the Selectmen bethought themselves of their venerable neighbor

*Migael Metcalf*

as is shown by the following passage in their records:

to be proposed at the generall meetinge that a School Mr being not yet attayned, nor like conveniently to be speedily Supplied & the late select men conceaveing that Brother Metcalf might be usefull that waye, & being treated withall seemes not wholly averse, it is desired the towne would consider it at present and declare them selves.

<sup>1</sup> William Woodward, son of Peter Woodward of Dedham, was for a time a member of Harvard College, and "was probably one of the seventeen who left college about 1655 without a degree." John Hull in his diary calls him "a young and powerful preacher."

See Sibley's Harvard Graduates, vol. 1, p. 559.

On the "5th of the 11 mo 1656" the Town did "declare themselves" as follows:

The Towne did by vonto give a call to Bro. Metcalfe to keep schoole in our Towne & leave it to the Select men to agree with him therein.

The former schoolmaster, Joshua Fisher, now becomes Town Clerk, and in his handwriting we find the contract made with Mr. Metcalf.

9 of 11 mo 1656. Agreed with Michael Metcalfe for to keep the schoole for the year insuinge, the said Michael doe undertake to teach the children that shall be sent to him to reade English and to write: all which he do undertake faithfully to do: in consideration whereof we doe engage he shall receive from the town the summe of twenty pounds two thert partes in wheate att the price of the towne or Countrie Rate and the other parte of the paye in other corne at price above mentioned, and the schoole to be kept at the school house except the weather be extreme to hinder, and then he is to atend it at his owne dwellinge house: and the towne is to take care to have the harth layde in the schoole house forth with, and to have the windows made fitt: & wood for the fire to be layd in att the schoole house: we ingage to call upon the parents of the children that they carefully provide it in due time.

And it is agreed that the thert part above expressed to be payed in other corne shall not bee above one thert part in Indian corne: and in the heat of the weather if the said Michael desire to use the metinge house he may so doe provided the house be left cleane against any publiq use of the house, and also that the windows be made good if any be broken, and any other damage made good that is done by the use of the metinge house in that kind: and the school to begin the 10 day of this present mo: and the pay is to be quarterly as is above expressed, that is 5s a quarter.

It is hardly to be supposed that Mr. Metcalf taught only reading and writing, but rather that he agreed to teach these at least to all the pupils. There is now in existence the identical arithmetic which he used as a teacher of the school. This book, an enlarged edition of Robert Record's arithmetic, was published in 1630, and is now in the archives of the Dedham Historical Society. It is said to have been born in 1586, consequently he was seventy years old when he became a schoolmaster. He was evidently much respected for intelligence, which caused his townsmen to turn to him for assistance in the business of education.

That any dissatisfaction should appear to annoy Mr. Metcalf seems very strange; but here is proof that some were ready to find fault. Clerk Fisher made this record:

10<sup>th</sup> of the 12 mo 1656. Upon the complaint of some of the Inhabitance that the school Master refuse to teach such childring as are above fourteen yeares of age the men hereunder named are deputed to goe and treat with the school master about the covenant wherein it is expressed he should teach all that are sent to him to wright and read.\*

The trouble did not become serious, for in a few days, at a general meeting,

The Town doe give Micell Metcalfe a call to keep school the year insuinge and leave it to the next select men to agree with him for 20 £ a yeare.

Near the end of his second year, on the fourth of the twelfth month, he was requested to keep another year, when his reply was "that at present he was not ripe to give an answer," so it was agreed that he should continue a month on the same terms. At the as before, and then they might come to an agreement. At the end of the month they made a similar contract with Mr. Metcalf for a year, "or so long therein as God shall enable him." It was specified "that if any inhabitant shall take any child or children to that end to send them to schoole" the schoolmaster might refuse to teach them until they gave him satisfaction. It was also provided

that he shall be required no more highe waye work, but only one daye work of one man & a teame, and one day more of a man. And no advantage shall be taken to discount for not attending the Schoole except it be discontinued a full weeke together.

But it is evident that this year was not completed according to the contract. On the 6th of the 10th month "the want of a school Mr" was a subject of debate in the board of Selectmen.

\*No early schoolmaster was required to teach spelling, as the subject was not considered important. In the arithmetic used by Master Metcalf the same word is sometimes spelled in three different ways in the same paragraph.

(To be continued.)

# THE DEDHAM HISTORICAL REGISTER.

VOL. I. OCTOBER, 1890. No. 4.

## THE SCHOOLS AND TEACHERS OF DEDHAM.

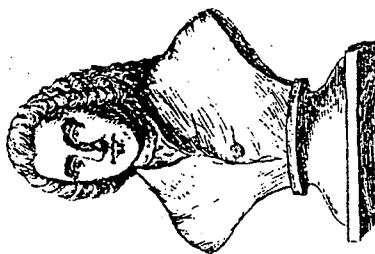
BY CARLOS SLAFER.

(Continued from page 93.)

THE following record of the Selectmen introduces the next Schoolmaster.

6. of 10 [mo] 59 . . . being met to finishe the Countrey Rate. the consideration of the want of a schoolmr being prolpoused it is vpon debating the case resolved to give a calle to Thomas Marret junr of Cambridg to keep the schoole for a quarter of a yeare vpon the allowance prolpotionable to the sallary formerly agreed vpon in that case that is 5<sup>s</sup> for that quarter & to be pd halfe in wheat & halfe in other corne.

Thomas Marret was the son of Deacon Thomas Marret of Cambridge, and was probably known in Dedham because his sister Abigail married Daniel Fisher of this town. In 1664 he was in New London, Connecticut, employed as a scrivener for that town. He was appointed custom-master for the port of New London in 1668, and on December 15<sup>th</sup> of the same year was chosen Marshal of New London County, which latter office he resigned in 1674. Miss Caulkins in her "History of New London" (page 314) states that he "was, for several years, the most conspicuous attorney in the place," and that his name disappears "from the rolls of living men, about 1685." He taught the Dedham school a year on the same conditions as Mr. Metcalf; and on the 11<sup>th</sup> of the 12<sup>mo</sup> 1660 [February, 1661]



The Pillar of LIBERTY.  
Erectd by the Sons of Liberty  
in this Vicerity.

Laus Deo. Reer, et Immortal.  
a uiroribusq. maxime Patrons  
PITT, qui Rempub. reformauit.  
Tauribus Ordi.

was covenanted with to keep school again "to be payd the one halfe in wheat at 4 shillings 10 pence per bushell and the other halfe in Endine corne at 3 shillings per bushell to be payd quarterly." But he evidently did not finish his second year; and the townne showed its confidence in the venerable master Metcalf by making with him another covenant on the 24th of the 5mo 1661. As a specimen of exact bargaining, characteristic of old times, we will venture to give it entire.

Agreed with Michall Metcalfe to keepe the schoole so longe time as god shall inable him for seaven shillings eight pence a weeke the schoole to be kept in the parlor of the dwelling house some time Frances Chickering deceased: to teach the male children that shall be sent to him by the inhabitanes the sayd Michall do ingage to teach them to reade and to wright English as they shall be capable: In consideration where of we the select men do ingage and promise to pay unto the sayd Michall his ex(e)cutors or assigns at the ende of the quarter for so longe a time as he keepe schoole: seaven shillings eight pence a weeke: viz. halfe in wheat at the price the biset bakers take when it is dew and the other halfe in rye or Endine corne at the price it pas curant from man to man: and all good and merchantable corne to be delivered at his dwelling house: more over that woode for the fire be layd in at the schoole house: a hatchet and belows to be provided all so it is at our liberty when we please to put in hooome we think goode to keepe the schoole and we grant the like liberty to the sayd Michall to leaue of the schoole at any time when he shall see cause: not with standing: any thing expressed eyther of these covenants above sayd: shall not hinder the sayd Michall in his just liberty or absence from schoole vpon any speciall occasions or providences that may be fall and that no advantage shall be taken so as to detainne any parte of his wages for some times: being necessarily taken of from the schoole provided: if it shall be about a weekes time: it shall then be discounted: other wise not: the schoole to begine the first of the 6mo 1661 provided that the inhabitanes take no children from other Townes to put them to schoole if any do so they shall agree with the schooll master.

Under this agreement master Metcalf continued his labors probably till the spring of 1663. He died December 24, 1664. He was a beloved teacher, and his name should be honored.

The next Schoolmaster was John Swinerton. He was covenanted with as his predecessor had been, but in terms somewhat different. A part of the record is as follows:

A large chest brought by him from England is now in the possession of the Historical Society. It is beautifully ornamented with inlaid wood.

November 22 1663 . . . the said Mr Swinerton is to teach such male childeringe as are sent to him to wright & read & the use of retnitick as they are capable and the Latten tounge so fare as he can & to trie for one quarter of a yeare houe he may sute with the Towne & the Towne take content with him & so to continue for a year if there be a concurrence between the Towne & him.

His term of service seems to have been half a year. Afterwards he settled as a physician in Salem, where he was respected for his skill and esteemed for his benevolence. A Latin book for elementary instruction, Brinsley's *Accidence*, containing John Swinerton's name, written in 1652, was formerly in the possession of William B. Fowle, of Boston. This book, consisting of questions and answers, was published in 1612, and was generally used in the schools of England. The *Accidence* of Ezekiel Cheever was published about 1650, and took the place of Brinsley's book in America. Dr. Swinerton died in Salem, January 6, 1691, aged 57.

The Town seems to have been compelled to come back to its home supply of instruction. One who is unable to endure the hard labor of subduing the forest and raising "wheat & other corne" is supposed to be worth trying in the not less useful work of teaching.

6. of 2. 64. Assemb. after Lecture. . . . In consideration of the present want of a school master and of the weakly estate of Mr Joseph Ellice he being willing and we being hopeful he may doe Some good in teaching Some children to read English. for present and vntill one more able may be attaynted, dou agree and order. that forthwith notice be given that he shall begin to teach at the schoolhouse the next two daye and that he shall have 6<sup>p</sup> week so long as he shall so teach and that this shall be prpounded to the Town the next lectrur daye that the mind of the Towne may be known therein.

There is no doubt that the Town assented to the choice of "Br. Joseph Ellice," and that his teaching was satisfactory. When he had labored in his new vocation a half year or more, the following entry was made:

22: of 9: 64: Assemb: afternoon . . . being mett to make the Rate to paye the Schoolemaster at 3<sup>d</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> each Scholler the number of Schollers being 45. and estates rated at 1<sup>d</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> per] £

This was to pay Mr. Ellice for a half year's work, 85 es-

## METCALF HOMESTEAD

The Metcalf homestead, now the home of Mr. and Mrs. James T. Frame, Jr., Main St. was built approximately in 1680 and is ~~the~~ one of ~~the oldest~~ ~~homes~~ Medfield's ~~oldest~~ oldest homes. Although Mrs. Frame could find no official verification of the date in the Registry of Deeds, a Mr. Daniels who restored the house in the '30's found the date inscribed on a beam when plaster was removed. This lot, like all of them originally, had land on both sides of Main St. Later the house became known as the Thurston home, as it was owned by John Thurston. John's son, Joseph, inherited the home~~s~~ place and having no sons, gave it to Joseph Clark, his grandson. Under the Clark genealogy, it states that Joseph Clark of Medway inherited the home of his grandfather, Joseph Metcalf, now owned by Mr. Thurston.

In Joseph Metcalf's will, he left it to "Hannah, my beloved wife, the free liberty of my house to dwell in for one year and provisions of all sorts for her support including "also 1 cow which is a white face cow". The house, barn and home lots on both sides of the way were left to Joseph Clark, grandson. The burying ground, or cemetery, was left to Joseph Clark in 1736, Hannah, his wife, died in 1746, and it is presumed that she lived in the house longer than the one year term mentioned ~~by~~ in her husband's will. Joseph Clark enlisted in the French War and died at Cape Breton; his son Joseph inherited the homestead in 1746. The house then passed on to Cynthia Clark Morse; her daughter Catherine Morse Turner, sold it to a Mr. Andrews, Mr. Andrews sold the place to Mr. Thurston and he in turn sold to Alden Wheeler. The house then changed hands several times until purchased by the Frames in 1946.

The house features pine panelling, wide board floors, hand hewn beams with wooden pegs, hand forged nails, wrought iron hinges and latches. It also has latchstrings, gunstock beams and a center chimney "up which a team of oxen could be driven", it is so large. It was restored in 1941 with further restoration done by the Frames through the years..

Comments concerning the John Metcalf house in Medfield, obtained from the Medfield Historical Society, author unknown.

BOSTON EVENING TRANSCRIPT, SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 17, 1938

A Saturday  
Transcript  
Feature

## ANTIQUES

By William  
Germain  
Dooley

## Charming Corner in Old New England Home



VIEW OF THE LIVING ROOM IN THE JOHN METCALF HOUSE, 1680, MEDFIELD, NOW OWNED AND RESTORED BY ERNEST B. DANIELS AND BLANCHE L. HOLMES.

Collecting antiques excels in attraction only their arrangement in a fine early house. In this, the fun of restoration also enters.

Blanche L. Holmes and Ernest B. Daniels have found much pleasure in restoring and refurnishing the house of John Metcalf, in Medfield, which they bought in 1928. The house was built in 1680 and remained in the same family for 200 years.

In the restoration they decided to use not only such authentic fittings as they could find, but also, when necessary, to make the fixtures they could not locate in a fashion as close to

the original method of manufacture as possible. With this in mind they unearthed a good supply of late seventeenth century tools and with some difficulty discovered patterns for gutters suitable to a house of that period.

They felled the pine for the gutters and made them all by hand, using only the tools they had acquired, plus a pair of neighbor's horses. Mr. Daniels estimates that any gutter made in this fashion will last at least 100 years.

Inside the house, they opened six fireplaces which had been

closed since Civil War days. They removed the old plaster from the ceilings to reveal the beautiful hand-hewn and dovetailed oak beams. One of these beams has a good deal of carved decoration.

In the basement, where the lower beams of the house can be seen, it was discovered that they all have bark left on two sides.

Floor-boards in most of the rooms are 20 inches wide and 16 feet long, while those used in the attic are even wider. They also found it necessary to replace many of the sills and, by assiduous searching, they located

enough feather-edge panelling with batten doors to complete six rooms.

In construction they used authentic hand-made nails, latches and hinges. Four of the latches are of chestnut, very carefully carved. A number of the hinges are of old wrought iron.

While the actual restoration of the house is now completed, both Miss Holmes and Mr. Daniels have found that it continues to be a source of pleasure to them as they go on collecting furnishings and other articles of the period with which to make it even more suitable to the period.

# Rigors Of Old Recalled

Boston  
Traveler  
10-9-62

By VIRGINIA BOHLIN

Widows who think they have woes should take a look at the lot of the widows of yesteryear.

Today wives usually inherit their homes without strings if their husbands die before them.

But not so Hannah Metcalf of Medfield back in the early 1700's when Medfield was called "Meadfield in the county of Suffolk in His Majesty's territories in New England."

She was given a year to stay on in the house and then find shelter elsewhere.

Under the terms of his will Joseph Metcalf left to "Hannah, my beloved wife, the free liberty of my house to dwell in for one year and provisions of all sorts for her support including one cow which is a white face cow..."

After the year was up the house, barn and home lots on both sides of the street went to Joseph's grandson and namesake, Joseph Clark.

The big black house with white trim, which was built in 1680 by Joseph's father, John Metcalf, remained in the Metcalf family for 200 years. And it's still known in Medfield as the Metcalf Homestead.

It is owned today by Mr. and Mrs. James T. Frame Jr., who will open it to the public Friday for the Medfield Historical Society tour to be held from 1 to 4 p.m.

The Frames bought the house 15 years ago after moving to New England from Philadelphia.

"We had always wanted an old colonial and when this came on the market it took us just one quick look to decide this was it," said Mrs. Frame, whose husband is a partner of Pilgrim Industries Wear Co. in Needham.

"The main restoration had been done by a Mr. Daniels, who bought the house in 1928. But it still needed a lot of structural changes."

One of these necessitated closing in part of the beam which bore the 1680 date which had been chiseled into the hand-hewn oak when the house was built.

"We haven't tried to make a museum out of it. We have tried to show how a house of this age can be comfortable for modern living," said Mrs. Frame, whose two main hobbies are rug braiding and gardening.

The Frames have furnished their home mostly with primitive pine pieces that could take the wear and tear of little children.

The children — Nancy, a school teacher in Walpole, and Peter, a senior at Middlebury — are grown now.

"And we think the house looks none the worse for all the parties that the children have had here and the Dixieland bands that wore out the fringe on the rug," said Mrs. Frame.

And Mama never had to nag about greasy fingers on the paint or wallpaper as the downstairs was left in natural pine which has ripened over the years to a rich nut brown.

Some of the pine sheathing was original to the house. Other old boards were added during the restoration.

In the dining-room one of the boards above the fireplace was fitted with old strap hinges so it could be opened like a cupboard door.

The reason was to preserve for viewing the old hand-hewn lathes and layers of old wallpapers put on by previous owners.

Although the house faces on busy Main St.—Route 109—it has four acres of country out back.

A pair of binoculars and a field guide to birds are kept on the kitchen window sill to help the Frames spot and identify the feathered friends who flock to their backyard.

Outside the kitchen window is a hame, or harness part, from which hang a bird feeder and a suet bag.

"I crochet these with heavy twine," said Mrs. Frame as she turned out another suet bag.



Levi Metcalf



Rev. Elijah Metcalf

Published in Gilbert, H.J.W., 1910:

Rushford and Rushford People

Rushford Families

THE REV. ELIJAH METCALF

Flora Metcalf Thomas

THE subject of this sketch was born in Chesterfield, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, December 25, 1777. He was one of a family of ten children. When he was quite young his parents moved to Salisbury, Herkimer County, New York, where he lived many years. He was brought up on a farm and attended the district school, making good use of what advantages he had for obtaining an education. He was converted at the first service of the first Methodist minister who preached in Salisbury. As there was no church, the meeting was held in a barn. The text, from which the sermon that made such a deep impression on his mind was preached, was taken from the parable of the Great Supper. Mr. Metcalf united with the Methodist Episcopal Church and feeling that he had a call to preach was soon given an exhorter's license. He was ordained deacon by Bishop Asbury, at Paris, New York, July 23, 1811.\* The field of labor assigned him and Loring Grant and Marmaduke Pearce by the Conference in 1811 was the Holland Purchase and Caledonia circuit which included all of Western New York west of the Genesee River, Erie County in Pennsylvania, and all of Ohio south of Cleveland. He organized the first Methodist class in Rushford with four members. He formed several other classes on his circuit, which extended three hundred miles, and visited every point once in three weeks, receiving a salary of from fifty to seventy-five dollars a year. When he began the work of the ministry, his only possessions consisted of a horse and saddle, a few books, and his saddle bags containing

\*Mrs. Flora Metcalf Thomas has the ordination certificate of her grandfather, Elijah Metcalf, given at this time by Francis Asbury.—H. J. W. G.

### Rushford Families

some clothing. His life as a traveling preacher in the Methodist itinerancy was one of hardship and privation—finding his way through the country by means of blazed trees and often fording streams swollen by heavy rains, yet amidst all the toil and discomfort, he was happy and contented in his work for the Master. He was earnest and enthusiastic in his presentation of the truth and his labors were crowned with success.

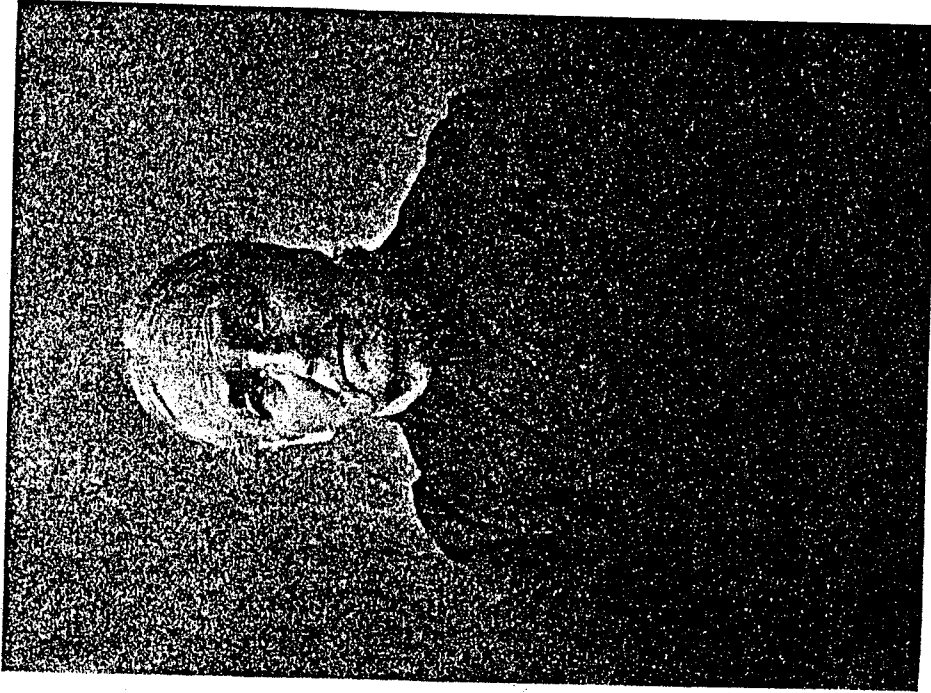
In Pennsylvania he met Hannah Blakeslee, a resident of Vermont, whom he married January 13, 1813. Realizing that he could not support a wife on the meager salary he was receiving, he was located and returned to Salisbury. Here six children were born to them—four sons and two daughters. In September, 1832, he with his wife and family moved to Rushford, making the journey in a wagon with an ox team. They made so slow progress that the two oldest boys became tired and started on afoot, arriving in Rushford before the rest of the family. He bought the farm, situated on the Creek road going toward Centerville, then owned by Daniel Ely. Here he and his wife spent their remaining years. The farm is still owned by one of his descendants.

After his marriage, when he was not engaged in the regular work of the ministry, he frequently preached in schoolhouses, and acted as a supply. He often walked ten or twelve miles on Sunday morning, filled his appointment and returned home the same day. Some idea of his simplicity may be formed by the following arrangements which he made for his funeral and burial.

Rushford, Nov. 27, 1858.

If I should be taken away suddenly or otherwise, get me a plain, cheap coffin, and let my funeral expenses be cheap as may be consistent. Have my funeral attended at

168



Mrs. Cornelia English Metcalf

### Rushford Families

home, for preacher Brother Farnsworth, or Reddy. If they cannot be obtained get some enthusiastic exhorter. Otherwise get Brother Marville. The text, "There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God." The first hymn, "My span of life will soon be done;" second hymn, "On Jordan's stormy banks I stand." Let the singing be in the congregation. Let the monument be a white oak plank. This order given by my hand.

Elijah Metcalf.

His wife died January 26, 1866, being nearly eighty years of age. He died March 1, 1861.

Lyman B. Metcalf, the oldest of the family was born April 13, 1815. When he came to Rushford he was seventeen years of age. He married Eliza Porter of Lyndon, September 7, 1836. To them were born four children, two of whom, Mrs. Juliette Stone and Fred L. Metcalf of this place, survive. He served his country as a private in Capt. Woodworth's company. He was an ardent comrade and enjoyed meeting with "the boys in blue." Uncle Lyman, as he was familiarly called by both old and young, was of a jovial, fun-loving disposition which made him quite a favorite with children and young people. He died September 5, 1896. He was buried just sixty years from the day he was married.

Roxana Metcalf was born May 4, 1816. She married Alonzo Damon in 1839 and began housekeeping on the farm on the Creek road now owned by Herbert Francis. Here she lived fifty-one years. She was the mother of three children, Thomas, Rhoda and Riley, none of whom are living. She died June 2, 1890, eight days after her sister, Rachel.

Levi Metcalf was born September 26, 1817. He mar-

### The Rev. Elijah Metcalf

ried Cornelia English, daughter of Robert English, September 18, 1844. He bought the farm on the Creek road adjoining his father's. It is now owned by Charles L. Metcalf. Here they lived, with the exception of one year, until he died, September 30, 1892. Three children were born to them, Mary (Mrs. Wilson Robbins), Charles L. and Nelie E. (Mrs. Edward Dietrich). He was a man who was especially devoted to his family and had the confidence and esteem of all who knew him.

Rachel Metcalf was born October 26, 1819. She came to Rushford when a young girl and lived on the old homestead, about two and one-half miles north of the village, until her death. Of the family of six children, she was the first to answer the summons of the death messenger. Her life was spent in doing deeds of kindness—administering to others in time of sickness and trouble.

Zephi was born June 14, 1821. He married Harriet Gould in March, 1843. They lived in Rushford for a few years after their marriage, then went West, settling in Kansas. Seven children were born to them. He died in Arkansas City, January 23, 1895.

Elijah Metcalf was born January 17, 1823. He came with his parents to Rushford and lived about thirty-three years on the farm which his father purchased, caring for both father and mother in their declining years. March 20, 1861, he married Salome Gordon, daughter of Tarbel Gordon. One daughter, now Mrs. L. J. Thomas, was born to them. In 1865 he bought a farm known as the Claus farm, situated in the northeastern part of the town, where he lived a few years. His entire life, with the exception of nine years, was spent in Rushford. He was quiet and unassuming in manner, and his character was marked by integrity and loyalty to principle. His wife died July 8, 1893.

## Rushford Families

On July 6th of the following year, he fell from a load of hay and was killed almost instantly.

As a family, their history is in some respects quite remarkable. Reared by parents who were examples of piety, they were converted early in life and all united with the Methodist Episcopal Church. The four sons were each given an exhorter's license. At the time of, or soon after, the organization of the Free Methodist Church, Lyman, Levi, Rachel and Elijah united with that body. Levi and Elijah at the time of their deaths were local preachers. The first death occurred when the youngest of the family was sixty-seven years of age, and all died within a little more than six years. The oldest was the last to answer the death call.

## JAMES H. GREEN

Ellen Green Nye

JAMES HAGERMAN GREEN was born in Muncie, Pennsylvania, in 1805. He was of English descent on his father's side and German on his mother's. He was one of twelve children—ten girls and two boys. His father's folks were Quakers and his mother's Calvinists. When about eighteen, thinking he could do better than to stay on the little farm, he went to Elmira, New York, and learned the shoemaker's trade; he next went to Cayuga Lake, where he was living at the time of the Morgan excitement, when he had to do military duty; from this place he was called to Perry, Wyoming County, where he lived a number of years and owned some property which he traded for a farm in Centerville. Daniel Searl, who ran a tannery and shoe shop in Rushford, went to Perry and hired him to oversee his work and keep his books. He hung back about

## James H. Green

keeping the books, feeling that his education was not good enough, but Mr. Searl said they would both go to writing school. They did so and it proved to be a great help to Mr. Green.

He came to Rushford in the fall of 1832. Here he met Lydia La Selle of Madison County. She was visiting her cousin, Mrs. Searl, and working at her trade, that of tailoring. Mr. Green and the young tailoress were drawn to each other, but she seemed loath to give up her independent life and gave him no answer until she had been home a year, when he went to claim his own, and they were married in the fall of 1836 by the noted Universalist minister, E. M. Wooley. At the wedding a poem was read by Mr. Wooley who had composed it for the occasion, and, as the custom was, cake and wine were served.

Mrs. Green was of French descent and distantly related to La Salle, the famous explorer. Mr. and Mrs. Green went to housekeeping the spring after their marriage, in the rooms over the tannery on the place which Ellen Lyman now owns. There was no other place to be rented at the time. They staid there about three years, then Mr. Green bought a lot of Samson Hardy and built the house which is occupied by his daughters, Lucia and Sarah, who kindly cared for their parents in their old age. The apple trees on the lot were brought by Mr. Hardy on his back from Canadea.

Mr. Green finally started business for himself, but he never kept many hands. Edward Brooks learned his trade of him. There were several shoe shops in Rushford, all running at the same time—James Green's, Joseph Bell's, Cyrus Lathrop's, Roswell Williams', Henry Barras' and Edward Brooks'.

Mr. Green was the trustee and librarian of the west district for a number of years.

A LOOK BACK  
OVER 175 YEARS  
of the  
FREDONIA METHODIST CHURCH  
(now United Methodist)

Compiled and Edited  
by George D. McAllister  
November 1986

1911 -- 1986

The parish of the Circuit-Rider was large. At one time the circuit of which Fredonia was a part extended from North East, Penna., to Silver Creek, N. Y., and how far south we do not know. They came whenever they could, gathered the people about them for a service or for a series, and then passed on to the next place. They made themselves a part of all that pioneer life, living the life of the people, and with them, sharing the hardships and building with them a Civilization and a Christianity larger than they dreamed. Whatever of moral-fiber, or character-backbone, or community-worthfulness we have today, is due in no small measure to the courage, the consecration, the hope and toil of the early Methodist Circuit-Rider."

#### Historical Sketch

"In the year 1805 the first Methodist Episcopal Itinerant made his appearance in Fredonia, but like the Tishbite of old proclaimed his message and passed on, returning only occasionally until 1811 when Rev. Elijah Metcalf, appointed preacher of Chautauqua Circuit, organized a class as part of the Ohio Conference. Previous to the organization of this society Fredonia was in the bounds of the Baltimore Conference. The members constituting the first Class were Justin Hinman and wife, Daniel Gould and wife, William Ensign and wife, Jeremiah Baldwin and wife.

TO THE GLORY OF GOD  
 IN MEMORY OF THE  
 CIRCUIT RIDER  
 REV. ELIJAH METCALF  
 WHO ORGANIZED THIS CLASS IN 1811  
 AND OF THE FIRST MEMBERS  
 JUSTIN HINMAN AND WIFE  
 DANIEL GOULD AND WIFE  
 WILLIAM ENSING AND WIFE  
 JEREMIAH BALDWIN AND WIFE  
 THIS TABLET WAS ERECTED BY  
 THE GRATEFUL MEMBERS OF THE  
 FIRST METHODIST EPISCOPAL  
 CHURCH  
 ONE HUNDRED YEARS LATER  
 1911

Tablet of white Italian  
 marble - 3 feet by 3  
 Letters of Bronze  
 unveiled Thursday  
 Evening Feb 16 - 1911.  
 In the Methodist Episcopal  
 Church of Fredonia New York  
 Hilma McAllister

State of New York  
 Allegany County } ss

Lyman B. Metcalf  
 of the town of Rushford in said County  
 of Allegany Applicant for Invalid Pension  
 No 667110 being duly sworn by and  
 before me the undersigned a Justice  
 of the Peace in and for said County  
 says that after his discharge from  
 the military service of the United  
 States on the 9<sup>th</sup> day of October 1862  
 and on the 25<sup>th</sup> day of December  
 1863 he enlisted in Company (B) 2<sup>nd</sup>  
 Regiment of New York Mounted Rifles  
 Volunteers to serve 3 years or during the  
 war, and was transferred to the Veteran  
 Reserve Corps by Order unknown  
 And that he was honorably discharged  
 from the service of the United States  
 on the 9<sup>th</sup> day of August 1865 at Washington  
 D.C. by reason of G.O. No. 116, A. G. O. June  
 17/1865 And deponent further says  
 that Except as aforesaid he has not  
 been in the military ~~and~~ service  
 of the United States since the 9<sup>th</sup>  
 day of October 1862 } Lyman B. Metcalf  
 Subscribed and Sworn }  
 before me this 24<sup>th</sup> day of May }  
 1875 } O. A. Woodworth Justice of the Peace

401

# A SUPPLEMENTARY AFFIDAVIT

ALLEGING A NEW DISABILITY IN A CLAIM FOR INCREASE OF PENSION

This paper will be valueless unless sworn to before an Officer of a Court of Record.

State of W. Va. County of Alleghany ss.

On the date hereinafter mentioned, personally appeared before me Wm. B. Black of the Superior Court, a court of record within and for the County and State aforesaid, Lymon B. Metcalf, resident of the County of Alleghany State of W. Va., who being duly sworn according to law, declares that he is the identical Lymon B. Metcalf who was enrolled on the 25 day of Dec. 1863 and served in Company B of the 2 Regiment of N. Y. Vols, and was discharged at Wash. D. C. on the 1 day of Aug. 1865;

that while a member of the organization aforesaid, in the service and in the line of his duty, at Petersburgh in the State of Va., on or about the 1 day of July 1864, he contracted piles by carrying building material while marching, Exposure & during that campaign

That he was treated in hospitals as follows: At City Point (Murrel Hospital) and also at a hospital a few rods from Lincoln Hospital, the name of which is forgotten

That he has not been employed in the military or naval service otherwise than as stated above; Except enlisted in Co. D 64<sup>th</sup> N. Y. Vols. in Sept. 1864 and discharged Oct. 1864

That prior to his entry into the service of the United States, as above stated, he was in good, sound physical health; that he is now, to a material extent, disabled from performing manual labor by reason of the new disability, Piles

stated above, and, therefore, asks that his present pension, Certificate No. 66,710, may be increased on account of said new disability. That he further says nothing, except that he hereby authorizes and empowers MILO B. STEVENS & CO. of Wash. D. C. to act as his attorneys in the prosecution of said claim.

Lymon B. Metcalf  
(Signature of Claimant.)

(If Claimant signs by X mark, two persons who can write must sign here.)

(SEE OTHER SIDE.)

GENERAL AFFIDAVIT.

No. 90.

State of New York County of Allgany, ss  
Jacob A. Miller &

In the matter of

State of Nevada County of \_\_\_\_\_  
In the matter of Lelia Pretzel, Plaintiff,  
Gordon M. Pretzel, Defendant. Docket No. D. 64-0789, Day Day  
\_\_\_\_\_ said County

Personally came before me, a \_\_\_\_\_ in and for the aforesaid County  
[Notary, Justice or Clerk of Court.]  
and State, \_\_\_\_\_, aged \_\_\_\_\_ years.  
[Name of witness.]

and State,

citizen of the town of

Post-Office address

Give Street and No. if in city or town.

County of

State of

County of San Diego  
well known to me to be reputable and entitled to credit, and who, being duly sworn, declares in relation to aforesaid case as follows:

NOTE.—Affiant should state how they gain a knowledge of the facts to which they testify.

that from my personal knowledge  
Eliza Whitcomb neither owns nor possesses  
any property either real or personal and  
that she has no income from any source  
whatsoever and that no one is legally bound  
to her support

to her support  
his affidavit was written by myself  
in which I was not aided or prompted by  
any written or printed statement or recital  
prepared or dictated by any other person & is  
from my own personal knowledge

2 further declares that 2 has no interest in said claim and is not concerned in its prosecution..

1

2

(Signature of Affiant)

NOTE.—In the execution of evidence, two persons *who can write* must attest the signature by signing their names opposite.

MARGIN RESERVED FOR BINDING. NO MUTILATED CERTIFICATE WILL BE RECEIVED.

COUNTY OF Albany  
TOWN OF RUSHFORD, N. Y.  
VILLAGE OF \_\_\_\_\_  
CITY OF \_\_\_\_\_

STATE OF NEW YORK—BUREAU OF VITAL STATISTICS.  
**Certificate and Record of Death.** Registered No. 93

I hereby certify that I attended deceased from \_\_\_\_\_  
that I last saw him alive on the \_\_\_\_\_ day of September 1896, that he died on the  
5<sup>th</sup> day of September 1896, about \_\_\_\_\_ o'clock, A. M. or P. M., and that to best of my  
knowledge and belief, the cause of his death was as hereunder written.

Chief Cause, Apoplexy  
Contributing Cause, old age  
Sanitary Observations, \_\_\_\_\_

Witness my hand this \_\_\_\_\_ day of Sept 1896  
Place of Burial, Rushford (SIGNATURE), J. P. Bixby  
Date of Burial, \_\_\_\_\_  
Undertaker, W. J. Benjamin M. D.  
Residence, Rushford N.Y.

Date of Death.	<u>Sept 5<sup>th</sup> 1896</u>
Full Name.	<u>Lyman B. Melvick</u>
Age, in years, mos. and days.	<u>81 Years 4 Months 23 days</u>
Color.	<u>White</u>
Single Married or Widowed.	<u>Married</u>
Occupation.	<u>Farmer</u>
Birthplace.	<u>Salisbury N.Y.</u>
How long in U. S. if foreign born.	<u>—</u>
How long resident here.	<u>67 Years</u>
Father's Name.	<u>Elizabeth Melvick</u>
Father's Birthplace.	<u>Conn.</u>
Mother's Name.	<u>Martha Plakewell</u>
Mother's Birthplace.	<u>Vermont</u>
Place of Death.	<u>Rushford</u>
Last Place of Residence.	<u>Apoplexy</u>
Direct cause of Death.	<u>old age</u>
Indirect cause of Death.	<u>old age</u>
Date of Record.	

Error ↑

Geneva Times  
March 23  
1985

from

Geneva

Times,

March 23,

1985



Times photo by Martin Toombs

Margaret Veness

Saturday in her airplane

## Celebrating 85 years — 27 of them aloft

By MARTIN TOOMBS

SENECA FALLS — Margaret Veness celebrated her 85th birthday Saturday afternoon at the controls of a one-engine Cessna, high above Seneca County.

Known as the Flying Grandmother, Mrs. Veness made the flight with long-time friend Ray MacDougal by her side. She was the guest of honor later in the day during a party at the MacDougal home.

After MacDougal conducted the pre-flight checks for the birthday spin, Mrs. Veness taxied the four-seater to the south end of the Seneca Falls Airport runway and took off.

The Waterloo resident flew the

plane twice around Seneca Falls and once over Waterloo before swinging back to the airport where — with MacDougal's assistance — she brought the plane in for a landing.

Mrs. Veness, who has been flying for the past 27 years, noted that the Cessna 172, purchased by her in 1970, is getting old. Although it's been several years since she's flown solo, Mrs. Veness said she still flies regularly and doesn't intend to give up the hobby.

It wasn't until 1958 — at the age of 58 — that Mrs. Veness learned to fly. But seven years later, she competed in the Women's International Air Race from Caldwell, N.J., to the Bahamas. She is a member of

the Seneca Falls Flying Club and helped organize a flying club at Seneca Army Depot, where she worked for 25 years.

MacDougal told a story Saturday about a trip to Florida 25 years ago that was interrupted repeatedly for side trips to visit some of Mrs. Veness's many friends.

Several people were on the plane, but Mrs. Veness managed to find space in the rear for maple sugar from Allegany County. Along the way, she kept calling ahead and asking friends to meet her at various airports, said MacDougal.

"I didn't think we'd ever get to Florida; we could have walked faster," said MacDougal. "But none of us ever had as much fun as we had on that trip."

Margaret Stone Veness is daughter of Dewitt Clinton Stone, granddaughter of Hannah Juliette Metcalf Stone, and great-granddaughter of Lyman B. Metcalf, I.

4/25 Sept  
'84

"My dear

Delighted you

including me - with  
your (artist) =

Thanks for picture

More anon!!

Altho' my records

not great, I

Best

Margaret (Stone)

\* My father's father (Hm)

provided a Metcalf

City of \_\_\_\_\_, State of \_\_\_\_\_

Attest: (1) \_\_\_\_\_

(2) \_\_\_\_\_

10,000. 6-586

and GO, and no opportunity has  
been declined,



Your letter (3/21)  
when I returned from flying East and  
taking Mother to L.I. for her 87th Day

POST OFFICE BOX 1

Waterloo, New York 13165

THE FINGER LAKES'

FLYING GREAT GRANDMOTHER

MRS V F VENESS  
BOX 1  
WATERLOO NY 13165



Hannah J Stone

(Signature of witnesses.)

me on this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 189\_\_\_\_

reputable persons; that they know the contents of their depositions, and

Rather distinctive missives from Margaret Stone Veness (upper left), from her daughter Bonalyn Veness Munson (upper right); a return address for Margaret (center right); and signatures of Margaret's grandmother, Hannah Juliette Metcalf Stone (below).

OCTOBER 1, 1926

## RUSHFORD WOMAN REACHES THE END OF A USEFUL LIFE

Mrs. Charles L. Metcalf Completes  
Her Life Work and is Laid to  
Rest by Loving Friends

Mrs. Charles L. Metcalf, aged 64, a life long resident of Rushford, died at her home here last Sunday evening. She had been ill for the past year and the larger share of the past summer she has been confined to the house. Friday night she lapsed into unconsciousness and from that time failed rapidly until the end came at about seven o'clock Sunday evening.

Her funeral was held at the home Wednesday afternoon, Rev. B. J. Hayes, a former pastor here, officiating. Herbert Harmon of Rochester and Mrs. Sanford Dietrich of Syracuse sang one selection, a favorite of Mrs. Metcalf's. Rev. J. S. Willott of Syracuse, offered the prayer.

Mrs. Metcalf was a member of the Free Methodist church of Rushford and as long as her health permitted was an active worker. She was an exceptionally sweet alto singer and in her church and at funerals and on other occasions her voice was lifted in praise for her Master. In her home she was an ideal wife and mother and will be sorely missed by Mr. Metcalf and her daughters, Mrs. Wm. W. Bush of Belmont, Mrs. Herbert Harmon of Rochester and Mrs. Arthur Mowers of Rochester.



MRS. CORNELIA ENGLISH METCALF  
Born [illegible] Died, February 9, 1921

The funeral was held at the home last Friday afternoon, Rev. J. F. Iulig officiating assisted by Rev. B. N. Moyer of Olean. Relatives present from out of town were Mr. and Mrs. Edward G. Dietrich and Mrs. Gertrude D. Wheeler of Syracuse, Rev. and Mrs. A. L. Schumann and Donald Schumann of East Aurora, Mrs. Millie C. Harmon and daughter, Marian, of Rochester, Mr. and Mrs. Wilson Robbins, Mr. and Mrs. John Crawford of Houghton.

Mrs. Cornelia English Metcalf was born at Norway, Herkimer County, New York May 25, 1828, and departed this life February 9 at the home of her only son, Charles Metcalf, of Rushford.

When but six years of age she came with her parents, Robert and Abigail English, to this county, making the trip in eight days in a covered wagon, and settled on the Elbert Corse farm, now owned by Mrs. Flora Thomas.

In 1844 she was united in marriage to Levi Metcalf. Her wedded life covering a period of forty-eight years was lived on the Metcalf farm at Brookside. Three children were born to them, Mary (Mrs. Wilson Robbins) deceased, Charles L. and Nelia E. (Mrs. Edward Dietrich) of Syracuse. Since her husband's death she has made her home with her son.

She was in failing health since the latter part of November but was not confined to her bed until a few days previous to her decease.

One of the oldest and most highly esteemed residents of this village has fallen. She was possessed with a lofty sense of her relations to her family which found expression in a deep, unflinching devotion to her household.

Mrs. Metcalf was endowed with very strong characteristics which were beautifully mingled with admiration for the strong and love and sympathy for the weaker folk. Her mind was alert, keen, and she had a universal interest in the Church, community and world wide affairs within a few days of her death.

She was converted at the early age of sixteen and united with the Methodist Episcopal church where she held her membership until the organization of the Free Methodist Society in this place, of which she became a charter member, and for more than three quarters of a century espoused the cause of righteousness and graced the church of her choice with a clear testimony of the efficacy of the atonement.

The high esteem and great regard in which she was held by her children was manifested in the thoughtful and loving ministrations of her daughter, Mrs. Dietrich, and the extraordinary devotion of her only son, Charles, and his estimable companion, who in the thirty years of her widowhood and confinement to her home, ministered to her every want most tenderly.

A beloved mother, devoted Christian and ideal citizen has gone but the sweet fragrance of her life is falling on us like a soft, inspiring light beckoning us on to the realms of the blessed.

Son of Charles English  
Died Fri. Nov. 27-1922 Born 1878

Dr. Robert B. English, 79,  
Was Ex-Dean of W. & J.

MIAMI, Nov. 27 (P).—Dr. Robert B. English, seventy-nine, retired educator and former dean of Washington and Jefferson College, died today. As native of Rushford, N. Y., he attended the University of Rochester, University of Chicago and University of Michigan.

From 1905 to 1920 he was head of the Latin department of Washington and Jefferson, dean from 1920 to 1922, head of the department of romance languages, 1923-'25, and department head 1925-'27. He was professor of philosophy at the University of Miami until 1932. He lectured for the extension division at Miami until 1937.

lish, Marathon, Fla., and Charles L. English, Miami, and a daughter, Mrs. Henry Brown, Norway, Me.

Survivors include his widow

Hume, Pike, Eagle, Gainesville and Castile. Rev. Nathan Fellows was pastor of Rushford circuit in 1845. The salary was \$240 per year. For his table expenses he was allowed \$122 and for traveling expenses \$5. There were 215 members in the Rushford church at that time.

In 1847 Rev. C. D. Burlingham was pastor. He received \$400 a year.

Resolutions were passed in the conference that young people should study the science of music; also that the singers should all sit together and have the use of an instrument if it was thought best.

It was a rule of the church at that time that those members who did not pay their salary that their names should be read out. Everyone knew then who was true to the vows of the church."

NOTE.—The articles concerning the Methodist Church were nearly all printed in the *Rushford Spectator*.

### Reminiscences of My Younger Days.

MRS. CORNELIA METCALF.

As my mind runs back seventy or more years, clear is the picture of the old Methodist Church, where I was accustomed to go with my father's family to worship.

The building, which stood on the present site of the Methodist Episcopal Church, was of simple structure. The interior consisted of an audience room below, with a gallery on three sides. The pulpit, between the two doors entering the audience room, was at least six feet in height, to accommodate hearers both above and below. Above the entry to the Church was a room for prayer and class meetings.

The first minister whom I can easily recall was Rev. Hemmenway. As I remember, he was a large, kindly looking man, with a smooth shaved face, as were all Methodist ministers in those days. His face wore the expression of a devoted,

earnest man of God. His dress, like that of all Methodist ministers of his time, consisted of a clerical coat buttoned to the neck, and a vest likewise, a white kerchief about the neck, and a white hat. A Methodist preacher was known as far as he could be seen.

Next to my mind comes the name of Nathan Fellows, of precious memory to me, for it was through his labors that I, with many others, was brought to Christ, and from his hand received the ordinance of baptism. Also, during the affliction which came to our family in the illness and death of my eldest sister, he was in attendance often at our home, and preached her funeral sermon from the text, still fresh in my memory: "The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away; but the word of the Lord endureth forever."

In these early times there were two services on the Sabbath, one in the forenoon about eleven o'clock and one in the afternoon about one o'clock. The hour between was used for class meeting, Sunday School and luncheon.

The Sabbath services were especially well attended. There seemed to be a general inclination to attend church. On Sabbath morning, farmers, for several miles around, could be seen with horses and lumber wagon, or oxen and cart, with entire family, wending their way to the house of worship.

The preaching was thorough and earnest, and the people were held to experimental and practical religion. The "Amens" and other responses were frequent and hearty, and came without restraint. After the sermon it was a common thing for one and sometimes more, without invitation, but as the spirit of the sermon prompted, to speak of their own experience or exhort others to come to Christ—an occasion which seldom failed to melt the audience to tears.

The singing was wholly congregational. The

← Nathan Fellows  
joined Zeph-  
Metcalf and →  
Harriet Gould  
in marriage.

first leader whom I recall was Daniel Woods. Frequently the verses to the hymns were lined—two lines being read, then sung, and so on until the end of the hymn was reached. To me the singing seemed "in the Spirit and with the understanding also."

The class meeting at the noon hour was well attended. Each member was expected to tell present experience or how he had prospered during the past week. The leaders were very searching. Such questions as the following were frequently asked:

Have you indulged in speaking evil of any person during the past week?

Have you engaged in foolish conversation, jesting or joking, which is contrary to the word of God?

Have you given way to unholy tempers?

If so, have you repented and sought forgiveness?

No person was allowed in the class more than three times unless he or she expressed a desire to become a member.

The love-feasts in those days were held with closed doors, those being excluded who had on their persons superfluous adornment of any kind. Those allowed to enter were provided with tickets for admittance. This means of Grace seemed to be especially owned of God. Well do I remember times when wave after wave of God's presence was felt and manifested in a marked degree.

Weekly prayer and experience meetings were held around in nearly every school district, as well as at the church, especially during the winter season. When the minister was not able to take charge, there were always plenty of local preachers or exhorters to take his place. These meetings were well attended, nearly every family in the neighborhood being represented. The prayers in those days were earnest and loud. It was a frequent saying—that they could be heard for

half a mile. I recall, however, but few lengthy prayers. A revival spirit seemed always prevalent. It was a common thing for sinners to break down and plead for mercy right in the midst of a warm testimony or exhortation.

Many incidents come to my mind, which my father Metcalf, one of the pioneers of Methodism in these parts, has related to me of his own conversion over a hundred years ago, and of his travels and labors on the three hundred mile circuit through this section of country.

### A Rushford Quarterly Meeting of Fifty Years Ago.

C. M. DAMON.

Nephew of →  
Roxana Met-  
calf Damon

The earlier custom of admitting to love feast by presentation of quarterly tickets at the guarded door had gone out of use. But there was much interest in the visits of the Presiding Elder, with a preaching service on Friday evening, at times at least, the Quarterly Conference Saturday afternoon, the Elder's sermon Saturday evening, the nine o'clock love feast Sabbath morning, followed by the Elder's sermon, the collection and the sacrament, and another sermon in the evening. Probably the Pastor preached on one of these occasions.

The great occasion of interest was the Love Feast. This was regarded as a sort of joyous family gathering, where it was in order to speak very freely of present and past experiences, of special love for the Methodist Church, as such, with reminiscences of conversion, attachment to the brethren, hopes of the future, etc. It was not a meeting for "outsiders," to criticize this glorying in Methodism as an evidence of bigotry. Those so inclined should not have been there. This was our own meeting, where precisely these things were in order. Those who had been pulled out of a pit by these very brethren, or by

## History of the Free Methodist Church.

MILLIE C. METCALF.

This being the occasion of the hundredth anniversary of the town of Rushford, it has been deemed fitting that at this time each church take a glance at its past history and consider for a moment a few points of interest in its course.

The Free Methodist Church cannot boast of this as its hundredth anniversary, for it is but forty-eight years the coming October, since its birth in this town. Two years previous to this, however, the work had started and was well on foot which resulted in the organization in 1860.

In October, 1860, The Genesee Conference of the Free Methodist Church was organized at Rushford, Alle. Co., N. Y., by B. T. Roberts, its founder. Five preachers were received into full connection, and among the number, J. W. Reddy, who was appointed pastor of the Rushford circuit. Soon after the close of the conference, he organized a Society consisting of the following: Elijah Metcalf, Wilson Gordon, Sophronia Gordon, Charles English, Robert English, Frances English, Maria Benjamin, Rufus Adams, George Worthington, Harry Howe, Elvira Howe, Harris Gilbert, Levanche Van Dusen, Ophelia Van Dusen, Salome Metcalf, Cornelia Metcalf, Levi Metcalf.

Of the original members, Cornelia Metcalf, Charles English and George Worthington remain living. May their lives yet be spared many years.

The first trustees of the church here were Harry Howe, Wilson Gordon, Robert English, Harris Gilbert, Levi Metcalf.

Classes were soon organized at Gowanda, Belfast, Caseville, Caneadea, Cadwells, and other points. These together with the Rushford class composed the Rushford circuit.

The first Free Methodist meetings in this place were held in the old Methodist Episcopal Church which, upon the erection of the new church building was moved to the present site of Myron Claus' harness shop. This building, having been bought for the purpose, was used as a house of worship about two years, when it was destroyed by fire. The Free Methodist Society then secured the rental of the Presbyterian Church, in which house they worshipped until the present one was purchased. This was bought of the Universalists in 1873, when T. B. Catton was pastor. Soon afterward the church was remodeled. The pulpit which had formerly stood between the two doors, was moved to the opposite side of the room, and the seats arranged accordingly."

Since the first Genesee Conference in 1860, three annual conferences have convened here, the first in 1882, during A. H. Bennett's pastorate, the second in 1898, when G. D. Mark was pastor, and the last in 1904, when N. B. Martin was pastor.

During the 48 years since its organization, the Rushford circuit has had 26 pastors. I will mention their names in order, and with the term each served:

J. W. Reddy, 2 years; Wm. Manning, 2 years; A. F. Curry, 2 years; F. J. Ewell and A. B. Mathewson, 1 year; O. O. Bacon, 2 years; Wm. Jackson, 2 years; Wm. Jones, 1 year; I. C. White, 2 years; T. B. Catton, 2 years; M. H. Monroe (supply), 1 year; John Robinson, 1 year; A. A. Burgess, 2 years; A. H. Bennett, 2 years; M. C. Burritt, 2 years; L. D. Perkins, 1 year; C. C. Eggleston, 2 years; M. E. Brown, 2 years; T. S. Slocum, 2 years; N. Palmer, 2 years; H. W. Rowley, 2 years; G. D. Mark, 3 years (last year supply); J. H. Wheeler, 3 years (term changed); J. E. Tiffany, 1 year; N. B. Martin, 3 years; J. H. Harman, 2 years; C. L. Wright.

The former Rushford and Rockville circuit was divided in 1907, so each point now has a separate preacher.

The Rushford Society is now composed of 58 members; 48 in full connection, 10 on probation.

In view of the progress which has been made both in numbers, and we trust in spirituality, we have reason to take courage; and believing still in the same principles that made us a church, we are endeavoring to "walk by the same rule and mind the same things." As we continue in so doing, we may expect the blessing of the Lord to attend us.

### **The Remodeling of the M. E. Church at Rushford.**

We've been up to the M. E. Church,

We've climbed its stairs once more;

But we stopped and gazed in wonder,

As we stepped within the door.

For lo! some skilled magicians,

With true decorative art,

Have given the dear old structure

A complete "change of heart."

The pews are rich and ornate,

Placed in semi-circular style;

And all the faithful pilgrims

Wear a sort of—circular smile.

For they've labored long and patient

To perfect and re-arrange

Their modest place of worship;

And they glory in the change.


You can claim no more the backache

As excuse to stay away,

With all those high-backed settles,

Just inviting you to stay.

Rochester, N.Y., Wednesday Evening, May 4, 1966

Meet   
the  
President

# She Stands Firm For Her Beliefs



Mrs. Herbert H. Harmon Leads WCTU

By RUTH B. CHAMBERLAIN

The fighting strength of one of Rochester's leading club women, a friend of youth, social service worker and teacher, impressed me anew as I talked again to quiet-spoken, intelligent, Mrs. Herbert H. Harmon, president of the Monroe County Woman's Christian Temperance Union.

"There are times when you must take a firm and honest stand on civic and social service problems, especially when you believe them to be

right and in the best interests of society as a whole," said Mrs. Harmon today. Further explaining her philosophy, she said simply, "I believe God gives you abilities and also the time for doing good works. Today, more than ever, it is necessary to teach the young, especially some of the scientific facts regarding habit-forming beverages and drugs." Mrs. Harmon was a teacher of science for more than 26 years in the city's evening high schools.

Her long teaching experience and her work through the years with both adults and youth in the temperance cause, have admirably equipped this charming executive to carry on her work of social welfare.

Mrs. Harmon admits in her quiet way that her presidency of the WCTU is an exciting challenge and one she has met and mastered through hours devoted to work and study in order to accomplish the purposes of the society.

Although her organization teaches the effects of alcohol on the body and on society and urges total abstinence, its members also are interested in laws and law enforcement.

"THIS INTEREST may be noted in our support of legislative bills at local, state and national levels," she notes. "Some of these bills would prohibit the serving of alcoholic beverage on airplanes during flight, would prohibit alcohol advertising in interstate commerce and over the air and would raise the drinking age from 18 to 21 years."

Dark of eye and white of hair, Mrs. Harmon expresses the belief that her organization also should share in relief

and social welfare programs here and abroad. She says that books, leaflets, films and other types of visual aids giving facts on alcohol, tobacco and other narcotics should be made available to the public by every means possible.

"As an example, we have installed a 'temperance rack' at the Monroe County Airport which will be kept filled with the latest scientific literature available."

Millie Metcalf Harmon, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Charles M. Metcalf of Rushford, is the widow of Herbert H. Harmon, an Eastman Kodak engineer for 30 years who died in 1960. They made their home in Rochester for half a century.

SHE TURNS daily to a desk piled high with correspondence and literature necessary to the presidency of a county organization numbering nearly 700 and the various other civic and social welfare projects in which she participates.

"I think my writing duties now are among my greatest pleasures as well as a favorite hobby, surpassed only by time spent with my 10 grandchildren," she adds with a smile. "I love to read, cook and listen to good music."

Mrs. Harmon was organist for 17 years at Edgewood Free Methodist Church, now located on Edgewood Avenue, Brighton. She is president of the Women's Society of her church and is active in the United Church Women.

Millie Harmon received her teaching training at Buffalo State Normal School, now the State University College at Buffalo and makes her home with one of her four children, Miss Ellen Harmon, in a lovely apartment at 4 Quaker Road, Pittsford. She is the mother also of Mrs. Pritchard Douglas (Elizabeth), Mrs. Victor Murphy (Marion) and Richard, all of Rochester. Her 10 grandchildren include five in college, three in high school and two in grade school.

THE TIMES-UNION

# WCTU Target 'Elite' Drinker

By MARDI HARRIS

"Times have greatly changed since the founding of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union, 90 years ago," Barber L. Waters, WCTU state president, said. She addressed the annual WCTU spring institute at South Avenue Baptist Church.

"Carrie Nation with her axe was not typical of the women of our early crusades," she said. "These women were reserved and dignified, who used gentler means — singing, praying, and speaking with saloon owners. And in those days these methods worked. But not today.

"We now live in a different age. The days of the old town tavern with its sawdust on the floor and lower class patrons are gone.

"This has been replaced by the swanky cocktail lounge where the so-called 'elite' are seen.

"Today we must use methods such as education and legislation as weapons against alcoholism and narcotics addiction."

MRS. WATERS said there are more than 700,000 alcoholics in New York state; drinking is the third largest problem in this country.

"Prevention," she

stressed, "is more important than cure. Parents should teach their children about these things. But many are afraid of being called old fashioned or at having a holier than thou attitude.

"This isn't always true. Young people want to know the facts. They should learn how to deal with situations, how to say 'NO.' Too many don't know how to get out of taking a drink when every one else is doing it."

"Our organization has youth groups for these teen-agers. We also have teachers who give talks in schools; we have leaflets, charts, books, and films available for the purpose of educating the young."

THE WCTU also has growing interest in legislation.

"As individuals or in our chapters can help only a few," explained Mrs. Waters, "but the law



Mrs. Herbert Harmon and Mrs. Barber L. Waters  
presidents, county and state WCTU

touches everybody.

"We are particularly interested in raising the drinking age in New York from 18 to 21. This is the only state without regulations for 18-year-olds.

"Alcohol is habit forming. We are worried that young people acquire this habit more easily than mature adults.

"We were also violently opposed to the bills suggested by the Moreland Commission. We must be ready to oppose any other attempts to pass these so-called 'reform' bills.

"The pace of life .. indeed changed," Mrs. Waters concluded, "but not its purposes or its principles."

Democrat and Chronicle  
Rochester, N.Y.  
4C Mon., Mar. 30, '81

## Deaths

(Monroe County)

### • Harmon, Millie C.

Sunday, March 29, 1981 of Brighton. Survived by her daughters, Mrs. Prichard C. (Elizabeth) Dougless, Miss Ellen Harmon, Mrs. Donald (Marion) Mohnkern; her son, Richard H.; 10 grandchildren; 12 great-grandchildren; her sister, Mrs. Arthur Mowers; several nieces, nephews, and cousins.

Friends may call at the Leo M. Bean Funeral Home, Inc., 2771 Chili Ave., Monday evening 7-9. Funeral services Tuesday morning, 11 o'clock at the funeral home. Interment, N. Chili Cemetery. Friends wishing may contribute to the Edgewood Free Methodist Church in her memo-



This and following pages are from family Bible of Zephi Metcalfs

"WHAT GOD HATH JOINED TOGETHER LET NOT MAN PUT ASUNDER."



This Certifies

THAT THE RITE OF

HOLY MATRIMONY

WAS CELEBRATED BETWEEN

Zephi D. Metcalf of the town of Richford St. N.Y.  
and Harriet Gould, of town of Centerwill St. N.Y.  
on the 22 day of february 1844 were joined  
together by Nathan Fellows

Witness:

Minister of the gospel  
Oliver H. Damon Levi  
Metcalf

# Marriages

Ilda E. Metcalf was married  
to Ruben L. Hudson Jan. 7<sup>th</sup> 1891

A. D. Metcalf was  
married March 1876  
to Mary C. Gaston

# Births

Algernon A Metcalf,  
Born; Oct, 8<sup>th</sup> 1846.

William W. Metcalf,  
Born; Dec; 17<sup>th</sup> 1863

Harley A Metcalf,  
Born; Feb; 4<sup>th</sup> 1849.

D. Ormump Metcalf  
Born; Oct; 10<sup>th</sup> 1865

Amos D Metcalf,  
Born; July 9<sup>th</sup> 1851.

Harriet Gould  
was born March  
the first. 18.24

Ida Ellen Metcalf  
Born; Feb, 26 1853.

Zeph D Metcalf  
was born June  
the 14. 18.21

Levi Phillips Metcalf,  
Born; Sept, 9<sup>th</sup> 1835

Ernest Metcalf  
Born, Feb, 2<sup>nd</sup> 1885

Dora R Metcalf  
Born; Sept; 4<sup>th</sup> 1857

Frankie Metcalf  
borned June 16 1898.

James C Metcalf  
Born; April, 10<sup>th</sup> 1862

Artie Clifford Metcalf  
Borned Nov. 23, 1900.

Frederick Metcalf Born

March 5 1885

# Deaths

Levi P. Metcalf: Feb. 17<sup>th</sup> 1856

James C. Metcalf: June 13<sup>th</sup> 1868

Mary C. Metcalf

September 14<sup>th</sup> 1884

Gephri D  
Metcalf

January 23  
1896

## GENERAL AFFIDAVIT.

State of KansasCounty of Cowley

ss:

In the matter of claim for

Algeron Metcalf  
8118 Ill  
(Character and number of claim.)

(Full name and relationship of claimant, and name and service of soldier.)

Personally came before me, a Notary Public

(Justice, Notary, Judge, Clerk or Deputy Clerk.)

in and for

aforesaid County and State, J. B. Metcalf

(Here write the name of affiant, or of each affiant, together with age, residence and Post-Office address.)

71 years old  
Residing in Dexter, Cowley County, Kansas.  
Post-Office Address. Dexter, Kansas

a person of lawful age, who, being duly sworn, declares in relation to the aforesaid case as follows:

I am the Father of Algeron Metcalf  
He joined with me after the war  
of the Rebellion for 12 years and has  
lived near my home to me ever since  
he left my house. And during all of  
the said time until this date he  
has been afflicted as follows,  
with disease of digestive organs  
also disease of eyes, heart & back.  
That he was a healthy man when  
he enlisted in the army

I further declare that I have no interest in said case, and am not  
concerned in its prosecution.

If either affiant sign by X mark, two persons who write their names MUST sign here as witnesses thereon.

(Name of one witness, X mark.)

Signature of  
Affiant, or of  
each Affiant.J. B. Metcalf

prepared by GEORGE E. LEMON, of Washington, D. C., and is Exclusively for his Use

ACT OF MAY 11, 1912.

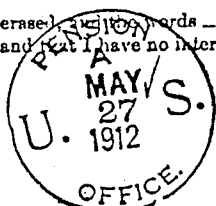
3-014.

## DECLARATION FOR PENSION.

THE PENSION CERTIFICATE SHOULD NOT BE FORWARDED WITH THE APPLICATION.

State of Missouri, County of Madison, ss:On this 23 day of May, A. D. one thousand nine hundred and twelve, personally appeared before me, a Nathaniel Public within and for the county and State aforesaid,Algeroy M. Metcalf who, being duly sworn according to law, declares that he is 65 years of age, and a resident of Arcola, county of Madison,State of Missouri; and that he is the identical person who was ENROLLED at Springfield Illinois under the name of Algeroy Metcalfon the 1st day of March, 1865 as a private in Company (D) Regiment of Illinois Mounted Infantry (# 118)(Here state rank, and company and regiment in the Army, or vessel if in the Navy.)  
in the service of the United States, in the Civil war, and was HONORABLY DISCHARGEDat Baton Rouge, Louisiana on the first day of October, 1865That he also served \_\_\_\_\_  
(Here give a complete statement of all other services, if any.)That he was not employed in the military or naval service of the United States otherwise than as stated above. That his personal description at enlistment was as follows: Height, 5 feet 3 inches; complexion, Fair; color of eyes, Blue; color of hair, Black; that his occupation was Farmer; that he was born Oct 8, 1846 at Near Rockford, AlleganyCounty New York.That his several places of residence since leaving the service have been as follows: Illinois, Kansas  
Missouri 9 years (and give dates)  
(Give date of each change, as nearly as possible.)That he is a pensioner under certificate No. 671749. That he has \_\_\_\_\_ applied for pension under original No. \_\_\_\_\_

That he makes this declaration for the purpose of being placed on the pension roll of the United States under the provisions of the act of May 11, 1912.

That his post-office address is Arcola, county of Madison, State of MissouriAttest: (1) \_\_\_\_\_  
(2) \_\_\_\_\_Algeroy Metcalf  
(Claimant's signature in full.)SUBSCRIBED and sworn to before me this 23 day of May, A. D. 1912, and I hereby certify that the contents of the above declaration were fully made known and explained to the applicant before swearing, including the words yeserased words \_\_\_\_\_  
and that I have no interest, direct or indirect, in the prosecution of this claim.W. H. Brickley  
(Signature.)  
Nathaniel Public  
Notary Commissioner Expires Oct. 28, 1914.Validity accepted  
S. A. C. JCS  
Chief, Law Division

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR  
BUREAU OF PENSIONS

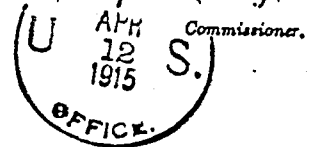
WASHINGTON, D. C., January 2, 1915.

Sir: Please answer, at your earliest convenience, the questions enumerated below. The information is requested for future use, and it may be of great value to your widow or children. Use the inclosed envelope, which requires no stamp.

Very respectfully,

ALGEROY METCALF  
ARCOLA MO  
671749

ACT MAY



- No. 1. Date and place of birth? Answer. October 8, 1849, Allegany Co. New York.
- The name of organizations in which you served? Answer. U.S. Prisoner of War.
- No. 2. What was your post office at enlistment? Answer. Fountain Green Hancock Co. Ill.
- No. 3. State your wife's full name and her maiden name. Answer. Carrie Armina Metcalf, Cross
- No. 4. When, where, and by whom were you married? Answer. By James Easton, Erie Ne. Co. Kansas.
- No. 5. Is there any official or church record of your marriage?  
If so, where? Answer. If any at Erie Kansas.
- No. 6. Were you previously married? If so, state the name of your former wife, the date of the marriage, and the date and place of her death or divorce. If there was more than one previous marriage, let your answer include all former wives. Answer. No.
- No. 7. If your present wife was married before her marriage to you, state the name of her former husband, the date of such marriage, and the date and place of his death or divorce, and state whether he ever rendered any military or naval service, and, if so, give name of the organization in which he served. If she was married more than once before her marriage to you, let your answer include all former husbands. Answer. No.
- No. 8. Are you now living with your wife, or has there been a separation? Answer. Yes.
- No. 9. State the names and dates of birth of all your children, living or dead. Answer. Flora Metcalf born May 15, 1877. Ida Metcalf born August 22, 1878. Ernest Metcalf born September 25, 1880. Arthur Metcalf born January 6, 1883. James Metcalf born April 6, 1885. Felix Metcalf born October 2, 1887. dead. Lancelot Metcalf born August 19, 1892. dead. Addie Metcalf born April 28, 1890. Anna Metcalf born April 28, 1890. Albert Metcalf born January 28, 1896. Bertha Metcalf born January 4, 1898. McKinley Metcalf born December 21, 1899.

Date April 8, 1915.

(Signature)

Algeroy Metcalf

ACT JUNE 27, '90

S-402.

Certificate No. 671749 Department of the Interior,  
 Name, Algeroy Metcalf BUREAU OF PENSIONS.

Washington, D. C., January 15, 1898.

SIR:

In forwarding to the pension agent the executed voucher for your next quarterly payment please favor me by returning this circular to him with replies to the questions enumerated below.

Very respectfully,

Algeroy Metcalf  
cedar Vale

McKay Brand  
 Commissioner.

Chautauque Co Kan

First. Are you married? If so, please state your wife's full name and her maiden name.

Answer. Barrie Armina Cross

Second. When, where, and by whom were you married?

Answer. August 2, 1876 James Easton Mead & Co. Secretary

Third. What record of marriage exists?

Answer. License & return

Fourth. Were you previously married? If so, please state the name of your former wife and the date and place of her death or divorce.

Answer. No

Fifth. Have you any children living? If so, please state their names and the dates of their birth.

Answer. Gloria 1877, Eda 1878, Ernest 1880,  
Arthur 1883, Agnes 1885, Felix 1887,  
Eda & Anna 1890, Elbert 1896, Etta 1898.

Date of reply, May 1, 1898

Algeroy Metcalf  
 (Signature.)

0-3

5301b750ml-06

ACT OF APRIL 19, 1908.

## DECLARATION FOR WIDOW'S PENSION.

STATE OF MISSOURI,  
County of Dade,

On this 14th day of July, A. D. one thousand nine hundred and twenty-one  
personally appeared before me, a Judge of Probate within  
and for the county and State aforesaid, Carrie A. Metcalf, aged 64  
years, a resident of Arcola MO county of Dade State of MO who, being duly sworn  
according to law, makes the following declaration in order to obtain pension under the provisions of the ACT OF CONGRESS  
APPROVED APRIL 19, 1908.

That she is the widow of Algeroy Metcalf who was  
Enrolled under the name of Algeroy Metcalf at  
(Enrolled or commissioned)  
on the 18th day of August, 1876  
as a Private in Co. I, 118 Regt. Missouri Inf. and  
(Here state rank and company in the Army, or vessels if in the Navy.)  
honorably discharged October 1, 1878 having served ninety days or more during the late civil war.  
That he also served \_\_\_\_\_  
(Here give a complete statement of all other services, if any.)

That he was not in the military or naval service of the United States otherwise than as stated above.  
That she was married under the name of Carrie A. Cross  
to said soldier at Erie Kansas, on the 2d day  
of August A. D. 1876 by James Gaston Justice of the Peace  
that there was no legal barrier to the marriage; that she had not been previously married; that the soldier had not  
been previously married.  
(If there was a prior marriage of either, the date and place of death or divorce of former consort or consorts should be stated.)

and that neither she nor said soldier married otherwise than as stated above.

That the said soldier died June 15th, 1921 at Arcola Missouri  
that she was not divorced from him, and that she has not remarried since his death.  
That the said soldier left the following-named children who are now living and under sixteen years of age, to-wit:  
(if the soldier left no children, the claimant should so state.)

born \_\_\_\_\_ at \_\_\_\_\_  
born \_\_\_\_\_ at \_\_\_\_\_  
born \_\_\_\_\_ at \_\_\_\_\_  
born \_\_\_\_\_ at \_\_\_\_\_  
born \_\_\_\_\_ at \_\_\_\_\_  
born \_\_\_\_\_ at \_\_\_\_\_

That she has not heretofore applied for pension

(If prior application has been made, the number thereof, the service on which

it was based, and the name of the soldier should be stated.)

That her post-office address is Arcola, county of Dade, State of Missouri

ATTEST: (1)

(2)

Carrie A. Metcalf  
Claimant's signature in full.

Also personally appeared Agnes A. Sartin, residing in

Dade County MO and William McKinley Metcalf, residing in  
Dade County MO persons whom I certify to be respectable and entitled to credit, and who, being by

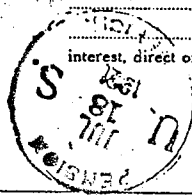
me duly sworn, say they were present and saw Carrie A. Metcalf, the  
claimant, sign her name (or make her mark) to the foregoing declaration, that they have every reason to believe, from the appear-  
ance of said claimant and their acquaintance with her of 36 years and 21 years, respectively, that she is the  
identical person she represents herself to be, and that they have no interest in the prosecution of this claim.

Agnes A. Sartin  
William McKinley Metcalf  
Signatures of witnesses

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 14th day of July, A. D. 1921  
and I hereby certify that the contents of the above declaration, etc., were fully made known and ex-  
plained to the applicant and witnesses before swearing, including the words \_\_\_\_\_  
erased, and the words \_\_\_\_\_  
added; and that I have no

[L. S.]

interest, direct or indirect, in the prosecution of this claim.



W. M. Montgomery  
Judge of Probate

Letter from Ida Metcalf Fesler (daughter of Algeroy and Carrie Metcalf) to her first cousin, Dolie Monroe Metcalf (son of Aminzo and Mary Metcalf).

Box 751  
Canadian Texas  
Oct. 25 - 52

Dear Cousin Dolie.

Just received your good letter and thought I would try to answer it, as we won't be at home Sunday and Monday I have an appointment with an eye specialist in Amarillo for Monday and Sunday is my babies birthday and they are having a dinner for him and want us to come. my oldest boys birthday was last Sunday and we didn't get to go. I guess you knew my husband he was raised out north of where I was working when you were out there he was Andy Feslers oldest son his name is Jasper Fesler. We have five children four boys and one girl. My oldest boy we named him Dolie A. Fesler he was forty six last Sunday he lives in Amarillo fires at the base his wife got killed at a dance hall she started home and was hit by a car he is married again and have a little girl his first child. my second son his name is Ralph he was forty three in August the 13 he is married has three children two girls and a boy and he is a smelter Boss. he lives at Dumas Texas. and my next child is a girl she married a man by the name of Rozelle and had five children three boys and two girls. her oldest boy is in England the second has been over in Corea about two years and her third is in the air core in camp in Ill. he is about to finish his schooling and the girls is aiming to be married about Xmas. and my third boy is in Midland Texas he is 38 yrs old he has two boys they are going to school the oldest one is 17 he is in high school. his name is Joe the other one is 14 yrs old and in high school. his name is Melvin. now I will finish telling you about my third boy the father of these two boys he is a driller he bought his home in

Midland Texas he is 38 yrs old he has two boys they are going to school the oldest one is 17 he is in high school. his name is Joe the other one is 14 yrs old and in high school. his name is Melvin. now I will finish telling you about my third boy the father of these two boys he is a driller he bought his home in Midland Texas he will be 39 the 26 of Dec. his name is Woodie. and my Baby will be thirty two to morrow the 26th his name is Bryce C. he lives in Amarillo he works at the pantex secret work he owns his own home there he has three children two girls and a boy. yes Dolie it sure was a surprise when my husband came in and gave me your mail. you were right about the last that we saw each other it was while you were at Skavelins and I were at Hugh hines I guess you knew that Mr. Hines got killed at K.C. and Mrs. Hines is living in C.V. she is a cripple in a wheel chair and we usaly stop in to see her when we go up there. Mother Fesler passed away in March we were up there then and then we were back in July on a fishing trip. but next year they say they are going to louisiana. we saw a big write up in the C.V. papper from Guy and Artie was that Uncle Wallace Grandson or his son. Is your wife living you did not say. where is Johnie and Grace.

I will close for this time hoping to hear from you again. if you do come through here again we live at 515 Main stop and see us. and we will try to treat you right. loads of love to you from Mr. and Mrs. W.J. Fesler, May god Bless and Keep you.

---

Ida Metcalf Fesler was born in 1878 and Dolie Metcalf in 1877 so the two first cousins were contemporaries of each other. The letter indicates that they had been employed on nearby farms around the turn of the century. The Skavlen (Skavelin) property was at the northeast corner of Cedar Vale, KS, and the Hugh Hines home a scant two miles NNE. Ida must have been impressed with her young cousin, Dolie, to have named her firstborn after him. At the time the letter was written, it appears that they had not seen each other for about 50 years.

Note: The following pages are copies of the original, hand-written letter.

Box 767 Canadian

Texas  
Oct. 25-52

Dear Cousin Volie.  
Just received your good letter and thought I would try to answer it as we won't be at home Sunday and Monday I have an appointment with an eye specialist in Amarillo for Monday and Sunday is my baby birthday and they are having a dinner for him and want us to come my oldest boys birth day was last Sunday and we didn't get to go. I guess you knew our Hubert he was raised out North ok where I was

cup there and there we were back in July on a fishing trip. but next year they say they are going to Louisiana. we saw a big write up in the B.A. paper from Guy and Artie about that Uncle Wallace Broadson or his son. Is your wife living you did not say. where is Gennie and Grace. I will call for this time hoping to hear from you again. if you do come through here again we live at 575 Main stop and see us and we will try to treat you right loads of love to you from our and Mrs. M. F. Fegley, who is good

The Vedette, June 21, 1984, Page 9

# GREENFIELD, MO.

Mr. and Mrs. Raymond Cooper of Magalia, Calif., are visiting Mr. and Mrs. Ira Cooper and other relatives in this area. He is our brother Dewey's oldest son. They came to attend the Metcalf reunion which was at the Community Building in Arcola Sunday June 17th. Here is a list of the ones there. Hope there isn't anyone left out. Mr. and Mrs. Cecil Call, Chulan, Washington; Mr. and Mrs. Milton Hunt, Manson, Wash.; Mr. and Mrs. Claude Faubion; Claremore, Oklahoma; Jennifer and Linda Mallock, Manson, Wash.; Floretta and Lori Haggard, Coffeyville, Okla.; Mr. and Mrs. Joe Prater, Everton, Arkansas; Mr. and Mrs. Wallace Metcalf, Poyen, Arkansas; Mr. and Mrs. Raymond Cooper, Magalia, Calif.; Mr. and Mrs. Wayne Roark, Cabool, Mo.; Esther Cooper, Manson, Wash.; Mrs. Harriet Thomason, Manson, Wa.; Mr. and Mrs. Woodrow Metcalf, Jerico Springs, Mo.; Mr. and Mrs. Luther Thomason, Teresa and Timmy, Nevada, Mo.; Mrs. Elsie (Trent) Rand and Mrs. Lea Trent, Norfolk, Arkansas; Alene (Trent) Bell, Arvada, Colo.; Ernest, Nancy and Jeanette Metcalf, Jerico Springs, Mo.; Richard and Christine Metcalf, Benton, Ark.; Jason Metcalf, Bryant, Ark.; Betty Beasley, Paul and Casey, Arcola, Mo.; L.D., Ronetta, Amber and Alex Metcalf, Benton, Arkansas; Martin Metcalf, Benton, Arkansas; Wanda Goshen, Bryant, Arkansas, Mr. and Mrs. Irvin Metcalf, Bauxite, Arkansas, Howard G. Metcalf, Mabelvale, Ark.; Marsha, Evon and Richard Evans, Alexander, Ark.; Franklin Lowry, Arcola, Dalvin Metcalf, Benton, Ark.; Evea Metcalf, Jerico Springs, Mo.; Lorraine Taylor, Leland and Melba Metcalf, Jerico Springs, Mo.; Gloria Scott, Darrell Thomason, and Ricky Leivon, Jasper, Mo.

Mr. and Mrs. Ira Cooper, Mr. and Mrs. Gerald

Beach, Arcola, Mo.; Mary Dull (Booker) and Lee Booker, Stockton, Mo.; Herman Reed, Arcola, Mo.; Eugene and Connie (Trent) Hump and Darren, Lockwood, Mo.; Katrina Robinette, Suzie Goshen, Jason Metcalf, Kathy, John, Jason, and Tosha Lida, Joplin, Mo.; Mr. and Mrs. John Thomason and sons, Lamar, Mo.; Mr. and Mrs. Shorty Murray (Lena Cooper) Greenfield, Mr. and Mrs. Luther Thomason and children, Jasper, Mo.; Willia Smith, Udall, Kansas, Mr. and Mrs. Gene Lynch, El Dorado, Kansas; Carol Moore, Danielle and Tyson, El Dorado, Kansas.

I hope there wasn't anyone left out and that I got the names spelled right. This is the list as they signed the register. This is all the relatives and friends of the late Ernest and Susie Metcalf.

Their daughter Dora was married to our brother Dewey Cooper. She passed away almost 56 years ago from typhoid fever leaving three little boys who our parents Mr. and Mrs. B.F. Cooper helped Dewey raise. Raymond and Tom live in California and Clellis who was only 4 months old when his mother died lives in Nebraska.

There were 13 Metcalf children of which 10 are still living. They were all at Arcola Sunday. They all met at Jerico Springs on Saturday, June 16th. Here is a list of the ones who were there.

Woodrow and Uthema Metcalf, Milton and Edna Mae Hunt, Linda and Jennifer Mallock, Floretta and Lori Haggard, Flora and Claude Faubion, Irvin and Eileen Metcalf, Wallace and Hattie Metcalf, Harriett Thomason, Luther and Emma Lou Thomason, Teresa and Timmie, Carolyn and Wayne Roarke, Esther Cooper, Lea Trent, Alene Bell, Elsie Pearl Rand, Elsie and Cecil Call. Everyone enjoyed both days getting re-acquainted eating and taking pictures.

## METCALFREUNION

Sunday, June 13, was a very enjoyable day at the Jerico Springs Park when the family of the late Ernest and Susie Metcalf met for a get-together with their brothers, sisters, aunts, uncles, cousins and friends.

There were 13 children born to the Metcalfs. Ten are still living. Dora passed away 54 years ago from typhoid fever. Ivan passed away in infancy and Arnold passed away about one and a half years ago. This was the first time they had all been together for 29 years.

Dora was married to Dewey Cooper who passed away 27 years ago. He was the son of the late Ben

and Jane Cooper. There is only five of the Cooper children left and they were all at the reunion.

Those who were there for the bountiful meal or at sometime during the day to visit with them were: Wallace and Hattie Metcalf and grandchildren, Jason Metcalf and Susie Goshen, of Benton, Ark.; Woodrow and Uthema Metcalf, Jerico Springs; Irvin and Eileen Metcalf Bauxite, Ark.; Esther (Metcalf) Cooper, Melton and Edna Mae (Metcalf) Hunt, Manson, Wash.; Elsie (Metcalf) Call, Harriet (Metcalf) Thomason and son, James, of Chelan, Wash.; Claude and Flora (Metcalf) Faubion, Cousin, Okla.; Joseph and Willia Marie (Metcalf) Prater, Wow, Mexico; Lea (Metcalf) Trent, Norfolk, Ark.; Mrs. Elsie Kelley, South Greenfield; Julia Loveall, Greenfield; Willia Smith, Udall, Kan.; Gerald and Leona Beach, Ira and Gladys Cooper, Arcola; Raymond and Goldie Brees, Vernon Brees and Dorothy Marie Rhodes, Red Oak, Iowa; Arab and Ethel Hunt, Texas; Elsie Jeffries and son, Lavern, Lamar; Elsie Rand, Mt. Home, Ark.; Orvan Trent, Bakersfield, Mo.; Linda and Jennifer Mallock, Manson, Wash.; Floretta Haggard and Lori, Oogla, Okla.; Pearl Hartsell, Jerico Springs; Etta Fellows, Milford;

## Reunion of 1982

Harold and Nellie Garder and son, Bob, and Earl Green, Lamar; Gene and Hazel Lynch, El Dorado, Kan.; Martin and Karin Metcalf, Benton, Ark.; Evea Metcalf, Leland and Melba Metcalf, Abner and Margaret Fyfe, Jerico Springs; Melita and John Baldwin, Lamar; Leona Baldwin, Jerico Springs; and her daughter, Marva, and her daughter, Julie and Travis Spencer, Lamar; Darrell Thomason, John and Kathy Lida and family, Jasper; John and Norma Thomason and family, Lamar; Jamie Thomason, Luther Jr. Thomason, Luther Sr. and Emma Lou Thomason and family, Rich Hill; Wayne and Janet Loveall, Raytown; Charley and Mary Jane White, Arcola; Annie Deifendefor, Lockwood; Catherine Baird, Kansas City; Frances Morrison, Veral Haynes, Fay Johnson, Mr. and Mrs. Clifford Decker, Arcola; Jane Zumwalt, John and Justin, Stockton.

It was a beautiful day and everyone enjoyed being together once more. It had been 50 years since some of us had seen each other. The afternoon was spent visiting and taking pictures. All left at a late hour hoping to get together again sometime. I hope I haven't left out anyone. If so, I'm sorry.

# Metcalf has number one VFW speech

By JEANNETTE METCALF

(Editor's Note: Jeanette Metcalf, a Lamar High School sophomore, had the first place essay in the VFW Voice of Democracy contest.)

Why am I proud of America? When I asked myself that question I found it very hard to come up with some definite answers. At first I thought of listing all of the freedoms that we as Americans have, but somehow that didn't seem to be enough. I considered speaking on the differences between our governments and communist governments, but that didn't really answer my question either.

What is it about America that makes me so proud? Well, I was finally able to narrow it down to one word, spirit.

So I ask myself again, "Why am I proud of America?" But this time I can answer boldly and without hesitation, "I am proud of America because, as an American, I have within the same unbreakable spirit that has filled all of those great Americans before me."

When I think of America, I think of all the times in our history when people told us, "It is impossible" but we said, "There is a way, and we will find it."



Jeanette Metcalf

When our country was just beginning, Great Britain told us that we could never have our independence. But the Americans of the day had an unbreakable spirit and the determination to fight until they had won. And they won the fight!

During the Civil War our great nation was divided, and many people thought that the spirit that had pulled us together would be the very force that would tear us apart. It almost did.

But our spirit could not be broken, and the pride felt by all Americans could not be shaken. Out of the depths of a war torn land, America pulled together to rebuild and replenish what had

been lost.

The spirit of America has shown itself in other ways too. Since our country's earliest beginnings, Americans have yearned to seek out and conquer new frontiers. The great move west, the California gold rush, the telegraph, the telephone, and later the invention of the automobile all helped to shape and mold our country into what it is today. All of these things have served to strengthen America, yet none of them would have occurred if some great Americans had not had the spirit to make their dreams reality.

America is not a perfect country. Crime and poverty occur here just like anywhere else. But unlike other countries where people are shot without a fair trial, or left to die of starvation without a second thought; I have seen in America a spirit of compassion. Compassion toward the criminal who is given a second chance in life. Compassion for the abused child who is taken where he will not be hurt again. And even compassion toward those who were persecuted in other countries, and are now being allowed to come to America, where they can be free!



Lamar VFW Voice of Democracy winners gave their speeches to the VFW and VFW Auxiliary Sunday. Left to right, Auxiliary Voice of Democracy Chairman Pearl Wood, VFW Chairman Don Gage, Jeanette Metcalf, first place; Brad Stansell, second place, and Janet McCormick, Lamar High School sponsor. Not present, Mike Diggs, third place. (Democrat photo by Randy Turner)

Jeanette is daughter of Ernest Ray, granddaughter of Irvin, and great-granddaughter of Ernest Lawson and Susie Metcalf. From Lamar Democrat (Lamar, MO), 14 December 1989.

Lamar Democrat - Dec. 14, 1989

# Relative

Descendants of Lake City's very earliest settler, a man who has been accorded the title of "Father of Lake City," returned to the area for a brief visit this week. Loreene Sisson and her brother, Mel, of Paradise, Calif., are respectively a great-granddaughter and great-grandson of Enos Throop Hotchkiss, the pioneer who built Lake City's first cabin in 1874.

Loreene and Mel are the children of Mende Hotchkiss Sisson, whose father, Andrew Monette, was Enos Hotchkiss' eldest son and a pioneer of the Lake City area in his own right.

The ties of the Hotchkiss family in Hinsdale County go back over a century and are intermingled with the very early beginnings of discovery and settlement in the Lake Fork Valley.

Enos Hotchkiss was engaged by Otto Mears and other investors of Saguache County during the spring of 1874 to carve a road through the wilderness from the town of Saguache to the forks of the Animas River, a distance of approximately 140 miles through what was at that time some of the most untamed and raw wilderness in the Territory of Colorado. Accompanying Enos on the expedition, and as part of the road-building crew, were Hartley Metcalf (who was later to marry Enos' daughter Ella May) and Enos' son, Andrew Monette. It was in August of 1874 that Enos and his road crew reached the shores of Lake San Cristobal. The resulting scene may well be envisioned, of the weary group, tired and dirty from long days of road construction, throwing off their clothes and jumping into the cool alpine lake. After refreshing themselves, and according to popular legend, Hotchkiss built a log raft and using shovels for oars crossed over the lake to the opposite shore. Once there Hotchkiss recognized the familiar signs of mineral-bearing rock and staked the Hotchkiss Claim, a claim which was to prove fabulously rich once news of its discovery reached the outside world. Following the Lake Fork River down to the present site of Lake City, Enos built the first cabin to be constructed in the area. The cabin, really nothing more than a log shack with dirt floor and flat, earthen roof, was built near the corner of 3rd and Gunnison Avenue on August 16, 1874. The

# of Lake City's "Father"

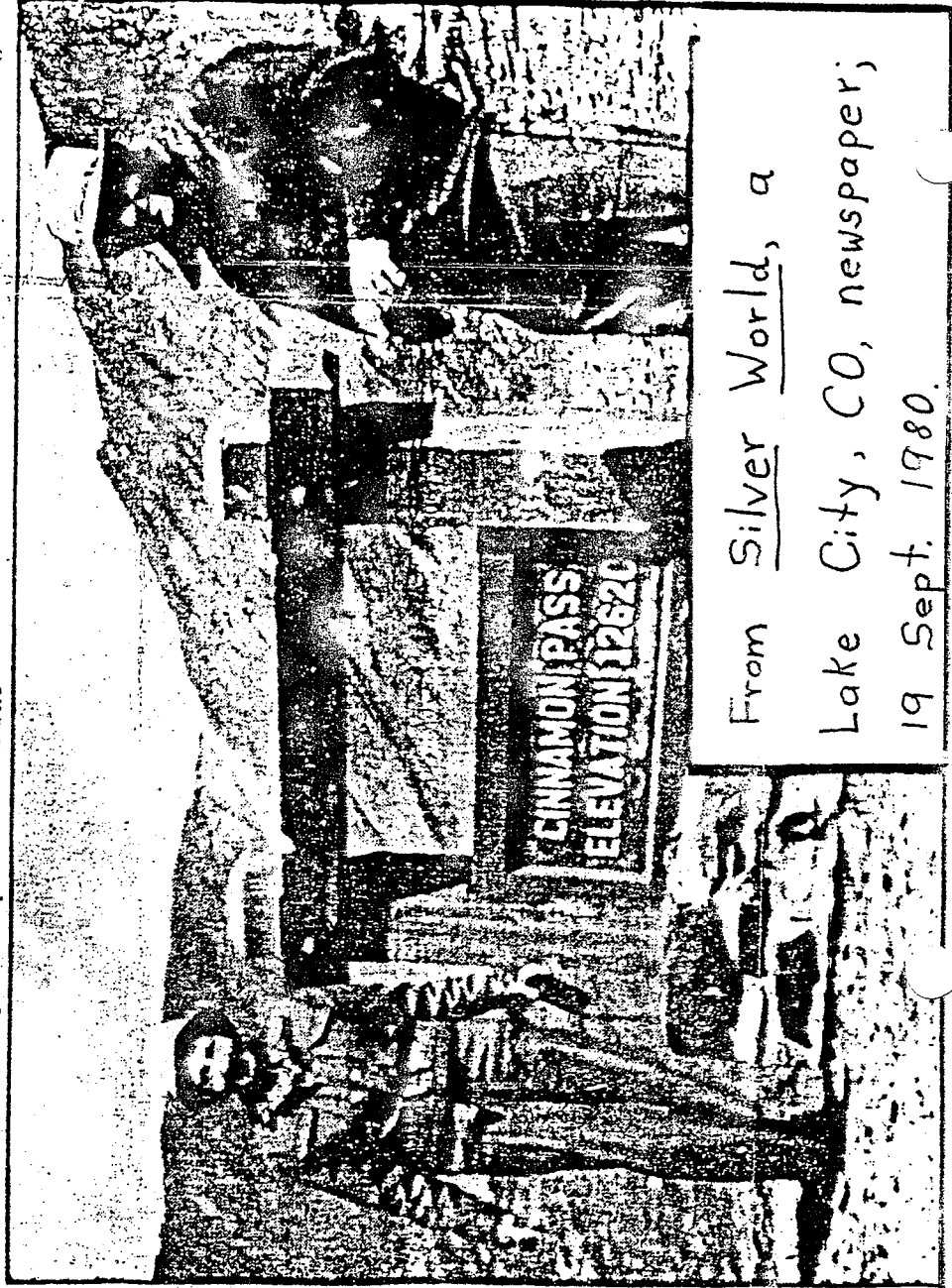
structure remained, surrounded by more and more imposing buildings as Lake City grew through the succeeding years, until it was finally demolished by school children in the early 1880's.

After scouting the immediate area and deciding that the flat location was best suited for the new town he envisioned, Hotchkiss continued on up the Lake Fork Valley with his road crew, over Cinnamon Pass, and into the Animas River Valley.

Enos returned the following spring to supervise development of the Hotchkiss Claim, additionally staking out a claim at the Lower, Granite Falls above Lake City for a potential power source. The

Church sawmill, located at the falls by Hotchkiss' partner D.P. Church, was the first such mill to locate in the area and was responsible for turning out much of the building and mine materials which were required by the growing community. As the population of Lake City continued to grow throughout the 1870's Enos made further prudent investments by leasing out portions of land within the downtown area of Lake City. His son, Andrew Monette, was married to Jeilma C. Barnes, daughter of another early pioneer family of Lake

*Continued Page 8*



From Silver World, a  
Lake City, CO, newspaper;  
19 Sept. 1980.

Letter below and at top of next page to Myrtle Parsons Gorton

July 11/1962.

Dear Myrtle-

I am sorry I have been so pokey in answering your nice and welcome letter-we really were glad to hear from you and sorry we have not been corresponding all these years. Dolie used to tell us excerpts from your letters.

Thanks you for the family information. One of Jack's (Johnnie) half sisters is named Nellie, she lives in Roswell, N.M. Her husband, Oscar Nellie passed away a number of years ago. There are still several half sisters and one half brother living from Jack's Dad's second marriage. One of the girls is Mrs. Bob Brakey, she and husband moved to Imperial Beach, Calif. less than a year ago, they formerly lived in Drummright & Cushing, Okla.

Then there is an Alice, she is widowed and lives in Kans. Violet who lives in a suburb of Okla City, and Zephi lives in So. Euclid, Ohio. his wife's name is Alice too, both have heart ailments. They visited us years ago and we enjoyed them very much. The other half brother-Dewey, was killed in a construction accident many years ago.

We hear from Grace's daughters occasionally, both are lovely girls. Gracie was a fine person and a musician, it cut deeply when she passed away.

I just cannot figure whose daughter you are. Have heard of Jack's uncles Eli, Hartley, Alzeroy, Dock and Wallace- was one of the former your Father? We would love to meet you-were on San Francisco, in 1959-son lived there then. On way home I fell off one of Gallup, N.M.' side walks and fractured my right hip, was in a hospital in Gallup, then transferred to Presbyterian hospital in Albuquerque for orthopedic treatment. Hip healed nicely but later the hip became loose and year ago last April I went to Okla City to have the taken care of. Came out of that in

good shape but have arthritis in my knees and back and that slows me up considerably. We, also, are getting along in years-were 82 last May, our birthdays are four days apart.

As you know we lived in Bartlesville, about 16 years ago we left there and for a retirement place bought in this Spanish War Veterans (USWV) park. It is composed of 800 acres plus, primarily, was just for retired S.P.W veterans but for past several have been allowing other veteran groups in also as the senior soldiers are passing at a rapid rate, only five of them left in here now. This is a very pretty part of Okla. So. E. part, in foot of Winding Stair mts.

Altho Jack has had an anemic blood condition for years, and now legs bother he gets around quite well, both have been blessed with good health, with the hip fracture I did not stay in bed-got around on crutches-one crutch, then none but am lame.

Summer is here now, usually cool at night tho. have had lots of rain-dry at present.

Our son is a correctional officer at Terminal Federal prison in San Pedro, when we were in S.F. he was stationed at Alcatraz, we visited him on the Island while there. Our daughter-in-law- has the Westchester Travel Service in L.A. son has an interest and helps on his days off, her brother is a partner. Latter part of May she and Son took a group to Honolulu, then on up to Seattle Fair. First time Son has been able to get enough time to accompany her on any group trip. Ella has been taking a group to Hawaii for several years, she was on a trip to Europe last summer.

I think you know Dolie's two daughters Margaret and Ruth live in Bartlesville, they had a lovely new home built but Dolie passed away before the home was finished. Margaret is a school teacher and Ruth

\* 3 \*

is office manager and bookkeeper for the Pontiac agency, neither is married, they don't seem to care for masculine company, both are lovely women. Perhaps you hear from them. Dolie's son, wife and small daughter still are in France where he is in service. I know they will be glad to get home, think he has one or two more years over there.

Jack was custodian for this group here for several years but it was impairing his health-he had a nervous breakdown and had to give it.

At present I have several offices (short on members) in the USWV Auxiliary, in earlier years I wrote them for papers-once for four papers. That took too much time and I had to give it up-could not get my own work done.

Believe I've briefed you up on happenings-at least, some of them. We always will be glad to hear from you, I'll try not to be so slow at answering in the future.

*Myrtle Parsons Gorton*  
P.S. We have friends in San Pedro, Merced and Springville, the one from the latter place plans on coming to Okla this month, she will visit us if she comes, she has a daughter in Okla City.

P.S. # 2- Almost forgot to mention two of the clan-Jack's younger brother Guy & wife Myrtle live in Arkansas City, think you must have known her family, they lived not far from Uncle Wallace near Hooser, she had a sister Laura, can't think of her maiden name. She and Guy have four children, several grandchildren and one great grandchild. Am 'loaning' you picture inclosed, of our 60th wedding anniversary Dec. 25th, 1960, thought you might like to see what we look like now-son in middle. Wish I had an extra but only one like this I have, please return when you write. Brochure of Park you may keep. Beryl Metcalf-half brother, wife and two sons live in Kaney.

This and the following 2 pages are letters of Marie Buck Metcalf, who was noteworthy for the large volume of correspondence that she maintained even when she was over 100 years old.

Dear Mrs. Gorton-

May 23/1962.

You may be surprised to hear from me-I am Mrs. Johnnie (we call him Jack) Metcalf's wife. Have been intending to write you for some time but seemed I could not get down to writing. Presume you know Dolie and Alice are both gone. Am wondering how many of our clan live in Calif-is there a Burt Metcalf amongst them? Our son lives on W. 95th St, also one of Jack. And Dolie's half sisters lives in Imperial Beach. If you still are at this address and I hear from you I will try to brief you on some of the family news. Jack and I formerly lived in Bartlesville but have been in this part of Okla. for approximately 16 years. Juanita and Jesse Flynn enjoyed their visit to Calif several years ago, think they met several of the relatives. We will be glad to hear from you. Sincerely.

*Marie Metcalf*

Almost forgot to mention I passed through 101st. in May, hoped for no flare-up, but it was hectic- rec'd much publicity, some of life story in S.D. newspaper, also same on TV. On Fathers Day I hosted Jack and Lila for dinner. Occasionally, I spend a day or two with them and they come often, think I wrote they had moved nearer to Oceanside., now live on an elevation and need NO air conditioning.

Had better close to avoid further rambling, errors, etc, please - if home- share letter with parents- THANKS for <sup>your</sup> information,

*Love to all*  
*Marie M.*

June 9/1981

Dear Artie :

Judging from Grace's letter rec'd since she attended reunion you may be in Kans. by now. Sorry I have not acknowledged your last usual good letter- had health problems, badly sprained right knee- had company and many other interruptions, but worst factor dwindling energy.

Currently, hotter weather- really gets me down at times. To-day some ambition surfaced. Please remember me to your parents- I'll be belated with most personal correspondence, observing 4 birthdays this month- had health Ins. letter to get off this a.m. I hope all okay and have a pleasant summer. do you still plan on trek to Mass ?

Jack and Lila planning trip to Lake Tahoe this month- former recently again driving after long siege from eye surgery. Almost mail pick up time. Enjoyed 102nd birthday

*8th. of last month.*

*Sincerely*  
*Marie M.*



# - Memorial -

Marie B. Metcalf passed away peacefully  
October 11, 1983 at age 104.

Husband Jack Metcalf Sr. passed away in  
1969 in the Muskegee, Okla. V.A. Hospital.  
After a time, Marie came from her Okla.  
home to Escondido, Calif. to be near son  
Jack Jr. and wife Lila.

She still preferred and capably maintained  
her independent life style in a small mobile  
home until hospitalized near mid-1982, then  
required skilled care thereafter.

No formal ceremony was held. Cremation  
was conducted followed by burial at sea.

Survivors are son Jack Jr.; granddaughter  
Thora Simmons with great grandchildren Tiana  
and Daniel; granddaughter Barronelle Woody  
with great grandchildren Troy and Dawn;  
several nieces and nephews.

A gallant lady will be missed  
and remembered as very special.

Dear Artie

Didn't like the newspaper  
but so am sending this to  
all concerned.

Mom faded very rapidly  
in recent time, and I feel  
she is now at well-earned  
rest.

Take good care.

Highest regards -  
Jack Jr.

Detroit, Apr 4, 1939.

My dear Brother Guy and Family. -

Once again the beautiful time of the year is with us, and everything begins to show signs of resurrection. The plants are peeping up, and the robins are returning and we humans feel like blossoming out too. My family has kept fairly well thru a severe winter. Juan is still at the Gotham Hotel, and August has his little shop in the rear of our home. The children are fine. Madeline's oldest child, Rita, can't say well to be called "child" any longer as she is in High School and larger than her mother. Porrell is 5 yrs. old now, and he ~~is~~ will be starting next fall. Juanita's baby is so sweet (3 yrs old last Jan.) and is talking and asking all kinds of questions. As for me, I never see an idle moment. Have a lovely career in music, and my job as organist for our Auxiliary and Relief Corps, Sunday Programs, and occasional Broadcasts, etc. Life is always so young and interesting to me. How often I think of you dear ones and long to see you, even if only for a short while. I'd would refresh my soul, I'm sure. I see your "birds" have just about outgrown the "Family nest" too. Loads of love - Sister Grace

GRACE FERNANDEZ  
SOPRANO

AVAILABLE FOR SOLO, TRIO  
OR QUARTETTE WORK

FOR APPOINTMENT  
PHONE GLENDALE 0953

Dec. 9. 1939

My dear brother Guy, Was so glad to hear from you after such a long time, but sorry to learn that Grace had lost her husband, and in such a tragic way. It so often happens when people accept rides without knowing whether the driver is intoxicated or not.

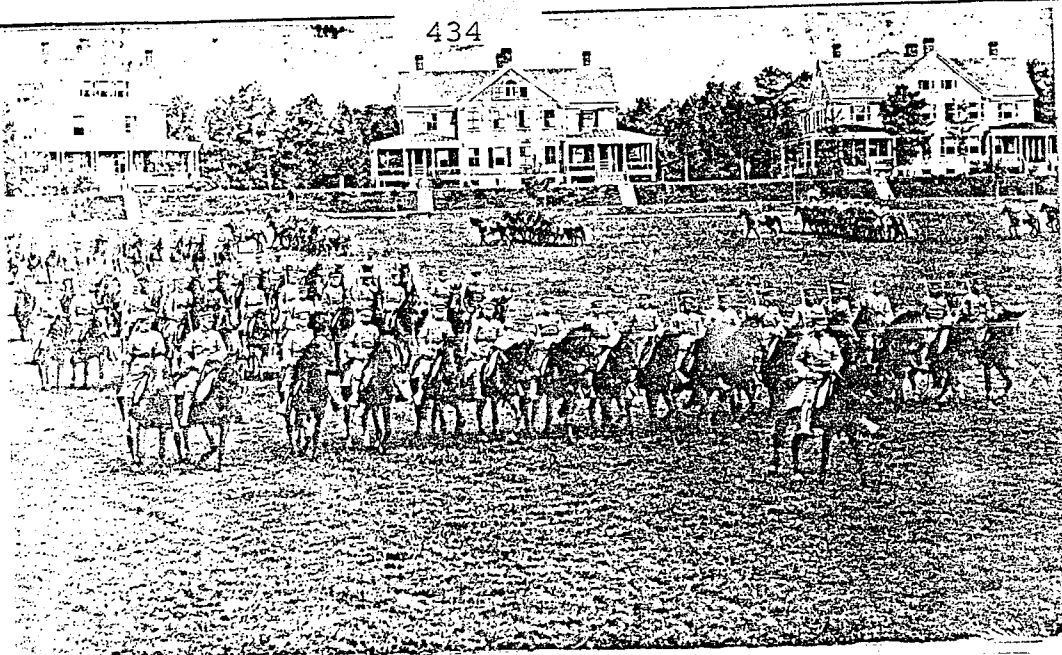
Your family, like mine, is so grown up now, that perhaps the baby will relieve your loneliness to a certain extent. It must have been dreadfully hard to have Don leave for the Hawaiian Islands. Isn't he the "Baby" of your family? I am glad that Guy Jr. and Gould are where you can see them often.

How is Myrtle getting along, and how are you feeling? Did you see Zephi and his family while they were touring out West? I thought they were going to stop here and see us on their way back but they did not. I understand they were to take Sadie back home with them. I like Alice very much, and they are a good Christian family.

Juanita, with her husband and baby are living here with us this winter. They have a home in the next block, but a government project is going up here in a few months, and I told them not to spend any more on improvements. We already have the gas heat, and there is no use of them spending over 200.00 dollars for installing it when we can share it for the winter. I am out so much teaching music and when I come in, I have so much fun with the baby. She will be 4 years old on Jan. 31, and asks so many questions, and in rapid-fire style.

Juan is still at the Gotham Hotel and doing fairly well at present. Madeira and family live on the next corner from us, so we see them every day. Lowell will be 5 years old Feb. 9. and Rita will graduate from High in Jan. She may take a Business course. Miguel still has a shop in the rear of our home.

The family joins me in wishing you and yours a very joyous Holiday season, and perhaps we may see you next year, as Jesse (Juanita's husband) wants to drive us out there when he gets a week off. Loads of love, Sister Grace



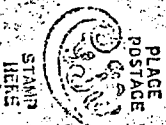
To George



From  
Poppie

PARENT'S SIGNATURE  
1st term Guy E. Metcalf  
2nd term Guy E. Metcalf  
3rd term \_\_\_\_\_  
(Over)

This is a picture  
of the troop. ~~down~~  
left guide of ~~first~~  
platoon marked by  
a cross. They were  
taken a day or so  
after we landed  
here — Guy —



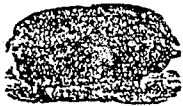
Some items pertaining to Guy Emmett Metcalf. The photo, above, and message at lower right are front and back of a postcard, possibly sent from Georgia in 1907 or 1908 according to GMM. The X on the photo and arrow alongside indicate location of Guy. Left, center, is a note from Guy to his grandson, George Mullenburg. Below, left, are his signatures on a grade report card of daughter, GMM (all A's, of course).

# PUBLIC SALE

Having decided to quit farming I will offer for sale at the old Sinclair farm 3 miles southwest of Hooser, beginning at 10 a. m., on

## Tues. Aug. 14, 1923

All my live stock and farm impliments and other articles to wit:



### HOGS

- 4 Registered G. I. C. Sows
- 1 Registered I. I. C. Boar
- 3 Spring Boars
- 3 Spring Gilt
- 2 Fall Gilt to farrow
- 4 Barrows, weight 125 lbs.

16 Pigs 60 to 90 lbs.

All my hogs Registered or eligible to Register. I have both sexes that are no kin. My breeding stock came from Indiana and Illinois. Some of the best to be had.

- 1 Grey Mare, 7 years, weight 1000.
- 1 Bay Mare, smooth mouth, wt. 1000
- 1 Bay Mare, " " " 1200
- 1 Bay Horse, " " " 1100

- 1 Holstein Cow
- 1 White Face Cow
- 3 Red Cows
- All good milkers.
- 3 Calves

- 2 Wagons with boxes
- 1 Set work Harness
- 1 Heavy Stock Saddle
- 1 Riding Lister
- 1 Disc Cultivator, with extra gangs
- 1 Plow, 14 inch with riding attachment
- 1 Harrow
- 1 Garden Plow
- 1 McCormick Corn Binder

- 1 Cider Mill
- 1 DeLaval Separator
- 1 Pig Feeder
- 1 Bridge Bench Cookstove
- 1 Dresser
- 25 Bu. Potatoes
- 5 Tons Prairie Hay
- AND OTHER ARTICLES TOO NUMEROUS TO MENTION.

LUNCH ON GROUNDS

TERMS=CASH

## GUY E. METCALF, Owner

B. R. DAY, Auctioneer

G. B. CORN, Clerk

Dear Uncle- Hope this  
finds you all over the  
measles. Have you started  
farming yet? People are  
making garden here.  
think I will have mine  
plowed this week. I made  
a garage and set out some  
trees and am going to make  
a chicken yard. The man  
that has the Transfer business  
has promised me a  
job a little later one of  
his men is going away  
but there will be lots of  
work in the Spring we all  
like it fine here so far.  
Come and see when you can. Guy

#### Party Honors Guy Metcalf

Employees and their families and the directors and their families, of the L. C. Adam Mercantile Company gave a dinner party Tuesday night at the Methodist Fellowship hall, honoring Guy Metcalf, who recently retired after 23 years' service with the firm.

At dessert time a large cake was presented to Mr. Metcalf, which he and Mrs. Metcalf cut and served to the group.

After dinner a short program was presented. Liada White gave a reading, Don Shaffer presented a cornet solo, Dorothy Alice Cox played a piano selection, Maurice Smith and Lucile Sweaney sang a duet, and Dana McGill gave a reading.

Other service records given recognition at the dinner were: Miss Georgia Chapman, bookkeeper, 40 years; Hubert Cox, president, 31 years, and Arthur Hassard, meat department, 27 years.

About 75 were present.

#### Couple Marks Golden Year

More than 50 friends and relatives called at an open house at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Metcalf, 115 E. Vine Ave., Saturday afternoon. The Metcalfs were observing their 50th wedding anniversary. Guests were greeted by Gould and Don Metcalf, sons of the couple. Two granddaughters, Gloria and Penny, were in charge of the guest book.

A daughter, Mrs. Grace Muilenburg, Lawrence, and two daughters-in-law, Mrs. Don Metcalf, Colorado Springs, and Mrs. Gould Metcalf, Decatur, Ill., were at the serving table which was accented with a center bouquet of yellow chrysanthemums and a white cake decorated in gold. The cake was inscribed with "50th wedding anniversary, 1911-1961, Guy and Lucy." Napkins were also inscribed in gold with the couple's names.

Above: Postcard written by Guy Metcalf to his uncle, Wallace Metcalf, from Protection, KS, in 1924. Below, left: Account of Guy's retirement in The Cedar Vale Messenger, presumably in 1950. Below, right: Account of Golden Wedding of Myrtle and Guy, with date and source written in by Guy, himself.

Mrs. Metcalf was attired in a golden brown dress and wore a corsage of yellow roses. Mr. Metcalf wore a yellow rose boutonniere in his suit lapel.

Three of the guests at the event were Mrs. Flora Remmy, a cousin of Mr. Metcalf, Theodore Metcalf and A. C. Metcalf, nephews, who were also present at the couple's wedding ceremony, Oct. 21, 1911, at the home of her parents, Mr. and Mrs. Simon Sinclair, rural Dexter.

Only one of the Metcalf's four children was unable to be present for the open house. He is Guy E. Metcalf Jr., San Antonio, his wife and three daughters, Carol, Cindy and Sandra. Another granddaughter, Sharon, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Gould Metcalf, a student in college at Missoula, Mont., was also unable to be present.

Members of the family present, in addition to the above mentioned who assisted with serving, were a son, Gould, and his daughter, Penny, Decatur; a son, Don, and children, Gloria, Keith John and Judy, Colorado Springs; a son-in-law, George Muilenburg and son, Mike, Lawrence.

Other out-of-town friends and relatives present were Mr. and Mrs. George Prather, Mrs. Flora Remmy, Mr. and Mrs. Ralph Houston, Mrs. Maud Stocking, Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd Overman, Miss Frances Rice and Mrs. Ralph Foster, Cedar Vale; Mr. and Mrs. A. C. Metcalf and Mr. and Mrs. Fred Minor, Dexter; Mr. and Mrs. Ted Metcalf and Morris, Wichita, and Mrs. Edna Dungan, Ogden, U.

The couple received many cards and letters of congratulations. Additional greetings were extended to Mrs. Metcalf who was married on her birthday.

Enterprise Bunch

Mrs. Guy

Arkansas City  
Daily Traveler  
Oct. 24-1961

Monday, December 14, 1964

## Guy Metcalf Dies At Home

Rites Tuesday  
For Retired  
Mercantile Man

Funeral services for Guy Emmett Metcalf, 115 E. Vine Ave., who was found dead of a stroke at his home Sunday, will be at 4 p.m. Tuesday in the Erdman-Oldroyd Funeral Service Chapel, with Dr. Clarence Hamm officiating.

Time of death was set at approximately 8 p.m. Saturday.

He was born in rural Dexter Feb. 2, 1885, the son of A. D. and Mary Gaston Metcalf. He was married near Dexter Oct. 21, 1911, to Lucy Sinclair at the home of her parents.

He was employed for many years at the old Adams Mercantile Co. in Cedar Vale, retiring in 1949, and he came to Arkansas City that same year. He returned to Cedar Vale in 1958 for two years, then moved back to Arkansas City.

Survivors are a daughter and three sons, Mrs. Grace Mulenburg of Lawrence, CN-Sgt. Guy Metcalf Jr of Oklahoma City, Gould Metcalf of Decatur, Ill., and Don M. Metcalf of Colorado Springs, 10 grandchildren, and a brother, Jack Metcalf of Wilburton, Okla., and several half-sisters and half-brothers.

Interment will be in Riverview Cemetery under direction of Erdman - Oldroyd Funeral Chapel.

## Lucy Metcalf Service Set

Arkansas City  
Woman Dies  
Tuesday Night



MRS. LUCY METCALF

Mrs. Lucy M. Metcalf, 115 E. Vine Ave., lifetime resident of this area, died at 9 p. m. Tuesday in the Avalon Rest Home where she had been a patient since November but in failing health several years.

Born in rural Dexter, Oct. 21, 1884, she was the daughter of Simon and Caroline Overman Sinclair. As a young woman she taught several years in the schools near Dexter, part of the time at Hoosier.

Lucy Myrtle Sinclair and Guy E. Metcalf were married Oct. 21, 1911 at the home of the bride's parents, south of Dexter. They celebrated their golden wedding with an open house at their home, Oct. 21, 1961.

For 35 years Mr. and Mrs. Metcalf lived in Cedar Vale, where he was employed for the L. C. Adam Mercantile Co. Mr. Metcalf took partial retirement in 1950 and has been fully retired since 1957. He died Dec. 12, 1964.

Mrs. Metcalf was a member of the Cedar Vale Methodist Church.

Survivors include one daughter, Mrs. Grace E. Mulenburg, Lawrence; three sons, Guy E. Metcalf Jr., San Antonio, Gould Metcalf, Decatur, Ill., and Don Metcalf, Colorado Springs; 10 grandchildren and three great-grandchildren. A brother and sister preceded her in death in addition to her parents and husband.

Funeral services will be in the Erdman-Oldroyd Funeral Chapel, Thursday at 4 p. m. Dr. Clarence H. Hamm will officiate and burial will be in Riverview Cemetery beside her husband.

From the  
Arkansas City  
Traveler of  
27 Jan 1965

Our cover story—

# “Land of the Post Rock”

By BETTY LOU DENTON, Home Editor  
Kansas Home and Family

Grace Muilenburg has a love affair with Kansas. That's evident to anyone who talks with her about it or reads her new book, *Land of the Post Rock, Its Origins, History, and People*, which she co-authored with Ada Swineford. (Ada is a former Kansan and a nationally recognized clay mineralogist — one who even has a type of clay, Swinefordite, named in her honor. Presently, professor of geology at Western Washington State College, Miss Swineford wrote the chapter on the geology of the post rock, gave technical advice on the remainder of the book and whenever possible traveled with Grace for interviews and fact finding.)

The book, beautifully illustrated with pictures and drawings Grace took or drew herself as well as pictures taken by others, is a thoroughly-researched comprehensive work. More than 100 years of history and pioneer folklore has been blended with geology, geography and economics in a way that makes for interesting reading — not a book to be used only by scholars.

As Grace herself says, “It's really a book about people and the way the post rock influence their lives.”

While Grace, associate editor and associate professor in the College of Agriculture on the staff of the vice president for agriculture, Kansas State University, was on the staff of the Kansas Geological Survey, she did her first *Land of the Post Rock*. This mimeographed pamphlet was based mainly on material collected from Kansas Geological Survey publications, limited correspondence with area residents and a few excursions to observe post rock outcrops and the stone-post decorated landscape and to talk with people.

Interest in that pamphlet, published first in 1956, led to the new 207-page book. Even before Grace decided definitely, sometime between 1956 and 1970, to put the story into book form, her file bulged with information about the area and its people.

In all she, and Ada during vacations since 1971, interviewed over 300 people, traveled countless miles and researched numerous sources before attempting to put her information on paper. Through the years as her file grew, Grace attempted to separate fact from folklore. Although she did not completely succeed, Grace says this “may be just as well for who can conceive of any heritage that does not include a bit of folklore?”

Post Rock country, Grace tells us, stretches about 200 miles from the Nebraska border near Mahaska, northwestern Washington County, almost directly southwest to a few miles north of Dodge City, Ford County. East to west, the boundaries of the area so zigzag that its width ranges from less than 10 to more than 40 miles (to approximately 60 miles if measured along Interstate 70). Roughly it covers 5,000 square miles, or more than three million acres.

All or parts of Republic, Jewell, Osborne, Mitchell, Cloud, Ottawa, Lincoln, Russell, Ellis, Ness, Rush, Barton, Ellsworth, Pawnee and Hodgeman are in the post rock country proper. In the area immediately west of this, rock resembling the Fencepost limestone, Fort Hays chalk, has also been quarried for posts. (Fencepost limestone is typically creamybuff with a brown stripe.)

Although it's possible to find posts quarried of other rocks in Kansas and in some foreign countries, such as India, Africa and

central and northern Europe, the authors doubt any other region could claim a single bed of rock used so extensively for fence posts that they have become an identifying feature of the landscape.

Early geographies had shown the treeless Kansas prairie as a part of the Great American desert; no doubt, deterring some early settlers. But the settlers did come in spite of the treeless landscape, the Indians and the cattlemen who hoped to keep the free range after they found the prairie grass would support livestock with no supplemental feeding.

Mrs. Muilenburg explains in easy conversational tones the interaction of factors which played an important part in the settling of the area — the Homestead Act of 1862, migration fever of the 1870's, the coming of the railroads and others.

To a native Kansan who hasn't studied our state's history for some years, it was interesting to read how immigrants from seven principal European nationalities settled the area and perpetuated the heritage of their homeland. (Principal settlements were German, Scandinavian, Czech, English, Irish, Scotch and Welsh.) With each group came craftsmen who knew more about building with stone than they did about farming, enabling the settlers to establish themselves in an area without timber.

Hardships abounded, but the most hearty stayed — those “who saw the most potential in the limestones and who in fact found them almost indispensable...”

Grace tells her readers, “Had it not been for stone fence posts, prosperity might have been a long time coming to much of north-

central Kansas. Despite legislation to postpone or lessen the need for fences, settlers on the treeless upland soon found that fences were a requisite to area development. With native timber scarce and shipped-in lumber generally too costly for fencing material, the pioneers sought substitutes. When they found they could split posts from the rock layer that already was one of their main sources of building block, they added fence-post quarrying to their farming routine . . .

To encourage fence building, the government established a bounty system; however, hedge and stone-wall fences both had drawbacks. Even though the bounty did not apply, they built fences with the only other building material they had — stone posts with smooth wire at first, then barbed wire.

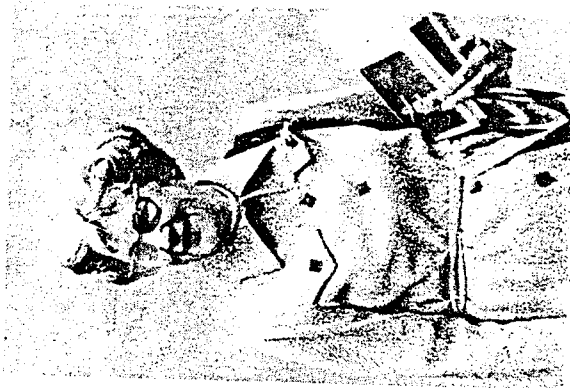
And so the story goes on to tell the "Saga of the Stone Posts" and "Post Rock uses in Perspective" in chapters three and four. Chapter five is devoted to Miss Swineford's report about the geology of the area. Then readers are taken "On a Journey through the Land of the Post Rock" in chapter six.

When Grace first began asking about stone posts and uses of Fencepost limestone there was evidence that area residents took their trademark for granted, but gradually she sensed an emerging pride as they began to reflect on how the resourcefulness and determination of the area's pioneers enabled them to use a ledge of limestone so effectively that it became one of the keys to area development.

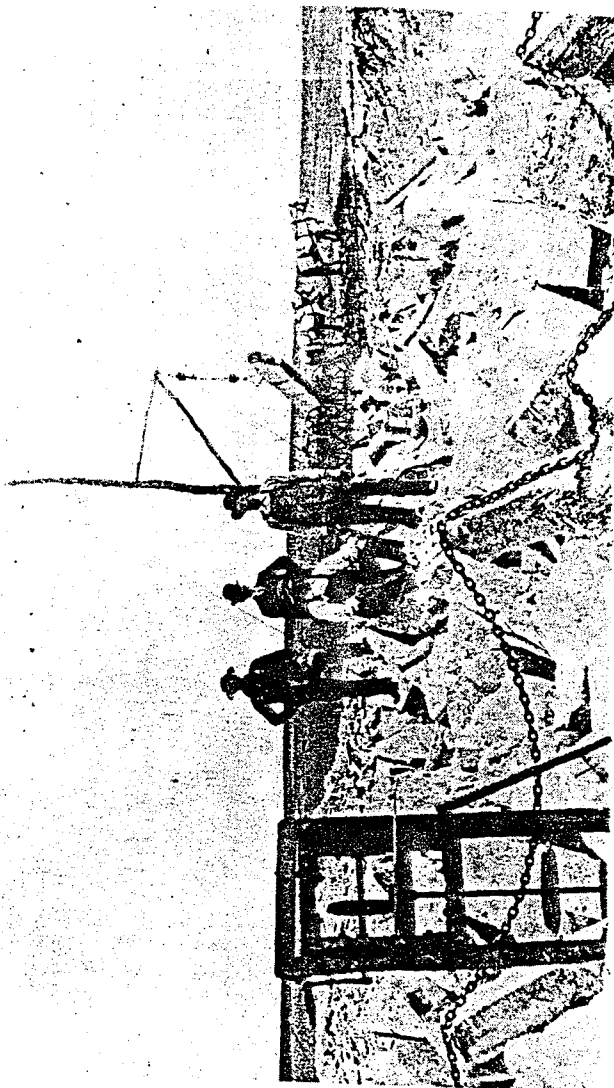
Thus the final chapter, "Majestic and Durable They Still Stand," about Post Rock country in its centennial decade and the efforts of those living there to meet the charge to guard their post-rock heritage that Grace Mullenberg gave them in her first *Land of the Post Rock* publication 19 years ago. "To preserve the post-rock landscape is an obligation the people of the area have to themselves, to the state and to all visitors who come to admire it."

At one time during the 20 years Grace worked on the Kansas Geological Survey staff, she considered becoming a geologist. She even took some courses in geology, but decided she could contribute more by remaining a journalist — devoting herself to interpreting geology in lay terms. This she has done, and more, in *Land of the Post Rock*.

Although Grace became attached to the area and its people while gathering facts for her book and says she could happily live there in a house of post rock with a row of stone posts along the roadside, don't look for it to happen soon. As I said in the beginning, Grace has a love affair with Kansas. Only a week after the first copies of *Land of the Post Rock* reached store counters, Grace and Ada were starting on their next venture — a book about the Flint Hills. This one, they assure us, won't take 20 years to complete.



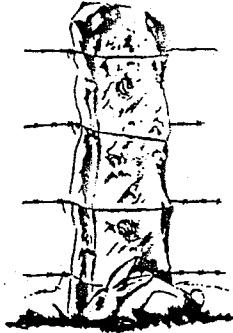
Grace Mullenberg



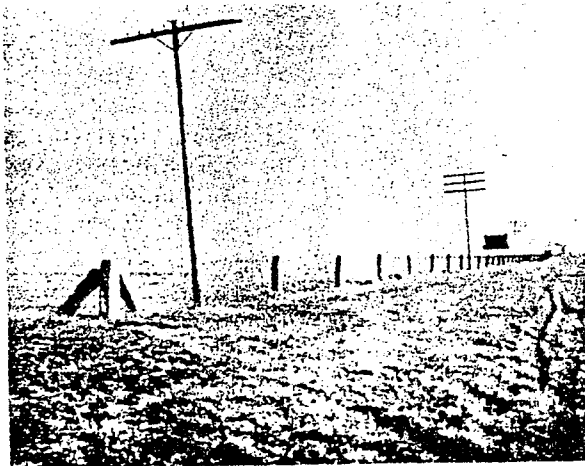
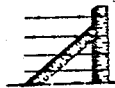
← Cites Grace Muilenburg  
THE

# Post Rock

## MUSEUM



The native stone was primarily used for farm fence posts. All sizes and shapes were used, however, the average is about 9 inches on each of its four sides, and is 5 to 6 feet long, weighing 250 to 450 pounds. The posts were set in the ground to a depth of about 18 inches. Back in the 1880's and 1890's, these posts were delivered to the fence line for 25 cents each. Four to eight posts made a big load for a team of horses.

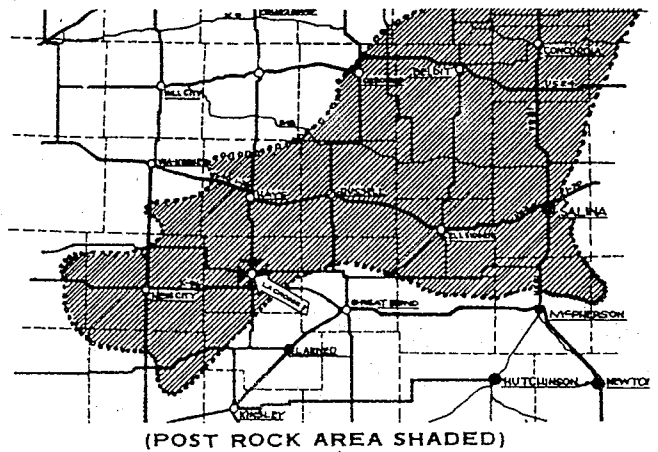


"From the standpoint of Geology, utilization and art, the fencepost limestone is a heritage of north central Kansas. Its use as fence posts has given the region a trade mark with patent rights for all times. To preserve the post-rock landscape is an obligation the people of the area have to themselves, to the State and to all visitors who come to admire it."

Mrs. Grace Muilenburg,  
Division of Public Information  
and Education,  
University of Kansas,  
Lawrence, Kansas.



In the Heart  
of the  
Post Rock Country  
LA CROSSE, KANSAS



(POST ROCK AREA SHADED)

RUSH COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY

RECEIVED

MAR 10 1977

MASON STEEL CO.

FEBRUARY 1977



Gould E. Metcalf  
1917—1977

WORLD  
SEEDED  
S

## REPORT OF

# NINTH FARM SEED CONFERENCE

Organized and Sponsored  
by the

*Farm Seed Division*

of the

AMERICAN SEED TRADE ASSOCIATION  
cooperating with

CALIFORNIA SEED ASSOCIATION  
FIELD SEED INSTITUTE OF NORTH AMERICA  
GEORGIA SEEDSMEN'S ASSOCIATION  
ILLINOIS SEED DEALER'S ASSOCIATION  
IOWA SEED DEALER'S ASSOCIATION  
KANSAS SEED DEALER'S ASSOCIATION  
NEW YORK STATE SEED ASSOCIATION  
NORTH DAKOTA SEED TRADE ASSOCIATION  
NORTHERN SEEDSMEN'S ASSOCIATION  
PACIFIC SEEDSMEN'S ASSOCIATION  
PENNSYLVANIA SEEDSMEN'S ASSOCIATION  
SOUTH DAKOTA SEED TRADE ASSOCIATION  
SOUTHERN SEEDSMEN'S ASSOCIATION  
WESTERN SEEDSMEN'S ASSOCIATION



HELD IN KANSAS CITY, MO.  
November 4, 1963

Publication No. 9

Edited and Published by

William Heckendorn and John I. Sutherland  
AMERICAN SEED TRADE ASSOCIATION  
Suite 803, Southern Building  
Washington, D. C.

## FOREWORD



*Gould E. Metcalf*

*In the wake of the Ninth Farm Seed Conference let these printed proceedings serve as a reference to discussions of matters bearing implications of a new seed world.*

*Never was there an array of speakers on a single program more qualified in disseminating information on timely subjects, in a comprehensive but concise manner and with dynamic enthusiasm, as in this conference. We will forever owe a debt of gratitude to these program participants and to the program chairman for a job well done. Our thanks, too, to the program committee for planning such a fine conference. William Heckendorn, Executive Secretary of the ASTA, and John Sutherland, Assistant Executive Secretary, along with their staff, played no little part in its success.*

*Poised on the threshold of a stability never before known, our industry is set to move forward at a pace that will even astound the innovators. Progressive seed firms are leading the way through private research and development and in the implementation of powerful merchandising approaches. Adjustment will be a time of reckoning for many and the weak will succumb to it. Others will find alignment with the progressive and in turn will enjoy growth. The exploitation of knowledge, coupled with a desire to conquer potential, will also lead to the expansion of world trade.*

*May the Ninth Farm Seed Conference be remembered for its reflecting enlightenment on the future of our industry.*

*Gould E. Metcalf, Chairman  
Farm Seed Division of ASTA*



Gould pins a corsage on his wife, Lucille, just before dinner. Anticipation and understanding are clearly evident in her eyes.



Toastmaster, M-C, whatever . . . John Solverson, FS seed technologist, carried the night with his droll humor and round-table guidance.



Gould posed for this picture by the motel signboard before his 25-year party started. He strongly urged that there was no direct connection between the event posted and his FS service tenure!

## Dual Honor for Seedsman

Gould Metcalf, field seeds marketing manager for FS Services, Inc. at Decatur, Illinois, has been named second vice-president of the American Seed Trade Association (ASTA). His selection came during the association's recent annual meeting in Houston, Texas.

Metcalf is the first cooperative staffer to hold a major office with the ASTA. He has been with the FS System for 25 years, all of them in phases of the seed business.

Although his current experience has been with field seeds, Metcalf worked with seed grains for some years while associated with Producers Seed Company, Piper City, Illinois, which later

merged with FS.

ASTA is the major trade association of the seed business.

Although not having any direct connection with the ASTA honor, Gould was honored in a different way by his peers and colleagues in late July at a Decatur celebration dinner.

Some 25 Decatur facility workers, friends, and wives held a dinner party for Gould and his wife, Lucille, on the occasion of his 25 years of FS service.

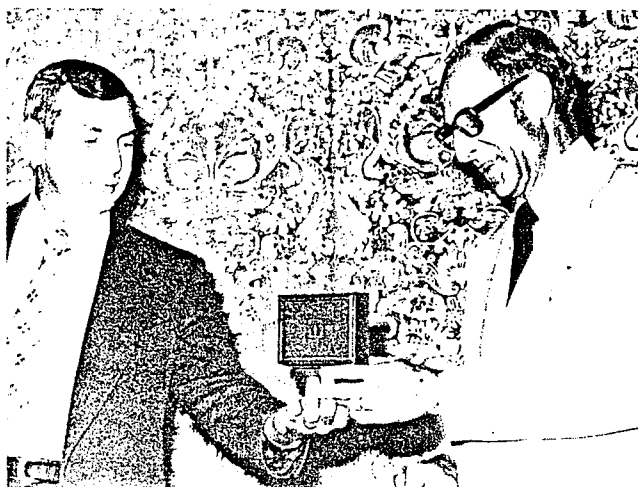
A few pictures here better tell the enjoyment and warmth of the event as carried out by the group and reacted to by the Metcalfs.



Gould almost fell apart with these tokens of appreciation from compatriot Tom Svien, Iowa seed specialist. The explanatory note from Tom further undid Gould's normal composure.



Metcalf enjoys one of the many accolades from the various dinner guests around the table. Lucille wonders what the next well-wishers' comments will reveal.



Norm Jones, FS Seed Division manager, left, presents Gould with an Accutron watch at the close of the evening . . . a gift from his fellow-workers. Both Jones' remarks and Metcalf's response highlighted the mutual respect held by Metcalf's colleagues and Gould . . . each for the other.

## People in the News . . .

### Dan Hybskmann Made V.P. of Henry Field Seed Co.

Dan Hybskmann, 38, head of the nursery department at the Henry Field Seed and Nursery Company, Shenandoah, Iowa, was named a company vice presi-

degree with a major in agronomy from Mississippi State University. He specializes in seed technology. In 1974 Johnson became a registered seed analyst following a few years of experience and study.

## SEED WORLD

COMBINED SEED WORLD—NATIONAL SEEDSMAN  
AMERICAN SEEDSMAN—THE SEEDSMAN  
FLORIST AND NURSERY EXCHANGE

Vol. 115

FEBRUARY 1977

No. 3

### FEATURES

New Vegetable Varieties for 1977 .....	4
Seedsmen Must Supply Improved Seeds for Food Crisis .....	8
New Equipment Serves Greater Needs .....	16

### DEPARTMENTS

New Varieties .....	11
News of Seed World .....	12
People .....	20

GLENN B. WIKLUND, Publisher  
FRANK REID, Editorial Director  
JOE ZEMBA, Managing Editor  
KIRK BIRGINAL, Assistant Editor  
BRYAN GLAZA, Editorial Asst.  
SHIRLEY LABIENIEC, Editorial Asst.  
FRANCES KELSEY, Editorial Asst.  
SHERRY YURICK, Production Manager  
Editorial, Circulation, and Executive Offices at  
434 S. Wabash Ave., Chicago, Ill. 60605 (312) 922-8167

Published at Chicago, Illinois 60605 on 5th of month (except in January when published on 4th Friday also) by Seed World. Editorial and executive offices at 434 S. Wabash Ave., Chicago, Ill. 60605. Forms close 20th of preceding month. Second class postage paid at Chicago and additional Post Offices. SUBSCRIPTION RATES: One year, \$5.00; two years, \$9.00; three years (U.S. only), \$12.00; single copies, 50 cents. Canada and foreign countries, one year, \$6.00; two years, \$11.00. Circulation solicitors are authorized to accept new subscriptions ONLY. Subscribers are notified by MAIL of expiration of subscription. Postmaster: Send Form 3579 to SEED WORLD, 434 S. Wabash Ave., Chicago, Ill. 60605. Printed in the U.S.A.

### Gould Metcalf Dies at Decatur Home

Gould Metcalf, 59, field seeds marketing manager for FS Services, Inc., died at his home in Decatur, Ill., Thursday, January 13. Entering the seed business in 1936, his entire career was spent in the seed industry.

He was currently serving as first vice-president of the American Seed Trade Association (ASTA) and would have succeeded to the presidency in June. He had been a member of the ASTA since 1950.

He was a past chairman of the ASTA's farm seed division, past president of the Illinois Seed Dealers Association, past president of the Western Seedmen's Association and past president of the Field Seed Institute of North America.

Metcalf was a native of Cowley, Kansas. Early in his career, he worked for firms in Kansas and Mississippi before joining Producers Seed Company, an affiliate of the Illinois Farm Bureau.

He started as assistant director of Producers' newly organized field seed division in Decatur. In 1952, he was named division manager, a position he held until the 1955 merger with FS Services. At that time, he was appointed manager of the field seed department.

He was a veteran, having seen duty with the U.S. Navy in the Pacific Theater during World War II. He had been active as a lay leader in the United Methodist Church. He is survived by his widow, two married daughters and four grandchildren.

William H.

Pa  
Seed

Louis A  
Seed Co  
the appoi  
company's  
Johnson  
Missippi, has  
Alabama  
analyst. H

**asta**  
first—the seed

AMERICAN SEED TRADE ASSOCIATION

GOULD E. METCALF  
FIRST VICE PRESIDENT

FS SERVICES, INC.  
P.O. BOX 1105  
DECATUR, ILLINOIS 62525  
OFF: (217) 423-1023  
HOME: (217) 877-7737

ed-  
meri-  
d Di-  
tional,

ny in  
eding  
work  
plant  
r Des  
sition



*Alice Nunnold  
in her home in Fair City, Mo.  
Christmas 1976*

*This is the picture  
of me and the afghan  
I made. Everybody  
said it was the most  
beautiful one they  
ever seen*

*It was 71  
when I made it  
they put a value  
of \$300.00 on it*

IN MEMORY OF  
Violet G. Grayum

DATE OF BIRTH  
April 8, 1908

DATE OF DEATH  
January 7, 1981

PLACE AND TIME OF SERVICES  
St. Matthews United Methodist Church  
10:00 A.M., Friday, January 9, 1981

CLERGYMAN  
Reverend Jack Atkinson  
Reverend Ed Manherz

PLACE OF INTERMENT  
Graveside Services 3:30 P.M.  
Sunnyside Cemetery  
Caney, Kansas

PALLBEARERS  
Bill Bentley Charles Brittain  
Leon Greenhaw John LaBrie  
Ron Springfield Lewis Mitchell

ARRANGEMENTS BY  
Bill Eisenhower Southeast Funeral Home  
5005 S.E. 29th Street

Above: Photo of Alice Metcalf Nunnold with an afghan that she had made, and was clearly proud of, as indicated in the note that she wrote on the back of the photo (at right of photo). The caption below the photo was probably written by her sister, Violet Metcalf Stroup Grayum, whose funeral memorial is to the left.

INFORMATION FROM DEATH CERTIFICATES  
OF CHILDREN OF IDA METCALF HUDSON

I-State of Washington

Name of Deceased: Lena Daisy Jolley  
Marital Status: Widowed  
Date of Birth: Aug. 18, 1880; Age: 74 yrs. (Tombstone and other considerations indicate year of birth as 1873)  
Birthplace: Kansas  
Occupation: Housewife  
Usual Residence: 1610 Eldridge Ave., Bellingham, Washington  
Father's Name: Reuben Hudson  
Mother's Name: Ida Metcalf  
Date of Death: April 16, 1955  
Place of Death: St. Luke's Hospital, Bellingham, Washington  
Informant: Miss Marjorie Merrick  
Condition Leading to Death: Gastric hemorrhage  
Antecedent Causes: Hypertensive cardiovascular renal disease  
Funeral Director: Harlow-Hollingsworth, Inc., Bellingham, WA  
Burial: Oakwood Cemetery, Parsons, Kansas

II-State of Kansas

Full Name: Dr. Harry Russel Hudson  
Marital Status: Married; Wife: Ruth Bell Hudson  
Age: 51 yrs., 4 mos., 27 days  
Date of Birth: April 30, 1885; Birthplace: Parsons, Kansas  
Residence: Wagoner, Oklahoma  
Occupation: Chiropractor  
Name of Father: Ruben L. Hudson  
Birthplace of Father: Lawrencebury (Lawrenceburg), Indiana  
Maiden Name of Mother: Ida Metcalf  
Birthplace of Mother: Rushford, New York  
Date of Death: 8-27-1936  
Place of Death: St. Francis Hospital; Topeka, Kansas (where he had been for 6 days)  
Principal Cause of Death: Bronchial pneumonia  
Burial: Oakwood Cemetery, Parsons, Kansas on 8/30/1936  
Funeral Director: Penwell Mortuary; 508 Quincy (Topeka?)

Two letters from Dora Roxana Metcalf Parsons Thomson to her nephew, Dolie Monroe Metcalf, son of Aminzo and Mary Metcalf.

1121 - W 121st street  
Losangeles Calif.,  
10/24 - 42

My Dear Nephew, Dolie.

I answered the letter I recd from you some time ago but did get any answer to it. I heard your nice letter read, written to my Daughter Myrtle, your cousin and altho I am now past 85 years old, am writing to let you know that I still keep up my correspondence and am always so very happy to hear from my dear ones. I was very sorry to learn of Graces passing away. Also Nellie love to all your self included

Aunt Dora

P.S. I am sending Cyrils address. please write him he has three boys in the service his address

Cyril C. Thson  
5620 Geer Street  
Losangeles Calif

Much love and God abundantly bless is my Prayr I would love to have you write me Aunt Dora

love to all  
1121 - W - 121st Stre  
Losangeles Calif

My Dear Nephew Dolie.

So glad to get your letter I am trying to write a few lines in answer but my eye sight is almost gone I could get Myrtle to write but I want to answer in my own hand. I am 87 years young. My birth day Sept. the 4th I was just 8 days older than your

mother. I will be glad to see that niece. I wish I could write more. Much love and Gods bless\_\_\_

Aunt Dora

P S let us hear again I would love so much to see all,

Aunt Dora

The "Nellie" mentioned in the first letter would be a younger sister of Mary Gaston Metcalf, who is the "your mother" referred to in the second letter. "Grace" was Grace Metcalf Fernandez, daughter of Aminzo and Mary Gaston Metcalf and sister of Dolie. "Cyril" was Dora's son, Cyril Thomson, mentioned in Chap. 14. "Myrtle" was Dora's oldest daughter, Myrtle Parsons Strayer Lindholm Gorton, with whom Dora was living in her last years and who wrote the following letter. Myrtle spells Dolie's name "Dollie." I doubt that they had ever seen each other.

Los Angeles Calif  
Dec 17th, 1942

Dear Cousin Dollie:--

Your very welcome letter recved--sorry I did not get around to answer sooner. Allmost Christmas time again, and so many of us away. Cyril has three boys in the war two in the Army and one in the Navy. You have your Chas. Your cousin Ida (my sister) has one boy Elwoow Haney. He has been in quite a while he is now Chief Pettie Officer. Did you have a nice visit with your Daughter You know I am a Graduate nurse I work in the General Hospital here in Los Angeles Have for some time. Dollie I am very sorry about Cousin Grace's Death but we will all meet some time in the future I believe. Mamma still gets around fine. Her eyes are not so good She is very tiny her hair is still dark, and also her eyes She and I live together. she is a very Devote Christian, and goes to church every sunday It is wonderfull for her age Don't you think so? Cousin Agnes returned to Oregon last week. (Unkle Algeroys girl) She has two Grandchildren Boy and a girl. she is a very pretty dainty little woman and good Christian. I Love her so much. Mamma is like Gramma Metcalf, I think small and very active. My Grandson graduates this Febuary from High school he worked all last summer on the Merchant

Marines he is seventeen years old Dollie I wish you all a very merry Christmas and Happy New Year Would surely Love to see you all Travel right now can not be thought of. Mamma joins me in Love to all she tells me she and your mother were like twin sisters almost. Thought so much of her. Love to all Your Loving Cousin

Myrtle I Gorton  
1121 - West - 121 - St  
Los Angeles  
Calif

This letter was written during World War II. "Chas." is Charles Aminzo Metcalf, son of Dolie The "daughter" referred to is probably Dolie's daughter, Dorothea, who was a nurse. The "Ida" is Ida Thomson Haney, half-sister of Myrtle. In a lapse of the pen, Myrtle has misspelled the name of Ida's son, Elwood. "Cousin Agnes" is Agnes Metcalf Sartin. "Gramma Metcalf" is, of course, Harriet Gould Metcalf. Myrtle left Kansas when two or three years old and might have vaguely remembered her grandmother--barring the possibility that she returned, at some future time, to visit her Kansas kin. (I have never heard of such a visit). The grandson that Myrtle refers to was Howard Thomas Strayer, who died during the Battle off Samar, The Philippines, during World War II.

Note: The following 3 pages are copies of the originals of the above letters.

10/24-42. 121-26-12th street  
Los Angeles Calif.

My Dear Nephew.

Dolice.

I answered the letter I recd<sup>d</sup>  
from you some time ago  
but did get any answer  
to it. I heard your nice

letter read, written to my  
Daughter Myrtle. your cousin  
and altho I am now past 80-  
years old, am writing to  
let you know that I still  
keep up my correspondence

2

and am always so  
very happy to hear from  
my dear ones. I was very  
sorry to learn of Grace's  
passing away. also Melie's  
love to all your self includes  
Aunt Dora

P.S. I am sending Cyril's  
address. please write him he  
has three boys in the service  
his address Cyril's Co, Deson

6620. Geer street  
Los Angeles Calif

1121 - W - 121st St  
 Los Angeles Calif

My Dear Nephew Dolie,  
 So glad to get your letter I  
 am trying to write  
 lines in answer but  
 my eye sight is almost  
 gone I could get might  
 to write I want to answer  
 in my own hand. I am 8 1/2  
 years young. my birth day Sept  
 the 4th. I was just 3 days  
 older than your mother. I will  
 be glad to see that. That well  
 I wish I could write more

God's blessing  
 love and  
 mine

Los Angeles Calif  
Dec 17<sup>th</sup> 1942

Dear Cousin Nellie:-

your very welcome letter rec'd - sorry I did not get around to answer sooner. Almost Christmas time again, and so many of us away. Cyril has three boys in the war two in the Army and one in the Navy you have your Char. Your cousin Ida (my sister) has one boy Ellwood Haney. He has been in quiet a while he is now Chief Petter Officer. Did you have a nice visit with your daughter you know I am a Reddiate nurse I work in the General Hospital here in Los Angeles I am for some time. Nellie I am very sorry about Cousin Grace's death but we will all meet some time in the future I believe. Mamma still gets around fine. Her eyes are not so good she is very thin her hair is still black, and also her eyes she and I live together. she is a very devote Christian, and goes to church every Sunday. It is wonderfull for her age don't you think so? Cousin Agnes returned to Oregon last week. (Uncle Alger's girl) she has two grandchildren Boy and a girl. she is a very pretty dainty little woman and good Christian. I love her so much. Mamma is like Grandma Metcalf. I think small and very active. My grandson graduates this February from High School he worked all last summer on the Merchant Marines. he is seventeen years old Nellie I wish you all a very merry Christmas and Happy new year would surely love to see you all travel right now can not be thought of. Mamma joins me in Love to all she tells me she and your mother were like twin sisters almost. thought so much of her. Love to all your Loving Cousin

Myrtle J. Easton  
1121 West 121<sup>st</sup> St  
Los Angeles  
Calif

## INFORMATION FROM DEATH CERTIFICATE OF DORA THOMSON

## State of California

Name of Deceased: Dora Roxana Thomson

Marital Status: Married

Date of Birth: September 4, 1857; Age: 91 yrs.

Birthplace: Missouri

Name of Father: Zephi Metcalf

Name of Mother: Harriet Gould

Occupation: Housewife

Usual Residence: 1121 West 121st Street, Rural Inglewood, Los Angeles, California

Place of Death: as in preceding entry

Length of Stay at Place of Death: 8 years

Informant: Myrtle Gordon (=Gorton), 1121 W. 121st St., etc.

Date of Death: June 7, 1949 at 11:45 —

Condition Directly Leading to Death: Cerebral hemorrhage  
(The above) Due to: Hypertension, arteriosclerosis, senility

Burial: Inglewood Park Cemetery; June 11, 1949

*Our Mother Passed  
on Home and her  
Rest*

Memorial Services  
For

DORA ROXANA THOMSON

A Native of  
Missouri

Passed Away  
June 7, 1949

Services Held at  
Utter-McKinley  
Southwest Chapel  
Los Angeles, California  
June 11, 12:00 Noon

Music by  
Utter-McKinley Artist

Officiant  
Rev. P. E. Gardner

Interment  
Inglewood Park Cemetery

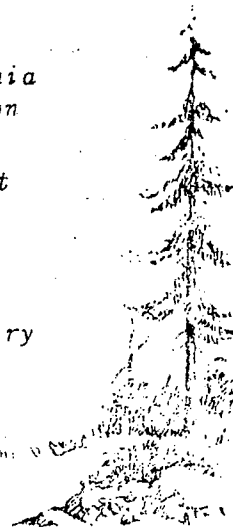
*Love*

*Myrtle &*

*Ida*

*April*

Joy →



INFORMATION FROM DEATH CERTIFICATES  
OF DAUGHTERS OF DORA THOMSON  
I-State of California

Name of Deceased: Myrtle Iona Gorton  
Date of Birth: March 19-1878; Age: 88 years; Birthplace: Kansas  
Widowed  
Occupation: Housewife; Number of years in this Occupation: 70  
Name and Birthplace of Father: Henry Parsons - Virginia  
Maiden Name and Birthplace of Mother: Dora Metcalf - Mo.  
Last Usual Residence: 1121 West 121st St., Los Angeles, Los  
Angeles County, California  
Place of Death: At home, at address in foregoing entry  
Length of Stay in County of Death: 47 years  
Length of Stay in California: 47 years  
Date of Death: 11-24-66; Hour: Found 7:30 \_\_\_\_  
Name of Informant: Howard W. Strayer  
Cause of Death: Arteriosclerotic cardiovascular disease  
Burial: Forest Lawn Memorial Park; 11-29-66  
Funeral Director: Forest Lawn Memorial Park Assn., Glendale, CA

II-State of California

Name of Deceased: Ida Ray Haney  
Date of Birth: Aug. 18, 1881; Age: 70 years  
Birthplace: Lake City, Colorado  
Widowed  
Occupation: Housewife  
Usual Residence: 4404 Temecula, San Diego, Calif.  
Name of Father: David Thomson - Penn.  
Maiden Name of Mother: Dora Metcalf - Missouri  
Place of Death: Methodist Hospital, Los Angeles, CA  
Length of Stay at Place of Death: 2 wks.  
Date of Death: Oct. 26, 1951; Hour: 9:40 A.M.  
Disease or Condition Directly Leading to Death: Intestinal  
obstruction - 12 hrs.  
(The above) Due to: Tumor growth and adhesions - 2 yrs.  
Removal to: Greenwood Cemetery, San Diego, California  
Funeral Director: Armstrong Family

Information from Death Certificates of Daughters of Dora Thomson  
(continued)--for discussion of dates of birth see pages 344-5:

### III-State of Colorado

Full Name: Vida D. Shackley; Marital Status: Married  
Birthplace: Lake City, Colo.; Date of Birth: Aug. 2, 1883  
Age: 33 yrs, 4 mos, 3 da.  
Occupation: Housewife  
Name and Birthplace of Father: Dave W. Thomson; Penn.  
Maiden Name and Birthplace of Mother: Dora Metcalf; Kansas  
Above Data from H.L. Shackley, Durango, Colo.  
Length of Residence at Place of Death: 20 yrs.  
Length of Residence in the State: 33 yrs.  
Date of Death: Feb. 5, 1917  
Place of Death: Mercy Hospital, Durango, Colorado  
Cause of Death: Peritonitis; Contributory: Tubal pregnancy  
Place of Burial: Greenmont, Hood Addition; NW $\frac{1}{4}$ , Lot 19, Block 27  
Date of Burial: Feb 7, 1917  
Undertaker: Ames and Bradford, Durango, Colorado

### IV-State of California

Full Name: Mrs. Dora P. Hull  
Marital Status: Married; Name of Husband: Walter D. Hull  
Date of Birth: June 14, 1883; Age: 49 yr., 4 mo., 23 days  
Birthplace: Durango, Colorado  
Occupation: Housewife; Length of Residence in Calif.: 8 yrs.  
Name and Birthplace of Father: David M. Thomson; Unknown  
Maiden Name and Birthplace of Mother: (Unknown) Metcalf; Unknown  
Residence: 738 Clark, El Monte, Calif., but had been in Norwalk  
State Hospital for 1 yr., 6 mos., 3 days  
Place of Death: Norwalk State Hospital, Los Angeles County, CA  
Informant: Norwalk State Hospital  
Date of Death: Nov. 7, 1932  
Principal Cause of Death: Cerebral Hemorrhage: Date of onset:  
11-5-32  
Other Contributory Causes of Importance: Manic depressive  
Psychosis - Onset, 1931  
Burial: San Gabriel Cemetery  
Funeral Director: Addleman & Klingerman, El Monte, California

In 1981, Gail Lindsey gave me the following story, written in longhand (good penmanship) and with a map on the back, showing places mentioned. On the envelope containing the story is written: "Fantasy story by Uncle Cyril C. Thomson. Probably written for school work sometime between 1900 & 1910." I subsequently gave the original to Mrs. Dorothy Poe, Cyril's daughter.

## My Trip Through the States of Colorado and Utah

By

Cyril C. Thomson

On January the eleventh 2046 I Cyril Thomson, started out to travel over Colorado and Utah. I thought I would first go to Salt Lake City Utah and see the sights there and from there I had determined to go south and visit some of the small Mormon towns.

I will begin my story at my starting point which was Denver Colorado. As you well know I started, I took with me Roy Turney and Charles Chedal for company's sake. We had an air ship so we didn't have to go by rail the name of the air ship was Fleet Wing and it was fleet by name and fleet by nature if you could call it nature.

We started out from Denver at half after eight and headed straight for Salt Lake City and landed after five hours of fast flying. We had covered a distance of about five hundred and twenty-five miles. We did not stop any place on the way as there were very few places on our course. When we arrived there we had our dinner and rested awhile.

A long towards two we thought we would go and see the mormon church which is a beautiful building covering nearly an acre of land it is one hundred feet high with towers that rise one hundred and twenty feet higher than the main building, it cost about half as much as the capitol building in Washington D.C. When we got done admiring it we had to go home to our supper that is to the hotel which we were stopping at. Next day we took a swim in the lake and felt very much refreshed afterward. We then got ready to go north and look about a little while.

We went to Brigham close onto the bear river, we crossed from there to the Great American Desert just for the fun and then back to Salt Lake City. We took another bathe here in the morning and then started south when we got over Pason, our gasoline gave out and let us drop right in the centre of the town. That is we made a hasty descent, we got more gasoline and started out again. We were over the most fertile part of Utah which is at the base of the Wasatch Mountains, the largest part of Utah is very barren and rocky and affords little food for the plants. Utah is in the great basin and has therefore very little rain because of the lofty Sierra Nevada mountains between it and the ocean from which most of the winds blow.

Well I guess I had better be going back to my ship and be traveling on. From Payson we visited Mt Pleasant because we thought it might be pleasant there but we got left on that it was the most lonesome place in

that God forsaken country. We went from there to the Navajo reservation first the section in Utah and then Colorado. We went to see the ruins of the cliff dwellers. While we were there we got our pockets filled with treasures of many kinds and values so we concluded that we had not went there for nothing.

### Part two

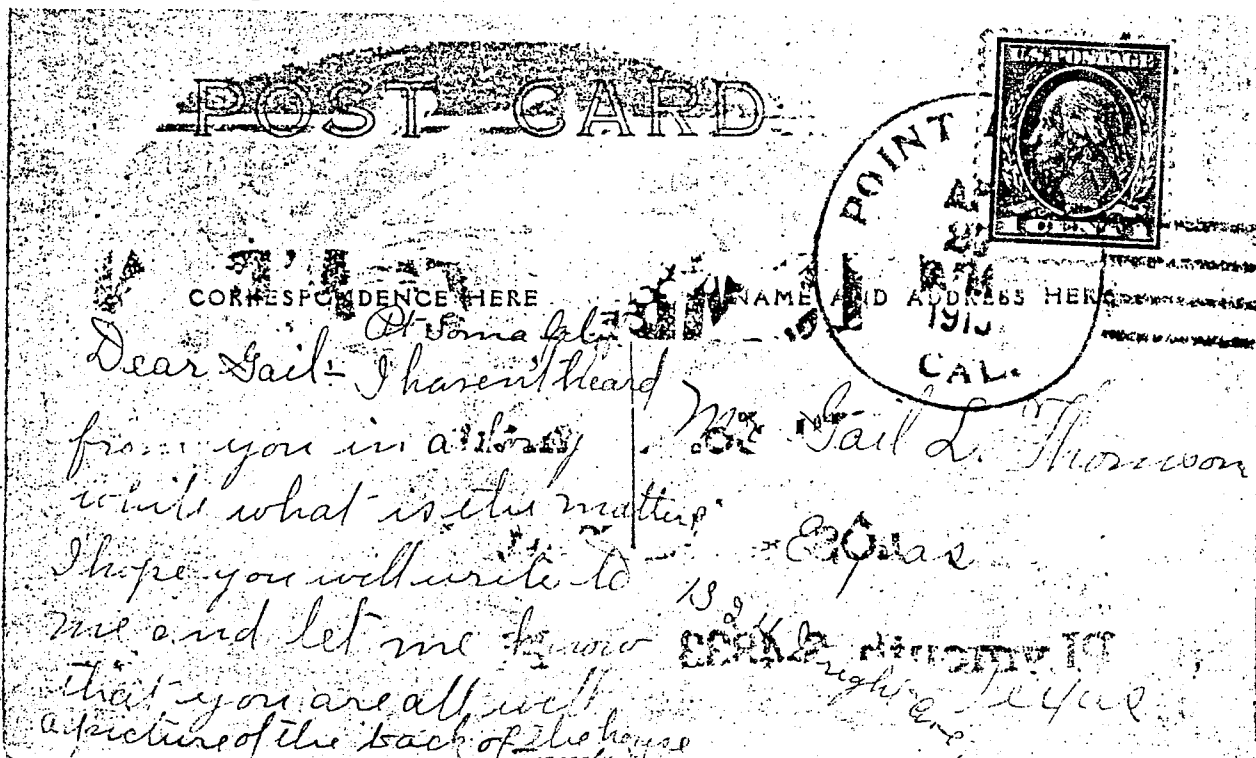
After we left the ruins we could not determine where to go. Roy said to go to Manassa and Charles said to Cortez so we split the difference and went to Durango. Durango is a dull town of moderate size it has about six thousand two hundred and fifty inhabitants. We went from Durango to Ouray a lively mining town and a prettier place you never saw.

We then went to Delta a dull little place it is a farming town, they raise fruits of all kinds that can grow at that altitude which is most too low for me. We next visited the Mt. of the Holy Cross and from there to Pueblo a very lively city it got its name from the buildings which the Indians built to live in which were called pueblos.

We started from Pueblo about nine oclock and headed for Colorado Springs and got there about dinner time. After we had our dinner we took a bath in the hot springs there and I can tell you it was a great deal warmer than the water in the lake at Salt Lake City. We then started back to Denver and was glad to get back although we had had a very pleasant trip.

The End

Postcard written by Ida Thomson Haney to her brother, Gail, from Pt. Loma, CA. The date is probably 1910, which conforms well with the estimated ages of Estelle and Elwood, shown with parents, Ida and Herbert Haney, and a very attractive home on the other side of the postcard.



Nov. 10-1966

Dear Myrtle:-

I was so glad to hear from you and to know that you are getting along O.K. and I want to thank the lady for writing for you.

I have been quite busy & gave myself a ferment and had to get Gary's birthday present off his birthday was the 29th of Oct. and then I had to get Dallas on birthday present off her birthday was the 3rd of Nov. Gary was 22 years old and Dallas was 21.

Myrtle I would love to come out to visit you on Thanksgiving

but I have to get my glasses changed and that will run me short of money. so I will have to put it off until later.

We have had rain here in Phoenix and it has turned quite cold.

I am so glad that you are feeling good and that you have such a nice lady taking care of you.

Love to you and Howard

Joy.

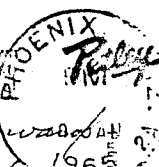
P.S. Did the election turn out to suit you?

Original sent Republican also.

Letter from Joy Thomson Lindsey to her sister, Myrtle Parsons Gorton.

## PHOENIX, ARIZONA

From a helicopter, shows section of downtown  
in the fastest growing city in the Southwest.  
The city spreads far out into the Valley of  
the Sun.



Dear Myrtle & Howard  
I haven't heard from  
you since I was in Mrs. Myrtle Gordon  
hope you are feeling well, we are having  
fine weather here in Los Angeles 44  
now. Joy will be  
coming back to El Paso  
the first of Feb. love  
Joy -

C15576—Color Photo by Mike Roberts

In Memory of  
JOY M. LINDSEY

Born

April 2, 1895

Date of Death

December 10, 1981

Services

Graveside

Time

3:00 p. m. December 14, 1981

Clergyman Officiating

Rev. Joe B. Scrimshire

Interment

Restlawn Memorial Park

Arrangements By

Martin Funeral Home

LINDSEY

MRS. JOY MARJORIE LINDSEY, 86,  
passed away Thursday in a local hos-  
pital. Resident of El Paso 14 yrs. Sur-  
vived by son Gail Lindsey, El Paso. 3  
grandchildren Gary Lindsey, Las  
Cruces, N.M., Janet Lindsey, Irving,  
Texas and Mrs. Dallas Brown, Canoga-  
Park, Calif. 2 great-grandchildren.  
Graveside service will be at 3:00 P.M.  
Monday at Restlawn Memorial Park,  
Rev. Joe B. Scrimshire, Ft. Blvd  
Methodist Church officiating. Memori-  
al contributions may be made to a fa-  
vorite charity. Directed by Martin.  
3839 Montana 566-3955

Items pertaining to Joy  
Thomson Lindsey: Above,  
a postcard written by Joy  
to her sister, Myrtle;  
below, materials concerning  
her death.

## METCALF FAMILY NAME INDEX

Metcalf surname, where cited in text, including (1) those born to the name and (2) females marrying into the family (their own family or other previous name underlined). Legends of plates, maps and figures, and material in addenda and appendices not indexed. Informants identified by initials only are often not included.

Abigail-37  
 Abigail Hinsdale- 321  
 Abijah- 57  
 Adda Arabell- 170, 333  
 Agnes Alberta- 161, 164, 166, 281, 333  
 Algeroy Adelbert- 111, 142, 145, 147, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 170, 171, 172, 173, 188, 211, 271, 272, 276, 281, 290, 310, 313, 330  
 Alice Colee- 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 337  
 Alice Marie- 234, 238, 239, 289, 340  
 Alice Roberts- 231, 232, 235, 236, 339  
 Amanda Wood- 82  
 Aminzo Demetrius-112, 139, 141, 153, 159, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 226, 229, 230, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 271, 289, 301, 307, 337  
 Amos- 57  
 Ann- 320  
 Ann Paine (Paige)- 320  
 Anna Isabel- 161, 170, 172, 333  
 Ardene Elizabeth- 337  
 Arnold Leslie- 166, 331  
 Art (see Artie Clifford or Artie Lou)  
 Arthur Ellis- 169, 276, 332  
 Artie Clifford- 17, 144, 179, 185, 239, 240, 266, 274, 277, 278, 282, 284, 285, 286, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298, 299, 300, 301, 303, 310, 312, 313, 347  
 Artie Lou- 302, 303, 347  
 Asa- 48, 50, 56, 57, 59, 60, 64, 322  
  
 Barbara-308, 309, 310, 313, 351  
 Barbara Cattel-339  
 Barbara Marron- 336  
 Basil-349  
 Basil Whittingham-307, 308, 309, 310, 311 349  
 Benjamin- 236  
 Bennett Austin- 174, 179, 182, 185, 186, 190, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 202, 203, 207, 209, 255, 335  
 Bertha Baker- 153, 271, 306, 307, 308, 309, 311, 349  
 Bertha Etta- 162, 163, 171, 334  
 Beryl Edward- 214, 239, 340  
 Beth (see Harriett Elizabeth)  
 Betty (see Mary Elizabeth)  
 Bob (see Robert Allen)  
 Brandon-239  
  
 Calvin- 57

Calvin Morris- 311, 349  
 Carl Bennett- 175, 177, 178, 182, 186, 190, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 335  
 Carrie Cross- 159, 160, 162, 163, 164, 167, 170, 171, 172, 173, 211, 330  
 Cecil Sylvester- 144, 155, 271, 272, 288, 294, 297, 298, 302, 304, 309, 310, 311, 348  
 Cecilia Marie- 298, 348  
 Charles Amingo- 337  
 Charles Levi- 96, 100, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 127, 151, 328  
 Charles Nathan- 64, 82, 83, 87, 232  
 Charlie Clyde- 196, 202, 207, 336  
 Chester Frank- 299, 302, 303, 347  
 Clara Withey- 324  
 Claude Fredrick- 326  
 Comfort- 44  
 Cornelia English- 100, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 121, 124, 323, 328  
 Crystal Erma- 337  
  
 Daniel- 25, 94, 115  
 Darrell Leon- 298, 303, 304, 348  
 Deborah- 48, 50, 322  
 Deborah Adams- 42, 43, 44, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 54, 55, 56, 58, 62, 63, 321  
 Decima Rutheen- 349  
 Delbert Carl- 299, 347  
 Dennis- 96, 97, 98, 325  
 Deo Ray- 239, 340  
 Dewey G.- 235, 237, 238, 340  
 Diana Van Steinberg- 66  
 Doc (see Maurice Crump)  
 Dolie Monroe, Jr.- 337  
 Dolie Monroe, Sr.- 213, 214, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 229, 230, 231, 235, 239, 241, 258, 259, 307, 337  
 Don Wallace- 226, 227, 228, 239, 338  
 Donna- 239  
 Dora Marion- 166, 331  
 Dora Roxana- 144, 153, 154, 177, 213, 242, 243, 244, 249, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 289, 314, 344  
 Doris Sylvie- 205, 336  
 Dorothea Maebelle- 216, 337  
 Dorothy Ellen- 235, 236, 237, 241, 340  
 Dorothy Endicott- 332  
 Dorothy Jean- 205, 206, 336  
 Douglas- 349  
  
 Earl Lawrence- 239, 340  
 Ebenezer- 66  
 Ed Earnest- 196, 207, 336  
 Edith ("Lea")- 162, 167, 168, 332  
 Edna Dungan- 144, 260, 293, 299, 300, 301, 347  
 Edna Mae- 332

Edward G.- 40, 46  
 Edward N.- 239  
 Eilene Cross- 332  
 Elbert Rupert- 163, 164, 170, 311, 333  
 Eleanor Ruth- 326  
 Eleazar- 25, 47  
 Elijah- 48, 322  
 Elijah, Rev.- 63, 64, 65, 66, 68, 69, 71, 73, 74, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 87, 89, 90, 91, 95, 96, 99, 100, 101, 103, 104, 105, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 120, 125, 126, 127, 129, 130, 315, 316, 239, 322, 323, 324  
 Elijan E. (Elyah?)- 91, 96, 97, 98, 122, 324  
 Elijah, Jr.- 89, 92, 95, 96, 101, 102, 103, 104, 112, 124, 150, 316, 323, 351  
 Eliza Porter- 91, 92, 95, 96, 98, 99, 124, 323, 324  
 Elizabeth- (see also Mary Elizabeth Hawkins) 10, 14, 23, 42, 320, 321  
 Elizabeth Bowers- 36, 37, 320  
 Elizabeth Plimpton- 321  
 Ellamae- 175, 194, 198, 199, 200, 204, 205, 207, 335  
 Ella May Hotchkiss- 174, 176, 177, 178, 179, 182, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 193, 205, 206, 207, 255, 261, 335  
 Ella May Richardson- 297, 347  
 Emeline (Emma)- 96, 97, 98, 324  
 Elmer Levi- 64, 92, 96, 104, 112, 115, 118, 125, 126, 127, 128, 326  
 Elsie Emma- 331  
 Ernest Lawson- 162, 163, 166, 167, 168, 169, 172, 331  
 Esther Carrie- 167, 331  
 Ethel Luella- 326  
 Ethel Brooke- 327  
 Etta Chickoa Bell- 326  
 Eula Howard- 203, 335  
 Evea (see Felice Evea Duncan)  
 Experience- 37, 320  
  
 Felice Evea Duncan- 162, 163, 170, 171, 172, 334  
 Flora Lorene- 332  
 Flora M.- 63, 79, 96, 103, 104, 351  
 Flora Oliva- 161, 164, 165, 277, 279, 289, 330  
 Forrest Wayne- 17, 301, 302, 347  
 Frank (see Franklin Monroe)  
 Franklin Monroe- 110, 144, 179, 185, 218, 257, 270, 271, 272, 273, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 289, 290, 291, 292, 295, 298, 299, 301, 302, 310, 347  
 Fred Lyman- 91, 92, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 104, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 122, 123, 124, 326  
 Frederick L.- 82  
  
 Gary (see William Gary)  
 George- 64  
 Gilbert- 66  
 Glenna Schubert- 333  
 Gould Emory- 224, 226, 227, 296, 338  
 Grace Eleanor- 217, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 236, 338  
 Grace Evelyn- 144, 216, 217, 223, 224, 226, 240, 266, 289, 308

335

Guy Emmet, Jr.- 226, 338

Guy Emmet, Sr.- 144, 149, 155, 164, 169, 217, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 229, 230, 231, 236, 239, 240, 268, 271, 273, 276, 282, 289, 308, 338

Hamah- 57

Hannah- 57, 320

Hannah Blakeslee- 79, 89, 91, 99, 101, 103, 104, 109, 110, 111, 129, 322, 323, 324Hannah Fisher- 37, 320

Hannah Juliette- 91, 98, 325

Hannah Plimpton- 321

Harriet Anna- 331

Harriett Elizabeth- 307, 308, 309, 311, 312, 350

Harriet Gould- 110, 111, 112, 122, 125, 126, 128, 130, 132, 134, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 144, 145, 148, 149, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 173, 174, 175, 179, 210, 211, 213, 217, 225, 242, 243, 246, 260, 268, 269, 271, 297, 306, 308, 313, 314, 317, 323, 330

Hartley Andrew- 111, 144, 153, 155, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 205, 209, 210, 224, 255, 260, 275, 335

Hattie Trent- 332

Hazel Lorraine- 171, 334

Helen Elder- 332

Helen June- 206, 208, 336

Hermie Bertha- 349

Homer Edmond- 332

Howard Raymond- 332

Huldah- 65

Ida Almira- 164, 165, 169, 330

Ida Ellen- 112, 152, 153, 154, 155, 213, 214, 217, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 257, 289, 342

Irvin- 167, 168, 332

Iva Cobbs- 239, 340

Ivan- 166, 332

Jack Roberts- 236, 239, 339

James C.- 263, 347

James Wallace- 347

Jane (Joane)- 10, 23, 320

Jane Miles- 82, 83, 322

Janet Kay- 349

Jean (see Dorothy Jean)

Jean Weaver- 299, 347Jeanne Evans- 337

Jennie Marie- 267, 307, 308, 309, 310, 312, 314, 350

Jessie Aileen- 337

Jessie M.- 82

Joane (Jane)- 10, 23, 320

John- 25, 44, 57, 64, 126, 321

John-1- 10, 11, 16, 20, 21, 22, 23, 26, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 39, 48, 51, 53, 67, 315, 319, 320

John-2- 33, 34, 36, 39, 53, 320

John-3b- 41, 42

John Edmer (Jack), Jr.- 337  
 John Edmer (Jack), Sr.- 155, 214, 215, 217, 218, 222, 223, 229, 230, 235, 337  
 Jonathan- 25, 36, 38, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 59, 60, 66, 321  
 Joseph- 34, 36, 37, 42, 44, 45, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 64, 66, 320, 321, 322  
 Jotham- 44, 60  
  
 Kathy- 222  
 Kin (see William McKinley)  
  
 Lancelot- 333  
 Laura- 349  
 Laura Sinclair- 224, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 276, 277, 279, 280, 281, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 307, 311, 314, 347  
 Lavina Dewitt- 65  
 Lawrence- 174, 179, 336  
 Leland Edgar- 171, 334  
 Lena Davison- 151, 155, 237, 245, 297, 298, 348  
 Leonard- 3, 4, 6  
 Levi- 60, 64, 65, 66, 81, 90, 100, 102, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 150, 316, 322, 328  
 Levi Philip- 144, 343  
 Lois- 44  
 Lois Louise- 334  
 Londa Mae- 349  
 Lorena Elsie- 237, 340  
 Lorenzo Dow- 64, 77, 82, 83  
 Lorraine (see Hazel Lorraine)  
 Lucille Steward- 338  
 Lucy Myrtle Sinclair- 150, 224, 225, 226, 227, 271, 273, 289, 294, 338  
 Luella Veazey- 95, 96, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 120, 121, 125, 127, 128, 326  
 Luke- 44  
 Lula Belle Welleson Furdon- 327  
 Luna- 66, 322  
 Lura June- 327  
 Lura Crooke- 326  
 Lydia- 42, 321  
 Lydia White- 41, 42, 321  
 Lyma Cora- 327  
 Lyman B.- 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 102, 104, 109, 111, 114, 124, 150, 157, 323, 324  
 Lyman B., II- 96, 99, 326  
 Lyman B., III- 327  
  
 Margaret (see Maria Colee)  
 Margaret Flammger- 327  
 Margaret Haughn- 340  
 Margaret Jones- 170, 333  
 Margaret Williams- 338  
 Maria Colee- 150, 211, 216, 218, 219, 220, 221, 337

Marie Buck- 125, 144, 154, 212, 214, 216, 223, 240, 337  
 Mariette Louise- 97, 114, 327  
 Marjorie Nicholson- 340  
 Marsha- 168, 169  
 Martha- 10, 23, 48, 320  
 Mary- 10, 16, 23, 34, 44, 60, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 82, 319, 320, 322, 328  
 Mary Adams- 44, 45, 47, 48, 321  
 Mary Ayers- 96, 324  
 Mary Berl- 65  
 Mary Bowers- 36, 320  
 Mary Chickering- 30, 33, 34, 36, 319, 320  
 Mary Elizabeth Hawkins- 110, 144, 294, 298, 299, 347  
 Maryette Elmer- 95, 96, 99, 326  
 Mary Evelyn- 271, 295, 348  
 Mary Fairbanks- 19, 25, 30, 319  
 Mary Gaston- 159, 211, 212, 216, 217, 218, 226, 230, 241, 301  
 Mary Lou (see Mariette Louise)  
 Mary Lovina- 96, 97, 324  
 Mary Persons- 108, 109, 110, 329  
 Mary Pidge- 20, 21, 22, 319  
 Mary Stocking- 338  
 Maurice Crump- 145, 153, 213, 217, 224, 249, 268, 269, 271, 273, 289, 301, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 348  
 Max Ora- 326  
 McKinley (see William McKinley)  
 Mehetable (Mehitable)- 60, 322  
 Mehitable Thurston- 321  
 Melba Loveall- 324  
 Meletiah (Melatiah, Melitiah) Hamant- 46, 57, 321  
 Michael- 57, 319  
 Michael-1- 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 42, 56, 57, 89, 315, 316, 319  
 Michael-2- 10, 11, 16, 19, 20, 21, 22, 24, 25, 26, 47, 57, 66, 67, 75, 319  
 Michael-3a- 21, 22, 24,  
 Michael-4a- 25  
 Michael-5a- 25  
 Michael-3b- 22, 30, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 53, 67, 320  
 Michael-4b- 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 45, 46, 53, 57, 321  
 Michael-5b- 41, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 57, 321  
 Michael-6b- 44  
 Milan Maurice- 307, 309, 311, 349  
 Millard- 126  
 Millie Cornelia- 109, 110, 328  
 Minnie Laura- 145, 174, 177, 178, 179, 182, 184, 185, 188, 189, 190, 260, 335  
 Miriam- 44  
 Monett Gould- 174, 179, 182, 185, 189, 190, 192, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 336  
 Morris William- 348  
 Myrtie- 109, 124, 328  
 Myrtle Augusta- 186, 187, 191, 252, 267, 271, 274, 278, 291, 292, 293, 295, 296, 303, 348  
 Myrtle Minnie- 232, 234, 339,

Myrtle (see Lucy Myrtle Sinclair)

Nancy Ann Hankins- 348  
 Nathan- 48, 50, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67,  
 68, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 86, 322  
 Nathan W.- 75  
 Nathaniel- 60, 73  
 Nelia- 105, 106, 107, 124, 151, 329  
 Nellie Dora- 232, 233, 338  
 Nellie Persons- 108, 123, 124, 328  
 Nellie Whitaker- 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 202, 206, 207, 336  
 Nelson- 64, 66  
 Nicholas- 28

Oliver- 46, 57  
 Ora Orlando- 96, 99, 104, 327  
 Oscar Felix- 163, 170, 333  
 Otis- 332  
 Ozias- 67

Pat (see Patricia Ann)  
 Patricia Ann- 298, 303, 304, 348  
 Phebe- 57,  
 Philander- 66  
 Phoebe- 67  
 Phyliss Marion- 299, 347

Rachel- 80, 89, 91, 95, 96, 100, 101, 102, 103, 109, 150, 323,  
 326, 329  
 Rachel Dye- 308, 309, 310, 314, 349  
 Ray (see Deo Ray)  
 Rebecca (Rebeca, Rebeka)- 10, 23, 320  
 Reuben- 64  
 Rhoda- 65  
 Robert Allen- 205, 206, 336  
 Rosanna (Rosina)- 82  
 Rose Trent- 331  
 Roswell- 64  
 Roxana- 89, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 109, 111, 150, 251,  
 323, 327  
 Roy Zephi- 174, 179, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 202, 205, 207, 336  
 Ruby Rosella- 349  
 Ruby Vanada- 349  
 Ruth Maxine Coil- 347  
 Ruth McVay- 326  
 Ruth Myrl- 150, 215, 216, 232, 241, 337

Sadie (see Sarah Ann)  
 Salome Gordon- 103, 104, 124, 323, 351  
 Samuel- 25, 38, 39, 40, 41, 53, 321  
 Sarah- 10, 23, 37, 38, 46, 57, 319, 321  
 Sarah Ann (Sadie) Rector- 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 229,  
 232, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 289, 337  
 Sarah Bowers- 34, 36, 37, 320  
 Sarah Cole- 82  
 Sarah Cunningham- 58, 59, 322

- Sarah Ellwyn- 5, 9, 10, 16, 20, 319  
 Sarah Johnson- 65  
 Sarah Paige- 320  
 Sarah Plimpton- 320  
 Sarah Wells- 46  
 Shirley Evelyn- 207, 208, 336  
 Shirley Jean- 308, 313, 351  
 Silence- 48, 50, 322  
 Simeon- 44, 64, 65, 66, 68, 69, 71, 73, 74, 77, 82, 83, 87, 322  
 Solomon- 44  
 Spencer- 349  
 Steven (L.D.)- 168  
 Susan Anna (see Susie Annie)  
 Susan Elizabeth Aaberg- 348  
 Susie Annie Green- 166, 167, 169, 331  
 Susie Minder- 185, 186, 190, 193, 197, 198, 200, 335  
 Tabitha- 48, 50, 54, 55, 56, 58, 60, 61, 62, 64, 322  
 Ted (see Theodore Roosevelt)  
 Thamar Daniel- 321  
 Theodore Roosevelt- 271, 290, 292, 296, 347  
 Thomas- 10, 11, 16, 17, 20, 21, 22, 24, 25, 26, 57, 64, 320, 321  
 Uthema Cross- 172, 332  
 Veda Mae- 332  
 Verne H.- 174, 179, 336  
 Violet Goldie- 213, 214, 239, 240, 241, 341  
 Virginia Adele- 327  
 Wallace (see William Wallace)  
 Wayne Calvin- 333  
 Willa Marie- 332  
 William Carl- 271, 282, 294, 295, 297, 309, 314, 348  
 William Gary- 298, 304, 348  
 William McKinley- 164, 171, 172, 334  
 William Van Tassel- 65  
 William Wallace- 145, 153, 154, 155, 161, 164, 185, 186, 213, 215, 217, 224, 225, 238, 247, 249, 250, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 275, 276, 277, 278, 280, 281, 282, 285, 286, 287, 289, 290, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 301, 306, 307, 309, 313, 332, 347  
 William Allen- 169, 170, 332  
 Woodrow Wilson- 167, 172, 332  
 Wymona (Wynoma?)- 349  
 Zephi Brockett- 80, 90, 91, 92, 101, 104, 107, 110, 111, 112, 122, 125, 126, 128, 130, 139, 141, 142, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 173, 174, 175, 210, 211, 212, 213, 217, 225, 234, 237, 239, 242, 243, 246, 268, 269, 290, 297, 301, 306, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 323, 330  
 Zephi Joy- 231, 232, 234, 235, 236, 237, 239, 240, 339  
 Zora Thompson- 186, 189, 190, 205, 206, 207, 336

# INDEX OF FAMILY NAMES OTHER THAN METCALF

Family names other than Metcalf that are cited in text (plates, figures, addenda, appendices, etc. not included). Some longer listings are referred to the Metcalf surname index. This is indicated by "(see Metcalf index)."

## AABERG

Susan Elizabeth- 348

## ADAMS

Asa- 48

Daniel- 42, 43, 44

Deborah- (see Metcalf index)

Eleazar- 50

Experience Cook- 43

Hannah- 43

Henry- 42, 56

John (President)- 42

Moses- 43, 47, 48, 50, 72

Mary- 44, 45, 47, 48, 60, 321

Sarah Sanford- 42

Thomas- 48

## ADEY

David- 351

Patty Colleen Nelson- 311, 350

## ALDIS

Diana Urban- 237

## ALLEN

Thomas- 9

## ALLIN

John- 20, 23

## ANDREWS

William- 10

## ANES

Eleanor- 51, 52

## ARMISON

Bryan- 112

Lynn- 115

## ARNOLD

Marcy Bush- 94, 109

## ARRINGTON

Ava Nellis- 339

William C.- 339

## ARY

Dorothy Brakey- 340

John Vincent- 340

## ATKIN

Alice- 254, 258, 260, 262, 263, 264, 345

## AUSTIN

Etta Metcalf- 326

Milford- 326

## AVERY

Donald- 329

Mary Mowers- 328

## AYERS

Mary Emeline (Emma)- 96, 97, 324

## BAKER

Bertha Alice- (see Metcalf index)

Cora- 306

Mae- 306

Maude- 306

Rhoda Damon- 100, 101

## BALDWIN

Alice Doran- 334

Bertha Metcalf- 162, 163, 171, 334

Clarence A.- 171, 334

Duard Oswald- 334

Furba Mae- 334

Leona Mills- 334

Leroy Alvin- 334

Loretta Francis- 334

Mansell Oren- 334

Mary Brewer- 334

## BAMBER

Jack- 180, 181

## BARGER

Fred- 234

## BANCROFT

Elizabeth Metcalf- 320

Thomas- 320

## BARRAGAN

Dan- 77

## BAUGH

Rosa- 170

## BELL

Ruth- 248

## BELTZ

Ardene- 337

Daniel Walter- 337

## BENDER

Family- 313

## BENNETT

Caroline Fisk- 62

William- 62

## BESANT

John- 28

## BISHOP

W.W.- 246

## BITTERMAN

Beulah Mae- 133, 134, 136

Ed- 133, 136

Imogene Gould- 133, 134, 136

Marjorie- 133, 136

- BLACKMAN  
   Almanzo- 139  
 BLAKESLEE  
   Hannah- (see Metcalf index)  
 BLOOD  
   Arthur- 11, 12  
 BOEHLJE  
   John- 136  
   Roberta Hewett- 134, 136  
 BOHANNON  
   David Wayne- 351  
   Nickie Salisbury- 351  
 BOOHER  
   Dick- 280, 288  
 BOOTH  
   Dr.- 282  
 BOOTS  
   Nettie- 349  
 BOULWARE  
   Bertha Metcalf Baldwin- 171, 334  
   John- 171, 334  
 BOWERS  
   Elizabeth- 35, 36, 320  
   John- 35, 36  
   Mary- 35, 36, 320  
   Sarah- 35, 36, 320  
   Sarah Clark- 35, 36  
 BRAKEY  
   Dorothy Yvonne- 340  
   Lorena Metcalf- 237, 340  
   Robert James, Jr.- 212, 237  
   Robert James, Sr.- 237, 340  
   Wilma Primm- 237, 340  
 BRAUN (BRAWN)  
   Anthony (Tony)- 246, 342  
   Grace Hudson Cornish- 245, 246, 249, 342  
 BRIGNALL  
   Martha Metcalf- 320  
   William- 320  
 BRIM  
   Bonnie Bell- 136  
   Imogene- 136  
   Marjorie Bitterman- 136  
   Mose- 136  
 BRINTNALL  
   William- 45  
 BROCK  
   D.M.- 179  
 BROCKETT  
   Amos- 74  
   Bartholomew- 139  
   Lucy- 139  
   Rachel- 80  
   Zephi- 79, 80, 86
- BROOKE  
   Ethel Josephine- 327  
 BROWN  
   Alma- 331  
   Dallas Ann Lindsey- 265  
   Louis- 265  
 BUCK  
   Marie- (see Metcalf index)  
 BULLEN  
   Elisha- 320  
   Hannah Metcalf- 320  
 BULLARD  
   John- 32  
   William- 17  
 BURCH  
   Ellamae- 175, 194, 198, 199, 200, 204, 205, 207, 335  
   Elizabeth- 141, 142, 143  
   Paul- 204, 207, 335  
 BURKETT  
   Mr.- 280  
 BURNS  
   Flora Jean- 345  
 BURRIS  
   Narcissa- 147, 158  
 BURTON  
   Alfred- 327  
   Mariette Metcalf- 97, 114, 327  
 BUTISFORT  
   Will- 123  
 BUSBY  
   Nicholas- 28  
 BUSH  
   Arthur- 109, 328  
   Janet Peirson- 328  
   Marcy- 109  
   Myrtie- 109, 328  
   William- 109, 328  
 CALDWELL  
   James- 44, 45  
   Sam- 46  
 CALL  
   Cecil- 331  
 CARSON  
   Kit- 205  
   Rusty- 205  
 CATTEL  
   Barbara- 339  
 CHANDLER  
   Judge- 48, 50  
 CHAPMAN  
   Georgia- 227  
 CHARLES I  
   King- 26, 27  
 CHASE

Levi B.- 131  
 CHICKERING  
   Francis- 17, 20, 30  
   Mary- (see Metcalf index)  
 CLARK  
   Abigail Metcalf- 37, 38, 51  
   Albert L.- 45, 46, 48  
   Anna M.- 134  
   Benjamin- 37  
   Bill- 290  
   Ebenezer- 38  
   Edith A.- 134  
   George R.- 131, 134  
   Joseph- 37  
   Louisa Gould- 131, 134  
   Olive R.- 134  
   Sarah- 35  
   Sarah Metcalf- 37, 38  
   Seth- 37, 38, 51  
   Timothy- 37, 38  
 CLAUS  
   Benjamin- 103  
 COBBS  
   Iva Della- 239, 340  
 COIL  
   Ruth Maxine- 347  
 COLE  
   Sarah- 82  
 COLEE  
   Alice Violet- (see Metcalf index)  
 CUMBERBACH  
   Thomas- 10  
 COOLEY  
   Rev.- 99  
 COOPER  
   Dewey- 331  
   Dora Marion Metcalf- 331  
   Esther Metcalf- 167, 331  
   Lee- 331  
 CORNISH  
   Edmund (see J. Edmund)  
   Evelyn- 246, 342  
   Grace Lee, Jr. 246, 342  
   Grace Hudson- 245, 246, 249, 342  
   J. Edmund- 245, 342  
 COVEY  
   Donald- 339  
   Helen June Nellis- 339  
 COWAN  
   Elizabeth McIntyre- 176  
 COX  
   Harry- 280  
 CROMWELL  
   Oliver- 28  
 CROOKE

Lura- 326  
 CROSBY  
   Eleanor Metcalf- 326  
   Gerald- 326  
 CROSS  
   Carrie Armina- (see Metcalf index)  
   E.J.- 159  
   Eilene- 332  
   Uthema- 172, 332  
 CRUMP  
   Morris- 146, 306  
 CUMMINS  
   Bessie- 233, 339  
 CUNNINGHAM  
   Robert- 59  
   Sarah- 58, 59, 322  
 CURRIER  
   Rita- 230, 231  
 CURTIS  
   Jane- 139, 141  
 DAMON  
   Alice- 328  
   Alonzo H.- 99, 100, 104, 109, 110,  
     111, 316, 323, 327  
   Bessie- 328  
   Charles M.- 99, 100, 102, 112, 113  
   Cora Derry- 328  
   Dora- 328  
   Dora R.- 327  
   George L.- 327  
   Harmon T.- 327  
   Herbert- 328  
   Herman S.- 328  
   Leland- 101  
   Mae- 328  
   Ralph- 327  
   Rhoda- 100, 101, 327  
   Riley- 100, 101, 328  
   Robert- 327  
   Roxana Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
   Sarah J.- 100, 327  
   Thomas- 100, 101, 327, 328  
 DANA  
   Josiah- 60  
 DANIEL  
   Thamer- 321  
 DANIELS  
   Ernest B.- 52  
 DARLING  
   Evelyn Shedd- 67  
 DAVIDSON  
   Albert- 330  
   Fernella Remmy- 330  
 DAVIS

Amos- 57  
 Chris- 52, 53  
 Edward- 326  
 Jacob H.- 149  
 Laura- 52  
 M.L.- 149  
 Sarah Metcalf- 57  
 DAVISON  
 Lena- 151, 155, 237, 245, 297,  
 298, 348  
 DAY  
 Melville- 102, 103  
 DECKER  
 J.R.- 161, 170  
 DE COURT  
 Lt.- 221  
 DIEHM  
 Barbara Ann- 341  
 DIETRICH  
 Edward G.- 107, 108, 124, 151, 329  
 Gertrude- 107, 329  
 Mildred- 329  
 Nelia Metcalf- 105, 106, 107, 124,  
 151, 230, 329  
 Sanford- 329  
 DONNEY  
 Medora- 206  
 DOUGLASS  
 Elizabeth Harmon- 110, 329  
 Pritchard- 107, 108, 329  
 DOW  
 Rev. Lorenzo- 82  
 DRISCOLL  
 Freda McMillan- 178  
 DUKE  
 Ed- 177  
 George- 177  
 Will- 177  
 DUNCAN  
 Felice Evea- (see Metcalf index)  
 Lucy- 332  
 DUNGAN  
 Edna Lucile- (see Metcalf index)  
 DYE  
 Floyd- 314  
 Mildred Laura (Jackie)- 314  
 Rachel Nelson Miller- 308, 309,  
 310, 314, 349  
 DYNAN  
 Margaret- 83  
 Patrick- 83  
 EASTMAN  
 Maude- 306  
 Seymour- 269, 272, 273, 306, 310  
 ELDER

Helen- 332  
 ELKINS  
 Beverly- 244  
 Helen Hudson- 242, 343  
 William- 343  
 ELLIS  
 Eleazar- 320  
 Elizabeth Metcalf- 320  
 Joseph- 320  
 Mary Metcalf- 320  
 ELLISON  
 Amy- 255  
 ELLWYN  
 Elizabeth- 5  
 Sarah- 5  
 ELMER  
 Maryette (Mariette)- 95, 99, 326  
 ELY  
 Daniel- 126  
 ENDICOTT  
 Dorothy- 332  
 ENGLISH  
 Abigail Williams- 105  
 Charles- 105, 112, 121  
 Cornelia- (see Metcalf index)  
 Robert- 105  
 ESTES  
 Patricia Metcalf- 298, 303,  
 304, 348  
 Tommys Harrell- 298, 348  
 EVANS  
 Jeanne Evonne- 337  
 Marsha- 168, 169  
 EVERS  
 Leona- 233  
 EWRY  
 Basil Whittingham- 350  
 Betty Zech- 350  
 Bonita Davis- 350  
 Don L. - 350  
 Dwight Charles- 350  
 Flossie Penwell- 350  
 Geneva Smith- 350  
 Harriett Elizabeth Metcalf- (see  
 Metcalf index)  
 Henry Freeman- 311  
 James Emil, Jr.- 350  
 James Emil, Sr.- 309, 311, 312, 350  
 John Franklin- 310, 311, 312, 350  
 Mary Lowery- 350  
 Mary Southers- 350  
 Patricia Anderson- 350  
 Sarah Vance- 311  
 Walter Eugene- 350  
 William Wallace- 350

## FAIRBANKS

George- 33  
 Mary- 19, 25, 319  
 Jonathan- 11, 12, 19, 20, 25

## FARMER

Mary Hotchkiss- 176, 177

## FARRINGTON

Daniel- 25  
 Hannah- 25

## FAUBION

Claude H.- 332  
 Floretta- 169  
 Flora Metcalf- 332

## FERGUSON

Doyle Wayne- 339

## FERNANDEZ

Grace Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Juan (Joao)- 228, 231, 232, 338  
 Juan, Jr.- 231, 338  
 Juanita- 228, 230, 231, 232, 338  
 Madeira- 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 338

## FESLER

Alma Brown- 165, 331  
 Bryce Cardigan- 331  
 Dolie Augustus- 218, 331  
 Dorena Woodrow- 331  
 Fern Estella- 331  
 Helen Hurt- 331  
 Ida Christine- 166  
 Ida Metcalf- 164, 165, 166, 330  
 Jap (see William Jasper)  
 Jasper Ralph- 166, 331  
 Lois Polston- 331  
 Ralph (see Jasper Ralph)  
 William Jasper- 165, 166, 330

## FIEGL

Lois- 131

## FISH

William- 111

## FISHER

Hannah- 37, 320  
 John- 37

## FISK

Aaron- 55, 56, 58, 60, 61, 62, 322  
 Abel- 61  
 Asa- 61  
 Betsy- 61  
 Caroline- 62  
 Elijah- 61  
 Ezra- 61, 62  
 Hannah- 62  
 Lavina- 61, 62  
 Joseph- 61  
 Levi- 61  
 Lois- 61

Tabitha Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)

## FLAMMGER

Margaret- 327

## FLETCHER

Jonathan- 60

## FLYNN

Jessie- 338  
 Juanita Fernandez- 338

## FOLTZ

Ruth Wolfe- 289  
 Tom- 289

## FORSMAN

Mr.- 270

## FORTUNE

Betty Marie Johnson- 296, 348  
 James Jay- 348

## FOSTER

Joseph- 45

## FOUDRAY

John O.- 160, 161

## FOX

Faucett- 72

## FRAHN

Eula- 187, 188

## FRANK

George- 180, 181

## FREEMAN

Archie- 326  
 Ethel Metcalf- 326

## FREUND

Anna Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Denzel Devine- 333  
 George A.- 163, 170, 333  
 Lester Wilhelm- 162, 170, 172, 333

## FULLER

Elizabeth- 220  
 Mary- 326  
 Mrs.- 220

## GAMBLE

Dora Catherine Thomson- 345  
 Richard A.- 345

## GARCIA

Madeira Fernandez- 228, 229, 230, 231  
 232, 338  
 Miguel- 230  
 Rita- 230, 231, 338

## GASTON

Charles F.- 211  
 George C.- 211  
 James C.- 211  
 James M.- 159, 211  
 Laodice- 211  
 Loyd- 211, 217, 223  
 Mary C.- (see Metcalf index)  
 Nellie- 211

Thomas E.- 211  
 Wesley J.- 211  
 GAYFORD  
   Dora Damon- 327  
   Frank- 327  
   Fred- 327  
   Helen- 327  
 GEORGE  
   Jean Strayer- 153, 252, 257, 258  
   260, 261, 262, 263  
 GERREN  
   Beulah Bitterman- 134, 136, 138  
   Orres- 136  
 GLISSEN  
   Roy- 314  
   Thelma Miller- 310, 314  
 GOLD  
   Nathan- 138  
   Philip-, 137, 138  
   Sarah- 138  
 GORDON  
   Charley- 122  
   Medea- 242, 248, 343  
   Salome- 103, 104, 323, 351  
   Victoria- 105  
 GORTON  
   Harvey- 259, 260, 263, 311, 344  
   Myrtle Parsons Strayer- (see Myrtle  
   PARSONS)  
 GOULD  
   Abigail- 135  
   Adelbert- 156  
   Alice Knapp- 132, 133, 135, 136  
   Arthur P.- 136  
   Beulah- 133, 134, 136  
   Charlston Joseph- 136  
   Dudley- 134  
   Florence- 132, 136  
   Harriet (see Metcalf index)  
   Hattie- 135  
   Herbert- 132, 136  
   Ida- 132  
   Imogene- 133, 136  
   Isaac- 130, 131, 132, 134  
   Jay- 130, 138  
   Joseph W.- 132, 133, 134, 138  
   Kent- 135  
   Laura Ann- 135  
   Louise- 131, 134  
   Mabel- 133, 134, 136  
   Mary- 135  
   Mary Elizabeth- 130, 131, 132, 134  
   Mary Totten- 132, 135  
   Mattie K.- 135  
   Michael- 90, 130, 131, 134, 137,  
   138

Minta Phillips- 136  
 Philip- 137, 138  
 Philip W.- 132, 135  
 Ralph N.- 135  
 Roswell- 132, 135  
 Sarah Slocum- 130, 131, 132, 134,  
 137, 138 141  
 Sarepta- 131, 134  
 Simeon- 137  
 Susan- 137, 141, 142, 143  
 William E.- 135  
 GRANT  
   Lucy- 66  
 GRAYUM  
   Brenda Rose- 341  
   Bruce David- 341  
   Clarence F.- 239  
   Violet Metcalf Stroup- 213, 214,  
   239, 240, 341  
 GREEN  
   Susie Annie- 166, 167  
 GROSVENOR  
   Estelle Haney- 261, 262, 344  
   Mr.- 344  
 HACKER  
   Fairest- 273  
 HACKLEY  
   Aaron- 72  
   Philo M.- 71, 72  
 HAGGARD  
   Floretta Faubion- 169  
 HALL  
   Adelbert- 156  
   Julia Slocum- 142, 143  
 HAMANT  
   Melitiah (Meletiah)- 321  
 HAMILTON  
   Hannah Seele Hotchkiss- 174, 176,  
   185  
 HAMMACK  
   Decima Rutheen- 349  
   M. Ailan- 349  
 HANEY  
   Bertha- 262, 344  
   Elwood Thomson- 261, 262, 344  
   Estelle- 261, 262, 344  
   Herbert- 261, 262, 344  
   Ida Thomson- 177, 254, 261, 262,  
   267, 344  
 HANKINS  
   Nancy Ann- 348  
 HANSON  
   Marge- 176  
   Robert B.- 24  
 HARDAWAY  
   Robert Louis- 343

Ruth Irene- 343  
 HARMON  
 Ellen Louise- 109, 110, 114, 150, 329  
 Elizabeth- 110, 329  
 Herbert- 109, 110, 329  
 Joyce Rutter- 110, 329  
 Marion Alberta- 110, 329  
 Millie Metcalf- 109, 110, 329  
 Richard- 109, 110, 329  
 HATCH  
 Adelbert- 156  
 HAUGHN  
 Margaret- 340  
 HAWKINS  
 Mary Elizabeth (Betty)- (see Metcalf index)  
 HAWKS (HAWKE)  
 Reuben- 56, 322  
 Silence Metcalf- 56, 59, 62, 322  
 HEATON  
 Deborah Metcalf- 56, 59, 62, 322  
 Moses- 56, 322  
 HEMPSMYER  
 Lois- 347  
 HENN  
 Richard- 78  
 HENRY  
 Bob- 197, 198, 199, 200  
 HEWETT  
 Bonnie Brim- 136  
 Claude- 136  
 Richard- 136  
 Robert- 136  
 Roberta- 136  
 Ronald- 136  
 Rose Marie- 136  
 HILDRETH  
 Luna Metcalf- 66, 322  
 Timothy- 66, 322  
 HILL  
 Don Gleason- 14  
 Georgia- 152  
 HILLYARD  
 Hermie Bertha- 349  
 Jack L.- 349  
 HINSDALE  
 Abigail- 321  
 HOLMES  
 Edith G.- 248  
 Ira- 248  
 J.C. (Rev.)- 248  
 HOOVER  
 Barbara Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Dale- 309, 313, 351

Judy K.- 351  
 HORTON  
 Adda Metcalf- 170, 333  
 Leda Glenn- 333  
 Virgil- 170, 333  
 William- 170, 333  
 HOTCHKISS  
 Adair- 200  
 Charles- 176  
 Elizabeth Cowan McIntyre- 176  
 Ella May (see Metcalf index)  
 Enos T.- 174, 175, 176, 177, 190 192  
 Hannah Seele- 174, 176, 185  
 Ida- 176, 177, 192, 193, 202, 206  
 Mary- 176, 177  
 Mattie- 177  
 Medora Ackley- 176  
 Monett- 176  
 HOWARD  
 Eula Lorene- 203, 335  
 HOYT  
 E.A. (Rev.)- 245  
 HUBBARD  
 F.M.- 285  
 Rev. Mrs. (Mother)- 274  
 Tracy- 205  
 HUDSON  
 Claude M.- 243, 249, 342  
 Earl Ulrich- 217, 248, 343  
 Edith Holmes- 248, 343  
 Effa A.- 243, 247, 342  
 Ella- 243, 249, 343  
 Esther (Hester) Dickerson- 242, 243, 246  
 Grace Lee- 243, 245, 246, 249, 313, 342  
 Guy- 243  
 Harry- 248, 249, 343  
 Hattie E.- 243, 249, 342  
 Helen- 242, 343  
 Ida Ellen Metcalf (see Metcalf index)  
 J.H.- 243  
 James- 242  
 Josephine Stock- 343  
 Lena Daisy- 243, 245, 246, 247 249, 342  
 Medea Gordon- 242, 248, 343  
 Reuben Lee- 152, 153, 242, 243, 244, 245, 247, 248, 249, 252, 253, 342  
 Russell Lee- 343  
 Ruth Bell- 248, 343  
 Ruth Irene- 343  
 HULL

Dora Pearl Thomson- 255, 262, 263  
264, 345  
Walter- 263, 345

HUNT  
Doris Sylvie Metcalf- 336  
Edna Metcalf- 332  
Milton- 332  
Raymond- 336

HURT  
Clair- 185, 189, 335  
Daisy Louise- 335  
Doris Rendquist Fischlein- 335  
Helen- 331  
Jerry Beryl- 181, 182, 183, 184,  
185, 190, 335  
Marie- 175, 177, 178, 181, 182,  
184, 185, 188, 189, 190, 267, 335  
Maurine Melsha- 335  
Minnie Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
Oscar- 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 185,  
186, 188, 189, 190, 335  
Rose Buchan- 335  
Roy Zenus- 189, 335  
Thelma Cloud- 335  
Verne Hotchkiss- 185, 335  
Zenus (see Roy Zenus)  
Zorum H.- 185, 189, 335

HYATT  
Mona- 78

INGALLS  
Aaron- 324  
Clara Withey- 324  
Mary Metcalf- 324  
Oren- 324

IULG  
J. Fred- 105

IVES  
Dorothea- 75, 82

JACKSON  
Ida- 146

JOHNSON  
Andrew Jackson (Dutch)- 292, 296, 348  
Betty Marie- 296, 348  
Eldred Lawrence- 326  
Franklin Duane- 296, 348  
Louis- 159  
Margaret- 69  
Myrtle Augusta- (see Metcalf index)  
Sir William- 69, 84, 86

JOLLY (JOLLEY)  
Lena Hudson Merrick- 247, 249

JONES  
Alice Lavon Nelson- 350  
Ezra- 60  
Margaret- 333

Willie L.- 350

KASER  
Clarence- 160

KEELER  
Rebecca- 141, 142

KELLY  
Harvey- 212

KING HENDRICK- 85

KING PHILIP- 35, 41, 53

KLAHN  
Henry- 266  
Lily May Thomson- 266

KLOCK  
Hendrick- 85, 88  
Jacob- 85, 86  
Joseph- 87  
Nicholas- 79, 87

KNAPP  
Alice- 132, 135, 136

LAFFERTY  
Beatrice Morgan- 324  
Dennis- 325  
Edmond- 324  
Emeline Metcalf- 324  
Florence McFarlan- 98, 324  
George- 324  
Linford- 98, 324  
William- 324

LAMBERSON  
Charles- 79  
John- 81  
Nancy Lobdell- 81

LANG  
Betsy- 46

LANSING  
Dirck- 71, 79, 83

LAUD  
William (Archbishop)- 27

LAWES  
Franis- 28

LENTZ  
Adolph- 264  
Jennie May- 264, 345  
Philomena- 264

LEPLATT  
Jewell- 188

LINCOLN  
Abraham- 146  
Mordecai- 146

LINDHOLM  
Ed- 258, 344

LINDSEY  
Dallas Ann- 266,  
David O'Keefe- 265, 266, 346  
Dee Reynolds- 257, 346

Gail Elwood- 17, 254, 256, 257, 258,  
259, 260, 262, 264, 265, 266, 346  
Gary- 266  
Janet- 266  
Joy Thomson- 235, 251, 255, 256, 257, 258  
259, 260, 262, 263, 265, 266, 267, 346  
Susan Thompson- 266, 346  
LOBDELL  
Nancy- 81  
LOTT  
Dorothea Metcalf- 216, 337  
LOVELL  
Hope- 321  
Lydia Metcalf- 321  
LOVEALL  
Melba- 334  
MANISCALCO  
John- 327  
Lura June- 327  
MARION  
Phylliss Dee- 299, 347  
MARRON  
Barbara- 336  
MARTIN  
Jimmy (Rev.)- 288  
Mary Jane- 232- 233  
Mr.- 276  
MATLOCK  
Dr.- 293  
MEAD  
Ward- 271  
MEARS  
Otto- 192  
MERRICK  
Heston- 246  
Jane- 246  
Lena Hudson- 245, 246, 247, 342  
Marjorie- 246, 247, 342  
Ross- 245, 246, 247, 342  
MILES  
Jane- 82, 322  
William- 83  
MILLER  
Bill- 314  
Frances Irene- 314  
Thelma Vitura- 310, 314  
MILLION  
Dick- 276  
MINDER  
Clara- 185  
Sally- 185  
Susie- (see Metcalf index)  
MINER  
B.N. (Rev.)- 106  
MITCHELL  
Janet Lindsey- 266, 266

MOCK  
Susan- 238  
MOHNKERN  
Donald- 329  
Marion Harmon- 329  
MONEGAN  
Mrs.- 276  
MORRIS  
Harriet- 242, 251  
Judy- 116  
Thomas- 116  
William- 242, 251  
MOUNTAIN  
Alice Atkin- 254, 258, 260, 262,  
263, 264, 345  
Christopher Henry- 260, 263, 264,  
345  
Major General- 263  
Muriel Thomson- 255, 257, 263, 264,  
345  
Orville Norris- 263, 264, 345  
Patricia- 260  
MOWERS  
Arthur E.- 110, 323, 329  
Mary Metcalf- 108, 109, 110, 329  
Mary Jane- 329  
Robert- 329  
MUILENBURG  
Grace Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
Virgil Carl- 338  
MCDANIEL  
Wilbur- 148  
MCFARLAN  
Florence Mae- 98  
Family homesite- 98, 112  
MCGUIRE  
Clarence- 247, 342  
Clarence Hudson- 242, 247, 248, 342  
Effa Hudson- 243, 247,  
Hudson Lee- 248, 342  
T.H.- 247  
Virginia Hoover- 342  
MACINTOSH  
John- 320  
Rebecca Metcalf- 320  
MCKINLEY  
William (President)- 222  
MCMILLAN  
Freda- 178  
Mr.- 201  
Wiley- 178  
MCVAY  
Ruth Jane- 326  
NELLIS  
Ava Lorena- 339

Bessie Cummins- 233, 339  
 Charles Wayne- 339  
 Christian- 85, 88  
 Clara Hildebrant- 234  
 Earl- 87, 232, 233, 234, 241, 339  
 Evelyn Earline- 339  
 Gail Metcalf- 233, 339  
 Helen June- 339  
 James McLanchton- 232, 233, 299  
 Johannes- 85  
 Lang (see James McLanchton)  
 Leona Evers- 233, 339  
 Magdalene Klock- 85  
 Mary Jane Martin- 232, 233, 299  
 Maxine Dunivant- 339  
 Myrtle Minnie Metcalf- 232, 234, 241, 339  
 Nellie Dora Metcalf- 232, 233, 338  
 Oscar Warren- 87, 232, 233, 338  
 Peter Philip- 70, 71, 87, 232  
 Peter Spraker- 87, 232, 233  
 Ralph Oscar- 213, 233, 234, 237, 241, 339  
 Ralph Patrick- 234  
 Theodore (Ted)- 233  
 Warren Glen- 339  
 Wayne (see Charles Wayne)  
 William- 85, 87  
 NELSON  
 Alice Lavon- 312, 350  
 Cecilia Metcalf- 298, 348  
 Donald- 349  
 Donald Leroy- 298, 348  
 Patty Colleen- 311, 312, 350  
 Rachel- 308, 309, 310, 314, 349  
 Richard Wayne- 350  
 Robert Milan- 350  
 Virgil C.- 350  
 NEWTON  
 Jennie Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Percy N.- 308, 312, 350  
 NICHOLSON  
 Marjorie- 340  
 NICKLESON  
 Burt- 149  
 NUNNOLD  
 Alice Metcalf- 234, 238, 239, 340  
 Cecilia- 340,  
 Jerry- 340  
 John- 238, 340  
 Joseph- 340  
 ONION  
 Elizabeth- 25  
 Hannah- 25  
 Robert- 25, 319

Sarah Metcalf- 319  
 OVERMAN  
 Caroline- 270, 271, 272, 294  
 Leander- 289  
 Robert- 289, 297  
 PAIGE (PAINE)  
 Sarah- 25, 320  
 PAINE (PAIGE)  
 Anne- 25, 320  
 PARISHO  
 Hattie- 274  
 PARRETT  
 Cora- 306, 307  
 Frank- 306, 307  
 PARSONS  
 Dora Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Levi G.- 252  
 Myrtle Iona- 243, 252, 253, 254, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 267, 311, 344  
 William Henry- 252, 258, 344  
 PATTON  
 Shirley Metcalf- 207, 208, 336  
 Virgil- 336  
 PELL  
 Ellen- 134  
 Jerome- 131, 134  
 Lillian- 132, 134  
 Mary Gould- 131, 132, 134  
 Orren (Orrin)- 131, 134  
 PERKINS  
 William- 22  
 PERSONS  
 Charlie- 124  
 Nellie- 108, 123, 124, 328  
 PHILLIPS  
 Art C.- 136  
 Dee- 136  
 Minta- 136  
 William- 136  
 PIDGE  
 Mary- 20, 21, 22, 319  
 PLIMPTON  
 Elizabeth- 321  
 Hannah- 321  
 John- 32  
 Sarah- 36, 320  
 POE  
 Dorothy Thomson- 257, 258, 259, 264, 345  
 Jake- 181  
 Lyle- 258, 345  
 POLSTON  
 Lois- 331  
 PORTER

- Eliza- (see Metcalf index)  
 Florence Thomson- 346  
 Harold H.- 346  
 POWELL  
 Francis J.- 148  
 John J.- 148  
 PRATHER  
 George- 277  
 PRICE  
 Daisy Hurt- 335  
 John- 335  
 PRIMM  
 Wilma- 340  
 RECORD  
 Robert- 19  
 RECTOR  
 Sarah Ann (Sadie)- (see Metcalf index)  
 REMMY  
 Angel- 330  
 Cleat (see Cleatus A.)  
 Cleatus A.- 161, 163, 164, 279, 282, 289, 330  
 Elwyn Cleatus- 330  
 Ethel Leta- 330  
 Fernella- 330  
 Flora Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Lela Clarice- 165, 166, 330  
 Lovella Oliva- 330  
 RICHARDSON  
 Clarence Wilbert- 330  
 Ella May- 297, 347  
 Lovella Remmy- 330  
 RIDGWAY  
 Mrs.- 271  
 RILEY  
 Ruth- 300  
 ROBBINS  
 Mary Metcalf- 103, 106, 107, 123, 124, 327  
 Nellie C.- 107, 328  
 Wilson G.- 103, 106, 107, 123, 124, 327  
 ROBERTS  
 Alice- 231, 232, 235, 236, 339  
 ROGERS  
 Lydia- 41  
 ROWLAND  
 Dave- 314  
 Mildred Dye- 314  
 ROZELL  
 Fern Fesler- 331  
 Roy- 331  
 RUTTER  
 Mary Joyce- 110, 328  
 SALISBURY  
 Nickie Dawn- 351  
 Shirley Jean Metcalf- 308, 313, 351  
 Warren Maxwell- 351  
 SANDERS  
 Daniel- 38, 51  
 Sarah Metcalf- 38  
 SANDOVAL  
 Evelyn Earline Nellis- 339  
 John- 339  
 SARTIN  
 Agnes Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 Larry- 166, 333  
 Mary Betty Majors- 333  
 O.D.- 281  
 Otis- 333  
 SCHENK  
 Evelyn- 136  
 Leo- 136  
 Roy- 136  
 SCHUBERT  
 Glenna Marie- 333  
 Stellas Robinson- 332  
 SCHUMAN  
 Albert- 328  
 Donald- 328  
 Dorothy- 328  
 Marion- 328  
 Nellie Robbins- 328  
 SCOTT  
 David- 72  
 William- 72  
 SHACKLEY  
 Herbert (Bert)- 262, 263, 345  
 Vida Thomson- 255, 256, 262, 263, 344  
 SHEDD  
 Luna Metcalf Hildreth- 66, 67, 70, 322  
 Stephen- 66, 67, 70, 322  
 Timothy Hildreth- 67  
 SHEPHERD  
 Abigail Gould- 131, 135  
 Dilworth- 131, 135  
 Elizabeth E.- 135  
 SIBLEY  
 William (Rev.)- 252  
 SINCLAIR  
 Caroline (Callie)- 270, 271, 272, 294  
 Frank- 270, 294,  
 Laura Evelyn (see Metcalf index)  
 Lucy Myrtle (see Metcalf index)  
 Myrtle (see Lucy Myrtle)  
 Simon- 277, 283, 294, 298

## SLOCUM

Abner Peak- 142  
 Adelbert Leroy- 142, 156  
 Adeline- 142  
 Almanzo- 139, 141  
 Amaziah- 141  
 Amelia- 142  
 Anthony- 139  
 Aurelia- 142  
 Charles Burch- 142  
 Charles E.- 139  
 Chauncey Bedell- 142, 143  
 Cook- 141  
 Cyrus Daniel- 142  
 Daniel- 137, 141, 142, 143  
 Densie Ann- 142  
 Ebenezer- 140  
 Edward- 143  
 Eliezer- 140  
 Elisha- 141, 142  
 Elizabeth- 141  
 Elizabeth Burch- 141, 142, 143  
 Emeline Diantha- 142  
 George Washington- 142  
 Giles- 139, 140  
 Henry- 141, 144  
 Jane Curtis- 139, 141  
 Jesse- 139, 140, 141  
 John- 140, 141  
 Joseph Cueworth- 142, 143  
 Julia- 141, 142  
 Julia Hall- 142, 143  
 Lloyd- 143  
 Marion Leroy- 142  
 Mary- 141  
 Matilda- 141  
 Monsun- 139, 141  
 Morley Erlingstine- 142  
 Nathaniel- 140  
 Peleg- 140  
 Philip Gould- 137, 141, 142  
 Rebecca Keeler- 141, 142  
 Richard Ketchum- 142  
 Roswell- 141, 144  
 Samuel- 140, 141  
 Sarah- (see Sarah Slocum GOULD)  
 Silvanus Keeler- 142  
 Smith- 141  
 Susan Gould- 137, 141, 142, 143  
 William- 139, 141, 142  
 William Harvey- 142

## SMITH

Beverly Elkins- 244  
 Christopher- 25  
 F.L. (Rev. and Mrs.)-99

Ida Hotchkiss- 176, 177, 192,  
 193, 202, 206  
 John- 25, 176, 177, 211  
 Medora- 206  
 Samuel- 36

## SNIDER

Dorothy Jean Metcalf- 205, 206, 336  
 Howard- 336  
 James- 209

## SONNING

Daniel- 28

## SPOHN

Frank- 325  
 Lorna Stone- 325

## STEARMAN

Mr.- 160

## STEWART

Lucille- 338

## STOCKING

Mary Elizabeth- 338

## STONE

Alfred- 325  
 Clarence Lee Roy- 325  
 Clifford Alsworth- 325  
 Dewitt Clinton- 325  
 Emma Brink- 325  
 Ethel Rifenburg- 326  
 Ethel Smock- 325  
 Everett Stanley- 325  
 Eva Priscilla- 98, 325  
 Freda Bruehl- 325  
 Grace Cole- 325  
 Hannah Metcalf- 91, 98, 325  
 Isabelle Gehr- 325  
 Kitty Belle- 325  
 Lawrence Herbert- 325  
 Lorna Helen- 325  
 Loren- 325  
 Lyman B.- 325  
 Mabel Linblad Johnson- 325  
 Mary Inez Clarissa- 325  
 Max Clinton- 326  
 Ora Slingluff Rumbaugh- 325  
 Sarah Margaret- 98, 325  
 William F.- 98, 325  
 William Ford- 325

## STOW

Mary Metcalf Brignall- 320

## STRAYER

Angus Paul- 259, 344  
 Dora Alice- 259, 344  
 George W.- 258, 344  
 Howard Thomas- 261  
 Howard Wallace- 257, 259, 260, 261, 344  
 Jean- 153, 252, 257, 258, 260, 261, 262, 263

Mabel Wilber- 260, 261, 344  
 Myrtle Parsons- (see Myrtle PARSONS)  
 STREETER  
   Stephen- 61  
 STRINGHAM  
   Donald- 327  
   Lyma Cora- 327  
 STROUP  
   Barbara Diehm- 240, 341  
   Charles Brooks, Jr., 240, 241, 341  
   Charles Brooks, Sr.- 239,  
   Violet Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
 SUMNER  
   Mabel- 259  
 SUOR  
   Edmund- 246  
   Evelyn Cornish- 246, 342  
   Joseph- 246, 342  
 TANT  
   Amy C.- 232  
 TAYLOR  
   Cyrus- 148  
   Frances Miller- 314  
   George- 187  
   Hazel Lorraine Metcalf- 171, 334  
   Lester- 314  
   Russell Gordon- 334  
 THOMAS  
   Flora Metcalf- (see Metcalf index)  
   Luther J.- 104, 351  
   William W.- 104  
 THOMASON  
   Harriet Metcalf- 331  
   Herbert- 331  
 THOMPSON  
   Silas- 71, 74  
   Susan- 265, 346  
   Zora- (see Metcalf index)  
 THOMSON  
   Agnes- 253  
   Carrie Iona- 345  
   Cyril Clifford- 256, 260, 264, 345  
   David Wise- 253, 254, 255, 256, 257,  
   266, 344, 346  
   Dora Catherine- 345  
   Dora Metcalf Parsons- (see Metcalf  
   index)  
   Dora Pearl- 255, 257, 262, 263, 264, 344  
   Dorothy May- (see Dorothy POE  
   F.J.- 253  
   Flora Burns- 345  
   Florence Alvina- 346  
   Floyd Daniel- 263, 346  
   Frank William (Wesley)- 346  
   Gail Lee- 256, 261, 263, 264, 265,  
   266, 311, 346

Hartley Austin- 255, 256, 266, 346  
 Ida Rae- 177, 254, 261, 262,  
 267, 344  
 James- 265, 346  
 James Robert- 346  
 Jennie Lentz- 264, 345  
 Jerry (J.L.?- 253, 254  
 John Henry- 258, 360, 346  
 J.W.- 253  
 John West- 253  
 Joy Marjorie Metcalf- 235, 251, 255,  
 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 262, 263,  
 265, 266, 267, 346  
 Kinko Wada- 346  
 Lily May- 254, 266  
 Muriel Violet- 255, 257, 263, 264,  
 345  
 Paul B.- 263, 345  
 Ralph- 253, 266  
 Rosalena Violet- 345  
 Vida Daisy- 255, 256, 262, 263, 344  
 William Wise- 253, 266  
 THURSTON  
   Mehitable- 321  
 TIEHM  
   Brenda Grayum- 341  
   Jon Wesley, Jr.- 341  
 TOMASCO  
   Juanita Fernandez Flynn- 228,  
   230, 231, 232, 338  
   Peter- 338  
 TOTTEN  
   Mary- 132, 135  
 TRENT  
   Edith "Lea" Metcalf- 162, 167,  
   168, 332  
   Hattie- 332  
   James Perry- 332  
   Rose Martha- 331  
 TULLAR  
   Clifford- 326  
   Eva Stone- 98, 325  
 URBAN  
   Diana- 237  
   Donald Wayne- 237, 340  
   Donna- 237  
   Dorothy Metcalf- 235, 236, 237,  
   241, 340  
 VANADA  
   Ruby- 349  
 VAN SLYKE  
   William- 131  
 VAN STEINBERG  
   Diana- 66  
 VEAZEY  
   Luella- (see Metcalf index)

## VEEDER

Simon- 71

## VENESS

Margaret Stone- 98, 325

Victor Freemont- 325

## VOELK

Bob- 51, 52

## VOLKMAN

Cecilia- 133, 134

## VONDERSCHMIDT

Gena- 238

Susan Mock- 238

## WADA

Kinko- 346

## WADE

Samuel- 177

## WALKER

Jane Metcalf- 320

Samuel- 320

## WALLACE

Cora- 294

William, Sir- 268

## WAMSLEY

R.O.- 279

## WARD

James D.- 212

## WARNER

Mae- 306

## WARREN

Robert- 99

## WASHINGTON

General George- 86

## WATKINS

Mary Metcalf- 82

Susan- 64, 65, 67, 69, 72, 74,  
75, 80, 81

## WATTS

Donna Urban- 237

## WEAVER

Jean- 299, 347

## WELLS

Ben- 276

Sarah Allen- 46

## WESBROOK

Clyde- 293, 294

Verna- 288

## WETHERBEE

Abishai- 61

## WHEELER

Experience Metcalf- 320

Gertrude Dietrich- 329

Isaac- 37, 320

Lloyd- 107, 108, 329

Patricia Mountain- 260

## WHITAKER

Nellie- (see Metcalf index)

## WHITE

Joseph- 41, 42

Lela Remmy- 165, 166, 330

Lydia- 41, 321

Merritt- 330

Thomas- 41

## WHITNEY

P.N. (Dr.)- 273

## WILBUR

Mabel- 260, 344

## WILLEFORD

Helen June Metcalf- 206, 208, 336

Robert- 336

## WILLIAMS

Abigail- 81

Alexander- 228

Lodema- 81

Margaret Marie- 338

Martha- 228

## WILSON

Henry- 319

Joshura- 78

Mary Metcalf- 319

## WINKLER

Robert- 77, 82

## WITHERSPOON

Mrs.- 274

## WOOD

Amanda- 82

Ely- 91

Rosanna (Rosina)- 82

## WOODCOCK

Deborah- 56

Michael- 56

## WOODWARD

Peter- 21

## WOODS

D.C.- 78

Daniel- 78

## WORDEN

Irve- 104

## WORTHINGTON

John- 112

## WREN

Matthew (Bishop)- 7, 9, 28, 29

## YATES

Henry F.- 71

## YEOMAN

Chris- 332

Veda Metcalf- 332

## GEOGRAPHIC INDEX

Some geographic features mentioned in text are indexed below, alphabetically, by state, province, or country. Localities noted in the genealogical listing, pages 319-351, are not included, nor are maps, figures, plates, etc.

## ALASKA

Ketchikan-170

## ARIZONA

Bisbee- 256, 265  
 Bullhead City- 261  
 Clifton- 256, 265  
 Phoenix- 265, 266

## BRITISH COLUMBIA

Vancouver- 263

## CALIFORNIA

Arlington- 208  
 Bakersfield- 202  
 Bonita- 189  
 Colton- 208  
 Costa Mesa- 208  
 Crestwood Cemetery (Riverside)- 190  
 El Camino Cemetery (Chula Vista)- 237  
 El Monte- 262, 263  
 Escondido- 223  
 Hollister- 189  
 Huntington Beach- 188  
 Inglewood- 257, 259, 260  
 Inglewood Park Cemetery (Inglewood)- 258  
 Irvine Cemetery (Orange Co.)- 190  
 La Sierra- 207  
 Merced- 202  
 Monterey- 298  
 Norco- 259  
 Oakland- 188, 189  
 Olivewood Cemetery (Riverside)- 189  
 Oroville- 204  
 Pittsburgh- 206  
 Richmond- 206  
 Riverside- 190, 202, 204, 205, 207  
 San Diego- 261, 262  
 San Francisco- 218, 222  
 Santa Ana- 208, 209  
 Tracy- 206  
 Venice- 264

## COLORADO

Bayfield- 186, 187, 188, 205  
 Blanca- 194  
 Chromo- 196  
 Colorado Springs- 228, 290  
 Debeque- 202  
 Del Norte- 174, 186, 187, 194  
 Delta- 192, 207, 254, 255, 258, 266

Delta County- 174, 177, 179, 200  
 Denver- 174, 175, 176, 193, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 259, 263  
 Dunton- 254, 255  
 Durango- 185, 186, 188, 254, 255, 262, 263, 264  
 Edith- 255, 263  
 Fort Garland- 205  
 Glenwood Springs- 207  
 Grand Junction- 192, 200  
 Hotchkiss- 153, 174, 176, 177, 178, 179, 184, 192, 193, 197, 199, 203, 205, 206, 207, 255  
 La Jara- 195  
 La Junta- 179, 185, 193, 205  
 Lake City- 174, 176, 177, 192, 254, 261, 262  
 Lamar- 180, 185, 187, 193, 194, 205  
 Mancos- 254, 255, 258, 263  
 Monte Vista- 186, 194, 195  
 Otero County- 179  
 Ouray- 192, 254, 258, 265  
 Pagosa Springs- 185, 186, 197, 255  
 Paonia- 207  
 Pine River (La Plata Co.)- 187, 188  
 Pioneer Cemetery (Colorado Springs area)-228  
 Prowers County- 180  
 Red Mountain- 254, 258  
 Rico- 254  
 Rocky Ford- 179, 185, 290, 303  
 Rogers Mesa (Hotchkiss)- 193  
 Silverton- 254  
 Springfield- 180  
 Two Buttes- 180, 185, 290

## CONNECTICUT

East Haddam- 67, 68, 75  
 Fairfield- 138  
 Lebanon- 66, 67, 75  
 Wolcott- 80

## ENGLAND

Apperside- 3, 4  
 Heigham- 5, 20  
 Nappa Hall- 3, 4  
 Norfolk County- 3, 5, 10, 26  
 Norwich- 3, 5, 6, 9, 10, 11, 12, 20, 28  
 Oxford- 201, 202  
 Plymouth- 7, 10  
 Tatterford- 3, 5  
 Wensleydale- 3  
 Yarmouth (Great Yarmouth)- 10, 26, 27  
 Yorkshire- 2, 3, 4, 6, 12

## GEORGIA

West Point- 203

## GERMANY

Newstead  
 Desiring

The Palatinate (Rheinland/Pfalz)- 70, 84, 88

## IDAHO

Parker- 179

## ILLINOIS

Chicago- 108  
Cook County- 159  
Decatur- 227  
Fountain Green- 145, 146, 306  
Galesburg- 203, 204  
Hancock County- 145, 146  
Hancock Township- 145, 146  
Nauvoo- 146  
Quincy- 156  
Springfield- 157  
Webster- 146

## INDIANA

Clinton- 296  
Lawrenceburg- 242  
Wabash River- 296

## IOWA

Clear Lake- 132, 135  
Greene- 135  
Marble Rock- 133, 136  
Mason City- 133, 136  
Nora Springs- 133, 134, 136  
Northwood- 136  
Ridgeway- 132  
Rockford- 132, 133, 135, 136  
Shellrock- 133, 136

## KANSAS

Arkansas City- 151, 152, 153, 155, 212, 213, 225, 226, 237, 238, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 249, 257, 297, 298, 307  
Beaver Creek (Cowley Co.)- 272, 276, 283  
Bethel Methodist Church (Neosho Co.)- 149  
Caney- 213, 214, 230, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 289  
Cedar Creek (Cowley Co.)- 279, 290, 291  
Cedar Vale- 158, 159, 160, 164, 165, 225, 226, 275, 280, 284, 285, 290, 291, 295, 300, 313  
Chautauqua County- 158, 294, 299, 300  
Cherryvale- 153, 224, 306, 307, 308, 309, 311, 312, 313, 314  
Chetopa- 169, 170  
Coffeyville- 234, 313  
Corbin City- 308  
Cowley County- 148, 149, 153, 158, 160, 161, 234, 243, 298, 299, 300, 306  
Crab Creek (Cowley Co.)- 290, 293  
Creswell Township (Cowley Co.)- 247  
Dearing- 309

Dexter- 148, 149, 150, 152, 153, 165, 211, 212, 213, 218, 219, 230, 232, 268, 270, 274, 275, 276, 277, 282, 290, 291, 294, 298, 300, 301, 303, 306, 307, 310  
 Dexter Cemetery (Cowley Co.)- 212, 233  
 Elk County- 298  
 Erie- 146, 149, 158, 242, 243, 251, 252, 268, 313  
 Fairview Cemetery (Cherryvale)- 308, 309  
 Fairview School (Cowley Co.)- 288  
 Flint Hills- 212, 279, 284, 299, 314  
 Fort Riley- 170, 296  
 Fort Scott- 169, 313  
 Four Mile Creek (Neosho Co.)- 146, 147, 159  
 Fredonia- 238  
 Galena- 223  
 Gas City (near Iola)- 194  
 Grand Summit- 234  
 Grenola- 110, 298  
 Grouse Creek (Cowley Co.)- 310  
 Harmony Grove Cemetery (Labette Co.)- 308  
 Hewins- 165, 166  
 Hicks Chapel Church- 288  
 Highland School Community- 232, 233, 234, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 282, 288, 290, 299, 301  
 Hooser (Cowley Co.)- 153, 155, 160, 163, 164, 225, 226, 270, 275, 277, 285, 286, 288, 289, 297, 300, 301  
 Hutchinson- 218, 222  
 Independence- 309, 311, 313  
 Iola- 194, 204  
 Irish Flats Community (Cowley Co.)- 270, 275, 276  
 Labette County- 252  
 Leavenworth- 247  
 Maple City- 289  
 Montgomery County- 213, 307  
 Neosho County- 146, 149, 158, 159, 242, 251, 252, 306  
 Oakwood Cemetery (Parsons)- 249  
 Panhandle School (Cowley Co.)- 274  
 Parsons- 242, 243, 247, 248, 252, 253, 254, 309  
 Prairie View School (Cowley Co.)- 225, 274, 275, 289, 299  
 Protection- 225  
 Riverview Cemetery (Arkansas City)- 155, 225, 243, 246  
 Ryan Land (Cowley Co.)- 285, 286, 294, 299  
 Sedan- 295  
 Silverdale- 238  
 Sterling- 238  
 Sunnyside Cemetery (Caney)- 216, 234, 239  
 Taussig (Cowley Co.)- 291  
 Walnut Grove Township (Neosho Co.)- 146, 147, 148, 251, 252  
 Wichita- 297  
 Winfield- 214, 225, 230, 300, 303

## LOUISIANA

Baton Rouge- 156, 157

## MAINE

Biddeford- 102

## MASSACHUSETTS

Amesbury- 137  
 Barre- 30, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 54, 56, 57, 58, 59, 62  
 Berkshire County- 63, 64, 67, 69  
 Black Swamp (Medway)- 39, 53  
 Braintree- 35, 42  
 Cannestow River- 45, 46  
 Charlemont- 56, 62  
 Charles River- 32, 33, 38, 39, 40, 51, 52, 53  
 Dartmouth- 140  
 Dedham- 5, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 28, 29, 30, 31, 33, 34, 35, 38, 41, 49, 89  
 Deerfield- 46  
 Dover- 67  
 Franklin- 47, 48  
 Great Bridge, The (Medfield)- 33, 35, 39, 40, 53  
 Great Farms, The (Rutland)- 44, 45, 46, 47, 50  
 Hancock- 67  
 Harding Hill (Rutland)- 46  
 Holliston- 44  
 Medfield- 21, 22, 23, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 50, 51, 53, 57, 67  
 Medway- 30, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 46, 47, 48, 50, 52  
 Mendon- 41  
 Millis- 39, 40, 52, 53  
 Natick- 21  
 New Grant, The (Medway)- 33, 39  
 Northwest Quarter, The (Rutland)- 44, 45, 48  
 Quincy- 42  
 Roxbury- 20  
 Rutland- 30, 44, 45, 47, 48  
 Suffolk County- 16, 19  
 Vine Lake Cemetery (Medfield)- 34, 36, 37, 40  
 Walpole- 51  
 Ware River- 45  
 Weymouth- 35, 41  
 Worcester County- 44, 56, 59  
 Wrentham- 25, 47, 48

## MEXICO

Ciudad Juárez- 263  
 Toluca- 204

## MICHIGAN

Detroit- 230, 231,  
 Grand Rapids- 261

## MINNESOTA

Austin- 144

## MISSOURI

Arcola- 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 170, 171, 172,  
 173

Royal Grant, The- 69, 71  
 Rushford- 63, 64, 78, 79, 81, 82, 89, 91, 92, 94, 95, 98,  
 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110,  
 111, 112, 113, 114, 118, 119, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128,  
 129, 130, 150, 151, 156, 175, 176, 211, 237, 242, 251  
 St. Johnsville- 68, 83, 85, 88  
 Salisbury- 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74,  
 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 86, 87, 89, 91, 105,  
 110, 141, 232  
 Scio- 97  
 Spruce Creek (Herkimer Co.)- 70, 74, 75  
 Stratford- 67, 81, 89, 139, 141  
 Syracuse- 107, 124, 228, 229, 230  
 Warrens Corners- 132  
 Wilson- 135  
 Windy Hills Farm (Rushford)- 92  
 Wyoming County- 78, 126

## OHIO

Bainbridge- 311, 312  
 Cleveland- 231, 235, 237  
 Dayton- 311  
 Lima- 311  
 South Euclid- 235

## OKLAHOMA

Bartlesville- 150, 214, 215, 216, 223, 225, 229, 230  
 Bristow- 238  
 Drumright- 237  
 Memorial Park Cemetery (Bartlesville)- 216  
 Midwest City- 240  
 Newkirk- 212  
 Osage County- 301  
 Osage Indian Nation- 269  
 Salt Creek (Osage Co.)- 269  
 Wagoner- 248  
 White Rose Cemetery (Bartlesville)- 222  
 Wilburton- 223

## ONTARIO

Brantford- 204

## OREGON

Portland- 188  
 Roseburg- 166

## PENNSYLVANIA

Bradford- 175, 176  
 Clearfield County- 253

## PHILIPPINE ISLANDS- 218, 222, 260

Baler- 219  
 Cebu Island- 219  
 Iloilo- 221  
 Infanta- 218, 219

Oras- 220, 221  
 Ragay- 219  
 Samar- 260

## PORTUGAL

Funchal, Madeira Island- 228

## TENNESSEE

Chattanooga- 224, 243

## TEXAS

Canadian- 165  
 Concordia Cemetery (El Paso)- 266  
 Dallas- 298  
 Dumas- 166  
 Eastland- 257, 265  
 El Paso- 153, 213, 214, 244, 255, 256, 257, 259, 260, 261,  
 263, 264, 265, 266  
 Harlingen- 311  
 Mission- 214  
 Restlawn Memorial Park (El Paso)- 265

## VERMONT

Bennington- 58  
 Fort Ethan Allen- 223, 229  
 Green Mountains- 55

## VIRGINIA

Camp Alger- 222  
 Fort Monroe- 93  
 Harrisons Landing- 93  
 Petersburg- 94

## WASHINGTON

Bellingham- 247  
 Brewster- 247  
 Ferry County- 247  
 Manson- 166, 167

WASHINGTON, D.C.- 94